Crime, Justice, and Society

THIRD EDITION

Crime, Justice, and Society

An Introduction to Criminology

Ronald J. Berger
Marvin D. Free, Jr.
Patricia Searles

BOULDER
LONDON

Published in the United States of America in 2009 by
Lynne Rienner Publishers, Inc.
1800 30th Street, Boulder, Colorado 80301
www.rienner.com

and in the United Kingdom by
Lynne Rienner Publishers, Inc.
3 Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, London WC2E 8LU

© 2009 by Lynne Rienner Publishers, Inc. All rights reserved

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data
Berger, Ronald J.
Crime, justice, and society : an introduction to criminology / Ronald J. Berger, Marvin D. Free, Jr., Patricia Searles. — 3rd ed.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 978-1-58826-685-9 (pbk. : alk. paper)
1. Crime—Sociological aspects—United States. 2. Criminal behavior—United States. 3. Criminal justice, Administration of—United States. I. Free, Marvin D. II. Searles, Patricia. III. Title.
HV6789.B465 2009
364.973—dc22

2009002508

British Cataloguing in Publication Data
A Cataloguing in Publication record for this book is available from the British Library.

Printed and bound in the United States of America

The paper used in this publication meets the requirements of the American National Standard for Permanence of Paper for Printed Library Materials Z39.48-1992.

5 4 3 2 1

Contents

List of Tables and Figures ix
Preface xi

1 Perspectives on the Problem of Crime 1

Media Constructions of Crime and Crime Fighting, 3
The News and Entertainment Media, 3 • Crime Waves and Moral Panics, 8
The Politics of Crime Control, 13
The Reagan-Bush Years, 14 • The Clinton Years, 15 • The George W. Bush Years, 17
Criminology and the Sociological Imagination, 20
Cultivating a Sociological Imagination, 21 • Challenges to the Legalistic Definition of Crime, 23 • Inequality, Power, and Crime, 26

Part 1 Methods and Theories

2 Crime Data and Methods of Research 37

Counting Crime: The *Uniform Crime Reports*, 38
Underreporting by Citizens, 41 • The Organizational Production of Crime Data, 42 • Clearance Rates and Arrest Data, 45 • The Declining Crime Rate of the 1990s, 48
Other Counts of Crime, 51
The National Crime Victimization Survey*, 51 • Self-Report Surveys, 53 • The Problem of White-Collar Crime, 57*
Other Research Methods, 59
Experimental and Evaluation Research, 59 • Observational Field Research and In-Depth Interviewing, 64 • Historical and Comparative Criminology, 71

3 Individualistic Explanations of Criminal Behavior 79

Supernatural Explanations, 81
Classical and Neoclassical Criminology, 82
Deterrence and the Rational Criminal, 83 • Contemporary Deterrence Research, 84

Positivist Criminology: Biological and Psychological Approaches, 88
Social Darwinism and Early Biological Criminology, 89 • *Contemporary Biological Research, 91* • *Freudian Psychology, 99* • *Personality and Crime, 103* • *Behaviorism, 104* • *Applications of Psychological Theories, 105*

4 Sociological Explanations of Criminal Behavior 113

Early European Contributions, 114
Social Disorganization and the Social Ecology of Crime, 117
The Contributions of Clifford Shaw and Henry McKay, 118 • *The Decline and Revival of Social Disorganization Theory, 121* • *Routine Activities and Crime, 123*
Crime and the American Dream: Anomie-Strain Theory, 125
Adaptations to Strain, 127 • *A Decade of Liberal Reform, 132* • *Gender and Strain, 134* • *General Strain Theory, 135*
Social Learning and Symbolic Interaction, 136
Edwin Sutherland and the Theory of Differential Association, 136 • *Social Learning Theory, 138* • *Techniques of Neutralization, 139* • *Labeling Theory, 141*
Social Control and the Life Course, 143
Travis Hirschi's Social Control Theory, 144 • *Gender and Social Control, 146* • *Social Bonds Across the Life Course, 148*

5 Conflict Theory and Critical Criminology 151

Group and Class Conflict, 152
Culture Conflict and Crime, 152 • *Racial Conflict, Social Protest, and Collective Violence, 153* • *Class Conflict and Left Realism, 156*
Feminist Criminology, 157
Gender and Crime, 158 • *The Criminalization of Gay and Lesbian Sex, 159*
Peacemaking Criminology, 161
The Way of Peace, 161 • *Deescalating the War on Drugs, 165* • *The Regulation of Guns, 170*
Postmodern Currents in Criminology, 175
Postmodernity as a Stage of Society, 175 • *Postmodernism as Social Criticism, 181*

Part 2 Patterns of Criminality and Victimization

6 Corporate and Organized Crime 185

Business Concentration and Corporate Crime, 188
Antitrust Law and the Decline of Moral Indignation, 189 • *Criminogenic Market Structures, 191* • *Corporate Culture and the (Mis)management of Power, 193* • *Regulatory Law and the Deregulation Movement, 196*

The Economic and Physical Costs of Corporate Crime, 201
Costs to Workers, 202 • Costs to Consumers, 205 • Costs to the General Public, 211
The Business of Organized Crime, 218
The Blurred Boundaries Between Organized and Corporate Crime, 220 • The Structure of Organized Crime Networks, 224

7 Political and Governmental Crime 229

Crime and Political Rebellion, 231
Collective Rebellion in US History, 231 • Terrorism, 234
Hate Crimes and Hate Groups, 242
Data on Hate Crimes, 244 • Organized Hate Groups, 246
Governmental Crime and Presidential Scandals, 250
Watergate, 251 • The Secret Government, 255 • The Iran-Contra Scandal, 258 • Iraqgate, 264 • Sex, Lies, and Real Estate, 265 • The Bush-Cheney Era, 268

8 Street Crime 277

The Economic Context of Urban Street Crime, 278
Unemployment and Crime, 281 • Homelessness and Crime, 284
Racial/Ethnic Status and Street Crime, 286
The Color of Crime Data: Patterns of Offending and Victimization, 287 • Drug Prohibition: A Design for Discrimination, 294 • Explaining Minority Involvement in Street Crime, 298
Adolescent Subcultures and Law-Violating Youth Groups, 305
Middle-Class Delinquency: Renegade Kids and Suburban Outlaws, 308 • Urban Street Gangs, 311

9 Gender and Crime 319

Doing Gender, 321
Gendered Patterns of Criminality: An Overview, 325
The Gender Composition of Arrests, 325 • Has Female Criminality Increased? The Masculinity-Liberation Hypothesis, 328
Intersections of Gender, Race/Ethnicity, Class, and Crime, 331
Girls in Urban Gangs, 332 • Gender and Street Robbery, 337 • Gender and the Drug Trade, 340 • Women in Prostitution, 343 • Women as "Fetal Abusers," 351 • Women Who Kill, 355

10 Sexual Violence 361

The Problem of Sexual Violence, 362
The Sexual Violence Continuum, 362 • The Gendered Politics of Sexual Murder, 364 • The Problem of Pornography, 369
Rape and Sexual Assault, 376
Sexual Scripts and Rape Myths, 376 • Rape Law and Its Reform, 380 • Personal Resistance Strategies, 383

Sexual Abuse of Children, 384
The Frequency and Experience of Abuse, 385 • Adult Survivors of Abuse, 392
Battering of Women, 395
The Experience of Battering, 396 • Partner Abuse in Gay and Lesbian Relationships, 401 • Dealing with Battering, 402

Part 3 Criminal Justice and the Search for Solutions

11 The Police and the Courts 407
The Modern Police Force, 408
Historical Background, 409 • Organizational Styles of Policing, 411
Police Culture and Doing Police Work, 415
Racial Profiling, 417 • Minorities in Policing, 419 • Doing Gender in Policing, 421 • Police Corruption and Other Malfeasance, 423
Prosecuting and Defending the Accused, 431
Initial Screening, 431 • Negotiating Justice in an Adversary System, 435 • The Trial, 436
Sentencing the Convicted, 442
Types of Sentences, 443 • Discrimination in Sentencing, 445

12 Punishment and Prisons 449
The Death Penalty, 451
Legal Lethality, 451 • Women and the Death Penalty, 454 • Juveniles and the Death Penalty, 456
The Modern Penitentiary, 457
Historical Background, 457 • The Incarceration Boom, 459 • Privatization of Prisons, 462
Living and Working in Prison, 463
The Society of Captives, 464 • Convict Labor and Prison Industries, 473 • The Work of Correctional Officers, 475

13 Community Corrections and Alternative Solutions 481
Community Corrections, 482
Probation: Conventional and Alternative Approaches, 483 • Parole and the Problem of Prisoner Reentry, 487 • The Restorative Justice Movement, 489
In Search of Social Justice, 493
Focus on Prevention, 493 • The Problem of White-Collar Crime, 498 • Winning the Peace, 500

References 503
Index 573
About the Book 613

Tables and Figures

Tables

2.1 *UCR* Reported Index Crimes (2007) 40
2.2 *UCR* Index Crime Rates (1960–2007) 40
2.3 Clearance Rates for *UCR* Index Crimes (2007) 45
2.4 Part II Offenses as a Percentage of *UCR* Arrests (2007) 46
2.5 Age-, Race-, and Gender-Specific Arrest Rates for *UCR* Index Crimes (2007) 47
2.6 *NCVS* Victimizations Reported to Police (2006) 52
2.7 *NCVS* Victimization Rates by Age, Income, Race, Ethnicity, and Gender (2006) 53
2.8 Self-Reported Drug Use by High School Seniors (1990–2007) 57
4.1 Merton's Typology of Individual Adaptations to Strain 127
7.1 Hate Crime Incidents by Bias Motivation (2007) 247
8.1 Racial Distribution of Arrests (2007) 289
8.2 Rank-Order of Most Common Arrests for Whites and Blacks (2007) 290
8.3 Self-Reported Use of Illicit Drugs by Race/Ethnicity (2007) 294
9.1 Gender Composition of Arrests (2007) 325
9.2 Self-Reported Use of Illicit Drugs by Gender (2007) 328
9.3 Gender Composition of Index Crime Arrests (1965–2007) 329
12.1 Number of Adults Under Correctional Supervision (1980 and 2006) 450
12.2 Number of Prisoners by Type of Offense (2004/2006) 461
12.3 Number of Prisoners by Race/Ethnicity and Gender (2007) 461

Figures

6.1 Ford Motor Company Cost-Benefit Memorandum 196
6.2 La Cosa Nostra Crime Family 225

Preface

CRIME, JUSTICE, AND SOCIETY IS AN INNOVATIVE criminology text that places questions of social inequality and power—and in particular the social stratification of society by *class, race/ethnicity,* and *gender*—at the center of criminological inquiry. This critical approach differs from most other texts, which typically have an encyclopedic quality and lack a core theme. We offer an explicitly *sociological* orientation, one that will help students acquire an understanding of crime and criminal justice that is cultivated by a sociological imagination. As C. Wright Mills (1959) famously observed, a sociological imagination allows us to see how personal biographies intersect with broader historical and social forces and the ways in which seemingly private troubles are related to public issues. When students embrace their sociological imagination, they will understand the struggles and sorrows of the human lives that underlie the crime statistics, the war on drugs, the rapacity of unchecked corporate profiteering, the corruption of political leaders.

As this edition of *Crime, Justice, and Society* goes to press, the world in which we live is going through a period of deep economic malaise. The Iraq War continues to rage, leaving over six years of misery in its wake. Our prisons are filled to capacity while our inner cities decay and our educational system flounders. Corporate executives and politicians—once thought of as pillars of our communities—are being convicted of crimes. Women continue to face the terror of sexual violence. Urban gangs are still with us, as are drug addiction, child abuse, prostitution, hate crimes, and the like. And, of course, the specter of political terrorism has not gone away. *Crime, Justice, and Society,* in its own small way, bears witness to this state of affairs and sheds some light on how we got where we are and where we might go from here. This third edition includes updated crime data, criminological research, and current events in our ongoing effort to make the book a timely introduction to the study of crime and criminal justice in the new millennium.

Organization of the Book

Crime, Justice, and Society is appropriate for use as an undergraduate text in criminology courses taught in both sociology and criminal justice programs. Although innovative in approach, it is organized to fit into conventional course formats. Chapter 1, "Perspectives on the Problem of Crime," opens the book by encouraging students to reflect on popular media and political constructions that may have influenced their own thinking about crime. Here we review, among other things, constructionist accounts of the gang, drug, and serial murder problems. We then make the case for the value of a sociological perspective and introduce students to the central themes of the book.

Part 1: Methods and Theories begins with Chapter 2, "Crime Data and Methods of Research," where we critically examine official and unofficial sources of quantitative crime data. We also look at other methodological approaches, including experimental and evaluation research, observational methods, and historical and comparative criminology. In Chapters 3, 4, and 5—"Individualistic Explanations of Criminal Behavior," "Sociological Explanations of Criminal Behavior," and "Conflict Theory and Critical Criminology"—we evaluate the most important criminological theories, and make the material more relevant by interweaving the voices of offenders and highlighting the practical applications of the various perspectives.

Part 2: Patterns of Criminality and Victimization does not catalog every type of crime imaginable, but rather presents a comprehensive range of topics that are parsimoniously divided into five chapters. Chapter 6, "Corporate and Organized Crime," addresses the crimes of the economically powerful and highlights the interconnections between legal and illegal enterprise. Here we consider the historical development and contemporary manifestations of corporate law violation, the link between corporate and organized crime, and the structure of organized crime networks.

Chapter 7, "Political and Governmental Crime," covers often-neglected topics such as collective violence, domestic and international terrorism, and hate crimes. We also discuss, among other subjects, the major presidential scandals, from Watergate to the controversial administration of George W. Bush.

Chapter 8, "Street Crime," focuses on the class and racial/ethnic dimensions of conventional crimes of violence, crimes against property, and offenses involving illicit drugs, illuminating the economic context of these crimes and the questions of criminal justice bias and differential involvement by race and ethnicity. We also consider the problem of law-violating youth groups and gangs in both urban and suburban communities.

While issues of gender are integrated throughout the book, the experiences of women and girls warrant special attention. In Chapter 9, "Gender and Crime," we explore ways in which social constructions of femininity

and masculinity influence the nature of both female and male criminality. Focusing especially on female offenders, we consider the question of continuity versus change in traditional gender patterns of crime and discuss how offenders "do gender" in urban gangs, street robbery, the drug trade, prostitution, and murder. We also examine the ongoing controversy regarding the criminalization of women as "fetal abusers."

Chapter 10, "Sexual Violence," opens with a discussion of sexual violence as a continuum of violations ranging from nonviolent sexual intimidation to acts of severe brutality. We also take a critical look at the culture of pornography and its relationship to sexual violence, and we explore in detail the problems of rape and sexual assault, child sexual abuse, and the battering of women. Although we present two separate chapters that focus on females, we recognize that women and girls, like men and boys, do not always fit neatly into the categories of offender *or* victim/survivor. Our analysis thus reflects and elucidates these blurred boundaries.

Part 3: Criminal Justice and the Search for Solutions includes two chapters that critically analyze the operation of the criminal justice system in the United States: Chapter 11, "The Police and the Courts," and Chapter 12, "Punishment and Prisons." Finally, Chapter 13, "Community Corrections and Alternative Solutions," examines community alternatives to prison and various preventative measures that chart a more progressive course for dealing with the problem of crime.

* * *

We would like to thank Lynne Rienner, Leanne Anderson, and Andrew Berzanskis of Lynne Rienner Publishers for their helpful suggestions, as well as Lesli Brooks Athanasoulis, Jason Cook, and the rest of the Rienner staff for their assistance with this project. We also thank Ruthy Berger for proofreading the manuscript and offering editorial suggestions, and Kari Borne for her help preparing the manuscript for submission to the publisher.

1

Perspectives on the Problem of Crime

FEAR OF CRIME CAN GRIP A VICTIM—TAKE HOLD, hang on, become part of the fabric of life, even when one has managed to escape harm's way, as Susan Resnick's story poignantly illustrates. Susan, a new arrival in Boston, was riding her bike along the Charles River one afternoon in the spring. It was a beautiful day, and many people were out pushing baby carriages, roller-blading, and sunning themselves. But as she wove along the bike path, Susan began to feel uncomfortable. A teenage boy was riding his bike suspiciously close to hers. She decided to veer off in a different direction, just to be safe, hoping he'd stay on his original path. The next thing Susan heard, however, was the boy barking out an order: "Get off the bike and you won't get hurt!" He had followed her, waiting for the right time to strike. Having reached a spot without a soul nearby, the teen slammed his bike into Susan's, forcing her off the path. Susan screamed loudly for help, somehow managing to remain upright, pedaling with all her might. Although her cries of distress brought no one to her aid, they succeeded in scaring the boy away. "I escaped physically unharmed," Susan says, "but I may never be the same again. Because it happened in the middle of the afternoon in a crowded public place, I realize that I'm not safe anywhere in the city. Suddenly I'm jumpy whenever I'm traveling alone. My stomach flips when I hear footsteps behind me as I walk to work; my entire body tenses when I have to ride the elevator in my apartment building with a strange man" (Resnick 1993:64).

A few weeks later, Susan was again riding along the river when suddenly she heard brakes squeaking behind her. "Before I even turned my head," she recalls, "my heart was beating hard and panic was coursing through my veins." She raced ahead, only to realize that it was just another biker who had braked to avoid colliding with her: "I pulled to the grass and froze for a second. My arms and legs went from shaking to numb. . . . I wondered how many years the fright had taken off my life" (p. 65). The lasting fear that Susan experienced is not uncommon—and the more violent or traumatic the crime, the easier it is for us to understand the suffering of the survivors, the turmoil for their families.

Fear of crime is an all-too-common feature of contemporary society.

Fear of crime, however, is a complex issue. It grows out of more than just firsthand experience. Studies find that being victimized by crime, or knowing someone who has been victimized, is not necessarily related to fear of crime or to attitudes about the punishment of criminals (Barkan 2006; Warr 2000). Survey research, for example, indicates that the elderly tend to be more fearful of crime than the young, even though they are less likely to be victims. Women are more likely than men to experience sexual assault and domestic violence, yet they express greater fear of other crimes as well, despite being less likely than men to be victims of crime overall (Ferraro 1996; Madriz 1997). African American and inner-city residents experience higher rates of victimization than white, middle-class suburbanites, and they are sometimes more fearful. But they also are more distrustful of the criminal justice system, less supportive of strictly punitive policies, and more supportive of rehabilitative programs for offenders (Browning & Cao 1992; Hagan & Albonetti 1982; McCorkle 1993). Moreover, a large portion of the public believes that crime rates in their communities have been rising, even during times of decline (Kappeler & Potter 2005; Roberts & Stalans 2000).

We think it is important, therefore, to begin our inquiry into the problem of crime by examining the roots of our attitudes and opinions. Our view

of reality is drawn not just from personal experience but also from representations of events that we have not experienced directly. Research indicates that the mass media, politicians, and law enforcement officials are major sources of our knowledge about crime. They play a crucial role in generating, shaping, and reinforcing public opinion about crime and mobilizing support for particular policies. They provide us with a taken-for-granted conceptual framework that helps us identify particular issues as crime-related, interpret the causes of criminal behaviors, and apply ready-made solutions (Beckett 1994; Kappeler & Potter 2005; Surette 1998).

Unfortunately, the picture we get from these sources of information is in many ways misleading. Take, for instance, the simplistic distinction we often make between "good guys" and "bad guys," between the forces of good and the forces of evil. Typically we think of criminals as persons who are fundamentally different from the rest of us. Few of us, however, are paragons of virtue. Most of us have committed some crime for which we could have been incarcerated. How many of us have consumed alcohol illegally, driven under the influence, or taken illegal drugs? How many of us have engaged in vandalism or shoplifting? How many of us have stolen something of value from an employer? Perhaps we did not think that what we did was serious or even criminal. But ask our employers about this and they will likely disagree, for they lose more money annually from the "good guys"—us—than they do from theft by nonemployees. In his book *The Rich Get Richer and the Poor Get Prison,* Jeffrey Reiman (2007) estimates that employee embezzlement and pilferage, which account for about one-third of all business failures in the United States (Challenger 2004), cost businesses over $45 billion annually. The costs of "white-collar" offenses more generally, including corporate fraud and illegal price-fixing, exceed $400 billion annually. Add to these costs the vast array of physical injuries, illnesses, and deaths caused by illegal business activity—through dangerous work conditions, defective consumer products, and environmental pollution—and our simplistic assumptions about crime and criminals quickly break down (see Chapter 6).

Media Constructions of Crime and Crime Fighting

The News and Entertainment Media

The mass media is an institutionalized system of communication that conveys messages to audiences through print and technology. The media are not simply neutral, unobtrusive observers providing news and entertainment. Their influence is pervasive. On average, for example, Americans watch in excess of four hours of television each day, and a large proportion of prime-time programming deals with crime and crime fighting (Surette

1998). A recent study called "Dying to Entertain," sponsored by the Parents Television Council, found that violent content (including sexual violence) in prime-time programming has increased substantially over the past decade and is now prevalent in about half of all prime-time shows (Schulenburg 2007). Moreover, most people report that they rely on the news media to learn about crime and criminals, and readers of newspapers are more likely to read crime items than any other subject matter (Pollak & Kubrin 2007; Surette 1998).

In the late 1980s a new genre of television crime programming appeared on the scene: the tabloid-style **infotainment*** shows such as *Cops, America's Most Wanted, Unsolved Mysteries,* and the various programs shown on Court TV (now truTV). These shows present "true crime" stories (sometimes in documentary-style or as dramatized reenactments) that blur the traditional distinction between news and entertainment. They promote a "shared disgust for anyone alleged to be a criminal" and serve to heighten our fear by suggesting that crime is all-pervasive (Bond-Maupin 1998:33; Fishman & Cavender 1998; Fox et al. 2007).

Today, in all sources of news reporting, the distinction between news and entertainment is becoming less clear. Television news emphasizes the details of individual crimes, often packaged in 30- to 60-second spots, and rarely discusses crime as a social issue. There is a heavy reliance on law enforcement officials as convenient sources of information, and deadlines leave little time for independent investigation or follow-up. The novelty or sensational quality of the crime increases its news value—"if it bleeds, it leads"—although through repetition the extraordinary becomes ordinary. In both television news and entertainment, the crimes portrayed are the ones less likely to occur in real life: violent crimes are overrepresented, while property crimes and white-collar crimes are underrepresented (Fox et al. 2007; Pollak & Kubrin 2007; Surette 1998). Another distortion is the disproportionate representation of African Americans as criminals, especially as violent offenders and drug offenders (Eschholz 2003; Oliver 1994; Pollak & Kubrin 2007).

The criminal trial of football star and Hollywood celebrity O.J. Simpson in the 1990s is arguably the most well-known case of what Ray Surette calls "court news as miniseries," high-profile crimes that often include elements of "human interest laced with mystery, sex, bizarre circumstances, and famous or powerful people" (1998:72, 74). The Simpson case did not just involve violence; it was a double murder—of Simpson's ex-wife Nicole Brown and her friend Ronald Goldman. Simpson and Nicole were among the "beautiful people" who enjoyed the lifestyle of the rich and

*Key terms are indicated in **boldface** the first time they appear in the book.

famous, and media accounts of their sexual exploits appealed to the public's prurient interest. There was also the specter of domestic violence, of Simpson's battery and voyeuristic stalking of Nicole (see Chapter 10). Insofar as Simpson claimed to be innocent, it was a "whodunnit" murder mystery as well. And there was race—not just because of Mark Fuhrman, the Los Angeles police detective whose racist background made him vulnerable to allegations that he planted evidence against Simpson, but also because of interracial sex and marriage, which Earl Hutchinson describes as "the last taboo for whites and blacks" in the United States (1996:4). According to Hutchinson, Simpson "became an instant metaphor and warning . . . of the menace posed by the abusive and sexually plundering black male" (p. 7).

Indeed, the image of the black man preying upon the white woman has been one of the most enduring myths of American society, although most rapes are in fact *intraracial,* committed against persons of the same race (Wriggens 1995). In the 1915 epic film *Birth of a Nation,* director D. W. Griffith portrayed African American men as either docile "faithful souls" or "brutal bucks" (Bogle 1994). This film, one of the most influential of the early twentieth century, conveyed an insidious stereotype: "Bucks are always big, baadddd niggers, over-sexed and savage, violent and frenzied as they lust for white flesh" (p. 13).

To those who believe Simpson is guilty, the criminal trial epitomized the failures of the criminal justice system in the United States, a common theme in crime news and entertainment. While the media tend to portray the police more favorably than the courts and corrections system, the message often conveyed is one of a criminal justice system unable to apprehend, convict, and punish criminals (Fox et al. 2007; Surette 1998).

The heroes in crime entertainment—literature, television, and motion picture films—are the crime fighters working either within the system or outside of it. Take, for example, the genre of the private eye or private detective, popularized originally in nineteenth-century print media. Here the "good guy" oddly resembles the criminals he is pursuing: a highly individualistic loner who may be on the side of justice, but who is not bound by the conventional rules of society. And the heroics of fictional super crime fighters like Batman, Superman, Spider-Man, and the Lone Ranger also underscore the failures of the official legal order (Newman 1993; Surette 1998).

Dirty Harry, the classic 1971 film that spawned several sequels, best illustrates the popular media image of the crime fighter. Harry, who was played by film star Clint Eastwood, is a maverick police officer who feels little obligation to abide by "due process" formalities. Harry is a man of action who has no patience for the Bill of Rights, the constitutionally protected liberties that he holds responsible for allowing scores of dangerous criminals to go free. In the "Dirty Harry" films, the qualities that made

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Race-Based Perceptions of the O.J. Simpson Case

On October 3, 1995, an estimated 100 million people worldwide witnessed the O.J. Simpson jury verdict, announced live on television and radio (Dershowitz 1996). This moment ranks with the 1963 assassination of John F. Kennedy, the 1986 *Challenger* space shuttle disaster, and the September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks as moments in history when people remember exactly where they were when the news broke. However, Jeffrey Toobin, whose July 1994 article in the *New Yorker* disclosed the Simpson defense team's intent to paint Mark Fuhrman as a racist cop, believes that years from now, one of the main reasons "anyone will care about this case . . . is because of what it illuminates about race in America" (quoted in Dershowitz 1996:118).

Many people remember the media images of black college students cheering jubilantly over the "not guilty" verdict, while whites stood stunned in disbelief. Indeed, there was a racial divide over the case (Abramson 1996; Elias & Schatzman 1996). Early on, national polls indicated that 60 percent of blacks thought that Simpson had been framed or set up by the police (*Newsweek,* August 1, 1994). Only 23 percent of whites agreed. Just following the jury verdict, 66 percent of blacks but only 26 percent of whites believed that Simpson had probably *not* committed the murders; and 85 percent of blacks but only 32 percent of whites agreed with the "not guilty" verdict (*Newsweek,* October 16, 1995).

These poll numbers reflect attitudes that stem from the different experiences blacks and whites have had in the United States, experiences that have not surprisingly led African Americans to be more distrustful of the criminal justice system, experiences that we will explore more fully in this book. It is important to point out, however, that since there are more whites in the population than blacks, the number of whites who agree with the verdict or who think Simpson did not commit the murders may actually be larger than the number of blacks who hold these sentiments (Russell 1998).

Eastwood a Hollywood icon—"the quiet one with the painfully bottled-up capacity for violence"—break loose, as Harry challenges criminals to resist and "make my day" (Ebert 1986:193). The Andy Sipowitz character in the syndicated *NYPD Blue* television series exhibits a similar mentality, always on the edge, ready to bust a criminal upside his head.

On the other side of the battle of good against evil, the media's passion for the sensational and bizarre is best exemplified by the proliferation of the increasingly graphic R-rated "slasher" movies such as *Texas Chainsaw Massacre, I Know What You Did Last Summer, Scream,* and the popular series of *Halloween, Friday the 13th,* and *Saw* films. In her book *The Age of Sex Crime,* Jane Caputi (1987) argues that the targeting of female victims is a common theme in this genre and that the killers believe their victims deserve punishment for their assertiveness or display of sexuality. Caputi

describes these films as **gorenography** due to their tendency to eroticize violence against women through juxtaposition with images of nudity or sex. The films often use the "point of view shot," whereby the camera "is used to encourage audience identification with the sex murderer" (p. 84). Caputi offers a scene from *Halloween* as an example:

> The sex killer is first introduced as a five-year-old boy who is, nevertheless, man enough to slaughter his teenage sister for having sex with her boyfriend while their parents are out. It is Halloween night and the boy is wearing a clown costume and mask. The murder scene is shot through the mask; members of the audience see the action through two eyeholes, as if they were behind the mask too. (p. 84)

Experimental media research suggests that repeated exposure to such films can desensitize viewers to the problem of violence against women (Donnerstein et al. 1987; Strasburger & Wilson 2002; see Chapters 2 and 10).

By the early 1990s, criminologists also noted the emergence of a genre of films featuring pathological female murderers, or "deadly dolls," as in *Fatal Attraction, Basic Instinct, The Hand That Rocks the Cradle,* and *Single White Female.* In these films, the spectacle of protracted, bloody murder often takes a backseat to the erotic aura and dangerously alluring quality of the sensual female killer, "white, lithe and lovely" (Holmlund 1994:128). There is a decidedly antifeminist theme in this genre, as the protagonist is portrayed as obsessively driven to "take what she wants at any cost" (Faith 1993:265). Often embedded within such narratives is the message that "a woman without a home and family is desperate and deviant" (Thompson 1998:69).

In the genre of organized crime films like *The Godfather, Goodfellas,* and *Casino,* as well as *The Sopranos* television series, the glamorization of violence is reserved for those who employ it for economic ends. The hothead is portrayed negatively, as prone to irrational violent outbursts that disrupt the orderly business of crime. Better to carefully plan and choose "the appropriate level and timing of violence" so as to maximize its effect on one's enemies. Yet violence, when juxtaposed with scenes of camaraderie or the family dinner table, is made to seem like a positive force and "a natural part of everyday life" (Newman 1998:43). Tony Soprano, like the Robert De Niro character in the comedy *Analyze This,* is even depicted as "so uncomfortable with the ramifications of his job" that he sees a therapist on a regular basis (Jones 2007:57).

The world of ruthless, even predatory, white-collar businessmen has also found its way into the media through movies like *Wall Street, A Civil Action, Michael Clayton,* and *The Constant Gardener,* as well as films based on John Grisham's novels. At the same time, media images of white-collar criminals are not as pervasive as the more common depictions of street

criminals from the lower (especially minority) strata of society, nor have they "produced a fundamental change in popular understandings of crime" (Nichols 1999:61; Boyd 1997).

Crime Waves and Moral Panics

The concept of a **crime wave** is used by criminologists to refer to a sudden rise (and eventual fall) of a particular type of crime. Crime waves may or may not be related to actual fluctuations in criminal behavior. Typically, media-reported crime waves are not. In a classic study of crime waves, Mark Fishman (1978) examined a seven-week media-reported crime wave in New York City in 1976 involving an alleged surge in what was labeled "crimes against the elderly." Police statistics, however, did not indicate any particular singling out of the elderly. Crimes increased for people of *all ages* during this period; for some crimes the increases were greater for the elderly and for some they were not. While 28 percent of news stories during this media-reported crime wave were about elderly victims of homicide, including several gruesome murders, such homicides actually made up less than 1 percent of crimes against the elderly. "Crimes against the elderly" was a convenient theme that allowed journalists to cast particular incidents as instances of something threatening and pervasive, something with greater news value.

Fishman also found that the New York City Police Department (NYPD) was receptive to the media's claims about crimes against the elderly. In fact, the NYPD used the purported crime wave to justify expansion of its Senior Citizens Robbery Unit (SCRU), whose undercover officers—dressed as old people—provided attractive subjects for news-camera crews when making arrests. One newspaper reporter, whose feature articles broke the "crimes against the elderly" story, acknowledged that SCRU officers contacted him with information about muggings or murders of elderly persons and repeatedly complained that the SCRU was unappreciated, understaffed, and in need of more resources.

Importantly, the New York City crime wave had a nationwide impact on the public's perception of the crime problem, as the story was disseminated through the wire services and nationally read newspapers like the *New York Times* and *Washington Post.* The Harris polling organization also began to include a new category—crimes against the elderly—in its survey questionnaire, and the majority of polled respondents in a national sample indicated that they believed that such crimes had been increasing in their communities when, in fact, they had not.

Marjorie Zatz's study (1987) of the "gang problem" in the city of Phoenix yielded results that paralleled Fishman's research. In the late 1970s and early 1980s, newspaper accounts relying primarily on information provided by the Phoenix Police Department suggested that the city had experi-

enced a dramatic rise in Chicano (Mexican American) youth gang activity. Police claims that the problem might escalate even further were coupled with well-publicized requests for additional local and federal funding for specialized gang-related law enforcement. The reality was, in fact, more complicated.

The term "gang" evokes threatening social imagery that has the symbolic power to transform occasional or sporadic acts of delinquency into more purposeful systematic activity. In Phoenix, the police department provided its officers with a "Latin Gang Member Recognition Guide," which included cartoon caricatures of youths in gang attire, a glossary of relevant Spanish words and expressions, and other criteria that could be used to identify gang members. Increased police surveillance of the Chicano community then yielded an identifiable population of offenders who provided the raw material for media reporting on the gang problem. Zatz found, however, that the police and media claims were disputed by knowledgeable social service workers and counselors who worked with Chicano youths, as well as by representatives of the Chicano community. As one juvenile probation officer noted, "It's fair to say there is some violence and destruction going on. But maybe there is also a bit of an injustice when kids in cowboy hats and pickups, drinking beer and cruising . . . aren't thought of as a gang. But when you have Chicano kids driving lowriders, wearing bandannas, and smoking marijuana they are singled out as being gangs" (p. 136).

In addition, Zatz analyzed juvenile-court records and found that while youths who were officially labeled as gang members were more likely than nongang youths to have been arrested in larger groups and for fighting offenses, they were less likely than nongang youths to have had prior court referrals, particularly for drug offenses. Zatz concluded that gang members "typically engaged in relatively minor squabbles, and not in . . . serious violent crimes that would be dangerous to . . . anyone outside of the gang world" (pp. 140, 143).

Zatz characterized claims about the Phoenix gang problem as a **moral panic**—that is, a discrepancy or disjuncture between a perceived and an actual threat that, when reported in the media, generates public support for doing something dramatic about a particular problem (Cohen 1980; McCorkle & Miethe 2002). In Phoenix, she observed, the more ordinary inclinations of adolescents to congregate took on a more ominous appearance and fueled unwarranted fears about Chicano youths as an inherently lawless population. Zatz does not deny that youth gangs exist or that they can pose a serious problem for communities. Nor does she claim that the media are servants of the police or that they always portray law enforcement in a positive light. Rather, she cautions us against uncritically accepting police and media accounts of social problems.

However, Fishman (1978) found that there are times when public offi-

cials downplay media stories about crime, being concerned that media reporting will cause the public to panic unnecessarily or to believe that the police are ineffective. Thus, for instance, officials from the New York City Transit Authority (NYTA) stopped an emergent theme involving "crimes on the subways" from becoming a media-reported crime wave. In this case, the NYTA police chief told one reporter that there was no such crime wave, and three senior NYTA officials called a news conference to assure the public that "the subways were safer than the city streets" (Fishman 1978:541). (Business interests also fear that publicity about crime will hurt tourism and make it difficult to attract new commerce [Hagedorn 1988].)

More often than not, however, it seems that media and law enforcement interests converge in finding mutual benefit from portrayals of escalating crime. Philip Jenkins's study (1994) of the serial homicide problem is a case in point. The media, as noted previously, are attracted to the unusual. During the 1980s, media accounts began to describe serial homicide as reaching epidemic proportions. In 1984 the **serial murderer**—typically described as a psychotically compulsive offender capable of extreme violence who selects multiple victims at random, often while traveling from state to state—was featured in a front-page *New York Times* article suggesting that serial murders accounted for about 20 percent (about 4,000) of all the homicides committed in the United States each year. During the next two years, this estimate was repeated in numerous other news reports. The data in these reports were based on Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) statistics on "motiveless" and "unsolved" murders, and on interviews with law enforcement officials.

In his research, Jenkins was interested in ascertaining whether these numerical estimates were accurate and whether serial murders had, in fact, been on the rise. Jenkins compiled a list of cases that were reported between 1940 and 1990 in three well-indexed and highly regarded newspapers (*New York Times, Los Angeles Times,* and *Chicago Tribune*), and he supplemented this data with other sources. Jenkins concluded that there had been a significant increase in this type of offense since the late 1960s, but that serial murders accounted for no more than 2–3 percent of all homicides.

Jenkins observed that officials in the US Justice Department, particularly in the FBI's Behavioral Sciences Unit (BSU), were the primary sources of information for the exaggerated media claims about the serial murder problem. He also noted that in 1983, concerns about serial murder became a central justification for the development of a new program, the Violent Criminal Apprehension Program (VICAP), at the FBI Academy in Quantico, Virginia, and for an expanded federal role in law enforcement regarding repeat killers as well as rapists, child molesters, arsonists, and bombers. According to BSU agent Robert Ressler:

> There was somewhat of a media feeding frenzy, if not a panic, over [the serial murder] issue in the mid-1980s, and we at the FBI and other people involved in urging the formation of VICAP did add to the general impression that there was a big problem and that something needed to be done about it. We didn't exactly go out seeking publicity, but when a reporter called, and we had a choice whether or not to cooperate on a story about violent crime, we gave the reporter good copy. In feeding the frenzy, we were using an old tactic in Washington, playing up the problem as a way of getting Congress and the higher-ups in the executive branch to pay attention to it. (Ressler & Schachtman 1992:203)

Drug scares. Craig Reinarman and Harry Levine (1989) identify **drug scares** as a perennial type of crime wave and moral panic that in the United States goes back at least to the early twentieth century. Drug scares typically involve an association between an allegedly "dangerous drug" and a "dangerous class" of individuals: working-class immigrants, nonwhite racial/ethnic groups, youths, or some combination thereof. This has been true, for example, of the Chinese and opium, African Americans and cocaine, and Mexicans and marijuana (Helmer 1975; Musto 1987). During drug scares, antidrug crusaders often receive extended media coverage, which helps mobilize public opinion in support of new drug laws and increase law enforcement against drug offenders. In the 1930s, for instance, Harry Anslinger, commissioner of the Federal Department of Treasury's Bureau of Narcotics, led a national campaign against the sale and use of marijuana (Becker 1963; Gray 1998). Under Anslinger's leadership, the bureau prepared a number of "educational" articles for distribution to magazines and newspapers. These articles included a number of outrageous atrocity stories such as the following incident reported in *American Magazine* in 1937:

> An entire family was murdered by a youthful [marijuana] addict in Florida. When officers arrived at the home they found the youth staggering about in a human slaughterhouse. With an ax he had killed his father, mother, two brothers, and a sister. He seemed to be in a daze. . . . He had no recollection of having committed the multiple crime. The officers knew him ordinarily as a sane, rather quiet young man; now he was pitifully crazed. They sought the reason. The boy said he had been in the habit of smoking something which youthful friends called "muggles," a childish name for marijuana. (cited in Becker 1963:142)

In the 1980s, crack cocaine emerged in the media as the preeminent dangerous drug (Reeves & Campbell 1994). Crack is a smokable form of cocaine that can be easily manufactured by boiling powdered cocaine (cocaine hydrochloride) with additives like novocaine and baking soda and placing the boiled mixture in ice water until it hardens. In his book *The Rise*

and Fall of a Violent Crime Wave: Crack Cocaine and the Social Construction of a Crime Problem, Henry Brownstein (1996) attributes the rise of crack cocaine to the overproduction of coca leaves (the source of powdered cocaine) in the three countries that are the greatest source of cocaine imported into the United States (Bolivia, Colombia, and Peru) and to the consequent opportunity for drug traffickers to expand the cocaine market. Whereas powdered cocaine had been consumed primarily by middle-class and more affluent individuals, crack could be sold in small, inexpensive quantities to low-income segments of the population. (Four ounces of powdered cocaine equates to about a thousand doses in crack form.)

Media stories about crack cocaine first appeared in a November 1984 *Los Angeles Times* article and in the *New York Times* a year later. At that time, crack was known to have appeared only in the impoverished neighborhoods of a few large cities. But by the spring of 1986, drug coverage reached a virtual feeding frenzy in the national media, which claimed that crack cocaine and a "coke plague" had spread to the suburbs and America's heartland and now constituted a "national crisis." Existing crime data, however, suggested that this simply was not true (see Chapter 2). Even the federal Drug Enforcement Administration (DEA) announced in 1986 that "crack was not a major problem in most areas of the country" (Brownstein 1996:41; Orcutt & Turner 1993; Reinarman & Levine 1989).

In his research, Brownstein (1996) was especially concerned with media claims, echoed by politicians and law enforcement, that crack cocaine was linked with an epidemic of violent criminal behavior. According to Brownstein, when crack was first introduced, the market was in fact "dominated by young . . . well-armed . . . entrepreneurs who operated independently of established drug trafficking organizations . . . [and who] turned to violence over such things as market share and product quality." But over time, this disorganized and rather violent market evolved into "confederations of independent dealers . . . [and] a more highly structured and less violent business-like industry" (p. 40). Moreover, research indicated that while almost all crack users had previously used other illegal drugs, their involvement with crack was for the most part unrelated to increased nondrug or violent criminality (Johnson et al. 1995). Nevertheless, the media constructed a moral panic suggesting that crack-related violence could affect anyone, anywhere. According to *Time* magazine, "A growing sense of vulnerability has been deepened by the belief that deadly violence, once mostly confined to crime-ridden ghetto neighborhoods that the police once wrote off as free-fire zones, is now lashing out randomly at anyone, even in areas once considered relatively safe" (Attinger 1989:38).

Reinarman and Levine (1989) acknowledge that crack is a very dangerous drug. They believe, however, that exaggerated drug scares are an inef-

fective way to solve the drug problem and may even increase interest in drug use (see Chapter 5).

The Politics of Crime Control

In many ways the 1960s defined the terms of the contemporary political debate over what to do about crime (Miller 1973). **Liberals** of that period claimed, as they do today, that crime could be prevented through social policies aimed at ameliorating the underlying "root causes" of crime associated with poverty and unequal opportunities, especially for racial and ethnic minorities, for whom discrimination is a persistent problem. Government-supported social programs that promote economic and educational opportunities and that provide needed social services are the prescribed cure. For those already caught up in the cycle of crime, rehabilitation rather than punishment per se is the preferred objective, with those accused and convicted of crimes being guaranteed rights of due process while under the control of the criminal justice system.

Conservatives, on the other hand, emphasized personal responsibility to refrain from criminal behavior. Unfavorable life conditions are no excuse. Criminal behavior is a choice; those who choose to commit crime must be held accountable. We must resign ourselves to the fact that "wicked people exist" and that we have no recourse but to set them apart from the rest of us (Wilson 1975:235). To the extent that there are root causes of crime, these reside in the decay of moral values, not in the absence of economic opportunities. The government can do little to solve these problems and should get out of people's lives. We need to liberate our criminal justice system from undue restraint so that punishment can be more certain, swift, and severe.

In 1965, President Lyndon Johnson, a Democrat, established the President's Commission on Law Enforcement and Administration of Justice. Johnson asked the commission to "deepen our understanding of the causes of crime and of how society should respond to the challenge of the present levels of crime" (President's Commission 1967:2). The commission acknowledged the liberal agenda when it wrote: "Crime flourishes where the conditions of life are the worst. . . . Reducing poverty, discrimination, ignorance, disease and urban blight, and the anger, cynicism or despair those conditions can inspire, is . . . essential to crime prevention" (p. 279). This apparent statement of liberal principles was a mere footnote, however, to the more conservative-oriented criminal justice strategies that dominated the commission's 17-volume report, strategies that involved "policemen, prosecutors, judges [and] correctional authorities." Even so, in the 1968 presidential campaign, Republican candidate Richard Nixon and right-wing

Independent candidate George Wallace accused the Democrats of being "soft on crime" (Conklin 2001).

The Reagan-Bush Years

In 1974, less than two years after President Nixon was reelected, he was forced to resign for his involvement in a cover-up (obstruction of justice) of a burglary on behalf of his reelection campaign at the Democratic National Committee headquarters in the Watergate hotel and office complex (see Chapter 7). The Watergate affair focused public attention on the problem of political corruption and encouraged the pursuit of white-collar crime as an investigative priority of the US Justice Department during the Democratic presidency of Jimmy Carter (Katz 1980).

In the 1980s, however, President Ronald Reagan, a Republican, shifted federal law enforcement priorities by moving the drug problem to center stage in the political debate about crime. Reagan declared a **war on drugs**, a war that would require not just a redoubling of conventional law enforcement efforts, but also an unprecedented involvement of the military in international drug interdiction. On the home front, the slogan **zero tolerance** emphasized "the culpability of casual users" and the belief that "the present problem is [due] to past tolerance . . . [for which] nothing short of wiping out all illicit drug use will do" (Gordon 1994a:33). The war on drugs, in Reagan's words, was "our national crusade" (quoted in Gordon 1994a:34). To accomplish this goal, the Reagan administration diverted millions of federal dollars from drug education, treatment, and research to law enforcement (Kraska 1990).

The Reagan administration, as we shall see, was embroiled in scandals of its own (see Chapters 6 and 7), but this did not stop then–vice president George H. W. Bush from using the "soft on crime" argument against Democratic candidate Michael Dukakis, governor of Massachusetts, in the 1988 presidential campaign. During this campaign, Bush supporters aired a television ad that featured the story of Willie Horton, an African American who had been sentenced to life in prison for his involvement in an armed robbery that resulted in the death of a teenage gas station attendant in Massachusetts. After serving 10 years in prison, he was released for the first of three furloughs (temporary home leaves or community releases). Furlough programs are used by more than half the prison systems in the United States as part of a risk management policy aimed at the gradual reintegration of convicted felons back into the community. To be sure, furloughs are not without risk. But research on furlough programs in the 1970s and 1980s indicates that, on the whole, these programs actually reduced recidivism (return to crime). Horton, however, was not a good candidate for a fourth release. Although prison officials had received complaints about his behavior during his previous furloughs, they released him once again. This

time he escaped and remained free for almost a year until he burglarized the home of a white suburban couple, Angela Miller and Clifford Barnes, and brutally assaulted them. While Horton was raping Miller, Barnes managed to escape and get help. If Barnes had not, he and his wife would likely have been killed (Anderson 1995; Skolnick 1996).

Bush supporters used the Horton tragedy to portray Governor Dukakis as responsible for the release of convicted violent felons. Because Dukakis also opposed the death penalty, Bush was able to portray him as soft on crime. The Democrats, in turn, accused the Bush campaign of exploiting racial stereotypes in an unconscionable way. Nevertheless, the television ad was extremely effective.

As president, Bush continued his predecessor's focus on drugs. During his first year in office, in 1989, Bush addressed the nation in a televised Labor Day speech that illustrates how politicians exploit the crime issue. In a dramatic gesture, Bush held up a bag of crack cocaine that had been purchased by DEA agents at a park across the street from the White House. But we later learned that the arrest had actually been arranged to help dramatize the speech. The Bush administration had asked the DEA to make the drug-buy at the park, but since agents could not find anyone who was selling crack at that location, they lured a dealer to the park in order to make the arrest (Kappeler et al. 2000).

Hal Pepinsky and Richard Quinney (1991) note that the war-making approach to crime entails the belief that threats to our personal and collective security can be traced to identifiable evil people who must be suppressed through intimidation, incarceration, and in some cases execution. In the 1980s, both Republican and Democratic politicians supported this approach and passed draconian drug laws that dramatically lengthened prison terms for persons convicted of even minor drug offenses, leading to an unprecedented explosion in the size of the prison population that is still with us today (see Chapter 12).

The Clinton Years

During the 1992 presidential campaign, it was difficult for President Bush to characterize the Democratic candidate, Arkansas governor Bill Clinton, as soft on crime. As governor, Clinton had demonstrated his support for the death penalty by signing four execution orders, including the order to execute a cognitively impaired African American felon (Kramer & Michalowski 1995). Clinton also favored the expansion of the nation's police forces, a cornerstone of his crime control policy. Clinton did differ from Bush, however, in his support of federal gun control legislation, particularly the **Brady Handgun Violence Prevention Act**, or Brady Bill, which would require a five-day waiting period for the purchase of a handgun. The Brady Bill was named after James Brady, President Reagan's press

secretary, who was shot and seriously disabled in 1981 during John Hinckley's attempted assassination of the president (see Chapter 3).

Politically, gun control has received more support from liberals than from conservatives. Many conservatives feel strongly that the **Second Amendment** to the US Constitution—"A well regulated Militia being necessary to the security of a free State, the right of the people to keep and bear Arms, shall not be infringed."—preserves a person's right to own any gun of their choice without government interference. Liberals, on the other hand, interpret these words more narrowly, and in their original historical context, viewing the Second Amendment not as providing a constitutionally protected *individual* right to own a firearm, but as preventing the new national government from interfering with the *collective* right of the citizenry to participate in state-regulated militias (Sunstein 2007; see Chapter 5). As president, Reagan had opposed the Brady Bill, only to endorse it after he left office, perhaps because he no longer needed to worry about incurring the wrath of the National Rifle Association (NRA), a well-funded and influential organization that supports conservative anti–gun control political candidates. Unlike Reagan, Bush continued to oppose the bill. But since it was difficult to characterize Clinton's advocacy of gun control as soft on crime, Bush was unable to use the crime issue to his advantage. After Clinton became president, he signed the Brady Bill into law in December 1993. (The Brady Bill expired in 1998 and was replaced by a national computerized system of background checks operated by the FBI. In 2008 the US Supreme Court ruled that the District of Columbia's ban on handguns to be in violation of the Second Amendment, upholding an individual's right to "keep and bear" a handgun in one's home for the purpose of self-defense.)

During the 1992 campaign and the first year of his presidency, Clinton gave indications that he might also be more liberal than his predecessors on other crime issues. He appointed Lee Brown, a former New York City police commissioner, as director of the Office of National Drug Control Policy. Brown, an advocate of prevention and rehabilitation approaches to drug abuse, defined drug abuse as a "public health problem" that should be addressed through "efforts to grow the economy, to empower communities, to curb youth violence, to preserve families, and to reform health care" (quoted in Gordon 1994a:35). However, when Republicans accused Clinton of "slipping into the old permissiveness," he downplayed this view and Brown eventually resigned in frustration (p. 35). Brown was replaced by Barry McCaffrey, a retired four-star general. Similarly, when Attorney General Janet Reno questioned the existing federal policy of lengthy mandatory sentences for even minor drug offenders (which might necessitate shorter sentences for violent offenders to reduce prison overcrowding), she was removed from the White House policymaking loop. And when Jocelyn Elders, Clinton's surgeon general, expressed interest in examining the expe-

riences of other countries that had decriminalized drugs (and made other controversial statements as well), she was forced to resign (Poveda 1994).

The most significant piece of crime legislation passed during the Clinton administration was the **Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act** of 1994, also called the Federal Crime Bill. The provisions of the bill indicate that the conservative position on crime had prevailed, insofar as (for the time being) law enforcement and punitive measures far outweighed crime prevention and rehabilitation strategies. The bill authorized the spending of over $30 billion and allocated over three-quarters of this amount to the hiring of more police officers and the building of new prisons. The bill also included a "three strikes and you're out" provision (life in prison for violent felons and drug felons if the third conviction is for a federal offense), and expanded the death penalty to more than 50 federal crimes (*Milwaukee Journal* 1994b).

The bill was passed in August 1994, while the Democrats were still in control of Congress, and included three provisions that were generally opposed by Republicans. The policing provisions favored by the Clinton administration were those that earmarked federal monies to local police departments that were willing to implement *community policing*—a general term used to describe law enforcement strategies aimed at putting police in closer touch with the community, including foot patrols, community meetings with residents, and an emphasis on solving community problems rather than just making arrests (see Chapter 11). Republicans preferred to allow police departments to define their own priorities—for instance, to use the money to buy more equipment (e.g., squad cars, high-powered weapons) or to expand other law enforcement activities (e.g., specialized crime units).

Republicans also opposed a provision of the bill that banned the manufacture of 19 specific types of "military-style" assault weapons and other firearms having similar characteristics (this ban expired in 2004). Additionally, they opposed the portion of the bill that earmarked money (17 percent of the spending) for social programs aimed at crime prevention, such as youth clubs in housing projects, midnight sports leagues, and drug treatment programs. One Republican congressman characterized the bill as "riddled with social welfare spending that is pork and a cops-on-the-streets program that is a sham" (quoted in *Milwaukee Journal* 1994a:A3).

The George W. Bush Years

President Clinton was embroiled in a well-publicized scandal of his own that focused on his sexual relations with White House intern Monica Lewinsky and allegations that he had lied about this relationship under oath. In 1998 he was impeached by the House of Representatives; although he was acquitted by the Senate, the scandal tarnished the remainder of his administration. In turn, in the 2000 election, George W. Bush, son of former

president George H. W. Bush, became the 43rd president amid controversy over disputed ballots in the state of Florida. The US Supreme Court, in a highly controversial decision, stopped a recount vote in Florida, giving Bush a narrow victory in the electoral college, despite the fact that Democratic candidate Al Gore, US vice president at that time, had won the popular vote nationwide (see Chapter 7).

During the first year of their administration, President George W. Bush and Vice President Dick Cheney started to draw attention in the media for their financial and political connections to Enron, a multibillion-dollar energy corporation that went bankrupt due to fraudulent financial practices (Baker 2002; Corn 2003; Sloan 2001; see Chapter 6). But what seemed to be emerging as an ongoing story was moved off the front pages following the September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks on the World Trade Center and the Pentagon, which resulted in the deaths of over 3,000 people and spurred the subsequent antiterrorism campaign against **Al-Qaida** ("The Base") and its leader, Osama bin Laden, as well as the wars against Afghanistan and Iraq. Six weeks later, the president signed the **USA Patriot Act** into law, amid complaints by civil libertarians that the act went too far in undermining constitutional freedoms (*Patriot* is an acronym for "Providing Appropriate Tools Required to Intercept and Obstruct Terrorism").

The most controversial elements of the Patriot Act included provisions that allowed for "secret" (without notification) residential searches of individuals deemed a risk to national security, searches of computer files and tracing of Internet communications and library transactions, and detainment of noncitizens without charge for up to six months prior to deportation (Anderson 2003; McCaffrey 2003; Williams 2003b). Controversial as well was the fact that the law did not contain any "new provisions for the monitoring or control of firearms" (Bergman & Reynolds 2002:21). In fact, Attorney General John Ashcroft did not even allow federal law enforcement investigators to use the national background check system to track potential terrorists. Prior to his appointment as attorney general, as a senator from Missouri, Ashcroft had received thousands of dollars in political campaign contributions from the NRA; and one of his main objectives as attorney general was to eliminate delays in the federal system of background checks for gun buyers (Shenon 2008).

The following year, in 2002, the **Department of Homeland Security Act** was passed, creating a large, cabinet-level department to oversee homeland security. Although the purpose of the department was to centralize intelligence and security operations and to reduce duplication of functions among agencies, two key organizations—the FBI and Central Intelligence Agency (CIA)—were excluded from this reorganization scheme (Martin 2003).

Proponents of these reforms claim they have been successful in thus far

preventing another 9/11 type act, while opponents point to the ongoing vulnerability of our chemical and nuclear plants (Kennedy 2004). Over 140 local governments have passed resolutions objecting to the Patriot Act's infringement on civil liberties, indicating a growing rift between local and federal authorities (Isikoff & Klaidman 2003). Anthony Romero, executive director of the American Civil Liberties Union, asserted that the FBI has been "dangerously targeting Americans who are engaged in nothing more than lawful protest and dissent" (quoted in Lichtblau 2003:A3). In a recent exposé of the National Security Agency, "the largest, most costly, and most technologically sophisticated spy organization" in the world, James Bamford (2008) documented the warrantless (and illegal) eavesdropping operation that has been secretly monitoring "millions of phone calls and e-mails an hour," both domestic and international, including the monitoring of confidential personal and business matters unrelated to national security (pp. 1–2).

Bush administration officials, on the other hand, claimed that those who oppose these measures are playing into the hands of terrorists. As Attorney General Ashcroft opined: "To those who scare peace-loving people with phantoms of lost liberty; my message is this: Your tactics only aid terrorists—for they erode our national unity and diminish our resolve. They give ammunition to America's enemies, and pause to America's friends" (quoted in Kappeler & Potter 2005:364). Additionally, Ashcroft linked the **war on terror** to the war on drugs, as if even common drug users were responsible for the spread of terrorism:

> The lawlessness that breeds terrorism is also a fertile ground for the drug trafficking that supports terrorism. And the mutually reinforcing relationships between terrorism and drug trafficking should serve as a wake-up call for all Americans. When a dollar is spent on drugs in America, a dollar is made by America's enemies. The Department of Justice is committed to victory over drug abuse and terrorism, and the protection of the freedom and human dignity that both drug abuse and terrorism seek to destroy. (quoted in Kappeler & Potter 2005:354)

All this is made more disconcerting by the fact that in the months before 9/11, Ashcroft ignored FBI warnings about the threat of terrorism. As former acting FBI director Thomas Pickard reported, prior to 9/11 Ashcroft told him, "I don't want to hear about al-Qaida anymore. . . . There's nothing I can do about that" (quoted in Shenon 2008:247; see also Bamford 2008).

The war on terror took a dramatic turn with the US military invasion of Afghanistan, the country that had provided Al-Qaida with a safe haven and base of operations, and with the preemptive war against Iraq. Iraq was arguably the more controversial of these two military campaigns. The Bush administration claimed that Iraqi dictator Saddam Hussein was implicated

in the 9/11 attacks and also possessed **weapons of mass destruction** (WMD)—biological, chemical, and nuclear weapons—that posed a direct threat to the security of the United States. For the most part, the media capitulated to these claims, which were later proven to be false (see Chapter 7). *New York Times* journalist Judith Miller was noteworthy for her articles that cited anti-Hussein Iraqi defectors who testified about Hussein's WMD capabilities. Vice President Cheney then cited the *New York Times* in his statements to the press as an authoritative source of the administration's justification for launching the war against Iraq (Isikoff & Corn 2006).

The clandestine background to Miller's reporting and Cheney's remarks, however, was that the Iraqi defectors were part of an organized propaganda campaign, or program of **strategic disinformation**—that is, the intentional dissemination of false information for the purpose of achieving political goals (Altheide & Grimes 2005; Judis 2002). Indeed, the Iraqi defectors belonged to a group led by Ahmad Chalabi, the **Iraqi National Congress**, that was funded by the CIA and Pentagon and used to "sell" the war to the American people (Bamford 2005). John Rendon, a public relations specialist in the Rendon Group, was hired to organize and disseminate these stories to the media. Rendon described his role this way: "I am an information warrior and a perception manager . . . a person who uses communication to meet public-policy or corporate-policy objectives" (quoted in Bamford 2005:3).

Criminology and the Sociological Imagination

In this book we aim to provide you with an alternative to the media and political constructions of crime that have been discussed in this chapter. By exploring the exciting field of criminology, we hope to encourage you to step outside of such conventional understandings and learn to exercise your sociological imagination.

Criminology is an interdisciplinary field of study that involves theoretical explanation and empirical research regarding the process of lawmaking, lawbreaking, and the societal reaction to lawbreaking (Sutherland 1947). The discipline of sociology has occupied a special place among the interdisciplinary components of criminology (e.g., anthropology, biology, economics, political science, psychology), and according to Ronald Akers, **sociological criminology** still constitutes the field's "intellectual center of gravity" (1992:4). For much of the twentieth century, criminology in the United States was most often taught in departments of sociology and its most widely used textbooks were written by sociologists. Hence the study of criminology came to be defined as an attempt to understand crime as a social rather than an individual phenomenon—that is, as a consequence of social relationships and the organization of society.

In the late 1960s, however, sociology began to lose its hold on the field. The federal government provided funds that enabled law enforcement agencies to upgrade their educational requirements and encourage their personnel to obtain postsecondary education degrees. This resulted in an expansion of college and university **criminal justice** programs outside of sociology departments, which became readily apparent by the 1980s. By 1990 there were over a thousand such programs in the United States offering undergraduate degrees and nearly a hundred offering graduate degrees (Akers 1992; Sorensen et al. 1994).

The terms *criminology* and *criminal justice* suggest different orientations. Criminology tends to focus on the phenomena of crime and criminals, while criminal justice tends to focus on the agencies that respond to criminal law violation: the police, courts, and corrections systems. Criminology tends to be more theoretical and research-oriented, while criminal justice is more practical or applied. But in many respects the division between criminology and criminal justice is artificial, and the two are so closely interwoven that a convergence has been under way for some time. As Jonathan Sorensen and colleagues noted, "criminal justice programs often include criminology in the curriculum . . . [and] criminologists often teach in criminal justice programs . . . and conduct research on the criminal justice system. . . . As criminal justice develops further as a discipline, the methodology employed in criminal justice research will become comparable to that used in criminology" (1994:152–153).

Cultivating a Sociological Imagination

Whether you are reading this book as part of a course in sociology, criminal justice, or another related curriculum, you now have the opportunity to cultivate a **sociological imagination** for thinking about crime. According to C. Wright Mills (1959), a sociological imagination helps us see the ways in which personal or private troubles are related to public issues. It helps us understand how our lives are impacted by social forces that define and constrain our choices and opportunities, our sense of the possible, our very sense of ourselves. It helps us understand how our individual biographies and the biographies of others intersect with both broader historical and social conditions and the relationships we have with one another.

Victimization from crime, for example, is an unfortunate and often traumatic private experience. But when victimization falls disproportionately on a certain group or groups, such as the poor or economically disadvantaged, there is a nonrandom patterning to this problem that requires sociological explanation (see Chapters 2 and 8). Or when large numbers of women experience some form of sexual violence or abuse, mostly from nonstrangers, this cannot be understood without sociological insight (see Chapter 10).

This perspective is also well illustrated in the following accounts of the lives of African American gang members. In his book *A Nation of Lords: The Autobiography of the Vice Lords,* David Dawley gives voice to the experiences of Chicago youths growing up in the late 1950s and 1960s:

> When we got here, *the pattern was already laid out for us.* We weren't aware of what was going on and what we thought, but we were living in the years when you couldn't walk the streets without somebody telling you they were gonna down you. Much of what we did was bad, but we didn't know why, and there just wasn't anybody who could help us. Now we know something about what made us kill each other, but in 1958 we were crammed so close together that the least little thing could touch something off. (1992:3, emphasis added)

Similarly, in *Monster: The Autobiography of an L.A. Gang Member,* Sanyika Shakur (1993), also known as Monster Kody Scott, writes about his life as a member of the Crips in South Central Los Angeles in the 1970s:

> My mind-set was narrowed by the *conditions and circumstances prevailing around me.* Certainly I had little respect for life when practically all my life I had seen people assaulted, maimed, and blown away at very young ages, and no one seemed to care. I recognized early that where I lived, we grew and died in dog years. . . . Where I lived, stepping on someone's toe was a capital offense punishable by death. . . . *I did not start this cycle,* nor did I conspire to create conditions so that this type of self-murder could take place. . . . To be in a gang in South Central when I joined—and it is still the case today—is the equivalent of growing up in Grosse Pointe, Michigan, and going to college: everyone does it. (pp. 102, 138, emphasis added)

When Dawley and Shakur speak of "the pattern . . . already laid out" or the prevailing "conditions and circumstances" that they "did not start," they are speaking of the influence of **social structure** on their lives. Social structure is a concept used by sociologists to refer to the patterns of social interaction and institutional relationships that endure over time and that enable or constrain people's choices and opportunities. As we shall see, social relations of inequality and power—particularly those based on class, race/ethnicity, and gender—are among the most significant components of social structure. Social structures are, in a sense, external to individuals insofar as they are not of their own making and exist prior to their engagement with the world. At the same time, social structures do not exist independently of **social action**. Rather, they are ongoing accomplishments reproduced by individuals acting in particular ways in specific situations (Giddens 1981; Messerschmidt 1997). The members of the Vice Lords and the Crips did not create the social structures that they confronted in their lives, but through their actions they re-created or reproduced the conditions that were already there.

A sociological imagination does not imply a view of individuals as mere dupes or passive recipients of social structures. Individuals are thinking, self-reflexive beings who are capable of assessing their circumstances and choosing among alternative courses of action (Sandstrom et al. 2006). Through this capacity for **personal agency**, they exercise a degree of control over their lives and at times even manage to transform or reconfigure the social relationships in which they are enmeshed (Berger 2008; Emirbayer & Mische 1998). Social psychologists often describe this as a matter of **self-efficacy**, the ability to experience oneself as a causal agent capable of *acting upon* rather than merely *reacting to* the external environment (Gecas 1989; Bandura 1997). To illustrate this point, we need only recall the actions of Rosa Parks, an African American seamstress who on a December day in 1955 refused to relinquish her seat to a white man on a bus in Montgomery, Alabama, as she was *required by law to do.* Parks had already been actively challenging bus segregation laws, and this incident "sparked a year-long citywide boycott of the public transit system and galvanized the entire civil rights movement of the 1950s and 1960s," dramatically changing the nature of race relations in the United States (Newman 2000:21).

Challenges to the Legalistic Definition of Crime

Cultivating your sociological imagination also requires reconsidering the **legalistic definition** of crime. Paul Tappan was a prominent proponent of the legalistic definition: "Crime is an intentional action in violation of criminal law . . . committed without defense or justification, and sanctioned by the state as a felony or misdemeanor" (1947:100). Tappan believed that criminologists should narrowly confine their subject matter to behaviors that met this definition. It was inappropriate, he maintained, for criminologists to assert their own values by defining what should or should not be included in the criminal law as crimes.

Edwin Sutherland, one of the most important criminologists of the twentieth century, rejected this approach when he introduced the term **white-collar crime** at his presidential address to the American Sociological Society in 1939 (Friedrichs 2007). Sutherland (1949), who defined white-collar crime as crime committed by persons of respectability and high social status in the course of their occupations, was especially interested in documenting the extent of law violation among the largest corporations in the United States. He did not wish his study to be constrained by the criminal code, and it was his contention that noncriminal *civil* and *regulatory* (or administrative) law violations should also be considered.

All three systems of law—criminal, civil, and regulatory—are concerned with the social control of what has been deemed harmful or injurious conduct by a governmental body. These systems of law all involve proce-

dures set up to adjudicate competing claims and to ascertain responsibility regarding such conduct. **Criminal law** defines harmful conduct as a public matter and mandates the intervention of traditional law enforcement authorities (i.e., police and prosecutors). **Civil law** defines harm as a private matter to be settled by individuals (and their attorneys) as private parties in the courts. **Regulatory law** is concerned with the imposition of rules and standards for business-related activity, and at the federal level involves agencies like the Environmental Protection Agency, the Occupational Safety and Health Administration, and the Securities and Exchange Commission. While the lines of demarcation between these three systems are not always clear, only criminal law allows for the imposition of jail or prison sanctions instead of or in addition to financial penalties, although failure to comply with civil or regulatory rulings may lead to such sanctions. Violation of criminal law carries the greatest moral condemnation, because of the stigma associated with crime (Friedrichs 2007).

In his research, Sutherland (1949) uncovered extensive law violations on the part of corporations in areas such as antitrust (illegal price-fixing and restraint of trade), misrepresentation in advertising, copyright infringement, and unfair labor practices, although only 16 percent of these violations were prosecuted under criminal law. Nevertheless, Sutherland felt justified in calling these violations crimes. In his view, corporations that engaged in harmful conduct were able to avoid the application of criminal law, and the consequent stigma associated with such application, because of their economic and political clout. Sutherland was unwilling to also allow corporations to exert such influence on criminological research.

The legalistic view expressed by Tappan is often associated with the **consensus perspective** on crime. The consensus approach takes the existing criminal law for granted and assumes there is general agreement in society regarding what is right and what is wrong, regarding those behaviors that should be criminalized and those that should not. In contrast, many of Sutherland's followers prefer a **conflict perspective** on crime, viewing definitions of crimes as matters of disagreement, the assertions of economic and political power, and the struggles of competing groups to use the law to their advantage (Chambliss & Seidman 1971; Quinney 1970; Turk 1969; see Chapter 5).

The labeling approach. Thinking about crime with a sociological imagination requires us to move beyond the legalistic-consensus view. **Labeling theory** is a perspective in criminology that does just this. It encourages us to think about crime as "a label that is attached to behavior and events by those who create and administer the criminal law" (Barlow 1996:10). Legislators, for instance, establish legal definitions that label some actions as crimes, and criminal justice officials apply these definitions to particular individuals.

The labeling approach assumes that many (if not most) of us have violated the law at one time or another. If we were never caught, however, we were never officially designated or stigmatized as a criminal. What matters most, then, is the societal reaction to our behavior. Recall the comment of the probation officer whom Marjorie Zatz (1987) cited in her study of the moral panic over Chicano gang violence: "Kids in cowboy hats and pickups, drinking beer and cruising . . . aren't thought of as a gang. But . . . Chicano kids driving lowriders, wearing bandannas, and smoking marijuana . . . are" (p. 136). This type of bias is also documented by William Chambliss (1973) in his oft-cited study "The Saints and the Roughnecks." Chambliss found that the delinquent acts of the lower-class Roughnecks brought forth legal sanctions and community condemnation, while the (quite extensive) delinquencies of the upper-middle-class Saints were treated lightly or ignored. From the perspective of labeling theory, being a criminal is an accorded social status that is relatively independent of actual involvement in lawbreaking (Becker 1963; see Chapter 4).

Critical criminology. Sociological thinking about crime encourages us to consider the ways in which social privilege and influence affect the process of **criminalization**—that is, the process by which the criminal law is selectively applied to social behavior, making some individuals and groups more or less vulnerable or immune from legal control (Hartjen 1974). **Critical criminologists** have been the most radical in their critique of the legal system's bias in the criminalization process, and they have searched for an alternative to the legal definition of crime to broaden the subject matter of criminology. Herman Schwendinger and Julia Schwendinger (1970), for example, advanced a definition of crime as the violation of **human rights**. According to the Schwendingers, egalitarian principles of social justice mandate that all individuals be entitled to certain inalienable rights that are "the fundamental prerequisites for well-being, including food, shelter, clothing, medical services, challenging work and recreational experiences," as well as security from predatory individuals, corporate transgressions, and governmental repression (p. 145). From this perspective, economic or political systems of injustice that deny these rights or that promote racism, sexism, economic exploitation, or environmental degradation, for instance, are proper topics of criminological inquiry.

This human rights definition of crime has been characterized as so broad as to entail the abandonment of criminology as a distinct field of study (Turk 1975). Hence Raymond Michalowski (1985) proposed an alternative concept, that of **analogous social injury**, as a way to broaden our understanding of crime. Michalowski defined analogous social injuries as "legally permissible acts or sets of conditions whose consequences are similar to those of illegal acts" (p. 317).

The controversy over the marketing of infant formula (milk powder) by multinational corporations in underdeveloped countries is an example of the type of behavior that would fall within either the human rights or the analogous social injury definition of crime. Problems associated with the use of infant formula in the poverty-stricken and rural areas of these countries had been reported since the late 1950s. Corporations aggressively marketed the product as a modern alternative to breast-feeding, but illiteracy, lack of clean water, and inadequate refrigeration made use of infant formula more dangerous than mother's milk. Moreover, the cost of infant formula unnecessarily consumed a large portion of a family's income, and parents often diluted the mixture to make it go further. Thus bottle-fed babies in these countries were more likely than breast-fed babies to experience malnutrition, disease, brain damage, and even death. In the late 1970s, public attention to this issue focused on the Swiss-based Nestlé corporation, one of the largest food processors in the world. By the early 1980s, a worldwide protest and boycott finally forced Nestlé to abandon its aggressive marketing techniques, which had included the oversupplying of hospitals with free samples and the bribing of hospital staff to encourage pregnant women to purchase the product (Ermann & Clements 1984; Gerber & Short 1986).

Inequality, Power, and Crime

Sociological analysis of social structure and challenges to the legalistic definition of crime merge in efforts to place questions of **social inequality** and **power** at the center of criminological inquiry. Inequality refers to the unequal distribution of valued social resources such as economic, educational, and cultural opportunities, while power involves the ability to impose one's will on others and to follow a course of action despite attempted resistance or interference from others (Gerth & Mills 1946). According to John Hagan (1989), social relations of power are of great interest to criminologists. "Perhaps this is because crime itself implies a power relationship. To perpetuate crime is often to impose one's power on others, while to be punished for a crime is to be subjected to the power of others. Of course, these power relations are subject to change. Therefore the study of social structure [and crime] often is concerned with changes in power relations . . . over time" (pp. 1–2).

Among the diverse elements of social structure, criminologists have increasingly emphasized the pivotal roles that **class**, **race/ethnicity**, and **gender** play as predominant organizing principles of social life. We have already introduced a number of ways in which these elements of social structure impact on crime. As you read further, their importance will become clearer still.

Class. Concern about the dangerous lower classes threatening the streets of cities can be traced to European social commentaries of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries (Silver 1974). In 1880, Charles Loring Brace described US cities as consisting of

> immigration . . . pouring in its multitudes of poor foreigners who leave . . . young outcasts everywhere in our midst. These boys and girls . . . will soon form the great lower class of our city. They will influence elections; they may shape the policy of the city; they will assuredly, if unreclaimed, poison society all around them. They will help to form the great multitude of robbers, thieves, and vagrants, who are now such a burden upon the law-respecting community. (cited in Platt 1974:373)

Likewise, to this very day, US governmental policy remains focused on the crimes of the lower class. As we have already suggested, however, this is only part of the story of crime, for criminal (or analogous) behavior is prevalent throughout the class structure of society, although the particular form of this criminality tends to vary from class to class (Hagan 1992).

Most people understand social class as a hierarchical relationship that designates individuals on a continuum of lower to middle to upper class based on monetary considerations such as wealth (total assets) or annual income. Viewed in this way, the class structure in the United States is marked by considerable inequality. For example, in 2005 the wealthiest 1 percent of US households owned over one-third of all US wealth, more than the combined assets of the bottom 90 percent of households. Similarly, the top 1 percent earned over 20 percent of all pretax income, about as much as the combined income of the bottom third of the population (Inequality.org 2007; Krugman 2007).

Although economic inequality can be measured in various ways, over the years numerous criminological studies have found that higher levels of inequality are associated with higher levels of predatory street crime among members of the lower stratum of society (see Chapters 4 and 8). On the other hand, crime among the affluent is facilitated by access to organizational resources that are "for white-collar criminals what the gun or knife is for the common criminal—a tool to obtain money from victims" (Hagan 1992:9). Access to these resources enables "individuals operating through formally organized associations and businesses [to] perpetrate larger-scale crimes than individuals acting alone" (Wheeler & Rothman 1982:1406). During the 1980s, for instance, looting by individuals within the savings and loan industry cost taxpayers (who had to bail out insured depositors) billions of dollars. More recently, fraudulent financial activities on the part of Enron and other major corporations cost investors and pension holders countless billions of dollars as well (Reiman 2007; Rosoff et al. 2007; see Chapter 6).

Hagan suggests that classes should be viewed not simply as "'above' or 'below' one another . . . [but in] relation to one another, with each class representing a common structural position within the social organization of work" (1989:125). One of the earliest proponents of this relational concept of class was Karl Marx, a nineteenth-century German social theorist (see Chapter 4). Marx advanced a view of the class structure of **capitalism** as consisting of a division between the **capitalist class** and the **working class**. Capitalism is an economic system based on the principle of private rather than public ownership of the major means of production (i.e., factories, technology, raw materials). The viability of capitalism depends not merely on the vision, initiative, or risk-taking of capitalist entrepreneurs, but also on a supply of wage laborers who are dependent upon capitalists for employment. According to Marx, the relation between capitalists and workers is one in which capitalists remain dominant and enjoy a disproportionate amount of the economic benefit (and the consequent political power and social privilege) gained from the productive enterprise. David Newman aptly summarizes the advantages that accrue to the capitalist class:

> Capitalists have considerable sway over what will be produced, how much will be produced, who will get it, [and] how much money people will be paid to produce it. . . . Such influence allows them to control other people's livelihoods, the communities in which people live, and the economic decisions that affect the entire society. In such a structure, the rich inevitably tend to get richer, to use their wealth to create more wealth for themselves, and to act in ways that will protect their interests and positions in society. . . . Ultimately the wealthy gain the ability to influence important social institutions such as the government, the media, the schools, and the courts, . . . [all] the means necessary to create and promote a . . . version of reality . . . that justifies their . . . actions. (2004:338–339)

Estimates of population distribution into discrete social classes are difficult to make. In fact, as Paul Sweezy has noted, "it would be a mistake to think of a class as perfectly homogenous internally and sharply marked off from other classes. . . . There is variety within the classes; and one class sometimes shades off very gradually and almost imperceptibly into another" (1953:24). Moreover, in addition to the capitalist and working classes, our contemporary class structure includes a **professional-managerial class** (e.g., corporate managers, doctors, lawyers, politicians, university professors) consisting of individuals who may be employed by others but who maintain a good deal of autonomy over their own work and who may exercise control over the work of others. Nevertheless, statistically speaking, the capitalist class is a minority class, while the working class—including the **working poor** (those who work but who don't make enough to support a family) and those who are more or less permanently unemployed—compris-

es the majority of the population (Hagan 1989; Newman 2004; Press 2007b; Wright et al. 1982).

The precise statistical distribution of the population into various classes is less important than the observation that class matters. Your class background affects not only your wealth or income but also your entire experience of life—from your manner of speaking to your expectations about the future. As Michael Lynch observes, class "affects where you grow up, how you grow up, and the quality of the schools you attend. . . . It affects your occupational choices, your career path, whom you marry, and . . . even when you have children. It affects your ability to enter politics, and . . . to influence politics. . . . It affects everyday, mundane decisions, from where you shop, to where you eat, and sometimes, whether you eat at all" (1996:16). Class also affects your incentives and disincentives to engage in criminal behavior as well as the resources you have at your disposal for committing certain types of crimes and for avoiding official sanctions for your actions.

Race/ethnicity. In his book *Race Matters,* Cornel West, a distinguished professor of religion and Afro-American studies, recounts the following incidents:

> Years ago, while driving . . . to teach at Williams College, I was stopped on fake charges of trafficking cocaine. When I told the police officer I was a professor of religion, he replied, "Yeah, and I'm the Flying Nun. Let's go nigger!" I was stopped three times in my first ten days in Princeton for driving too slowly on a residential street with a speed limit of 25 miles per hour. . . . [More recently] I left my car . . . in a safe parking lot . . . to catch a taxi. . . . I waited and waited and waited. After the ninth taxi refused me, my blood began to boil. The tenth taxi refused me and stopped for a kind, well-dressed, smiling fellow citizen of European descent. (1994:xv)

Inequality based on race and ethnicity remains an enduring fact of American life and has been a defining feature of our society since European colonization. This inequality has manifested itself in such phenomena as slavery, the forcible seizure of land from the indigenous population, legalized segregation, political disenfranchisement, lack of economic and educational opportunities, and the like (Mann 1993; Newman 2004).

Biological typologies of race most often divide humans into three major groups—Caucasoid, Mongoloid, and Negroid—characterized by various physical traits transmitted through heredity. But distinct racial groups, if they ever did exist, do not exist today due to interracial mixing resulting from migration, exploration, invasions, and involuntary servitude. Speaking of whites and blacks in the United States, for example, Coramae Richy Mann observes:

> Euro-Americans are a blend of many ethnic and tribal groups that originated in Africa and Europe . . . [and] many millions of Africans were absorbed into the populations of Mediterranean countries such as Spain, Portugal, Italy, and Greece. . . . Furthermore, when we consider the rapes of African female slaves in the early years of this country, and the resultant millions of mulattoes who were the offspring of these forced alliances, . . . [as well as] those children born as a result . . . of interracial mixing, . . . [and] the millions of African Americans who have "passed for white" in this society, . . . the notion of a "black" race becomes somewhat ambiguous. (1993:5)

The concept of ethnicity further complicates the subject. Ethnicity refers to distinctions among groups according to cultural characteristics such as language, religion, customs, and family patterns. Often we speak of groups according to their country of origin, such as Irish Americans, Polish Americans, or Mexican Americans. Some use the term **minority** to refer to those racial and ethnic groups who experience discriminatory treatment from others in society. Today, the term **people of color** is increasingly used to describe nonwhite racial and ethnic groups. Sociologists, however, regard race and ethnicity as social rather than biological constructs that designate the structural position of a group within a society. A dominant group within a society may even impose a particular racial/ethnic label on another. In the United States, for instance, people of mixed racial background were historically classified as black if they had a single drop of "black blood"—the **one-drop rule**—in their hereditary line (Lerner 1997; Wright 1994).

For the purpose of data collection by federal agencies, the US government identifies the following racial/ethnic categories: American Indians/Alaskan Natives, Asians, blacks (African Americans), Hispanics/Latinos, Native Hawaiians and other Pacific Islanders, and whites. US Census data for 2006 indicate that non-Hispanic whites constitute about 65 percent of the population, followed by Hispanics (15 percent), blacks (13 percent), Asians (4 percent), American Indians/Alaskan Natives (1 percent), and Native Hawaiians/Pacific Islanders (less than 1 percent). The 2000 census was the first time the government gave respondents the option of checking more than one racial/ethnic category; in 2006, about 1.6 percent of the population identified themselves in this way (US Census Bureau 2008). Unfortunately, criminal justice data are notoriously deficient in reflecting this racial/ethnic diversity. Most offenders are categorized only as black or white, and Hispanics are usually included as white. Moreover, "the criminal justice officials responsible for classifying persons may be poorly trained and may rely on their own stereotypes" about the appearance of different groups (Walker et al. 2004:14).

As we have already suggested, racial/ethnic stereotypes have influenced media representations, public opinion, and governmental policies regarding crime. The war on drugs in particular has unduly targeted African

Americans, whose arrests and sentences for drug offenses, when compared to those of whites, have been disproportionate to their actual rates of law violation (Blumstein 1993; DiMascio 1997; Tonry 1995; see Chapter 8). Thus, by the mid-1990s, criminologists began raising an alarm about the fact that one-third of all African Americans in their twenties were under control of the criminal justice system (Mauer & Huling 1995); and currently, African Americans constitute about 40 percent of the US prison population (Sabol et al. 2007; see Chapter 12).

Michael Tonry (1995) argues that the racial impact of the war on drugs, broadly defined to include lower-level drug users, was deliberate and foreseeable. Even if justified by higher rates of law violation, a similar policy toward whites would not be tolerated; we would find another way to deal with the problem of crime. Diana Gordon (1994b) believes that this policy reflects a fear of racial minorities and is a smokescreen for our inability or unwillingness to address the problems of the inner city. This likely explains why African Americans are more distrustful than European Americans of the criminal justice system.

The war on drugs is but one example of the **institutional racism** that exists in the United States. Whereas the term *prejudice* refers to the unfavorable attitudes or beliefs held by individuals toward other groups in a

African Americans are overrepresented in the criminal justice system in the United States.

society, the term *institutional racism* refers to the racial inequalities that are produced when persons in power act in discriminatory ways (Mann 1993; Newman 2004).

Gender. The position of women in both society and the field of criminology has undergone considerable change over the years. Before the 1970s, criminologists either ignored or gave only passing notice to female offenders or victims. Albert Cohen, well known for his research on male gang delinquency, dismissed females in this way:

> For the adolescent girl as well as for the adult woman, relationships with the opposite sex and those personal qualities which affect the ability to establish such relationships are central in importance. . . . "Boys collect stamps, girls collect boys." . . . Dating, popularity with boys, pulchritude, "charm," clothes and dancing are preoccupations so central and so obvious that it would be useless pedantry to attempt to document them. (1955:142, 147)

In his influential book *Causes of Delinquency,* Travis Hirschi relegated females to a footnote that said: "In the analysis that follows, the 'non-Negro' becomes 'white,' and the girls disappear" (1969:35). When female offenders were discussed in criminology, they were described in various disparaging ways, such as childish, ugly, masculine, manipulative, sexually unsatisfied, plagued by penis envy, or inherently deceitful (because they could conceal lack of sexual arousal and fake orgasm) (see Balkan et al. 1980; Klein 1973). Similarly, women as victims of crime were either ignored or blamed for their victimization. According to Menachim Amir, the victim-precipitated rape victim "is the one who is acting out, initiating the interaction between her and the offender, and [who] by her behavior . . . generates the potentiality for criminal behavior of the offender or triggers this potentiality, if it existed before" (1971:259).

With these characterizations, criminologists were reflecting the attitudes and stereotypes of their day, attitudes and stereotypes that have historically existed in society at large. In the legal system, for example, women have experienced considerable **institutional sexism**—that is, discriminatory treatment by virtue of their sex. In the 1873 US Supreme Court case *Bradwell v. Illinois,* a woman was denied the right to practice law. One judge wrote: "Man is, or should be, woman's protector and defender. The natural and proper timidity and delicacy which belongs to the female sex evidently unfits it for many of the occupations of civil life" (cited in Lingren & Taub 1993:29). In an 1862 North Carolina Supreme Court case, a judge wrote: "The wife must be subject to the husband. Every man must govern his household . . . [and] there may be circumstances which will mitigate, excuse, and so far justify the husband in striking his wife" (cited in Bonsignore et al. 1994:10). A century later, in Wisconsin in 1977, a judge remarked: "Given

the way women dress, rape is a normal reaction." And in 1982, another Wisconsin judge called a five-year-old sexual assault victim "an unusually sexually promiscuous young lady" (cited in Searles & Berger 1995:179).

The bias in these judicial proclamations is obvious to most of us today, although as we shall see, female *offenders* often receive more lenient treatment in the criminal justice system than their male counterparts. They may be the beneficiaries of paternalistic chivalry, simply be taken less seriously, or be deemed less blameworthy for their crimes (Daly 1994; see Chapters 11 and 12). Nonetheless, criminologists have critiqued outdated stereotypes and given serious attention to women's experience from their point of view (Daly & Chesney-Lind 1988). Understanding this experience, however, requires familiarity with the concept of gender.

Gender refers to the "social statuses and meanings assigned to women and men" (Richardson et al. 1997:31). The social construction of gender begins at birth (or even before birth) when a child is designated as male or female on the basis of its genitalia. The child is named and dressed in such a way as to make this designation evident to observers, who respond to these gender markers by treating those labeled "boys" differently from those labeled "girls." The children respond to this differential treatment by coming to feel and behave differently. As Judith Lorber observes:

> In social interaction throughout their lives, individuals learn what is expected, see what is expected, act and react in expected ways, and thus simultaneously construct and maintain the gender order. . . . Members of a social group neither make up gender as they go along nor exactly replicate in rote fashion what was done before. In almost every encounter human beings produce gender, behaving in the ways they learned were appropriate for their gender status, or resisting or rebelling against these norms. Resistance and rebellion have altered gender norms, but so far they have rarely eroded the statuses. (1997b:43)

Nearly 2 percent of infants are actually born intersexed, with a mixture of male and female biological traits. Those with genitalia considered "ambiguous" are typically assigned at birth as either male or female and treated with surgery and hormonal therapy. This practice has come under criticism by physicians, researchers, and the intersexed themselves (Fausto-Sterling 1993, 2000; Kessler 1998; see Further Exploration, p. 74 and p. 162).

Traditionally, gender socialization has encouraged females to be more supportive, nurturing, and expressive of feelings than males. Girls have been more closely supervised by their families and given less freedom to "sow their wild oats." Boys, on the other hand, have been encouraged to be more aggressive and competitive and to take risks, both with each other and with females. These gendered norms and expectations have been reflected in patterns of criminality and victimization. Males commit the overwhelm-

ing majority of crimes, particularly crimes of violence. Prostitution, shoplifting, and adolescent running away from home are the only crimes for which females have ever constituted a majority of arrests. In general, men are the primary victims of crimes by men, although women experience more sexual victimization—rape and sexual assault, child sexual abuse (including incest), domestic battery, and sexual harassment—especially from men they already know. This male predominance in criminal offending, previously glossed over by criminologists, is now a central concern of criminological inquiry (Messerschmidt 1993; see Chapters 9 and 10).

According to Lorber, "Most societies rank genders according to prestige and power and construct them to be unequal" (1997b:40). Societies that ensure inequality between men and women—that grant men more power, prestige, and privilege—have been labeled **patriarchal**. In American society, women continue, on average, to earn less than men, exercise less authority in the workplace, and exert less political and legal influence. Even sexual relationships have been wedded to power, for traditionally it has been assumed that "not only should a man be taller and stronger than a female in the perfect love-match, but he . . . [should] demonstrate his superior strength in gestures of dominance, which are perceived as amorous" (Griffin 1981:78). Traditional norms have encouraged men to adopt a "conquest mentality" toward women, to "act aggressively if they are to 'get' sex," and to regard women's protestations as efforts to appear respectable rather than as indicating disinterest in having sex with them (Schur 1984:148). Hence it has been common and even socially acceptable for men to impose their sexual desires on women. Given the considerable resistance nowadays (especially by women) to traditional sexual scripts, notions of appropriate sexual expression are clearly in flux. But while many women now feel entitled to pursue and initiate sexual activity, criminologists still think that the domain of sexuality remains "a site where gendered oppression" all too often occurs (Messerschmidt 1993:76).

Clearly, many men do not feel more privileged than women. The pressures to be a breadwinner, to be economically successful, and to compete in the workplace not only with other men but now with women as well, suggest a complex relationship between men's subjective experience and the reality of their institutionalized advantage. It is also clear that not all men, or women, "do gender" according to traditional norms and expectations. Many feel, think, and behave in law-abiding or law-violating ways that defy gender stereotypes. These variations, however, do not defy the pervasiveness of gender. Rather, they speak to the need to recognize that masculinity and femininity are not homogeneous phenomena. There are a variety of masculinities and femininities that are socially constructed in interaction with class, race/ethnicity, sexual orientation, and other social experiences (Messerschmidt 1997).

PART 1

Methods and Theories

2

Crime Data and Methods of Research

SUSAN ESTRICH, PROFESSOR OF LAW AND AUTHOR OF the book *Real Rape,* received a phone call from a woman seeking advice. This woman had heard that Estrich was an expert on rape. Estrich describes the conversation:

> She had been raped by the man she used to date. The relationship had gone sour. . . . He [had] followed her and raped her brutally. She felt violated and betrayed. At first she did not know what to do. She talked to friends and relatives. She decided to report it to the police. She talked to the police and the assistant district attorney. . . . No one said she was a liar, exactly. No one laughed at her, or abused her. They just said that they would not arrest him, would not file charges. It was all explained thoroughly, the way things are done these days by good district attorneys. She had not gone immediately to the doctor. By the time she did, some of the bruises had healed and the evidence of sperm had not been preserved. She had not complained to the police right away. She knew the man. They'd had a prior relationship of intimacy. He was a respected businessman. He had no criminal record. She couldn't believe their response. (1987:28)

When the woman asked her what could be done to get the prosecutors to take action, Estrich, knowing how common this scenario was, knowing how the system worked, replied, "Nothing."

The story Estrich tells illustrates but one way in which our knowledge of crime is limited, incomplete. It provides a striking example of how crime—even reported crime—may fail to become part of the official record. Not all crime is counted as crime. Not all crime seems to count, seems to matter to law enforcement authorities.

Nevertheless, developing a sociological imagination, understanding that personal troubles are also public issues, requires information about what is occurring in the real world. In Chapter 1 we saw how information presented by the media, politicians, and even law enforcement is sometimes misleading, can sometimes distort our knowledge of crime. So how are we to proceed? Sociological thinking does not mean engaging in mere speculation or relying on faith alone. An understanding of crime must also be

grounded in empirical evidence—that is, in measurement and observation of crime phenomena. Some of the evidence used by criminologists comes from statistical data compiled by government agencies. Some of it (both statistical and nonstatistical) is generated independently by criminologists and other researchers. And some of it comes from testimonies by victims and offenders themselves.

Each method of data collection and analysis has inherent advantages and disadvantages. This chapter will familiarize you with the various sources of crime data, help you become critical consumers of this information, and show you how it can be used to enhance your understanding of crime.

Criminologists refer to the methods of measurement and observation that they use to gather information about crime as **social research**. It is this research component of criminology that underlies its claim to be a social science. Being scientific requires using particular procedures or techniques to gather and analyze data and being willing to subject your findings to the critical scrutiny of other researchers, so that bias, error, and fraudulent claims can be detected (Neuman 2003). But being scientific does not, in our view, require you to be value-neutral, to abandon the moral compass that guides your understanding of the world. Indeed, the perspective from which apparently neutral data are analyzed "clearly makes a difference both in the conclusions to be drawn and in the policy implications that emerge from those conclusions" (Grant Bowman 1992:205). This is why theoretical explanation, the subject of later chapters, is so important to empirical research.

Counting Crime: *The Uniform Crime Reports*

The most widely used data on crime in the United States come from the official government statistics that have been published annually since 1930 in the Federal Bureau of Investigation's ***Uniform Crime Reports (UCR)***. The *UCR* have their origins in the efforts of J. Edgar Hoover, director of the Bureau of Investigation (renamed the Federal Bureau of Investigation in 1935), to expand his agency's role in federal law enforcement and the collection of national crime statistics. Hoover received support from the International Association of Chiefs of Police (IACP), whose Committee on Uniform Crime Records published an elaborate guide in 1929 titled "Uniform Crime Reporting: A Complete Manual for Police." This manual proposed a standardized crime classification system to be used throughout the country. The IACP committee developed a schedule or form that all police departments were to voluntarily complete and submit to the federal government for compilation and publication of statistical information. In 1930 the US Congress adopted the committee's recommendations and the FBI began publishing the *UCR*. Currently, most police departments around

the country participate in the national reporting program (Balkan et al. 1980; Mosher et al. 2002; Poveda 1990).

The IACP committee's classification scheme was based on a distinction between offenses that "naturally and most inevitably are reported to police agencies" and offenses that "are less certain of becoming a matter of record" (cited in Balkan et al. 1980:108). This is reflected in the *UCR* in the distinction between **Index crimes**, or **Part I offenses**, and **non-Index crimes**, or **Part II offenses**. In the original formulation, Part I offenses included four **crimes against persons**, or violent crimes: homicide, forcible rape, robbery, and aggravated assault; and three **crimes against property**: burglary, larceny-theft, and motor vehicle theft. The Part II offenses include 21 additional (mostly nonviolent) categories of violations (see Table 2.4).

Annual data on arrests are published for both Part I and Part II offenses, but data on crimes reported by citizens to the police or those that are otherwise known to or observed directly by the police are published only for Part I offenses. Since most reported (or known) crimes do not result in an arrest, data on Part I offenses are the data most often cited in media reports and public discussions about how much crime is occurring in society. (In 1979, arson was added to the list of Part I property crimes, although arson data remain inadequately collected by police departments and are not included in national estimates on crimes reported to the police. Arson is included in arrest data, however.)

The distinction between Index and non-Index crimes assumes that the former are more serious and thereby more reflective of the real crime problem. This assumption, however, is questionable. For example, Table 2.1 shows that 58.4 percent of reported Index crimes in 2007 were for the nonviolent crime of larceny-theft, which includes shoplifting and bicycle theft, offenses that do not rank high in the public's concern about crime (see Roberts & Stalans 2000; Warr 2000). Overall, 87.5 percent of Index crimes were property crimes, while just 12.5 percent were violent crimes. Homicide in particular constituted less than 1 percent. Moreover, the government's preoccupation with drugs is not reflected in the Index crime category, since drug offenses are classified as Part II offenses. Neither are white-collar crimes listed as Index crimes. To the extent that such crimes (e.g., fraud, embezzlement) are even included as Part II offenses, they generally consist of those committed by the less affluent rather than those committed by businesses or corporations.

Table 2.2 presents data on Index crime rates from 1960 to 2007. The crime rate provides a measure of the amount of crime relative to the size of the population. It is calculated by dividing the number of crimes by the size of the population and (according to convention) multiplying this quotient by 100,000. In 2007 the total Index crime rate was 3,730.4 per 100,000 persons in the United States.

Table 2.1 *UCR* Reported Index Crimes (2007)

Type of Crime	Number	Percentage[a]
Violent crimes	1,408,337	12.5
Homicide[b]	16,929	0.2
Forcible rape	90,427	0.8
Robbery	445,125	4.0
Aggravated assault	855,856	7.6
Property crimes	9,843,481	87.5
Burglary	2,179,140	19.4
Larceny-theft	6,568,572	58.4
Motor vehicle theft	1,095,769	9.7
Total Index crimes	11,251,818	100.0

Source: Federal Bureau of Investigation 2007a, tab. 1.

Notes: a. It is possible for a single incident of criminality to include more than one crime; for example, a theft could involve both breaking and entering (burglary) and forceful action against an individual (robbery). In such cases, only the most serious of the offenses is recorded for the purpose of the *UCR* statistical record.

b. Homicide = murder and nonnegligent manslaughter.

Table 2.2 *UCR* Index Crime Rates (1960–2007)

	Total Index Crime Rate	Violent Crime Rate	Property Crime Rate
1960	1,887.2	160.9	1,726.3
1965	2,449.0	200.2	2,248.8
1970	3,984.5	363.5	3,621.0
1975	5,298.5	487.8	4,810.7
1980	5,949.9	596.6	5,353.3
1985	5,224.5	558.1	4,666.4
1990	5,802.7	729.6	5,073.1
1995	5,275.0	684.5	4,590.5
2000	4,124.8	506.5	3,618.3
2005	3,899.0	469.2	3,429.8
2007	3,730.4	466.9	3,263.5

Source: Federal Bureau of Investigation 1976, tab. 2; 1986, tab. 1; 2005, tab. 1; 2007a, tab. 1.
Note: Crime rates = number of crimes per 100,000 population.

Crime rates are the figures most often used to measure increases or decreases in crime over time. Overall, the most dramatic increases in crime rates over the past four to five decades took place at the beginning of that period, during the 1960s and early 1970s. The reasons for this overall rise are complex, but Gary LaFree (1998), in his analysis of these data, attributes it to a general decline in the legitimacy of social institutions (economic, political, and familial) that occurred during that era, which weakened socie-

tal control over individuals and lowered their commitment to the conventional social order. Property crime rates stabilized through the 1980s, although the violent crime rate continued to rise, perhaps because of the increased presence of urban street gangs and the availability of guns among youths (Conklin 2003; Fagan & Wilkinson 1998). In the 1990s the crime rate noticeably declined, and law enforcement, politicians, and the media orchestrated a good deal of fanfare over the apparent success of various crime control policies. While that decline has since tempered, criminologists continue to debate its causes, which we will consider after first addressing some of the limitations of *UCR* data.

Underreporting by Citizens

Evidence from other sources of crime statistics (to be reviewed later) indicates that a large proportion of crime is not reported to the police and hence does not appear in *UCR* data. The reasons for citizen underreporting are numerous. People may believe that a crime is not serious enough to warrant police action, or that the police cannot or will not do anything about it. They may be unaware or uncertain that an actual crime has been committed, or they may feel that some crimes are private matters. Some may be reluctant to inform on the individuals involved in the crime, have something to hide, place a negative value on cooperating with the police, or simply not want to get involved. Some may fear reprisal from the offender or be embarrassed about their own victimization (Sheley 1985).

Most of the reported crimes that are known to the police come to their attention because of citizen reports (Reiss 1971). Hence, fluctuations in reported crime rates over time may be as much a function of changes in the likelihood of citizen reporting as a function of changes in the level of criminal activity itself. Take, for instance, the reporting of theft. Insurance companies generally require that thefts be reported before claims can be settled, making people with theft insurance more likely to report crimes than those who are uninsured. If, over time, the number of people who are insured increases, then the rate of reported thefts may increase as well. Similarly, it is likely that the introduction of the 911 emergency phone number across the country made it easier to call the police, thereby increasing the proportion of crime that was reported (Barkan 2006).

Historically, one of the most significant areas of unreported crime has involved violence against women, such as rape and domestic battery. Women have remained silent about their victimization for many reasons: for example, they may feel humiliated or embarrassed, fear further violence or retaliation by the offender, or fear hostile questioning or disbelief from the police or other criminal justice officials. Since the 1970s, however, the educational and law reform efforts of the contemporary feminist movement have increased our sensitivity to these issues. The development of crisis

centers for rape victims and shelters for battered women, improvements in police training and the addition of female officers, and various legal reforms (e.g., "rape shield" laws that restrict courtroom questioning of victims' prior sexual conduct, mandatory arrest policies for domestic batterers) have encouraged women to come forward with complaints. These changes can increase the official rates of rape and aggravated assault (which may now include more domestic battery cases) even though they are relatively independent of the actual amount of crime that has occurred (Baumer et al. 2003; Berger et al. 1994; Jensen & Karpos 1993).

The Organizational Production of Crime Data

Crime statistics need to be understood as outcomes of organizational processes that are conditioned by "the interpretations, decisions, and actions of law enforcement personnel" (Kitsuse & Cicourel 1963:137). Donald Black (1970), for instance, studied police decisionmaking in Boston, Chicago, and the District of Columbia. He found that the preference, attitude, and class status of the complainant (the person who calls the police) had a significant impact on police officers' decisions to record an incident as a crime. Officers were *more likely* to record a crime when the complainant expressed a preference for formal rather than informal action, was deferential or respectful to the police, and was white-collar rather than blue-collar in status. Black also found that the relational distance between the complainant and the suspect was a factor: the closer the relational distance (e.g., family member versus stranger), the *less likely* the incident was to be recorded.

Several studies have found that the relational distance between complainant and suspect is especially important in police responses to rape. The closer the relational distance, the more likely the police will label the complaint as "unfounded," as not a real rape (Estrich 1987). Often the veracity of a woman's complaint is judged according to the interpersonal context of the incident. Complaints by women whose moral character is questioned or whose perceived carelessness is thought to have made them vulnerable to attack are treated more skeptically (LaFree 1989; Sanders 1980). Among those least likely to have their complaints treated seriously are juvenile runaways, hitchhikers, and prostitutes; those who are raped in situations involving alcohol and drug use; those who willingly enter the offender's home or apartment; and those considered to be partiers, pleasure seekers, or sexually promiscuous. In addition, police officers may distinguish between "good victims" and "bad victims" on the basis of their perception of how well the case is likely to stand up in court. As one investigating officer remarked, "Generally speaking, I believe something happened. I believe what the lady is saying. . . . But I'm also aware that someone else looking at the incident may see it a little differently" (Beneke 1982:152). Another officer put it this way:

> I'm not going to lie to a woman and tell her she's got a case when she hasn't. She'll devote all her time and energy into putting this guy away and it'll be bearing on her mind and then the defense attorney tears her apart and the jury brings back a "not guilty" verdict. . . . Why give anybody false hopes? . . . I've had enough cases in front of juries so I can just about tell which way it's going to go. (pp. 145–146)

(Some of these thoughts probably ran through the minds of the police officers and the assistant district attorney who spoke to the woman whose rape is described at the beginning of this chapter.)

In another study, Barbara Warner (1997) examined the effects of community characteristics on police recording of burglary complaints (911 calls) in 61 neighborhoods in Boston. Warner found that, overall, only 40 percent of the burglary complaints were later verified and recorded by the police as burglaries. The majority of the incidents were downgraded to less serious Part II offenses or recorded as nonoffenses. The proportion of burglary complaints that were recorded as burglaries ranged, across neighborhoods, from 14 percent to 58 percent.

Warner found that burglary recording was *lower* in areas marked by more poverty. She offered several explanations for this finding. The poor generally receive few public services of all sorts, and police services are no exception. Police may view poor neighborhoods as inhabited by morally unworthy people who get what they deserve. Or police may simply feel that there is no reason to write an official burglary report when so many of the residents are without insurance and the likelihood of recovering the stolen goods is unlikely. On the other hand, Warner found that police recording of burglaries was *higher* in neighborhoods that were more culturally diverse and that had more mobile residents (cultural diversity was measured by the percentage of residents who were foreign-born; mobility was measured by the percentage of residents aged five and older who had not lived in the same house for five years). She reasoned that in more heterogeneous and residentially transient communities, police are less able to rely on informal methods of responding to citizens' complaints (e.g., mediation of disputes between neighbors).

Robert McCleary and colleagues (1982) also studied the organizational production of crime data. In one city, the researchers found that crime rates increased when police administrators removed supervisory sergeants from the radio dispatch bureau, the unit responsible for receiving citizen calls and setting priorities for officers' responses to calls. Requests for police assistance that were dispatched immediately were more likely than requests that were delayed to eventually yield an official crime report. When supervisory sergeants were present, dispatchers were relieved of the responsibility of setting priorities and filtering out less serious calls. But when sergeants were unavailable, dispatchers were more likely to order immediate respons-

es, in order to "play it safe" and "cover their asses." Under these conditions, reported *UCR* crimes increased about 20 percent.

In addition, McCleary and colleagues found that the ways in which officers classified offenses could inflate or deflate *UCR* statistics. In one city, uniformed officers were more likely than detectives to classify a broad range of thefts as burglaries. Detectives employed a narrower (and technically accurate) definition of burglary: breaking and entering into a house or enclosed garage. Uniformed officers, on the other hand, recorded breaking through a fence and stealing from a yard as burglaries as well. Differences in such classification decisions increased the number of burglaries in this city by about 150 per month.

Henry Brownstein served more than two years as chief of the Bureau of Statistical Services for New York's Division of Criminal Justice Services (DCJS), where he "was responsible for the collection, maintenance, and dissemination of official crime and criminal justice data" for the state (1996:19–20). In New York, *UCR* data are voluntarily submitted by over 600 local police departments. *UCR* clerks in different locales have the responsibility of completing forms that detail information about crimes reported in their jurisdiction. These clerks are poorly trained and overworked, and experience high turnover rates. They have difficulty completing the forms in ways that allow an understaffed DCJS to clearly differentiate Part I from Part II offenses. It is not always easy, for example, to distinguish murders and nonnegligent (willful) manslaughters, which are Part I offenses, from justifiable homicides, accidental deaths, suicides, and negligent manslaughters. Similarly, the line between Part I aggravated assaults and Part II simple assaults is not always clear-cut. Moreover, police departments in different jurisdictions often compete with each other "to show that they are responsible for a greater share of the problem that resources [they hope will be forthcoming] will be used to solve" (Brownstein 1996:23). This competition creates a problem of duplicate reporting, as departments try to get credit for the same crimes.

Each month the DCJS receives about 800 forms from local police departments. Much discretionary decisionmaking is required to translate these forms into standardized *UCR* categories and to reconcile competing jurisdictional claims. The pressure of FBI deadlines for the submission of *UCR* statistics often means that this work is hastily performed. Brownstein found that it was not unusual for the DCJS to submit the state data for New York before all the localities in New York City had submitted their forms. Hence the data eventually published in New York's own *Crime and Justice Annual Report* were at variance from those received by the FBI.

As noted in Chapter 1, media and law enforcement interests often converge in finding mutual benefit from portrayals of escalating crime. At the same time, there are occasions when public officials downplay concerns

about crime. The Philadelphia Police Department, for example, has been the focus of criticism over a number of years for its use of reporting practices that are designed to minimize official recorded Index crime rates. An audit review of the department's 1998 data, for example, found that it had failed to report some 37,000 Index crimes for *UCR* compilation and publication. Similarly, a study of the Atlanta Police Department found that police officials had downgraded the violent crime rate for the year prior to the city's 1996 Olympics hosting and mayoral election, to make the city appear safer (Conklin 2003; Mosher et al. 2002).

Clearance Rates and Arrest Data

Crimes reported or known to the police are not the only statistical counts of crime included in the *UCR*. Clearance rates and arrest data are other important indicators. The **clearance rate** is essentially the rate of solved crimes. This rate is calculated by dividing the number of reports for each Index crime by the number of arrests for that crime, arriving at a percentage of each crime that is "cleared by arrest." Table 2.3 lists the Index crime clearance rates for 2007. The data show that violent crimes, especially homicide, have higher clearance rates than property crimes. This means, of course, that the chance of the police recovering stolen property is rather slim.

Like official reports, clearance rates are organizationally constructed. While there are times when police departments find lower clearance rates advantageous for requesting resources, a department's image is generally enhanced by a higher clearance rate. Hugh Barlow notes that police will "sometimes go to extraordinary lengths to 'clear' crimes" (1996:44). To illustrate his point, Barlow offers the case of Henry Lee Lucas. In 1983, law enforcement identified Lucas as a serial murderer after he had confessed to nearly a hundred murders across the country (see also Kappeler & Potter 2005). Barlow writes:

Table 2.3 Clearance Rates for *UCR* Index Crimes (2007)

Type of Crime	Percentage
Homicide[a]	61
Forcible rape	40
Robbery	26
Aggravated assault	54
Burglary	12
Larceny-theft	19
Motor vehicle theft	13
Arson	18

Source: Federal Bureau of Investigation 2007a, tab. 25.
Note: a. Homicide = murder and nonnegligent manslaughter.

> By 1984 it was reported that he had confessed to 360 murders, and by 1985 the figure stood at an incredible 600 killings in nearly 30 different states. In that same year, however, the *New York Times* reported that Lucas may actually have killed only one person, his mother! As the story unfolded, it became apparent that Lucas had been pressured by eager police into making confessions so that they could clear their books of unsolved murders. The truth will probably never be known, but most of the murders cleared by Lucas's arrest and "confessions" were not committed by him. (p. 44)

In addition to clearance rates, arrest data can be used to examine the proportion of police activity devoted to Part II offenses. In many respects, the emphasis in the *UCR* on Index crimes misrepresents what the police actually do, since over 80 percent of arrests are for Part II offenses. Table 2.4 provides the percentage breakdown of arrests for these crimes in 2007. Taken together, drug- and alcohol-related arrests constitute the largest group of offenses, nearly a third of all arrests (Part I and Part II). Arrests listed as "all other offenses (except traffic)," a catchall category reflecting a variety of minor state and local laws, constitute over a quarter of all arrests.

Table 2.4 Part II Offenses as a Percentage of *UCR* Arrests (2007)

Type of Crime	Percentage of Arrests
All Part II arrests	85.5
Other assaults	9.2
Forgery and counterfeiting	1.0
Fraud	1.8
Embezzlement	0.2
Stolen property[a]	1.0
Vandalism	2.0
Weapons[b]	1.3
Prostitution and commercialized vice	0.5
Sex offenses[c]	0.6
Drug abuse violations	13.0
Gambling	0.1
Offenses against family and children	1.0
Driving under the influence	10.0
Liquor laws	4.6
Drunkenness	4.1
Disorderly conduct	5.0
Vagrancy	0.2
All other offenses (except traffic)	27.7
Suspicion	< 0.1
Curfew and loitering	1.0
Runaways	0.8

Source: Federal Bureau of Investigation 2007a, tab. 29.
Notes: a. Stolen property = buying, receiving, and possessing.
b. Weapons = carrying, possessing, etc.
c. Sex offenses = all except forcible rape and prostitution.

Finally, *UCR* arrest data also include information about the age, race, and gender of individuals who are arrested. Unfortunately, arrest data by class are not collected for the nation as a whole, although some studies have examined official records from particular localities and found an inverse relationship between class status and arrests—that is, lower-status people had higher arrest rates than higher-status people (Shaw & McKay 1942; Tracy et al. 1990; Wolfgang et al. 1972). Arrest data, however, may not reflect a group's actual rate of law violation, as persons who manage to avoid arrest may nevertheless be extensively involved in crime.

National *UCR* data can be used to construct age-specific, race-specific, and gender-specific arrest rates that allow for comparisons between groups. Such rates are calculated by dividing the number of arrests for individuals in a particular group by the number of persons in that group. Age-, race-, and gender-specific Index crime arrest rates for 2007 are presented in Table 2.5. The data show that arrest rates are highest for adolescents and young adults, African Americans, and males.

As alluded to previously, there are essentially two ways to interpret these arrest rates. They may represent **differential criminal involvement** or **differential likelihood of selection** (Sheley 1985). From this perspective, we can ask whether higher arrest rates are indicative of a group's greater

Table 2.5 Age-, Race-, and Gender-Specific Arrest Rates for *UCR* Index Crimes (2007)

	Violent Crime Arrest Rate	Property Crime Arrest Rate
Age		
10–14	95.7	461.6
15–19	455.0	1,722.0
20–24	412.2	970.7
25–29	318.7	662.6
30–34	233.3	495.2
35–39[a]	193.0	456.7
Race		
White	110.6	346.5
Black	457.8	949.9
American Indian/Alaskan Native	182.2	524.8
Asian/Pacific Islander	29.6	91.8
Gender		
Male	250.2	554.1
Female	54.0	266.7

Sources: Federal Bureau of Investigation 2007a, tabs. 38, 42–43; US Census Bureau 2008, tabs. 7–8.

Notes: Arrest rates = number of arrests per 100,000 population of each group.

a. Arrest rates continue to decline with age.

Arrest rates are influenced by the criminal behavior of individuals as well as the selection criteria used by police to make decisions about whom to arrest.

involvement in *these types of offenses* or whether they are indicative of members' vulnerability to being apprehended by police. It is also possible that both differential involvement and differential selection account for these rates. Throughout this book, we present data that will allow us to assess these differing interpretations.

The Declining Crime Rate of the 1990s

Having considered the limitations of official crime data, we can now examine the declining crime rate of the 1990s. During that decade, national attention often focused on New York City, which previously had a reputation as one of the most dangerous locales in the country. Mayor Rudy Giuliani, a former federal prosecutor, took the reins of city government in 1994, pledging to make New York safer. Giuliani appointed former New York City transit police chief William Bratton to head the city's police department. Under

Bratton's leadership, the New York City Police Department implemented a strategy of aggressive law enforcement against "quality of life" offenses such as jumping subway turnstiles, public drunkenness and underage drinking, truancy, prostitution, panhandling, graffiti writing, and playing loud music in public (Bratton 1998). This approach was based on the **broken windows strategy**, initially developed by criminologists James Q. Wilson and George Kelling (1982)—the idea that leaving broken windows unrepaired sends a message that no one cares about the community, making untended property available for vandals and setting in motion a downward spiral of increasing disorder that emboldens more serious criminals. Thus Bratton hoped that zero tolerance for minor transgressions would have a trickle-down effect on reducing serious crime in the city. Bratton also initiated a computerized system of mapping city "hot spots" to improve police intelligence and deploy officers more effectively. Some NYPD officials, on the other hand, admitted that they felt pressured to downgrade crimes in order to reduce reported rates of serious crime. In a review of the evidence for the nation as a whole, John Conklin (2003) concluded that police enforcement strategies like those adopted in New York may have had an impact on declining crime rates, but police alone did not exert an influence independent of other factors (see also Eck & Maguire 2000; Rosenfeld et al. 2007; Zimring 2007). Moreover, Bratton's use of aggressive "stop and search" techniques led to a marked increase in citizen complaints of harassment and brutality by NYPD officers (D. Anderson 1999; Greene 1999; see Chapter 11).

The age structure of society. Many criminologists attribute the dramatic rise in crime rates during the 1960s and early 1970s to, among other causes, the coming-of-age of post–World War II baby boomers (Cohen & Land 1987; Steffensmeier et al. 1987). Darrell Steffensmeier and colleagues observed that the types of crime measured by the *UCR* seem to "peak in adolescence or early adulthood [and] then decline fairly steadily" (1989:806; see Table 2.5). This pattern, they believe, stems from

> increased sources of criminogenic reinforcement experienced by young people . . . [and] the powerful institutional pressures for conformity that accompany adulthood. Juveniles have not as yet developed either a well-defined sense of self or strong stakes in conformity. . . . They are barred from many legitimate avenues for achieving socially valued goals; their dependent status insulates them from many of the social and legal costs of illegitimate activities; and their stage of cognitive development limits prudence concerning the consequences of their behavior. (pp. 806–807)

As the baby boom generation aged, however, and the size of the youthful population began to decline, property crime rates stabilized (Cohen & Land

1987; Steffensmeier et al. 1987). The violent crime rate, on the other hand, has been more resilient to such demographic shifts, perhaps for reasons noted previously (street gangs and gun possession among youths). As for the 1990s, Conklin (2003) estimated that age composition explains from 8 percent (for motor vehicle theft) to 20 percent (for homicide) of the declining crime rate, depending on the particular Index crime that is being assessed.

Economist Steven Levitt (1999), who gained notoriety for his best-selling book *Freakonomics: A Rogue Economist Explores the Hidden Side of Everything* (Levitt & Dubner 2005), also concluded that changing age structure accounts for only a small proportion of variations in crime rates. More important, Levitt argued in a provocative empirical study conducted with John Donahue, was the effect of the US Supreme Court's 1973 landmark decision in *Roe v. Wade* that legalized abortion in the United States (Donahue & Levitt 2001). Legalized abortion, these two economists argued, reduced the number of unwanted births to low-income women, thus reducing the number of "at risk" disadvantaged youths who might have been prone to criminality.

The econometric statistical methods used by Donahue and Levitt are complex and have provoked an equally complex empirical literature that attempts to rebuff their analysis. One skeptic, Frank Zimring, noted "the extraordinary difficulty of using trends in crime to test the delayed effects of legal change that happened decades earlier" (2007:85). Zimring also examined data that showed no association between legalized abortion and the percentage of "at risk" births, hence undermining one of the key assumptions of Donahue and Levitt's theory. Another skeptic, Richard Rosenfeld, also argued that the economists' theory of abortion, "though not implausible," should have predicted an actual pre-1990s decline (2004:87).

Additional influences. Most criminologists suggest that the declining crime rate of the 1990s can be explained by the confluence of a number of factors, although there is disagreement about which are more important for which types of crime. Alfred Blumstein (2002) believes that stabilization of the crack-cocaine market, gun control measures (e.g., Brady Bill), and a vibrant economy were the most significant factors. Although Conklin (2003) thinks that increasing incarceration rates may have been even more important, Thomas Arvanites and Robert DeFina (2006) confirmed Blumstein's hypothesis about the economy, finding that measures of economic growth were more closely associated with declining *UCR* rates of property crime and robbery than were rates of incarceration. Rick Nevin (2000) even found that environmental policies to reduce the presence of lead in motor-vehicle exhaust and paint were associated with lower crime rates (exposure to lead is associated with cognitive problems that put parents and children at risk of low impulse control and behavioral aggression

[see also Dietrich et al. 2001; Needleman et al. 1996]). Zimring concluded that the crime decline of the 1990s "was a classic example of multiple causation, with none of the many contributing causes playing a dominant role" (2007:197).

Other Counts of Crime

Criminologists do not rely exclusively on police-generated *UCR* data to measure the amount of crime that occurs in the United States. **Victimization surveys** and **self-report surveys** are the two major alternative methods of counting crime in this country.

The National Crime Victimization Survey

In the late 1960s, the President's Commission on Law Enforcement and Administration of Justice recommended the implementation of a national survey of crime victimization to supplement the *UCR.* The commission hoped that this effort would provide information on criminal victimizations that remained unreported or unknown to the police. In 1972, the US Department of Justice's Bureau of Justice Statistics (BJS) began conducting the *National Crime Survey,* now called the *National Crime Victimization Survey (NCVS),* to provide annual estimates of victimization. Although the size of the interviewing sample has varied over the years, in 2006 the survey involved about 135,000 persons (aged 12 years and older) from about 76,000 households (US Department of Justice 2006a). During the interview, which occurs in person or by phone, individuals are asked questions about victimizations they experienced over the previous six months. Follow-up interviews are then conducted every six months over a three-year period. The data gathered from these interviews are used to compute estimates of victimization rates for the nation as a whole.

Until 1992 the BJS survey categorized victimizations as *personal crimes* or *household crimes.* The former included an assortment of violent crimes and thefts; the latter included only thefts. (Questions about homicides were not included because homicide victims obviously cannot respond.) In 1992 the BJS redesigned the survey, reclassifying crimes as either *personal crimes* or *property crimes.* The former include crimes of violence (rape/sexual assault, robbery, and assault) and purse snatching/pocket picking; and the latter include burglary, motor vehicle theft, and other household thefts (see Table 2.6). As with *UCR* data, *NCVS* data indicate that about 75 percent of victimizations are for property crimes. Importantly, however, the *NCVS* also taps a domain of unreported crimes that is missing from the *UCR.* In 2006, only about 49 percent of personal crimes and 38 percent of property crimes were reported to the police, with an overall reporting rate of 41 percent.

Table 2.6 *NCVS* Victimizations Reported to Police (2006)

Type of Crime	Number of Victimizations[a]	Percentage Reported to Police
Personal crimes	6,267,610	49.0
Crimes of violence	6,094,390	48.8
Rape/sexual assault	260,940	39.9
Robbery	712,610	56.8
Assault	5,120,840	48.0
Purse snatching/pocket picking	173,220	55.9
Property crimes	18,915,750	37.8
Household burglary	3,560,920	49.5
Motor vehicle theft	992,260	80.9
Theft[b]	14,362,570	31.9
Total crimes	25,183,350	40.6

Source: US Department of Justice 2006a, tab. 91.

Notes: a. Includes completed crimes, attempted crimes, and threats to commit crimes.

b. Includes crimes previously classified as "personal larceny without contact" and "household larceny."

The *NCVS* suffers from some of the same problems as the *UCR*. There are no questions, for instance, about drug offenses or white-collar crimes. Homeless individuals are not sampled. Business victimizations have been omitted since the early years of the survey. In addition, many respondents forget victimizations, are unaware of the victimizations of family members, or report crimes that occurred before the six-month period. And college-educated respondents, who have more experience with test-taking, may report a higher proportion of their victimizations compared to less-educated individuals (Sykes & Cullen 1992).

The survey is administered in a two-stage process. Respondents are first asked several screening questions pertaining to the number of times they have been victimized by each type of offense. If they answer in the affirmative, they are then asked a number of follow-up questions regarding details of the crimes and characteristics of the offenders. This mode of questioning has been particularly problematic when the information sought concerns rape.

Prior to the 1992 survey redesign, the first stage of the interview asked respondents questions about whether someone had tried to "take something from them, rob them, beat them, attack them with a weapon, or steal things from them," none of which specifically mentioned rape. Instead, indirectly, another question asked respondents whether they had been attacked "in some other way" (Eigenberg 1990:657). The BJS estimated that the survey redesign alone (which included more direct questioning about rape) more than doubled the reported rate of rape, although that rate declined thereafter (Rand et al. 1997). Still problematic, however, is the fact that victims of rape and domestic violence may be asked about their experiences while the perpetrator (e.g., spouse or partner) is in the room with them.

In contrast to *UCR* arrest data, the *NCVS* contains information on the social background of victims (see Table 2.7). To a large extent, these victimization data mirror the data on offenders: victimization rates, like offender rates, are higher for adolescents and young adults, lower-income groups, African Americans and Hispanics, and males. However, the variance between males and females in *NCVS* data is much smaller than in *UCR* data, perhaps because females are more likely to be victims of sexual violence.

Self-Report Surveys

Another source of quantitative crime data falls under the rubric of self-report surveys. Here respondents are asked to provide information on offenses they have committed. The first known self-report survey was conducted by Austin Porterfield (1943) with a sample of adolescents and young

Table 2.7 *NCVS* Victimization Rates by Age, Income, Race, Ethnicity, and Gender (2006)

	Personal Victimization Rate	Property Victimization Rate
Age		
12–15	47.8	n/a
16–19	52.8	n/a
20–24	45.1	n/a
25–34	36.6	n/a
35–49	20.6	n/a
50–64	13.6	n/a
65 +	3.9	n/a
Income		
< $7,500	64.6	217.3
$7,500–14,999	45.9	195.7
$15,000–24,999	31.4	183.1
$25,000–34,999	34.5	179.4
$35,000–49,999	22.5	166.2
$50,000–74,999	24.5	166.8
$75,000 +	14.6	162.0
Race[a]		
White	23.9	168.7
Black	32.9	186.8
Other	20.4	137.7
Ethnicity[a]		
Hispanic	28.4	211.7
Non-Hispanic	24.9	154.7
Gender		
Male	27.4	n/a
Female	23.4	n/a

Source: US Department of Justice 2007b, tabs. 2–3, 5, 7, 14, 17–18, 20.

Notes: Personal victimization rate = number of victimizations per 1,000 persons age 12 or older. Property victimization rate = number of victimizations per 1,000 households.

a. Refers to head of household.

n/a = not available.

adults in Fort Worth, Texas. Porterfield was interested in comparing the law-violation rates of youths who had juvenile-court records, with college students who did not. His survey results revealed comparable rates of crime among these two groups. Porterfield explained his findings in terms consistent with what later became known as labeling theory, suggesting that the higher-class status of college youth had insulated them from arrest (see Chapters 1 and 4).

Self-report surveys, like victimization surveys, tap into a domain of crime that is largely missing from the official record. Unfortunately, there have been few self-report surveys conducted with adults, and some of these have been limited to incarcerated offenders. Most self-report surveys have been conducted with adolescents, often administered in high school settings.

Self-report surveys suffer from memory problems of those who take them, both the forgetting of offenses and the reporting of offenses outside of a study's time frame (usually one year prior). Overall, criminologists have found that the surveys contain little distortion due to respondents' deception, but because some evidence suggests that African American youths may underreport the extent of their official police records, some researchers suspect that they may also underreport delinquency. Perhaps these youths are more distrustful of how the survey results will be used, or perhaps they dispute the validity of the official charges against them (Hindelang et al. 1981; Mosher et al. 2002; Walker et al. 2004).

These limitations notwithstanding, a large body of adolescent self-report research indicates that delinquent behavior is widespread among youths from *all* social backgrounds. Moreover, the studies that suggest class and race parity in law violation are at variance with *UCR* arrest rates, and these findings have generated a great deal of controversy (Tittle & Meier 1990; Tittle et al. 1978). They not only raise the specter of discrimination by law enforcement, but also call into question theories of delinquency based on economic and minority-group disadvantage. If delinquency is viewed primarily as a lower-class or racial minority-group problem, as liberals maintain, then the root causes of crime will be sought in the social conditions associated with lower-class and disadvantaged communities. If, on the other hand, there is little relationship between class, race, and delinquency, then the causes can be attributed to factors that affect all social groups (e.g., declining moral values, low family cohesion).

Michael Hindelang and colleagues were among the first to argue that the discrepancy between official measures (*UCR* arrests) and self-report measures of delinquency was "largely illusory," because the two sources of data did not "tap the same domain of behavior" (1978:995–996). Self-report surveys, they observed, generally ask about a wider range of behaviors than are reported in the *UCR,* and are skewed toward less serious activities that remain largely "outside the domain of behavior that elicits official atten-

tion." Thus, Hindelang and colleagues argued, there is no relationship between class, race, and *less serious* delinquency, but the official data do provide a valid measure of the *more serious* youthful offenses that are of primary concern to law enforcement authorities.

In another important study, Delbert Elliott and Suzanne Ageton (1980) examined race and class differences for different categories of self-reported offenses based on the *National Youth Survey (NYS),* conducted by the Behavioral Research Institute at the University of Colorado: predatory crimes against persons (e.g., assault, robbery), predatory crimes against property (e.g., burglary, auto theft), illegal service crimes (e.g., prostitution, selling drugs), public disorder crimes (e.g., carrying a weapon, disorderly conduct, marijuana use), status offenses (e.g., running away, truancy), and hard drug use (e.g., heroin, cocaine). Elliott and Ageton found statistically significant race differences for property crimes and class differences for violent crimes (i.e., higher rates for African American and lower-class youths) but not for the other offense categories. They also found that most of the race and class differences, to the extent they existed, stemmed from a small number of high-frequency or chronic offenders who inflated the overall rates of their respective groups (see also Tracy et al. 1990; Wolfgang et al. 1972). Elliott and Ageton concluded that the differences between their findings and those of earlier self-report studies were "the result of differences in the specific [self-report] measures used" (p. 95).

In analyses of subsequent *NYS* samples, Delbert Elliott and David Huizinga confirmed the results for class variations but not race variations, which suggests that racial influences (to the extent they exist) may best be explained by class influences (Elliott & Huizinga 1983; Huizinga & Elliott 1987). Regardless, the self-report research of Elliott and colleagues points to an important distinction between the **prevalence of offending** and the **incidence of offending**. Prevalence refers to the proportion of a particular group that has engaged in law violation, while incidence refers to the frequency of offending within the subgroup of offenders (Paternoster & Triplett 1988). The theoretical significance of this distinction has been noted by Alfred Blumstein and Elizabeth Grady: "It is reasonable to expect . . . that one set of factors distinguishes between those persons who become involved in crimes the first time and those who do not, and that a different set of factors distinguishes those who persist in crime once involved, from those who discontinue criminality at an early age" (1982:265).

Bradley Wright and colleagues (1999) are noteworthy for adding a new twist to sorting out the class-delinquency relationship. Using data from New Zealand, they found that low social class promotes delinquency by "increasing individuals' alienation, financial strain, and aggression, and by decreasing [their] educational and occupational aspirations" (p. 176). High social class, on the other hand, promotes delinquency by increasing individuals'

inclination toward risk-taking, insulating them from adverse social sanctions, and decreasing their commitment to conventional moral values.

Drug surveys and drug scares. Drug surveys are a special type of self-report research. Since 1975, the Monitoring the Future (MTF) project at the University of Michigan's Institute for Social Research, under the direction of Lloyd Johnston, has conducted annual surveys of drug use among high school seniors (Johnston et al. 2007). It is not unusual for data released from this and similar reports to become the source of media-generated crime waves or drug scares.

In one study, James Orcutt and J. Blake Turner (1993) analyzed how *Newsweek* magazine distorted statistical results from the annual MTF survey to make claims about an impending cocaine epidemic. In July 1986, the Institute for Social Research planned to release a study of 1975–1985 drug use trends among high school seniors. But as early as March 17, in a cover story titled "Kids and Cocaine," *Newsweek* scooped the other national media by publishing results from this report, along with an interview with Johnston, about a "coke plague" (Morganthau 1986:63).

The MTF data indicated that 30-day prevalence and annual prevalence rates (the proportion of youths using illegal drugs) had risen dramatically from 1976 to 1979. Then, drug use *overall* declined until 1985, when the downward trend abated (Johnston et al. 1986). The *Newsweek* story, however, focused on the cocaine statistics, which did reflect an increase that Johnston and colleagues characterized as "disturbing" (1986:48). But while Johnston and colleagues had emphasized the increase in "current use" of cocaine (30-day prevalence), current users constituted only 6.7 percent of high school seniors, a proportion that hardly substantiated *Newsweek*'s claims about a cocaine plague. *Newsweek* decided to focus instead on the 17.3 percent "lifetime" prevalence rate—that is, the proportion of seniors who had used cocaine at any time in their lives—even though the MTF data indicated that lifetime prevalence had in fact remained fairly stable since 1979.

The "Kids and Cocaine" article made the case for a "cocaine [plague] . . . seeping into the nation's schools" by contrasting the 1975 lifetime rate (9.0 percent) with the higher 1985 rate (17.3 percent), which, as *Newsweek* underscored, amounted to a near doubling of cocaine use (Morgenthau 1986:63). It did *not* note, however, that the increase that had occurred prior to 1980 dwarfed the 1980–1985 rise. Including the 1975–1980 data would have shown that the real period of increased cocaine use occurred prior to the emergence of the so-called plague. Then *Newsweek* constructed a glossy, colored graph that accentuated the annual changes in the 1980–1985 period, which pictorially transformed "statistically nonsignificant fluctuations . . . into striking peaks and valleys" and an illusion of increased use overall (Orcutt & Turner 1993:194).

In the late 1980s, when MTF data showed a decline in cocaine use among high school seniors, as well as a decline in the use of other drugs, the cocaine epidemic no longer seemed newsworthy and, ironically, *Newsweek* reported that "in their zeal to shield young people from the plague of drugs, the media and many drug educators have hyped the very real dangers" of cocaine (Martz 1990:74). Between 1990 and 2007, monthly use of cocaine continued to decline, while yearly use remained stable (see Table 2.8). Monthly and yearly use of marijuana, the most widely used illegal drug, also declined, as did use of alcohol and cigarettes, the most widely used drugs that are legal for adults (but not youths) to use. (See Table 8.3, p. 294, for data on self-reported drug use by race/ethnicity.)

The Problem of White-Collar Crime

A major limitation of the three sources of statistical crime data discussed thus far—the *UCR,* the *NCVS,* and self-report surveys—is their lack of attention to white-collar crime. In this regard, Edwin Sutherland's (1949) and Marshall Clinard and Peter Yeager's (1980) seminal analyses of corporate crime remain the definitive research works.

Sutherland compiled data on law violations of the 70 largest US corporations (the corporations had an average life span of about 45 years). It is noteworthy that Dryden Press, the publisher of Sutherland's book, forced him to omit the actual names of the corporations for fear of lawsuits. It was not until 1983, three decades after Sutherland's death, that a new uncut edition that included the names of the companies was published.

As noted previously, Sutherland did not limit his research to violations of criminal law but included violations of civil and regulatory law as well

Table 2.8 Self-Reported Drug Use by High School Seniors (1990–2007)

	Percentage Using over Past 30 Days			Percentage Using over Past Year		
	1990	2000	2007	1990	2000	2007
Marijuana/hashish	25.7	21.6	18.8	27.0	20.4	18.5
Cocaine	6.7	2.1	2.0	5.3	5.0	5.2
Hallucinogens	3.8	2.6	1.7	7.6	8.1	5.4
Heroin	0.3	0.7	0.4	1.1	1.5	0.9
Amphetamines	6.8	5.0	3.7	15.8	10.5	7.5
Barbiturates	2.4	3.0	2.7	4.9	6.2	6.2
Alcohol	65.9	50.0	44.4	85.6	73.2	66.4
Cigarettes	30.1	31.4	21.6	n/a	n/a	n/a
Steroids	n/a	0.8	1.0	1.5	1.7	1.4

Source: Monitoring the Future 2007, tabs. 2–3.
Note: n/a = not available.

(see Chapter 1). Sutherland believed it was appropriate to include the full range of offenses because, in his view, corporate law violations were *potentially* punishable by criminal law, contained the essential elements of criminal intent, and caused harm that was equivalent to or exceeded the harm caused by conventional crimes.

During the period covered by his research, Sutherland uncovered 980 legal decisions against these corporations. While only 16 percent of these were for violations of *criminal* law, about 60 percent of the corporations did have at least one criminal conviction, and among these, the average was four apiece. Overall, each of the 70 corporations had at least one decision against it. Two companies had as many as 50 decisions against (Armour & Company, Swift & Company), one had 40 (General Motors), and two had 39 (Montgomery Ward, Sears Roebuck). Over 90 percent of the corporations had four or more violations, perhaps qualifying them for prosecution as habitual or repeat offenders. The largest proportion of violations was for restraint of trade (e.g., price-fixing, monopolistic practices) (31 percent), followed by infringement on patents, copyrights, and trademarks (23 percent), unfair labor practices (16 percent), and misrepresentation in advertising (10 percent). Other violations included commercial and political bribery, tax fraud, manipulation of the stock exchange, short weights and measures, misrepresentation of financial statements, and fraudulent bankruptcies. Importantly, Sutherland found that about half of the companies had engaged in law violations at their origin or in their early years of operation, making crime an essential part of their initial period of capital accumulation.

Clinard and Yeager collected data on legal actions initiated against the 477 largest US manufacturing corporations during 1975 and 1976. Clinard and Yeager found that about 60 percent of the companies had at least one action against them, 50 percent had two or more, and 18 percent had five or more. Over 75 percent of the cases involved what Clinard and Yeager classified as manufacturing violations (consumer health and safety), labor violations (worker health and safety, wage and hour violations, employment discrimination), and environmental violations (pollution). The largest corporations were the chief offenders, with just 8 percent of the companies accounting for over half of all violations. The most frequent offenders were in the motor vehicle, oil refinery, and pharmaceutical industries. Less than 3 percent of the imposed legal sanctions were for criminal offenses, however, and less than 1 percent involved nonmonetary criminal penalties against an officer of the corporation.

The task of collecting such data is daunting, and no criminologist has been able to surpass the scope of Sutherland's or Clinard and Yeager's work. Perhaps if there were a *UCR* or *NCVS* for corporate law violations, the media would report more often on corporate crime waves or annual fluctuations in this serious form of criminality.

Other Research Methods

The various methods that criminologists employ to acquire statistical counts of crime represent only one element of the methodological diversity in criminology. Other methods include experimental and evaluation research, observational field research and in-depth interviewing, and historical and comparative criminology.

Experimental and Evaluation Research

Practitioners of the hard sciences in disciplines like biology, chemistry, and physics, as well as applied fields such as medical research, are noted for their use of the **experimental method** (Neuman 2003). Researchers in the social sciences are less known for the experiments they conduct, but this work is rather extensive, particularly in the discipline of psychology. Many of these experiments have direct application to the field of criminology.

In an experiment, the researcher exposes a group of subjects, the *experimental* group, to a particular stimulus and then monitors or observes the effects of this stimulus on the subjects' behavior or attitudes. The postexperimental condition is then compared to that of a *control* group, a group of subjects who are not exposed to the experimental stimulus. If the participants in the experiment have been randomly assigned to the experimental and control groups, ensuring that they did not differ significantly in their preexperimental condition, then the researcher may be able to attribute a change in the experimental group to exposure to the experimental stimulus.

Media experiments. One area of experimental research that is relevant to criminology deals with the effects of the media on aggressive behavior. In a classic series of experiments, Albert Bandura (1973) exposed groups of nursery school children, in person and through film, to an adult who hit and kicked an inflated Bobo doll. Bandura observed that these children, in comparison to a control group of children who did not witness the Bobo doll episode, played more aggressively for a short period following the exposure. Bandura reasoned that, through imitation and modeling, children will duplicate or copy the behavior of others. However, when Bandura introduced a number of additional variables, the experimental results changed. For example, when the adult model was shown being scolded or spanked for striking the doll, the children did not respond in an aggressive manner. This study and other research suggest that appearance of the undesirable consequences will inhibit children's subsequent aggression (Goldstein 1986; Surette 1998).

Experimental research also indicates that some individuals may be more *predisposed* to the influence of the media than others. For instance, boys are more affected than girls, and children from families that emphasize nonaggression (e.g., families in which parents teach children to be kind to

others) are less likely to be influenced (Goldstein 1986). Ray Surette notes that "whether or not a particular depiction will cause a particular viewer to act more aggressively is not a straightforward issue. An aggressive effect largely depends on the interaction between each individual viewer, the content of the portrayal, and the setting in which the portrayal is viewed" (1998:125). The following are among the many conditions that appear to increase the violence-inducing impact of media exposure: the details of the media portrayal and the viewer's real-life circumstances are similar, the media aggression is portrayed as justifiable and in a way that does not stir distaste, and aggressive peer models are present during the viewing.

Experiments have also been conducted to measure attitudinal changes among subjects. Jeffrey Goldstein and colleagues (1975), for example, exposed adult males in four countries (Canada, England, Italy, and the United States) to a variety of full-length films. Following the experiment, subjects were asked to assign minimum prison sentences for persons convicted of a variety of crimes. Goldstein and colleagues found that the subjects who viewed films with aggressive conduct (e.g., *Clockwork Orange, Straw Dogs*) were more likely than those who had viewed nonaggressive films (e.g., *Fiddler on the Roof*) to assign more severe prison sentences.

Edward Donnerstein and colleagues (1987) used full-length, R-rated examples of the "slasher" film—*Texas Chainsaw Massacre, Maniac, I Spit on Your Grave, Toolbox Murders,* and *Vice Squad*—to measure attitudinal change among male college students. This type of film commonly includes female victims and the juxtaposition of explicitly violent scenes with erotic scenes. Donnerstein and colleagues found that over the course of viewing several films, the students became more desensitized to the violence (they reported seeing fewer violent and offensive scenes) and rated the films as more enjoyable and less degrading to women. In the next stage of the experiment, the subjects viewed a videotaped reenactment of a rape trial that was based on the transcript of an actual trial. In comparison to control-group subjects who had not seen the films, subjects in the experimental group expressed less sympathy for the rape victim and perceived her as less worthy and less attractive. They also judged the defendant to be less responsible for the rape and judged the victim to have offered less resistance and received less injury. When female college students were included in a similar experiment, they experienced somewhat less desensitization but did have a negative reaction to the rape victim in the videotaped enactment (Krafka 1985). Other research found that male viewers enjoyed these types of films more when accompanied by female companions, while female viewers enjoyed them more (and found their male companions more attractive) when the male companions displayed a bravado attitude toward the violence (Zillman et al. 1986).

There is obviously a great deal of difference between the artificial climate of an experiment and the real world, and between behavioral aggres-

sion and attitudinal change on the one hand, and criminal violence on the other. It is also possible that the persons already predisposed to aggression and violence are the ones most likely to seek out these types of media and thus have the opportunity to be influenced by them (Surette 1998). Even the strongest proponents of the "media violence causes aggression" hypothesis acknowledge the reciprocal relationship over time between viewing aggression and acting aggressively (Huesmann & Eron 1986). In other words, viewing violence increases behavioral aggression, but acting aggressively also increases violent viewing.

Moreover, surveys that have attempted to correlate youths' exposure to media violence with aggressive behavior and violent delinquency have yielded inconsistent results (Hartnagel et al. 1975; Surette 1998). Some longitudinal research has found that viewing media violence during childhood is positively correlated with aggressive behavior in both adolescence and adulthood (Strasburger & Wilson 2002). On the other hand, a study of 281 metropolitan areas found that communities' exposure to television violence (as measured by A. C. Nielsen Company estimates of local audience size for violent programs) was inversely related to *UCR* violent crime rates, perhaps because "high levels of television viewing imply that residents are spending large amounts of time within the relatively safe confines" of their homes (Messner 1986:230).

For some, however, the home may not represent safe confines. When Diana Russell (1982) asked 930 women whether they had "ever been upset by anyone trying to get you to do what they'd seen in pornographic pictures, movies, or books," about 10 percent responded yes. Among those women who reported being raped by their husbands or ex-husbands, nearly 25 percent responded yes. Russell argued that pornography is sometimes used "to try to persuade a woman or a child to engage in certain acts, to legitimize the acts, and to undermine resistance, refusal, or disclosure" (1988:63). We will discuss this issue further in Chapter 10.

The experimental media studies, however limited, do leave us with much food for thought. Surette (1998) notes an evolving consensus among experimental researchers that the media does play a causal role in behavioral aggression. Four prominent health associations—the American Medical Association, the American Academy of Pediatrics, the American Psychological Association, and the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry—have issued a joint statement expressing their conviction that "prolonged viewing of media violence can lead to emotional desensitization toward violence in real life" as well as "increases in aggressive attitudes, values and behaviors, particularly in children" (cited in Holland 2000:A1; see also Strasburger & Wilson 2002).

Nonetheless, according to Surette, the issue for most researchers "comes down not to the existence of an effect but to the magnitude of the

effect" (1998:128). The same levels of "explained variance" in aggression—that is, "the proportion of the changes in aggression that can be statistically associated with the media"—have been interpreted by some researchers as important and by some researchers as trivial. Surette is persuaded, however, that the experimental research clearly shows that only the "unambiguous linking of violent behavior with undesirable consequences or motives appears capable of inhibiting subsequent aggression" in experimental subjects exposed to violent media.

Policy evaluation: Mandatory arrest of women batterers. **Evaluation research** is a type of applied research concerned with assessing the impact of particular policies (Neuman 2003). In criminology, there have been many proposals offering diverse recommendations for reducing crime. Evaluation research helps us determine the extent to which crime reduction strategies have had the desired effects, and it allows us to base our conclusions on more than hunch or intuition. While evaluation research can entail a variety of methods, one type utilizes experimental or quasi-experimental designs.

Traditionally, police have been reluctant to make arrests in cases of domestic violence involving battered women, viewing such incidents as private matters and as diversions from "real" police work (Miller 1993; Sherman & Berk 1984). Some departments have even instituted explicit policies against arrest. Feminists' critique of this hands-off approach led criminologists to experiment with different methods of intervention. In a landmark "field experiment" conducted in the early 1980s, Lawrence Sherman and Richard Berk (1984) randomly assigned police officers in Minneapolis to three experimental groups. In one, the officers merely advised the parties and attempted to mediate the dispute; in another, they ordered the offender out of the house for a period of about eight hours; and in the third, they made an arrest. To monitor occurrence of further violence, victims were contacted every two weeks for six months, and official records were examined. The findings indicated that the arrest option resulted in significantly less violence during the follow-up period.

Encouraged by these findings, police departments around the country began to adopt mandatory arrest policies, and the National Institute of Justice funded several replication experiments in other cities (Mignon & Holmes 1995; Miller 1993). But since each experiment was conducted a little differently, the results were inconsistent. In all the cities studied, arrest appeared to deter batterers in the short run, for at least 30 days (Jones 1994). In some cases, arrest appeared to deter batterers for a six-month period, as it had in Minneapolis, but in other instances arrest either had no impact or was associated with *increased* battering over the course of the study period (Berk et al. 1992; Dunford et al. 1990; Pate & Hamilton 1992; Sherman & Smith 1992). In a (nonexperimental) statistical analysis of vic-

timization data, Lisa Dugan and colleagues (2003) found that victims in states with mandatory arrest laws were no more likely than victims in states without these laws to report incidents to the police, and third-party witnesses were less likely to report incidents when mandatory arrest policies were in place. Dugan (2003) also found that cities with mandatory arrest laws had higher rates of spousal homicides against wives.

Lawrence Sherman (1992) and others have warned that mandatory arrest policies could backfire by making some offenders even more angry and hostile toward their accusers, and he recommended that these policies be repealed. Other researchers have disagreed, however, believing that an association between arrest and increased battering does not warrant the conclusion that arrest backfires and causes increased violence. According to Ann Jones, there is "a big difference between *failing to stop* violence and *causing* violence to escalate" (1994:159). J. David Hirschel and Ira Hutchinson add that even if arrest is not effective in deterring violence, it is "a more conscionable choice than nonarrest," since nonarrest legitimates abuse and leaves victims to fend for themselves (1992:73).

A number of explanations have been offered for the discrepant research findings. In some studies there was considerable subject attrition, with less than half of the victims remaining in the interview sample by the end of the study period (Miller 1993; Sherman & Smith 1992). In other instances police officers did not implement the mandatory arrest policy, believing that the women were not really in dangerous situations, or if they were, that the women had chosen to remain in those situations (Ferraro 1989). When officers received more training regarding the problem of domestic violence, however, they were more likely to implement the policy (Mignon & Holmes 1995). Another variation in the studies involved the length of time arrested batterers were held in custody, which ranged from a couple of hours to over a week (Sherman et al. 1991). Moreover, those who were arrested were not necessarily prosecuted and convicted. One study found that those who were prosecuted and subsequently served jail time *and* a period of probation had lower battering rates than those who were prosecuted and subsequently received jail time *or* probation (Thistlethwaite et al. 1998).

Finally, there were sociodemographic variations in the experimental findings. Mandatory arrest was more effective in deterring offenders who had a greater stake in conformity. Studies consistently showed that those who were employed were more likely to be deterred than those who were unemployed (Berk et al. 1992; Pate & Hamilton 1992; Sherman & Smith 1992). Some studies also found that married men, high school graduates, and whites were more likely to be deterred than unmarried men, high school dropouts, and blacks; and men without prior arrest records were more likely to be deterred than men with prior arrest records (Maxwell et al. 2002; Moore 1997; Sherman 1992).

Sherman argues that "even in cities where arrest reduces domestic violence overall, as an unintended side effect it may increase violence," especially against poor victims who have few alternative resources (1992:19). Thus he believes that police officers should have options when confronting domestic violence (offering to take the victim to a shelter, for example), rather than being shackled by a policy of mandatory arrest. Dugan's research (2003) suggests that strengthening civil protection and child custody provisions for women, and increasing penalties for men who violate these orders, may have a greater impact on reducing domestic violence than mandatory arrest.

Berk and his colleagues, on the other hand, believe that mandatory arrest studies do not offer any definitive policy implications other than "the general warning that a particular arrest will not necessarily lead to a beneficial outcome" (1992:706). The findings, they add, "do not provide a sound rationale for abandoning" mandatory arrest as a reasonable strategy for combating domestic violence. Other researchers are more certain in their support of the mandatory arrest approach, believing that women need *more* law enforcement not less (Grant Bowman 1992; Jones 1994). Many women, especially poor inner-city women who cannot afford to leave public housing or women who are isolated in rural areas, are "sitting ducks" for further assault if there are no serious consequences for offenders. A comprehensive program of expanded community services for victims and offenders (e.g., shelters, counseling), in conjunction with effective law enforcement, may constitute the best strategy overall (Miller 1993; Sullivan 1997; Visher et al. 2008; Websdale 1995).

Observational Field Research and In-Depth Interviewing

Perhaps the most exciting area of criminological research entails researchers hitting the streets to meet, observe, and interact with people in their natural environments. This method, originally developed by cultural anthropologists, is known as **ethnography** (*ethno* meaning "people" or "folk" and *graphy* meaning "to describe") or **observational field research**. The earliest ethnographic studies of crime in the United States were conducted by sociologists at the University of Chicago in the first half of the twentieth century. Robert Park, influenced by his background as a journalist, encouraged his contemporaries to leave the confines of the libraries and get their hands dirty by hanging out on street corners or in barrooms, hotel lobbies, and the like, to see what was "really happening" in society (Neuman 2003).

Gaining access to and the confidence of subjects are key issues in field research. Occasionally, opportunities present themselves by accident, as was the case for Patricia Adler and Peter Adler (1983), who became friendly with neighbors who turned out to be upper-echelon marijuana and cocaine

traffickers (i.e., traffickers who earned upward of half a million dollars a year). Usually, however, a more concerted effort to locate subjects is required. Philippe Bourgois (1995), for instance, sought out people involved in the drug trade by moving to a tenement in an impoverished Puerto Rican neighborhood of East Harlem, New York. He lived there for five years in a community that was flooded with illegal drugs.

Over a 10-year period of research, Martin Sanchez Jankowski (1991) became intimately acquainted with the members of 37 street gangs in Los Angeles, New York, and Boston. Sanchez Jankowski did "not simply show up on their streetcorners and say, 'I am a professor and I want to study you'" (p. 9). He first contacted knowledgeable persons—social workers, clergymen, community activists—who arranged for him to meet with gang leaders. When he explained to the gang leaders that he was a professor writing a book comparing gangs in different cities, most of them were intrigued by the idea and curious about how other gangs operated.

Sanchez Jankowski still had to surmount a number of obstacles before he was accepted by gang members. A criminologist's class, race/ethnicity, or gender, for example, may create barriers between researcher and subject. Sanchez Jankowski's ethnic background was both a plus and a minus. He is Latino; the Polish portion of his surname comes from his adopted father. Since he is not white, Sanchez Jankowski was more easily accepted by Latino and African American gang members. He had more difficulty, however, with white and Asian gangs. The Irish, on the other hand, were an exception to this rule. Because he was not Puerto Rican, the ethnicity of the Irish group's rival gang, they did not view him as a threat and allowed him access to their milieu.

Similarly, Bourgois comments on how gender posed a barrier to his research: "I faced the inescapable problem of how—as a male—I would develop the kinds of deep, personal relationships that would allow me to tape-record conversations with women at the same intimate level on which I accessed the worlds of men" (1995:215). Thus when Bourgois confronted the issue of pregnancy and drug addiction, he recruited a female African American colleague to help facilitate his discussions with pregnant addicts.

Both Sanchez Jankowski and Bourgois also had to overcome suspicions that they were working for the police or that they would betray their subjects in some way. In Sanchez Jankowski's case, he had to pass two tests that the gangs presented to him:

> The first test was designed to see if I was an informant. . . . What nearly every gang did was to undertake some illegal activities over a three- or four-week period in order to see if any of their members were arrested. During this time I was observed closely, and on those occasions that I did not stay with gang members, I was . . . followed to where I was staying. . . . On one occasion I did have some difficulty. It turned out that a member of

> the gang, for reasons no one ever discovered, had told the police about some crime that three other members had [committed]. . . . In order to protect himself, he told the leadership that he had heard that I was the one who had informed. The gang confronted and physically attacked me. Some time later, however, other gang members found out . . . who had really supplied the police with the information. The leaders contacted me, apologized, and gave me permission to study them.
>
> The second test . . . had to do with determining how tough I was. . . . It involved a number of members starting a fight with me. This was done to see how good a fighter I was and to see if I had "heart." . . . Gang members wanted to know whether I had courage to stay and fight if we were all jumped by a rival gang, and whether I could handle myself and not jeopardize their flanks. In this test, it was considered acceptable to fight and lose, but it was unacceptable to refuse to fight. . . . The fact that I had training in karate did not eliminate the anxiety that such situations created, but it did help to reduce it. Although these tests often left bruises, I was never seriously hurt. Quite remarkably . . . in the more than ten years during which I conducted this research, I was only seriously injured twice. (1991:11–12)

Though Bourgois did not face such tests, he does report some initial difficulties accessing street-dealing scenes. As he writes, "I was painfully aware of my outsider status. . . . The first time . . . I went down a side street that happened to be a heroin 'copping corner' . . . I was greeted by a hail of whistles and echoing shouts of *'bajando'* (coming down)—the code alarms that lookouts posted on dealing corners use to announce the approach of a potential undercover agent" (1995:29). Bourgois actually experienced more problems from the New York City police, who "repeatedly stopped, searched, cursed, and humiliated" him because they thought he fit the profile of a "white drug addict" (p. 30). On one occasion, when Bourgois told the police that he "was an anthropologist studying poverty and marginalization," one of them exploded: "What kind of a fuckin' moron do you think I am. You think I don't know what you're doin'? . . . You're . . . [a] fuckin' drug addict. You're dirty white scum! Go buy your drugs in a white neighborhood! If you don't get the hell out of here right now, motherfucka', you're gonna hafta repeat your story in the precinct. You want me to take you in? . . . Answer me motherfucka'!" (p. 31).

Bourgois reports drinking beer with the dealers and addicts he met but not going so far as to use illegal drugs. Perhaps the **courtesy stigma** he had acquired from his encounters with the police helped him bond with his subjects. A courtesy stigma works somewhat like guilt by association. If you allow yourself to be seen and treated as a drug addict, gang member, prostitute, or the like, you may be accepted by your subjects as "one of them" without actually having to commit crimes (Anderson & Calhoun 1992).

Clearly, much of the skill involved in observational research is a matter of charm and the ability to build rapport and trust with others. Bourgois,

who speaks Spanish, comes across in his book as a sociable and likable individual who was willing to take the time necessary to establish long-term relationships with the Puerto Rican subjects who became his friends. As he writes, "Only by establishing long-term relationships based on trust can one begin to ask provocative personal questions, and expect thoughtful, serious answers. . . . I spent hundreds of nights on the street and in crackhouses observing [and tape-recording] dealers and addicts. . . . I also visited their families, attending parties and intimate reunions—from Thanksgiving dinners to New Year's Eve celebrations" (p. 13).

Bourgois says that he was surprised to discover that the people whose confidence he was attempting to gain "were thrilled to be hanging out with someone who was 'such good people' that he did not even 'sniff'" (pp. 40–41). He found that he "became an exotic object of prestige." One of his new friends described him, affectionately, as "the white nigga' who always be hangin' with me."

One of the skills necessary in observational research and the building of rapport and trust is the ability to listen—to hear what people are saying, not what you want them to be saying, and to empathize with their "experience of pain and suffering" (p. 14). As Bourgois befriended two dozen street dealers and their families, he found that they "were not interested in talking primarily about drugs . . . [but] about their daily struggles for subsistence and dignity at the poverty line" (p. 2). At the same time, Bourgois hoped to avoid both "inferiorizing" his subjects, as we so often do with the poor in this country, and "sanitizing the . . . self-inflicted suffering" that is a consequence of their attempts "to escape or circumvent the structures of segregation and marginalization that entrap them" (pp. 12, 18).

Other researchers, unlike Sanchez Jankowski and Bourgois, may decide to conceal their identity (at least initially) from those they are observing in the field. This was the strategy adopted by William Chambliss (1988), who conducted research for over half a decade in the city of Seattle. Chambliss's research took him from the streets of skid row to the chambers of politicians. Starting from the bottom, Chambliss worked his way through an elaborate maze of social relationships that constituted what he later learned was a crime network:

> In an earlier time I had passed through skid rows in various cities while bumming around the country and working as a migratory laborer. I felt . . . that I could pass as a resident if I dressed and acted as I remembered others in those areas dressing and acting. With two days' growth of beard, a pair of khaki pants, and an old shirt, I drove down to the edge of that magical ring that circumscribes and, in fact, effectively hides skid row from the eyes of those who do not care to see it. I walked the two blocks between the commercial center and skid row, turned a corner, and found myself there. . . . It was raining this day. . . . So I looked for shelter and found a

> seat in Tip's Amusement Parlor, where I had a cup of coffee. I didn't like coffee and would have preferred tea, but coffee, I calculated, was essential for the image. (p. 14)

From that point on Chambliss observed and interviewed people associated with illegal gambling, prostitution, and other illicit enterprises (drugs, illegal liquor, loan-sharking, the buying and selling of stolen merchandise) that littered the community and were often appended to ostensibly legal businesses like restaurants and bars (see Lesieur & Sheley 1987). During the day, locals were the primary patrons, but at night a more "respectable" clientele arrived for activities "that may be found elsewhere but are concentrated here and brought conveniently together" (Chambliss 1988:23). Chambliss also discovered an elaborate payoff system to law enforcement and other governmental officials, which made tolerance of the illegal enterprises profitable for scores of other respectables as well.

While Chambliss maintained his clandestine identity, he did participate in illegal poker games to gain access to the crime scene. Eventually he decided to reveal himself to the manager of the cardroom where he played: "I told him of my 'purely scientific' interests and experience and, as best I could, why I had deceived him earlier" (p. 33). The manager agreed to help Chambliss and put him in touch with another knowledgeable person. From then on, Chambliss reports, "I let it be known to everyone I could that I was interested in studying the entire system of payoffs and political intrigue connected with the rackets. . . . Soon I began receiving . . . [a] surprisingly large number of telephone calls . . . [from] people 'in the know'" (pp. 47–48).

The **in-depth interviewing** that often accompanies field research is typically conducted in an unstructured manner, where the researcher and subject engage in an open-ended conversation-like exchange (Neuman 2003). At times, structured survey questionnaires may be administered as well. Mark Hamm (1993), for instance, used the observational method to locate skinheads for interviewing and completion of structured questionnaires. He began his research by visiting several cities to track "down skinheads in their natural habitat (street corners, coffee shops, record stores, survivalist outlets, rock concerts, and motorcycle shops)." These subjects, he notes, were easy to identify due to their shaved heads and their white-power or Nazi regalia. Often Hamm would have to wait for hours. When he spotted a skinhead he would approach him with a request to participate, presenting his "research as an attempt to set the record straight on the skinheads" (p. 101). He also offered them a $10 inducement. Later, Hamm was able to expand his interview sample by acquiring the names and addresses of individuals published in the underground teen press and the mailing roster of the White Aryan Resistance (WAR). He also used the WAR electronic bulletin board to solicit subjects, and he interviewed skinheads in prison.

To be sure, observational research is not a prerequisite for obtaining interesting interview subjects. Eleanor Miller (1986) began her study of female street prostitution and "hustling" (a variety of illegal economic activities) by locating women under criminal justice supervision who were living in halfway houses or more secure correctional facilities. She interviewed them about their life histories in crime, particularly about their initiation into street hustling and the development of their criminal careers. She expanded her contacts through a **snowball sampling** technique, whereby she asked one subject to refer her to another. Miller also interviewed other household members and was eventually able to observe situations in which street hustling actually occurred.

Sometimes, **life history studies** can focus on one individual. These are more or less biographical pieces of research combined with criminological insight or analysis. Some of the most well-known criminology life histories have been conducted with "professional" thieves and fences (e.g., King & Chambliss 1984; Steffensmeier 1986; Sutherland 1937). **Professional criminals** are those who devote the majority of their "working day" to the rational planning and commission of crimes for profit. Professionals also possess specialized skills that are learned from and passed on to others, and they associate with people who share a common argot (manner of speech) and lifestyle, and who provide each other with camaraderie and mutual respect.

In life history studies, in-depth interviewing, and observational research, one must be cautious about the accuracy of subjects' accounts: they might have faulty recollections or reinterpret events in a biased way, they might provide false or misleading information, they might omit or fail to reveal important facts, and they might have an ax to grind or other disingenuous motives for participating in the research (Neuman 2003). Miller (1986) reports that her subjects appeared more candid about their criminal activities than about their personal relationships. During the course of an interview, she would sometimes bring up a topic again, in a different context, to see if the woman would change her story. Although it is important, whenever possible, to cross-check what you are told against other sources, a researcher who exhibits genuine empathy will often find that subjects enjoy talking about themselves, are flattered by someone who is interested in them, and want to provide accurate information to set the record straight. Miller found that some street hustlers who had heard about her research actually wanted "to be in the book" (p. 186).

Jeff Ferrell (1997) takes the issue of authenticity a bit further. He believes that only through "experiential immersion . . . in the dangers of criminality"—only by participating in the very criminal activity under investigation—can researchers come to truly understand the social reality of crime (pp. 3, 16). Ferrell became involved with members of a "hip hop graf-

fiti underground" in Denver, Colorado. He describes one evening as follows:

> Settling into a narrow, half-lit alley between rows of warehouses . . . [we] begin the lengthy process of . . . painting a large, graffiti-style mural. Having brought along the usual supply of "forties" (40-ounce bottles of malt liquor), "shooters" (small bottles of Jack Daniel's and Yukon Jack), cigarettes, and Krylon spray paint, we . . . anticipate a long night in the alley. . . . [The piece is] a vague commentary on a nearby nuclear weapons facility . . . [featuring] hooded laboratory workers and stenciled images of gaseous bubbles. In these hours . . . we share not only work on the mural but also an experience about which graffiti writers talk regularly: the tense excitement, the dangerous, almost intoxicating pleasure, of artistic production interwoven with illegality and adventure. (p. 5)

As part of this process, Ferrell exposed himself to possible arrests, court appearances, and criminal sanctions from legal authorities who take graffiti-writing quite seriously. He argues, however, that a willingness to break the law may be the only genuine way to access the *experience* of criminality, the only way to acquire a level of intimacy with the pleasures and pains, meanings and emotions, excitement and adrenaline rush of engaging in illicit activity (see J. Katz 1988). The ethical issues involved in "going native" are significant, but according to Ferrell, failure to do so may cut researchers off from a variety of field contacts, social situations, and ways of understanding crime.

Artistic graffiti-writing may be one thing. But what about rape, for example? Would Ferrell really advocate criminologists' participating in rape (as offender or victim) to gain an understanding of crime? Bourgois relates how unprepared he was for even hearing about the brutal gang rapes of adolescent females by the men who "had already become my friends. . . . I kept asking myself how it was possible that I had invested so much energy into taking these 'psychopaths' seriously. . . . I was confused because . . . with notable . . . exceptions, I had grown to like most of these veteran rapists. I was living with the enemy; it had become my social network. They had engulfed me in the common sense of street culture until their rape accounts forced me to draw the line" (1995:207).

Indeed, there are limits to Ferrell's logic, and to a researcher's toleration of the criminal experience. The sight of crack-craving mothers and pregnant women provoked this response in Bourgois: "On several occasions . . . I begged . . . [these] women to think through the potential consequences of their urge to get high. I repeatedly argued with . . . [the dealers], accusing them of having personal responsibility for the traumatized lives of the neonates whose mothers they regularly sold crack to" (p. 281). However much Bourgois wanted to debunk society's moralistic condemnation of the poor and dispossessed, his analytic stance could "not withstand the horror"

of this plight. Although he had not begun his research intending to alter his subjects' drug-dependent lifestyle, he had not anticipated everything he would learn. Ferrell offers the advice of Ned Polsky (1969) for anyone contemplating observational research: "Before you can tell a criminal who you are and make it stick, you have to know yourself. . . . You need to decide beforehand, as much as possible, where you wish to draw the line" (cited in Ferrell 1997:19–20).

Historical and Comparative Criminology

A final set of research strategies employed by criminologists include **historical** and **comparative methods**. Historical studies provide information about the past that enables us to situate current circumstances in broader perspective. Historical data are derived from varied sources such as official documents, newspapers, magazines, personal letters, diaries, memoirs, and oral testimonies. Comparative data provide information about other societies that illuminates, by contrast, the ways of our own society, that helps us distinguish social relations we have in common from those that are dissimilar, and that contributes to our understanding of our place in the world (Neuman 2003).

Lessons of lynching. Studies of lynching in the United States illustrate how historical data can be used to achieve sociological insight by illuminating, in this case, the intersection of race and gender (Messerschmidt 1997). In the United States during the period of slavery, African Americans were treated as "property" for the purpose of economic transactions (i.e., they were inherited, traded, and sold) but as "persons" for the purpose of behavioral control. Slaves were not permitted to leave their plantations without the permission of their master or owner, were not permitted to resist their master's orders or administration of force, were not permitted to congregate with other slaves, and above all, were not permitted to have sexual relations with white women. Punishments for offenders ranged from whippings to castration or death (Noonan 1994).

During this time, the rape of black female slaves by their white masters was common and was a source of terror and humiliation for both women and men. One historical account notes a Louisiana slave owner who would tell the black husband "to go . . . and wait 'til he do what he want to do" (Jones 1986:37). Sexual assaults of female slaves even took place in the presence of their husbands and fathers. Rape served to simultaneously defile the women and emasculate the men.

Historical data on lynching indicate that in the two decades prior to the Civil War, most of the persons lynched were not black slaves but white abolitionists; and that most of the lynchings of blacks were not for sexual violations but for political insurrections or perceived threats. Cases of alleged

rape of white women by black men were even thrown out of court when unmarried women were perceived as impure and unchaste or when married women had not been observant of proper decorum. It was not until after the Civil War and the legal abolition of slavery (1865) that the control of black men's sexuality actually became more important than the control of white women's sexuality. And it was not until that time that black men became the archetypal victims of lynching (Messerschmidt 1997).

From the 1880s to the 1950s, over 3,500 African Americans were lynched (Wriggens 1995). Though freed from slavery by the Thirteenth Amendment to the US Constitution, African Americans continued to suffer the wrath of white society, including white mob violence. The Ku Klux Klan established branches throughout the South and harassed, intimidated, and killed black men who attempted to "act like white men." African American men who voted or joined political parties, who owned property or gained economic independence, or who refused to defer to whites in interpersonal interactions were the primary targets of violence: whippings, castration, and lynchings (Messerschmidt 1997).

James Messerschmidt connects this escalation of antiblack violence to Southern white men's collective attempt to defend their political and economic superiority, which defined the very nature of their masculinity: "If African American men were permitted to do what 'real men' (white men) did, the value of . . . masculinity was effectively compromised" (1997:30). Indeed, "white supremacist masculinity" was essentially defined in terms of "subordinate African American masculinity." For these white men, interracial sexuality emerged as the terrain for the preservation of their manhood: "To be a man was to be a white man who had sole access to and the duty to protect white women" (p. 34). And some white women agreed; as the wife of a former congressman said in 1898, "If it needs lynching to protect woman's dearest possession from human beasts, then I say lynch a thousand times a week if necessary" (quoted in Wriggens 1995:216).

In the South, the threat of white mob violence constantly loomed over the judicial proceedings of African Americans accused of rape, and mobs often lynched defendants if they found the verdict unacceptable. Lynchings were also carried out to eliminate black leadership and intimidate the black population. Moreover, the lynching itself was a ceremonial ritual of torture and emasculation of the black male. The ordeal, which could last for several hours, included sexual mutilation and castration, and featured cheering spectators (men, women, and children) and scavengers who searched for souvenir body parts. The lynching was nothing less than a "white community celebration" (Messerschmidt 1997:32; Vandal 1991; Wriggens 1995).

One such mutilation-lynching involved a black man charged with rape of a white woman who was not permitted to identify him, because the shock, it was thought, might be too great for her (Ginzburg 1988). After the

ordeal, a placard was placed on a nearby tree that read, "We Must Protect Our Southern Women." These kinds of spectacles ensured white women they had nothing to fear, provided that they submit themselves to the chivalrous protection of white men. The message was clear: Do not be seduced by the suffragists and their image of the liberated "New Woman." It is men who will protect women, "in the name of the race," in the name of civilization itself (Messerschmidt 1997:34).

Law and lawlessness in international context. Comparative criminology enables us to, among other things, examine criminality and law from a global or international perspective. We often take for granted that the ways of our own society are the ways of all other social systems. However, behaviors that may be illegal in one society may be legal elsewhere (see Further Exploration). For instance, laws regulating the economic activities of corporations vary from one country to another. Less developed nations generally have weaker regulatory laws than developed nations like the United States when it comes to working conditions, environmental pollution, and consumer protection. Multinational and transnational corporations that are based in developed countries but that invest throughout the world thus find it advantageous to conduct business in places that tolerate practices that would be illegal in their own countries. This situation has led to the practice of **corporate dumping** into foreign markets—that is, the selling of products and disposal of toxic wastes that cannot be sold or disposed of in the country of origin (Michalowski & Kramer 1987; Mokhiber 1988).

Government-sponsored **genocide**—which Frank Chalk and Kurt Jonassohn define as the one-sided mass killing of a group of people because of their race, ethnicity, religion, nationality, political beliefs, or any other quality "defined by the perpetrator" (1990:23)—is another practice that has for the most part eluded international legal control. In fact, during the twentieth century, more people were killed by their *own governments* than by war with opposing nations (Horowitz 1997).

Arguably the most infamous genocide in history occurred during the Nazi period in Germany (1933–1945), when millions of European Jews, Gypsies, and other disenfranchised groups were incarcerated, enslaved, and exterminated (Berger 2002). The Holocaust was a matter of German law, part of the legal pursuit of governmental policy in Germany and German-occupied territories. But after World War II, the victorious allied nations attempted to define these legalities as crimes. A number of criminal trials were conducted in Nuremberg, Germany. The most famous of these trials involved the prosecution of 24 German and Austrian "war criminals" under the auspices of the International Military Tribunal (IMT), which comprised judges from the United States, Great Britain, France, and the Soviet Union. This was the first time in history that a country was held "internationally

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Female Genital Mutilation

For more than 2,000 years, female genital mutilation (FGM) has been practiced around the world. Although FGM has been most extensive on the African continent and the Arabian peninsula, it has also occurred among some minority communities in Europe, North America, and Australia. Some nineteenth-century Western medical texts even considered removal of the clitoris appropriate treatment for masturbation, nymphomania, hysteria, depression, and epilepsy (Kiragu 1995; Morgan & Steinem 1983).

Female genital mutilation is usually performed without anesthesia on girls between six and eight years of age. The most common forms involve "clitoridectomy," in which the clitoris and sometimes part or all of the labia minora are excised, and "infibulation," in which the clitoris, labia minora, and inner layers of the labia majora are removed and the scraped sides of the vulva are then sutured together with thread, catgut, or thorns to form a bridge of scar tissue over the vagina, leaving only a small opening for passage of urine and menstrual fluid. The girl's legs are then tied together and she is forced to remain immobile for several weeks until proper adhesion occurs. She undergoes additional cutting at marriage, when the wound is opened to permit intercourse, and at childbirth to allow passage of the fetal head without rupture of tissues. Those who are reinfibulated after each childbirth endure these procedures again and again (Crossette 1995; Lorber 1997a).

Female genital mutilation is performed by tribal practitioners, midwives, family members, and increasingly by trained medical personnel, to ensure virginity, to prevent promiscuity or unfaithfulness, or to certify a girl as clean, proper, or marriageable. As "part of a code of modesty, fidelity, and women's obedience to fathers and husbands," it is often taken for granted culturally by women as well as men (Lorber 1997a:5). Female family members commonly assist in the procedure, holding the girl down and drowning out her screams by singing. Female practitioners receive social recognition and status and earn a living by performing the cycle of ritual cuttings and sewings.

It is estimated that as many as 140 million girls and women around the world have undergone genital mutilation, including over 160,000 in immigrant communities in the United States. The initial effects include not only pain and shock but also complications such as hemorrhage, infection, damage to adjacent organs, HIV transmission, and tetanus and blood poisoning from unsterile cutting instruments. Long-term consequences include greater susceptibility to problems in pregnancy and continued pain and infection, as well as reduced capacity for sexual pleasure (Heise 1989; Kiragu 1995; Lorber 1997a; *Ms.* 2002, 2003).

Growing condemnation and pressure from the United Nations, nonparticipating countries, and activists who have survived or escaped female genital mutilation have resulted in laws prohibiting the practice in an increasing number of countries. In 2002, for example, Kenya became the tenth African nation to outlaw the practice. Legal changes have not ended the tradition, however, as often no one involved notifies authorities and families who

continues

continued

refuse to participate are commonly "shunned and excluded from the local marriage market" (Lorber 1997a:6). In some areas, alternative coming-of-age rituals are being initiated in hopes of creating new traditions and eliminating the stigma associated with not being circumcised. In Senegal, women have even taken to claiming, in an attempt to disrupt the practice, that it is those who *are* circumcised who will end up unmarried. In 800 villages, they have made a pledge to their daughters: "We will no longer allow you to be cut" (Armstrong 2003:22; *Ms.* 2002).

Educational campaigns emphasizing health issues and the rights of women and children have been an important component of reform efforts, but since it is commonly believed that clitoridectomy and infibulation promote cleanliness and even fertility, they have not always been successful. In Sierra Leone, however, a videotape of an eight-year-old Ethiopian being circumcised with a rusty razor has been quite effective in getting viewers to question FGM. The video documents the child's agony during and after the procedure and convincingly presents the negative long-term health consequences. Another important strategy has been the creation in more than two dozen countries of alternative employment programs for former practitioners in an attempt to undercut the resistance of those who have benefited financially from FGM (Armstrong 2003; Brandell 1998).

As the reform movement gathers strength, local successes spur new initiatives. In one dramatic and highly publicized case, an African teenager who fled her home to avoid FGM spent 16 months in US prisons trying to win the political asylum denied her. Her courage and perseverance paid off, as her ordeal became the test case that forced the US Immigration and Naturalization Service to consider FGM as a type of persecution worthy of asylum protection (Kassindja & Bashir 1998).

Due to the organized efforts of women's groups in Africa and elsewhere around the globe, the number of new FGM cases appears to be on the decline. At the same time, some defenders of the procedure have accused Western critics of cultural imperialism and have argued that the ritual must be understood as an integral part of the cultural transition to adulthood and initiation into female life in these societies. In the first case of FGM ever tried in a US court, the attorney for a man from Ethiopia who had been indicted for the genital mutilation of his two-year-old daughter told the trial judge, "We don't quite understand it here, but in Ethiopia, it used to be the normal thing" (*Wisconsin State Journal* 2006b:A3). The judge, however, described the act as "unimaginable" and sentenced the man to 10 years in prison.

The Intersex Society of North America (ISNA), an organization that seeks to reduce the number of genital surgeries performed on intersexed infants, has been trying to link its concerns about surgeries on infants not capable of giving consent with the international fight against female genital mutilation (see Chapter 1). To heighten the association with FGM, this group refers to intersex surgeries as intersex genital mutilation (IGM). The ISNA considers both IGM and FGM to be "culturally determined practices of harmful genital surgery" whose use must be reconsidered (Kessler 1998:81).

responsible for what it *did to its own people* . . . no matter what its own national laws . . . allowed" (Rosenbaum 1993:34, emphasis added).

In the aftermath of the Holocaust and the IMT Nuremberg trials, the United Nations (UN) established the Genocide Convention, which declared genocide a crime (Chalk & Jonassohn 1990). The convention covered genocides perpetrated against a racial, ethnic, religious, or national group (but not genocides against groups targeted for their political beliefs). In 1948 the Genocide Convention was signed by 33 nations, though not the United States, which did not ratify the convention until 1986, when it became the 97th nation to do so. Leo Kuper (1990) has questioned the reluctance of the United States, especially in light of its dominant role in the early years of the United Nations and in the discussions, negotiations, and final compromises that led to the Genocide Convention. He asks: Did the United States "fear that it might be held responsible, retrospectively, for the annihilation of Indians in the United States or its role in the slave trade, or its contemporary support for tyrannical governments engaging in mass murder?" (pp. 422–423).

As symbolic moral statements, the IMT and Genocide Convention made significant contributions to international law by asserting that nations do not have absolute sovereignty to pursue what they perceive as their national self-interest without being held accountable by the international community (Rosenbaum 1993). At the same time, however, because international law is difficult to enforce, it often appears to consist of little more than well-intentioned proclamations. In the late 1970s, for example, the Khmer Rouge, led by dictator Pol Pot, murdered as many as two million Cambodians who were perceived to be politically hostile or socially incompatible with the government's goals. No international sanctions were imposed, and the Khmer Rouge was allowed to keep its seat at the UN. As Kuper notes, if the law "has been honored at all, it is in the breach, not the observance" (1990:423).

In the 1990s, the most widely reported case of genocide occurred in the former republic of Yugoslavia, where about 250,000 unarmed Bosnians and Croatians were massacred by Serbian soldiers; several hundred thousand more were forcibly removed from their homes, maimed, and held in concentration camps; and women were systematically raped (Doubt 2007). In 1993 the UN established the International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia (ICTY) to address these atrocities. Among those charged was Serbian president Slobodan Milosevic, the first sitting president ever to be indicted for war crimes (Milosevic died during his trial). In 1994 the UN also established the International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda (ICTR) to prosecute the perpetrators of the genocide in Rwanda earlier that year, which caused the deaths of some 800,000 people (Power 2002).

The ICTY and ICTR were organized as temporary tribunals set up for specific cases of genocide. In contrast, the **International Court of Justice**

(ICJ), or World Court, was established by UN Charter after World War II as a permanent body for the adjudication of international legal disputes. The ICJ, located in The Hague, Netherlands, is used primarily to adjudicate conflicts between parties that agree to abide by its decisions: those states that have signed the ICJ treaty, which the United States has not. Thus, in 1986, when the Court found the United States in violation of international law and ordered payment of reparations for the Ronald Reagan administration's efforts to topple the government of Nicaragua—which included the burning of Nicaraguan oil facilities, the mining of harbors, and the backing of rebel forces (the Contras) who killed and terrorized the civilian population—the United States simply ignored the ruling (Pfost 1987; see Chapter 7).

In 2002 the UN also established the International Criminal Court (ICC), also in The Hague, to prosecute perpetrators of genocide, war crimes, and other human rights violations (Lederer 2003). As with the ICJ treaty, the United States also has not signed the ICC treaty. Christopher Simpson is critical of the reluctance of the United States (and other world powers) to participate in these permanent UN tribunals: "Major powers continue to cynically exploit international law to support propaganda claims against their rivals, . . . call[ing] for strict enforcement of international sanctions when it suits their purpose," but ignoring rulings when it is in their interest to do so (1993:286).

After the Holocaust, we often heard that genocide must "never again" happen, whether to Jews or anyone else. But in light of the history of post–World War II genocide, the admonition "never again" seems like a pious platitude. By 2007 the death toll in the ongoing genocide perpetrated by the government of Sudan and its militia allies against the people of Darfur was as much as 400,000 and climbing (Hagan et al. 2005; Rothe & Mullins 2007). An editorial in *New Republic* magazine raises the issue starkly: "Never again? What nonsense. Again and again is more like it. In Darfur, we are witnessing a genocide again, and again we are witnessing ourselves witnessing it and doing nothing to stop it" (2006:1).

3

Individualistic Explanations of Criminal Behavior

IN NEW MARKET, NEW JERSEY, ON FEBRUARY 25, 1867, the body of Mary Ellen Coriell, wife of the town doctor, was found gashed and bloody next to her smoldering bed. There were teeth marks on Coriell's face and dozens of stab wounds up and down her torso. Bridget Durgan, the 22-year-old Irish servant, had grabbed Mamie, the Coriell baby, and run in her stocking feet through the snow to alert a neighbor that burglars were at the house and that, for all she knew, "they might be murdering Mrs. Coriell" (Jones 1980:198). The neighbor noticed a large patch of fresh blood on Durgan's skirt, and that Mamie's hair was singed and her clothes smelled of kerosene. Durgan was immediately suspected, and couldn't seem to get her story straight: Durgan first claimed that she had never seen the men before and wouldn't recognize them again, then that she would recognize one of them, then both of them. Next Durgan claimed that "the killers were Barney Dole . . . and a man named Hunt," then that "it was her friend Anne Linen, another servant, who had done it." Apparently she knew "who killed Mrs. Coriell but her questioners made her so angry she wouldn't tell" (pp. 199–200).

Dr. Coriell reported that Durgan had always been peaceful, quiet, and respectful of his wife, but that she had not been a satisfactory servant. She was not particularly neat and was often laid up with menstrual difficulties or wracked with seizures. When Mrs. Coriell discovered that Durgan had "filthy habits," it was the last straw. Durgan was dismissed. The night before she was to leave the Coriell home, she brutally murdered Mrs. Coriell, most likely "while suffering what modern medicine calls a seizure of psychomotor or temporal lobe epilepsy—a type of seizure often characterized by rage, physical violence, and amnesia" (p. 202). When the teeth marks were found on Mrs. Coriell, they were considered "absolute proof, according to the biases of the time, that the murderer was a woman" (p. 200). Anne Linen was found to have an alibi, and Durgan, who had much circumstantial evidence against her, was charged.

Durgan's attorneys chose not to enter a plea that reflected diminished responsibility due to mental illness. After all, "coarse Irish girls like [her]

. . . lacked the delicate sensibilities to go insane in a fashion picturesque enough to capture the heart of a jury" (p. 204). They claimed that Durgan was innocent and warned the jurors not to be affected by community prejudice. However, in the court of public opinion, a beastly, seemingly motiveless crime such as this must have been committed by a "fiend." And "everyone was eager to believe that [Durgan] was indeed a fiend. After all, she was Irish" (p. 201). Even her physical appearance supported the diagnosis of subhuman character: "She is large in the base of the brain, and swells out over the ears, where destructiveness and secretiveness are located by [scientists of the day], . . . while the whole region of intellect, ideality and moral sentiment is small" (pp. 204–205). Durgan was convicted, and the courtroom audience burst into applause when the death sentence was pronounced. On the day of the hanging, 2,000 men and women crammed into the prison compound and perched on roofs to watch as the condemned fiend was "jerked into eternity" (pp. 206–207).

Few contemporary criminologists would find the nineteenth-century diagnosis of Bridget Durgan's subhuman character a persuasive explanation of her crime. Yet explaining why people commit crime is a central concern of criminology. It is without a doubt a complex task, especially given the diverse forms of criminality that exist in any society. Clearly no single explanation can account for all instances of murder (Durgan's included), let alone for crime in its infinite varieties: burglary, prostitution, sexual assault, state-sponsored genocide, and so forth.

The attempt to explain crime is sometimes characterized as a search for the causes of crime, whereby the analyst or researcher tries to locate prior traits or events that determine or set in motion criminal behavior. Causal explanations rely on both theoretical formulations and empirical research. Although **theory** is sometimes perceived as "a tangled maze of jargon . . . that [is] irrelevant to the real world," we all use theory—a set of "interconnected abstractions or ideas that condense and organize knowledge"—to help explain our lives and the world around us (Neuman 2003:41–42). If, for example, you believe that criminals commit crime because they do not face any credible punishment for their actions, you are invoking a particular theory about criminal motivation and the societal reaction (or lack thereof) to it. Moreover, theory has practical implications, because proposals to address the problem of crime explicitly or implicitly assume a particular explanation or set of underlying causes. If the theory associated with a crime control or intervention program is inaccurate, then the program is likely to fail.

In criminology, and in the social sciences more generally, theory and research are intertwined. In other words, theory guides empirical research, which in turn confirms or disconfirms theory. Unfortunately, it sometimes seems as if criminology is mired in competing theories and endless empiri-

cal tests that only produce mixed or inconsistent results. Nevertheless, sound and carefully tested theory offers a better guide to social policy than a hit-or-miss or purely ideological approach.

Much theoretical explanation in criminology is sociological, but some is not. In this chapter we hope to cultivate your sociological imagination through a critical assessment of **individualistic explanations** of criminal behavior—that is, theories that locate the central causes of crime within the individual rather than within the social environment. These theories assume that criminals are particular "kinds of persons" (e.g., "fiends") who possess some flawed or defective trait or who think about themselves and the world in ways that make the "normal prohibitions against crime relatively ineffective" (Herrnstein 1995:40; Orcutt 1983). Such explanations are especially appealing to those with a conservative political ideology, for they minimize social-environmental influences and imply that we do not need to change society (and by implication ourselves or our way of life) to deal with the problem of crime.

Supernatural Explanations

Until the eighteenth century, before the emergence of criminology, **supernatural explanations** of crime were widely held to be true. In ancient and medieval times, it was assumed that people who acted in deviant ways did so because God was testing their faith, punishing them, or using their behavior to warn others. Or else they were seen as sinners who had fallen from God's grace and were tempted or even possessed by the devil or some other evil force (Pfohl 1985; Vold et al. 2002).

In earlier times, witches (mostly women, but some men) were a major concern of religious authorities. Witches were viewed as individuals who had either entered into a compact with the devil or been taken by the devil against their will. For instance, the *Malleus Maleficarum (Hammer of Witches),* a religious tract written in the late fifteenth century, described how the devil had sexual intercourse with sleeping women, often turning them into his prostitutes and the bearers of his children. Witches, it was believed, also engaged in sexual orgies with the devil, orgies that perverted and made a mockery of Christian rituals; and witches were sexually promiscuous with sleeping men, spiriting away their sexual organs and leaving them castrated and impotent. In reality, women accused of witchcraft were those who defied the social order of the day by their "deviant" sexuality (i.e., sex outside of marriage, homosexuality, even lustful desire), their political activities or religious beliefs, or their involvement in lay healing and midwifery. They were scapegoats upon whom the misfortunes of the time could be blamed (Balkan et al. 1980; Ehrenreich & English 1973; Einstader & Henry 1995).

Historical data indicate that millions of alleged witches were tortured and executed for the alleged practice of witchcraft. The methods of torture were many. Victims were deprived of sleep, crushed by heavy weights, forced to bathe in boiling water, hoisted aloft and dropped, or forced to eat salted herring and then denied water. Needles were driven into the quick of nails, hands and feet were cut off, flesh was torn from the breasts, and eyes were gouged out. Burning was often deemed necessary to destroy the witch entirely and evoke the "image of hell as the final resting place for unpurged sinners" (Pfohl 1985:25; Balkan et al. 1980; Daly 1978).

The ritual application of pain was in general the standard mode of punishment during the Middle Ages (Pfohl 1985). Torture was considered appropriate for both exorcising evil spirits and extracting confessions. In 1757, for example, the execution of Robert Francois Damiens for the murder of his father involved

> the flesh . . . torn from his breasts, arms, thighs and calves with red-hot pincers, his right hand, holding the knife with which he committed the said parricide, burnt with sulphur, and, on those places where the flesh [was to be] torn away, poured molten lead, boiling oil, burning resin, wax and sulphur melted together and then his body drawn and quartered by four horses and his limbs and body consumed by fire, reduced to ashes and . . . thrown to the winds. (Foucault 1979:3)

Sometimes the accused had the opportunity to be acquitted of the charges by undergoing a **trial by ordeal**, a process designed to elicit divine intervention for the innocent. In one ordeal, the accused was required to dip his bare hand into a caldron of boiling water to find a small pebble. The hand was then wrapped in cloth, sealed with the signet of a judge, and unwrapped three days later. If the hand was healed, the individual would be declared innocent. In another ordeal, the accused was forced to walk over red-hot iron ploughshares; if no injury occurred, acquittal would follow. In ordeals such as these, it was assumed that God would intervene to protect the innocent (Einstader & Henry 1995; Tewksbury 1994).

Classical and Neoclassical Criminology

It is against this backdrop of superstition and cruelty that modern **classical criminology** emerged to offer new ways of thinking about and dealing with crime. The classical criminologists were part of the eighteenth-century European movement known as the **Enlightenment**, or Age of Reason. Enlightenment philosophers believed that humanity need not rely on religious authority to govern its affairs. Rational thought or reason could be used instead to develop principles of morality and justice. Individuals could agree to enter into a social contract whereby they would surrender some of

their individuality and submit themselves to governmental control in exchange for protection of the common good and the maintenance of natural liberties and rights (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995; Vold et al. 2002).

Enlightenment thinkers and classical criminologists like Cesare Beccaria (1738–1794) and Jeremy Bentham (1748–1842) believed in the doctrine of **free will**. In their view, individuals who break the law and violate the social contract are not driven by evil spirits. Rather, they *rationally choose* to commit crime because they believe that the pleasures or benefits of such actions outweigh the pains or costs. The role of government is to manipulate this rational calculation of benefits and costs by maintaining a level of punishment that exceeds the potential rewards of crime. In contemporary parlance this is known as the principle of **deterrence**.

Deterrence and the Rational Criminal

The deterrence approach to crime control is often associated with those who believe that the criminal justice system is too lenient and that we should crack down on crime. Ironically, however, the classical criminologists were critics of the excessive punishments of their time: torture and the death penalty. As late as the early nineteenth century in England, for instance, the death penalty (or capital punishment) was available for about 200 offenses, most of them property crimes. The classical theorists argued that punishment should be sufficient to offset the benefits of crime, but no more extreme than that. The death penalty, they felt, should not be used as a public spectacle to satisfy the community's desire for revenge or retribution. Rather, punishment should be proportional to the nature of the offense it is designed to deter. As such, the classical criminologists believed that imprisonment should replace torture and the death penalty as the standard mode of punishment (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995; Hay et al. 1975).

By the late nineteenth to early twentieth century, classical criminology was superseded by other theories of crime (to be discussed later). But in the 1960s it was revived by economist Gary Becker (1968). Becker argued that economists, who had expertise in cost-benefit analysis as applied to economic affairs, could apply the tools of their trade (assumptions about rational economic actors, together with complex statistical techniques) to the crime problem as well. This modern-day version of the classical school is generally referred to as **neoclassical criminology** or **rational-choice theory**.

Although deterrence remains a core objective of the neoclassical approach, it is not an undifferentiated concept. Even in his day, Beccaria (1764/1963) drew distinctions between the **certainty**, **celerity** (swiftness), and **severity of punishment**. Certainty refers to the likelihood of receiving punishment, celerity to the immediacy of punishment following the offense, and severity to the nature of the punishment itself. According to Beccaria:

> One of the greatest curbs on crime is not the cruelty of punishments, but their infallibility. . . . The certainty of punishment, even if it be moderate, will always make a stronger impression than the fear of another which is more terrible but combined with the hope of impunity. . . . [And] the more promptly and . . . closely punishment follows . . . the commission of a crime, the more just and useful it will be. . . . The criminal is spared the useless and cruel torments of uncertainty. . . . Privation of liberty, . . . itself a punishment, should not precede the sentence except when necessity requires. . . . Promptness of punishment is more useful because when the length of time that passes between the punishment and misdeed is less, [it is] so much the stronger and . . . lasting in the human mind. . . . The severity of punishment of itself emboldens men to commit the very wrongs it is supposed to prevent; they are driven to commit additional crimes to avoid the punishment for a single one. The countries and times most notorious for severity of penalties have always been those in which the bloodiest and most inhumane of deeds were committed. (1963:58–59)

Early classical theorists, critics of the punishment practices of their age, appear liberal in their call for moderation. However, use of prison, not reform of society, was their reform agenda. They were primarily concerned with designing a legal system that would discipline those who deviated from the established social order.

Contemporary Deterrence Research

A large body of contemporary deterrence research has examined the impact of punishment on criminal behavior. Much of this research has utilized official crime data for geographical areas like cities, counties, and especially states, and considers both certainty and severity of punishment. (Celerity of punishment is difficult to measure and has been omitted from most studies.) The findings have generally shown that while certainty of punishment (as measured by the proportion of reported crimes that result in arrest, conviction, and incarceration) is more highly associated with lower crime rates than severity of punishment (as measured by the average lengths of sentences), even the effect of certainty is weak (Krohn 2000; Paternoster 1987; Webster et al. 2006). In a recent study, Robert Kane (2006) also found a limited (and short-lived) deterrent impact of aggressive policing in different precincts in New York City (as measured by number of arrests per officer and raw arrest counts), although he did find that police efforts to increase the certainty of punishment were more likely to deter economically motivated crimes and crimes that occur in public settings compared to their deterrent effect on violent crimes.

There are several factors that appear to mitigate the deterrent effect of punishment. Research indicates that individuals' *perceptions of punishment* may be more significant than the actual punishment itself. Perceptual deterrence studies, which typically use self-report data, have generally found that perceived certainty has a greater effect than perceived severity, and that per-

ceived certainty has a greater effect on an individual's decision to *continue* breaking the law than it does on his or her decision to break the law in the first place (Paternoster 1987; Paternoster & Triplett 1988; Williams & Hawkins 1986). At the same time, research shows that the public's perception of the likelihood of punishment is often at variance with the actual likelihood (Kane 2006; Kleck et al. 2005).

A person's *stake in conformity* may also affect his or her responsiveness to deterrence. In a study of employee theft, for example, Richard Hollinger and John Clark (1983) found that older employees who had more to lose were more deterred by their perceptions of punishment than were their younger coworkers. Similarly, David Matza (1964) observed that as juveniles grew older, many underwent *maturational reform* and desisted from delinquency as they took on the responsibilities of work and family life. And Cheryl Carpenter and colleagues (1988) found that by age 16, some juveniles reported being deterred by the fact that they would face greater consequences than they had so far if they continued to offend. These youths recognized that as they grew older they would end up not just in the juvenile justice system but eventually in the more punitive adult criminal justice system (see Further Exploration, p. 432).

Other criminologists argue that rational-choice models of deterrence have focused too narrowly on punishment, oversimplified the cognitive or thinking process underlying much criminality, and neglected a number of other factors that affect individuals' decisions to violate the law. For instance, much research suggests that labor market incentives (the relative economic rewards of legal and illegal work) affect decisions to commit crime more than the risks of punishment (Freeman 1996; Williams & Kornblum 1985). In a study of high-risk offenders (adults previously incarcerated, adult drug users, and 17- to 20-year-old high school dropouts) involved in a federally funded work program, Irving Piliavan and colleagues found that while "risks of punishment [had] virtually no impact on criminal behavior . . . persons who perceive[d] greater opportunity to earn money illegally [were] more likely to violate the law" (1986:114).

Research also suggests that one's *internalized or normative evaluation of right and wrong* may be more central to the decision to violate the law than perceptions of punishment, and that informal sanctions or extralegal threats such as shame, embarrassment, and disapproval from family and peers may deter law violation more than formal punishment (Erickson et al. 1977; Paternoster 1989; Piquero et al. 2005; Williams & Hawkins 1986). Harold Grasmick and colleagues (1993), for example, found that reductions in self-reported drunk driving (in Oklahoma City, 1982–1990) were more highly associated with increasing levels of shame and embarrassment than with changing perceptions of legal sanctions. They credited the social movement against drunk driving (e.g., Mothers Against Drunk Driving)

with success in altering moral beliefs and community standards regarding this offense. Similarly, in interviews with corporate officials, Sally Simpson (1992) found that informal factors such as threats to personal reputation and future employment opportunities outweighed formal punishment in decisions to violate the law or engage in unethical business conduct.

In addition, the deterrent effect of punishment may not be substantial because many criminals are not the rational actors envisioned by classical and neoclassical theory. But this is not the same as saying they are irrational. It's just that drug addiction, crimes of passion, and crimes committed out of emotional or economic desperation, for instance, may not involve the kind of cost-benefit calculus that responds to traditional deterrence strategies. To a drug addict, the cost of not stealing the money to pay for one's next fix (inevitable suffering from withdrawal symptoms) probably seems greater than the cost of stealing the money (*possible* arrest, *possible* conviction). Consider also the comments of women who have killed their battering husbands or lovers. Most of those whom Ann Jones (1980) interviewed expressed considerable remorse and sorrow. Some spoke of guilt and depression, "but at the same time, many . . . experienced an exhilarating sense of release. 'Even when I knew I would have to go to prison,' said one woman, 'I felt as if a stone hand had been lifted off my head.' Another said,

Drug addicts are less likely to be deterred by the threat of criminal sanctions.

'Suddenly I knew that I could take a walk, call my mother, laugh—and it would be all right. For the first time in 11 years, I wasn't afraid'" (p. 320).

We must remember that deprivations are relative, that they occur in a larger context. Though the poor, inner-city youth who is sent to prison is being deprived of their freedom to come and go, maybe it's the first time in their life that they've been cool in the summer, warm in the winter, or had three square meals a day. In some cases, the risk of getting caught may be part of the thrill motivating the offender, or the individual may be rather fatalistic about the prospects of getting caught (Ferrell 1997; J. Katz 1988). As former Los Angeles gang member Sanyika Shakur notes: "The total lawlessness [of gang life] was alluring, and . . . the sense of importance, self-worth, and raw power was exciting, stimulating, and intoxicating beyond any other high. . . . Prison loomed in my future like wisdom teeth. . . . [It] was like a stepping stone to manhood" (1993:70, 163).

To be sure, some offenders behave rationally insofar as they try to select targets that minimize the risk of apprehension and maximize the proceeds from crime (Coupe & Blake 2006). Interviews with burglars, for example, indicate that they prefer unoccupied single-family homes, homes that have fewer entry barriers (e.g., sophisticated locks, window bars, alarms), homes that appear affluent or that contain "good stuff," and neighborhoods where they fit in or look inconspicuous. And to the extent that thieves fear apprehension, they try to push it from their minds and focus instead on the stash awaiting them (Bennett & Wright 1984; Tunnell 1992; Walsh 1980; Wright & Decker 1994).

In his autobiography, Nathan McCall recalls his involvement in armed robbery:

> It gave me a rush to know that I'd taken all that money. . . . At the same time, there was this fear that had been nagging me. . . . Cats all around me were getting popped for one thing or another, and being sent to the penitentiary. . . . I figured that sooner or later I'd take a fall, too. Sometimes, when I thought about it, I didn't care. Sometimes I cared a whole lot more than I was willing to admit. . . . I was twenty, half burned out on drugs, depressed, and hopelessly lost. At some point in life . . . I had lost control. (1994:136, 141)

On the night he was arrested for the robbery of a McDonald's restaurant that would send him to prison, McCall remembers: "My intuition . . . was telling me I shouldn't go. . . . Despite the wine I'd guzzled to numb my fear, I was nervous. It just didn't feel right. . . . I wished I could rewind . . . my fucked-up life and reset its course" (pp. 137–138, 140).

Some readers of McCall's autobiography will say that his life was simply a product of the choices he made. But others will recognize a greater complexity, for many factors impact on the course of one's life as it spins more and more out of control.

Deterrence and the death penalty. In the 1970s, the US Supreme Court ruled that the Eighth Amendment prohibition against "cruel and unusual punishment" essentially limited use of the death penalty to the most egregious cases of homicide (see Chapter 12). But although a majority of the US population supports the death penalty in such cases, most criminologists have concluded, based on "the overwhelming weight of the evidence," that the death penalty does not deter such crimes (Smith 2000:628). Historically, those states that have used the death penalty most often have had the highest rates of homicide. Furthermore, states that have abolished the death penalty have not experienced a rise in homicide, nor have states that reinstated the death penalty experienced a reduction in homicide (Peterson & Bailey 1998; Zimring 2003).

In fact, some criminologists suggest that homicides may even increase as a result of executions, due to what they call a **brutalization effect**. William Bowers and Glenn Pierce argue that executions "devalue life by the example of human sacrifice" and send a message that it is "appropriate to kill those who have gravely offended us" (1980:456). They examined the relationship between monthly executions in New York between 1906 and 1963 and monthly homicides between 1907 and 1964 and found that, on average, two additional homicides occurred each month following an execution in that state. Similarly, a study of California found that homicides were twice as high during the years when the state was executing an inmate every other month (1952–1967) than during the period when it carried out no executions (1968–1991) (Godfrey & Schiraldi 1995). And research that examined the reinstatement of the death penalty in Arizona in 1992 after a 30-year moratorium, and in Oklahoma in 1990 after a 25-year moratorium, found evidence of a brutalization effect as well (Bailey 1998; Cochran et al. 1994; Thomson 1997).

Positivist Criminology: Biological and Psychological Approaches

The other theories that for many decades superseded criminology's focus on the rational criminal entailed biological, psychological, and sociological perspectives and emerged from a school of thought called **positivism**. European positivists like Auguste Comte (1798–1857) and Adolphe Quetelet (1796–1874) advanced the proposition that human behavior could be studied as an empirical science. Scientific methods of inquiry were required to ascertain these forces ("positive" facts), diagnose the problem, and prescribe appropriate remedies. (While classical criminology predates positivism, neoclassical criminology is grounded in positivist science.) The remainder of this chapter examines *biological* and *psychological* approaches to crime. These theories depart from the classical and neoclassical

assumption of the rational criminal and postulate that crime is caused by forces that are beyond an individual's control. As individualistic explanations, however, they assume that criminals are kinds of persons who are fundamentally different from noncriminals.

Social Darwinism and Early Biological Criminology

Charles Darwin's work on evolution was a major factor in the rise of positivism and biological thinking about crime. Darwin (1809–1882) postulated that life had evolved through a process of natural selection or "survival of the fittest" among diverse species, including humans. Herbert Spencer (1820–1903) applied this notion to the social realm, asserting that some people had natural qualities that made them more fit, more adaptable members of society, while others lacked such redeeming traits. This brand of **social Darwinism** justified social inequality, which it attributed to differences in people's ability to compete for scarce resources, with the most talented individuals ending up in positions of wealth, power, and responsibility (Balkan et al. 1980; Hofstader 1959).

It was in this context that Italian physician Cesare Lombroso (1835–1909) emerged in the late nineteenth century as the founder of criminological positivism and the biological approach to crime. Lombroso postulated that many criminals were **atavists** from birth, throwbacks to an earlier stage of human evolution. He believed that these criminals were less highly evolved than law-abiding citizens and that they could be recognized by distinctive physical traits that he considered common among "savages and apes" and "the coloured races" (e.g., hairy bodies, curly hair, receding foreheads, long arms, and large skulls, nostrils, jaws, and ears) (cited in Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995:350). According to Lombroso, these individuals were low in intelligence, excessively idle, and insensitive to pain; and they were lovers of orgies who had an "irresistible craving for evil for its own sake" (p. 350). Lombroso also believed that women were less evolved than men, and that they were inherently childlike, jealous, and vengeful. He thought that the "natural passivity" of women made them less inclined toward crime, but that when they did deviate, they were exceptionally vile criminals whose "wickedness [was] enormous" (Lombroso & Ferrero 1895:152).

You may be surprised that someone who advanced such ideas could have become a central figure in criminology. Lombroso was a man of his time, when such race and gender prejudice was not uncommon (variants of such views continue to persist even today). But it was Lombroso's attempt to prove his theory with the methods of science that brought him his fame. He measured and recorded in great detail the physical attributes of living and deceased Italian prisoners, compared these findings with data from nonprisoners, and claimed his atavist hypothesis proven.

Nevertheless, Lombroso's research was methodologically flawed. The prisoner and nonprisoner samples were not pure types. The former may have included people who were innocent of the crimes they had been convicted of, and the latter likely included offenders who had not been caught and convicted. Moreover, the alleged physical differences found by Lombroso were rather trivial. And even if the alleged differences were noticeable, the fact that the prisoners were disproportionately Sicilian made the research problematic. For although Sicilians may have tended to exhibit some of the physical traits Lombroso attributed to criminals, their low status in Italian society would have increased their chances of imprisonment (Barkan 2006).

The earliest scientific refutation of Lombroso's work was published by Charles Goring (1913). Goring compared the physical attributes of some 3,000 English prisoners with those of a large control group and found no differences along the lines postulated by Lombroso. He did claim, however, that the criminals in his sample were shorter in height and lighter in weight than noncriminals, leaving the door open for a hereditary or "born criminal" explanation. While Goring cautioned against equating physical difference with abnormality, and acknowledged possible social-environmental influences, he was a social Darwinist at heart: "This physical inferiority, . . . originating in and fostered by selection, may tend with time to become an inbred characteristic of the criminal classes, just as, with the passage of generations, the upper classes of the noncriminal community have become differentiated in physique from those lower on the social scale" (p. 200).

Contemporary criminologist Nicole Rafter (1992) notes that in the United States, **criminal anthropology**, as she calls it, even predated Lombroso and continued to have adherents into the twentieth century. Criminal anthropology refers to the practice of studying the criminal "as a physically anomalous human type" (p. 525). William Sheldon (1949), for instance, advanced a theory that body type was associated with personality and behavioral traits. He compared a group of official delinquent boys to a group of nondelinquent boys, according to three body types: the thin and introverted *ectomorph,* the rotund and easygoing *endomorph,* and the muscular and aggressive *mesomorph,* the latter of whom, as you might suspect, was the criminal type in Sheldon's scheme. This theory occupied the attention of mainstream criminologists through the 1950s and is even taken seriously by some today (Glueck & Glueck 1950; Wilson & Herrnstein 1985).

Although these studies, like Lombroso's work, have been critiqued on methodological grounds, perhaps the strongest criticisms have concerned policy issues. Social Darwinists in the United States had called for "eugenic" solutions to crime and other social problems since the 1870s. **Eugenics**, which means "well born" or "good genes," was a philosophy favoring social intervention to regulate the genetic composition of the popu-

lation through methods such as compulsory sterilization and restrictions on the marriage and immigration of undesirable groups (i.e., those deemed to be biologically inferior). By the 1930s, about 30 states had passed laws allowing for the involuntary sterilization of not only criminals but also the insane, feebleminded, and epileptic. Over 60,000 people were deprived of their choice to reproduce (Balkan et al. 1980; Katz & Chambliss 1995).

To be sure, many criminal anthropologists (including Lombroso) were not favorably inclined toward eugenics, but many others (including Goring) were. Some eugenicists even advocated death for the purpose of genetic engineering. In 1900, W. Duncan McKim proposed "a gentle, painless death . . . for the very weak and the very vicious who fall into the hands of the State. . . . [Execution by] carbonic acid gas . . . [is] the simplest, the kindest, and most humane means for preventing reproduction among those whom we deem unworthy of this high privilege" (cited in Rafter 1992:540–541).

The most well-known extermination program of this type was undertaken by Adolf Hitler's Nazi regime during World War II. The physicians in the Nazi program actually learned much from their US counterparts and used the US example to facilitate "a favorable reception for compulsory . . . sterilization in Germany" (Rubenstein & Roth 1987:142). Even prior to Hitler's rise to power, a prominent German medical director wrote to the Ministry of Interior: "What we racial hygienists promote is not at all new or unheard of. In a cultured nation of the first order, in the United States of America, that which we strive toward was introduced and tested long ago" (cited in Rubenstein & Roth 1987:141).

Contemporary Biological Research

Late in his career, Lombroso actually retreated from a strictly biological position, acknowledging that crime was the product of a number of factors, some biological, some not (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995). Similarly, most contemporary biocriminologists accept the proposition that there is an interaction between biology and social environment. This **biosocial theory** assumes the existence of biological factors that *predispose* some individuals toward crime (Ellis & Walsh 2000; Fishbein 1990; Wilson & Herrnstein 1985). This predisposition interacts with and is activated or triggered by particular environmental conditions that do not produce the same response in individuals with different biological traits. At the same time, according to this view, a person's biology will not produce a definitive or determinant outcome, nor will it prevent one from exerting any conscious control over their actions. Rather, biology operates in conjunction with other influences, each of which increases or decreases the probability or likelihood of criminal behavior. Unfortunately, much biological crime research does not concern itself with such nuances.

Family inheritance and crime. In the 1956 movie *The Bad Seed,* a precocious young girl, Rhoda Penmark, commits three murders without even the slightest expression of remorse. Yet she had been raised by two loving, law-abiding parents. How are we to explain her crimes? We are told that her maternal grandmother had also committed a number of murders, including the poisoning of her own father, whom she killed for inheritance money. Weren't criminals a product of their environment, queried Rhoda's mother? Some were, a knowledgeable friend replied, but some were simply "born with no capacity for remorse or guilt, no feeling of right or wrong—born with the kind of brain that may have been normal in humans 50,000 years ago. . . . [It was] as if they were born blind . . . and you just couldn't . . . teach them to see." Apparently, we are left to deduce, Rhoda's mother had passed on a recessive gene for criminal behavior.

Perhaps the writers of this script had read Richard Dugdale's *The Jukes: A Study in Crime, Pauperism, Disease, and Heredity* (1877) or Henry Goddard's *The Kallikak Family: A Study in the Heredity of Feeblemindedness* (1912) for clues about the supposed genetic transmission of crime. Dugdale and Goddard had traced the criminal histories of family members across successive generations and claimed to have found a disproportionate amount of criminality. Although these particular studies do not stand up to scientific scrutiny, the role of genetic inheritance continues to be an issue in criminology. Contemporary research on this subject, which typically involves examination of twins and adopted children, has produced some intriguing findings.

Several studies of twins have found greater similarity in behavior (whether criminal or noncriminal) among identical or monozygotic twins (one ovum that divided after fertilization by one sperm) than among fraternal or dizygotic twins (two ova fertilized by two separate sperm). These findings suggest a genetic influence on criminality, since identical twins have the same biological makeup, while fraternal twins do not. However, critics of these studies have long noted that identical twins are more likely than fraternal twins to be treated similarly by others, and thus their common behavior patterns "could just as easily be due to environmental influences" (Bartol & Bartol 1989:144). Odd Dalgard and Einar Kringlen (1976), for example, found that any genetic influence on the criminality of twins was negligible when they controlled for such factors. Yet it is difficult to disentangle genetic characteristics from early childhood and family influences. Family experiences that are common to parents and children include diet, exposure to toxins, neighborhood conditions, and television-viewing habits (Ellis & Walsh 2000; Fishbein 1990; Katz & Chambliss 1995; Walters & White 1989).

Some adoption studies also have found greater similarity in criminal

behavior between adoptees and their biological parents than would be expected by chance, especially for chronic or repeat offenders. When the biological parent is both criminal and alcoholic, the adoptee's behavior tends to be disproportionately violent. But since adoption agencies often match the class and racial background of adopted and natural parents, it is unclear whether the adoptee's behavior is attributable to genetics rather than environmental factors. In addition, the age at which an individual was adopted needs to be considered, for increased criminality among adoptees has been associated with amount of time spent with biological parents or in orphanages.

Both the twin and the adoption studies often beg the question of what precisely is being inherited that supposedly causes crime. Clearly no one today seriously believes there is a bad seed or crime gene that is inherited. What, then, do biocriminologists propose? They argue that there are genetic predispositions for alcoholism, mental disorders, or temperamental traits such as impulsivity, extroversion, hyperemotionality, anger, and deceitfulness that make one more vulnerable to environmental strains that trigger criminality (Ellis & Walsh 2000; Fishbein 1990; Frick & White 2008; Rowe 1986). Nevertheless, most criminologists give little credence to genetic hypotheses about crime (Ellis & Walsh 1997). Glen Walters, one skeptic, examined the results of 38 studies of the association between genes and crime and concluded that the "better designed and more recently published studies [since 1975] provided less support for the gene-crime hypothesis" (1992:595).

Intelligence and crime. In 1904, Alfred Binet was commissioned by the French Ministry of Public Education to develop a test to measure children's cognitive (linguistic and mathematical) abilities at various age levels. From this was born the intelligence quotient (IQ) test. Binet did not consider one's score on this test to be genetic or impervious to accumulated experience. When the IQ test was introduced in the United States, however, a contrary attitude prevailed, even though tests administered to army recruits during World War I indicated that about half scored below the cognitive level expected of a 13-year-old (Katz & Chambliss 1995).

A number of studies have found that low IQ is correlated with higher rates of official and self-reported juvenile delinquency (Felson & Staff 2006; Hirschi & Hindelang 1977; Wilson & Herrnstein 1985), though obviously not to those crimes that require a good deal of intelligence (e.g., computer and financial crimes). How should we interpret the apparent association between IQ and delinquency? Is intelligence genetic, environmental, or a combination of the two? How much are we limited by our genes? How much does an enriching environment matter? Who would deny the significance of social influences such as parents and teachers who encourage chil-

dren to read and enjoy learning? Regardless, criminologists often argue that since IQ is associated with the cognitive abilities that lead to academic success, youths with low IQs may be more likely to feel alienated from or dissatisfied with school, which in turn may weaken their stake in conformity and increase their attraction to delinquency.

Perhaps the greatest point of contention regarding the IQ test has been its alleged class and race bias. In their well-publicized book *The Bell Curve,* Richard Herrnstein and Charles Murray (1994) compiled data that indicated that African Americans, on average, scored lower on IQ tests than European Americans, while Asian Americans scored the highest ("bell curve" refers to the shape of the distribution of IQ scores in a population from low to middle to high). Herrnstein and Murray also argued that low IQ or cognitive disadvantage was causally related to a variety of social ills, including out-of-wedlock births, welfare dependency, and crime. Moreover, they claimed that IQ is in large part genetic and that it is *immutable,* impervious to change. Hence government programs (e.g., early childhood education) designed to improve the lives of the cognitively disadvantaged are bound to fail.

The Bell Curve has been subjected to numerous criticisms, many of which were previously advanced against earlier works. For example, critics contend that the content of IQ test questions advantages individuals who are familiar with the white, middle-class cultural experience. Moreover, the property tax–based system of school funding means that low-income communities will have fewer educational resources for students, who consequently do poorer in school. Schools also use test scores to track students into vertical (high to low) tracks, which in turn become self-fulfilling prophecies of educational attainment, denying some youths access to desirable social roles (Cullen et al. 1997; Katz & Chambliss 1995; Menard & Morse 1984).

In a compelling empirical critique of *The Bell Curve,* Francis Cullen and colleagues (1997) examined data from nearly 500 studies containing over 42,800 offenders. These studies contain measures not only of intelligence and crime but also of respondents' social background (e.g., socioeconomic status, urban versus rural residence, religious participation, living with mother and father). Cullen and colleagues concluded that the association between IQ and crime was at best small, if not insignificant, after taking into account other social influences. Moreover, these social influences are often *amenable to change* (unlike Herrnstein and Murray's claims about IQ).

Cullen and colleagues believe that having "knowledge of an offender's intellectual capacity and aptitude is advantageous in designing" rehabilitative treatment programs. They also advocate a broadened conception of IQ that includes not just the standard linguistic and mathematical criteria but practical intelligence as well—that is, "a person's ability to learn and profit from experience, to monitor effectively one's own and others' feelings and

needs, and to solve everyday problems" (pp. 403–404). Nevertheless, they believe that Herrnstein and Murray's thesis and policy conclusions are based more on ideology than on empirical science.

Other biological factors. There are a number of other biological conditions that have been linked to criminal behavior. Indeed, the list of potential maladies seems endless. One of the most researched is the **XYY chromosome syndrome**. Whereas the normal male has one X and one Y chromosome, about one in a thousand have an extra Y chromosome. XYY males tend to have taller bodies, longer arms, more severe acne, more mental retardation, and on average, lower intelligence than XY males. In the 1960s, researchers began to postulate that they also exhibited more criminal violence (Binder et al. 1988; Katz & Chambliss 1995).

Considerable attention was drawn to this theory when the attorney representing Richard Speck, the mass murderer who killed eight nursing students in Chicago in 1966, claimed that Speck suffered from this syndrome. Speck, it turned out, did not have this chromosomal pattern. But initial studies did indicate that XYY males were disproportionately found in prisons and mental institutions (Katz & Chambliss 1995; Sanders 1983). On closer examination, however, it was discovered that the criminal histories of XYY males consisted primarily of property offenses, not violence. Their overrepresentation in prisons may have been related to their tendency to have lower intelligence and greater impulsivity, and perhaps to legal biases against individuals with this physical appearance. In any event, the trait is so rare that it could at best account for only a small fraction of criminal behavior. Alice Theilgaard concluded that "there is no ground for anticipating that a person with a certain [chromosomal] status will demonstrate a preordained, inflexible and irremediable personality or pathology" (1984:108).

A more promising line of biocriminological investigation has focused on the **autonomic nervous system** (ANS), which regulates bodily processes like breathing and perspiring. Hans Eysenck (1977) postulated that some ANS disorders make individuals less responsive to external stimulation, thus impeding their ability to be socially conditioned. Sarnoff Mednick and colleagues (1982) argued that chronic delinquents suffer from a sluggish ANS that interferes with the way in which fear (toward a punishing adult, for instance) inhibits aggressive impulses. They found that delinquents displayed significantly slower electrodermal responses (usually measured through sweat gland activity) than those in a nondelinquent control group. More recent research with other measures of ANS activity (e.g., low resting heart rate) supports the finding for serious juvenile offenders, but not for minor juvenile offenders (Cauffman et al. 2005).

Other studies have found that "abnormalities" or "deficits" in the **prefrontal lobe cortex** of the brain—perhaps caused by an injury, poor nutri-

tion, or substance abuse—are associated with serious juvenile offending (Cauffman et al. 2005). This trait is found in individuals who exhibit disruptive behavior disorders as well as shortsightedness and low impulse control. Additionally, studies have linked low levels of **serotonin**, a neurochemical transmitter that carries messages between the brain and the body, to violence. Low-serotonin individuals appear to respond more slowly to emotional stimuli and are less inhibited in their aggressive or impulsive behaviors (Ellis & Walsh 2000; Fishbein 1990; Moffitt et al. 1998).

However, the sources of biological maladies—whether they are genetic or environmentally induced—are not always clear. Take nutritional deficiencies and lead exposure, for example, which have been linked to a variety of cognitive problems that put one at risk for low IQ, memory loss, depression, and behavioral aggression (see Chapter 2). Poor nutrition and exposure to lead from paint chips in dilapidated buildings during childhood, for instance, are not genetic but are inversely related to socioeconomic life situations. Similarly, inadequate diet and alcohol and drug use during pregnancy can seriously impair fetal development and have deleterious long-term consequences. Such effects are caused by parental behavior, not genetics. But one should not simply write these off as "lifestyle choices," since a mother's ability to eat a balanced diet during pregnancy or to obtain access to an alcohol or drug treatment program is clearly related to social class. Moreover, unhealthy prenatal and ineffective postnatal child-rearing practices are so intertwined that it is often difficult to distinguish the effects of one from those of the other (Barkan 2006; Fishbein 1990). It also is important to note that fathers as well as mothers can contribute to birth defects in children. Environmental toxins can damage ova and sperm, and can even be transmitted to fetuses during intercourse *after* conception has occurred (Narayan 1995).

Nevertheless, at times, claims about biological causes of crime are simply taken too far. In 1978, Dan White, a city supervisor in San Francisco, shot and killed Mayor George Moscone and another supervisor, gay activist Harvey Milk. (Apparently, White did not like gays or politicians who were sympathetic to the gay rights movement.) During the murder trial, White's attorney claimed that White had been under the influence of junk food (sugar and food additives) that had diminished his capacity to control his behavior. White's "Twinkie defense," as it has been called, helped convince the jury to convict him of the lesser charge of manslaughter rather than first-degree murder (Weiss 1984). (Perhaps the jurors did not like gays or gay sympathizers either.)

If junk food does not make you do it, perhaps your **hormones**—the "chemical messengers" that help coordinate bodily processes—will. Some research has linked higher testosterone levels in males to aggressive behavior. Overall, however, the research has produced inconsistent results, with

some studies suggesting that, at times, higher testosterone levels may follow rather than precede aggression, and others finding that testosterone levels may drop after stressful events (Barkan 2006; Ellis & Walsh 2000; Katz & Chambliss 1995).

These inconsistent findings did not stop Ronnie Shelton from pleading not guilty to 28 counts of rape in 1988 on the grounds that his high levels of testosterone left him a victim of "compulsive rape syndrome." But the Texas judge and jurors were unconvinced. *Female* offenders, on the other hand, have been somewhat more successful with hormonal defenses. That same year, Sheryl Lynn Massip was charged with murdering her infant son by driving her car over him. She pleaded diminished responsibility due to postpartum (after birth) depression. Although a California jury returned a guilty verdict, "the judge overruled their decision on the grounds that she was . . . 'bonkers'" (Tavris 1992:152).

Nevertheless, Robin Ogle and colleagues (1995) take seriously the notion of **postpartum influences** on female criminality. They argue, however, that postpartum inducements stem more from environmental factors than from hormonal factors. For example, after childbirth, women experience a marked reduction in both sleep and personal space that can cause chronic levels of stress. Often the birth of a child is also accompanied by "severe financial strains due to a host of new expenses and restrictions" on one's ability to earn a living (p. 183). According to Ogle and colleagues, these stresses can induce a state of intense physiological arousal, an autonomic nervous system response that energizes the person to respond in ways that reduce the arousal. The arousal, which is experienced as a negative condition, may be associated with anger at the stress-inducing stimulus. Women who have little or no prior history of aggressive behavior do not know how to control this anger and may lash out at the most visible and vulnerable source of their arousal—their child.

As a defense in criminal trials, **premenstrual syndrome** (PMS) has arguably received more media attention than postpartum influences. In Great Britain in 1981, Christine English drove a car over her lover and killed him after they had quarreled over his drinking and infidelity and he had threatened to end their relationship. During the widely reported criminal trial, physician Katharina Dalton testified that English had been suffering from an extremely aggravated premenstrual physical condition since 1966 that made "her irritable, aggressive, impatient, and confused, with loss of self control" (cited in Binder et al. 1988:494). Although originally charged with murder, English's plea of diminished responsibility resulted in a lesser conviction for manslaughter and a sentence of probation (Faith 1993).

In research that brought her notoriety, Dalton (1961) claimed that about half of the 156 women she studied in British prisons had committed their crimes during the eight-day premenstrual/menstrual period. She also

claimed that about half of female drivers involved in motor vehicle accidents were in this eight-day phase. PMS research such as this has been vulnerable to the same kinds of criticism leveled at testosterone studies. Julie Horney (1978), for instance, found that about half of female *passengers* in accidents were also in their eight-day phase. Moreover, most of Dalton's prisoner-subjects had been convicted of nonviolent crimes, particularly theft and prostitution (Katz & Chambliss 1995). It is also important to remember that crimes and accidents are stressful events, and that stress can bring on early menstruation. So if any weak link does exist between menstruation and behavioral problems, it may be "not because the former causes the latter, but because the latter causes the former" (Tavris 1992:151).

Although they acknowledge multicausal interaction between biology and environment, most biocriminologists—whether they are considering family inheritance, intelligence, or other biological factors—give causal priority to biology and downplay social factors (Barkan 2006; Katz & Chambliss 1995). Studies generally rely on relatively small sample sizes and on officially labeled offenders, and the findings tend to be weak and inconsistent. Their focus is on violent criminality and juvenile delinquency to the exclusion of other types of crimes, especially white-collar crime. As David Friedrichs notes, "The pervasiveness of white-collar crime would seem to offer a powerful refutation of the proposition that criminality can be generally explained by biogenic explanations" (2007:201). This research also fails to account for group variations in crime—that is, it fails to explain why crime rates are higher among some groups than others. Thus we are left to assume that entire groups of people must be biologically flawed in some way. One case in point occurred in response to the urban race riots of the 1960s. Three neurosurgeons, well respected in their field, wrote a letter to the *Journal of the American Medical Association* claiming that "brain dysfunctions," not the "urgent social needs of the ghetto," underlay much collective violence and looting, and that psychosurgical techniques might be appropriate to eliminate this "source of aggressive behavior" (cited in Chorover 1973:49).

We would be naive to deny that "biological conditions have a profound impact on the adaptive, cognitive, and emotional abilities" of individuals (Fishbein 1990:56). But we must be wary of premature and injudicious applications of biological thinking about crime. At its extreme, we have noted the association of biological approaches with eugenics and the practice of compulsory sterilization and even extermination. Even when used with the best intentions, to prevent crime by diagnosing and delivering needed services to at-risk children, for example, biological interventions are fraught with ethical problems. Notice here that we are discussing *potential* offenders, children who might commit crimes some day. How will we avoid mistakenly diagnosing children or adversely stigmatizing them with a

potentially harmful label or setting in motion a self-fulfilling prophecy? What type of treatment will we employ? Will it be physiological (e.g., drugs), psychological, or social? Or will we simply isolate or quarantine suspect populations?

With convicted offenders as well, imposition of rehabilitative biological treatments is problematic. Diane Fishbein notes that "the appropriate administration of a medication or other treatment may . . . be warranted for some individuals with [an] identifiable pathology . . . [that] played a role in . . . [their] antisocial behavior" (1990:54, 56). She adds, however, that biological variables cannot be manipulated without attention to interacting factors. By the time individuals have entered the juvenile or criminal justice system, their behavior problems have been so substantially compounded that treating only one facet of their condition will be unlikely to yield the desired therapeutic results.

Freudian Psychology

Like biological theories, psychological explanations assume that criminals are different kinds of persons. They postulate an assortment of defective mental, emotional, or personality traits that either cause criminal behavior or predispose one to the environmental factors that trigger the onset of criminal behavior. (Behaviorism, discussed later in this chapter, is an exception.) To a large extent, many of the biological theories reviewed here identify such traits as intervening between biology and crime, and individual traits such as intelligence are sometimes elements of psychological (as well as biological) theories of crime.

One of the earliest psychological formulations was advanced by Austrian physician Sigmund Freud (1856–1939), whose **psychoanalytic theory** was quite influential in early explanations of juvenile delinquency (Aichorn 1935; Friedlander 1947; Healy & Bronner 1936). Freud and his followers believed that the human personality consists of three interdependent yet often conflicting elements: the **id**, **ego**, and **superego**:

> The *id* is the unrestrained, primitive, pleasure-seeking component with which each child is born. The *ego* develops through the reality of living in the world and helps manage and restrain the id's need for immediate gratification. The *superego* develops through interactions with parents and other significant people and represents the development of conscience and the moral rules that are shared by most adults. . . . All three segments of the personality operate simultaneously. The id dictates needs and desires, the superego counteracts the id by fostering feelings of morality and righteousness, and the ego evaluates the reality of a position between the two extremes. (Siegel et al. 2003:84)

According to Freudian theory, basic personality formation is completed in early childhood, and thus early parent-child interaction is of paramount

FURTHER EXPLORATION

DNA and the Criminal Justice System

The American public has been exposed to the use of DNA testing in criminal investigations through television shows such as *CSI: Crime Scene Investigation*, *Forensic Files*, and *Law and Order*. Increasingly, prosecutors are finding that jurors in criminal trials are expecting a degree of DNA evidence that simply is not available in most cases, and defense attorneys have been exploiting this gap in the evidence to obtain acquittals for their clients. Apparently, few jurors are fully aware of the limitations and problems associated with this type of evidence (Roane 2005).

DNA, or deoxyribonucleic acid, is found in the cells of the human body and contains an individual's genetic blueprint. Because only identical twins have the same DNA, it can be used to identify crime victims and to establish the statistical likelihood that a suspect was involved in a crime. In criminal investigations, DNA samples are derived from blood, saliva, skin tissue, bone, hair, earwax, sweat, mucus, urine, semen, and vaginal and rectal cells (Turman 2001).

Care must be exercised when gathering and analyzing DNA, to avoid contamination and degradation. Contamination occurs when foreign matter comes into contact with the DNA sample. This can happen if someone sneezes or coughs in the vicinity of the DNA sample or if someone touches some part of his or her body and then touches the areas where the DNA will be extracted. Furthermore, exposure of the DNA to heat or humidity will accelerate the degradation process and make the sample unstable.

The use of DNA evidence in criminal investigations has increased dramatically in recent years. Whereas only about half of all state prosecutors used DNA evidence for plea negotiations or felony trials in 1996, over two-thirds used it in 2001. Use of DNA evidence was most pronounced in large, full-time prosecutor offices; in cities with populations of a million or more, 100 percent of the offices used DNA. Between 1997 and 2000, publicly operated forensic crime laboratories reported annual increases of about 11,000 new criminal cases as well as over 103,000 cases of individuals already convicted of crimes. Given the burgeoning workload, many crime laboratories have been unable to accommodate requests from criminal justice agencies. In 2004 the US Justice Department reported a backlog of more than 540,000 cases nationwide awaiting DNA testing (Cannon 2004; DeFrances 2002; Steadman 2002).

While DNA evidence can be and has been used to exonerate the innocent, some civil-liberties concerns about its use have emerged. One issue involves other ways the collected samples might be used. Because DNA samples can reveal genetic conditions such as sickle cell anemia and schizophrenia, the samples could be used to deny people health insurance or require them to pay higher premiums. Another concern is that the emergence of state and national DNA databases poses a threat to privacy rights and could also renew interest in discovering purported "crime genes" that would subject individuals to social control "regardless of whether or not they have violated the law" (Burns & Smith 1999:3).

continues

continued

The expansion of DNA databases has racial implications as well. African Americans are more likely than European Americans to come into contact with law enforcement agencies, a disparity that is especially evident among juveniles. Over half of US states now include DNA profiles of juveniles in their databanks, with no provisions for removing these profiles once the youths become adults (Kimmelman 2000).

Additionally, some critics have raised the specter of police tampering of evidence, especially in departments that have poor rapport with the residents in their communities. The Federal Bureau of Investigation itself has acknowledged that about 3,000 federal cases prior to 1997 may have been affected by skewed testimony, sloppy investigations, or tainted evidence (*New York Times* 2003). And several states have reported cases of evidence contamination, falsification of DNA data, inflation of the statistical likelihood of a DNA match, and questionable testimony by forensic experts and laboratory managers (Roane 2005; Tanner 2003).

importance. If parents are neglectful or abusive, or exert too little or too much discipline, imbalances may develop among the id, ego, and superego, creating unconscious psychological conflicts within individuals. Later-life juvenile delinquency and adult criminality may represent a symbolic expression or acting-out of such conflicts. If parental socialization is weak or inadequate, for instance, the child's superego will be underdeveloped and the id will dominate the personality. Later in life this may lead the person to insist on the immediate gratification of selfish needs, to lack compassion for or sensitivity to others, or to behave impulsively and aggressively. If, on the other hand, parental discipline is overbearing and punitive, the individual may become overly rebellious and defiant of authority.

Critics of Freudian psychology contend that it is too speculative. The postulated personality components are neither observable nor measurable, requiring one to rely on a psychoanalyst's retrospective "interpretation of a patient's interpretation of what is occurring in the [un]conscious" (Sheley 1985:202). Moreover, the influence of early-life events can be significantly altered by later experiences. Several criminological studies, for example, have found that the propensity for criminal behavior is substantially reduced with the acquisition of adult commitments conducive to law-abiding behavior, particularly marriage and stable employment (see Chapter 4).

Freud, nevertheless, was one of the first to draw attention to the important influence of family socialization. Contemporary family research suggests that parental affection and support of children, effective parent-child communication and parental monitoring of peers, absence of conflict in the home, and positive marital adjustment of parents mitigate antisocial conduct

and increase prosocial behavior among youths (Cernkovich & Giordano 1987; Dillon et al. 2008; Warr 2005; Wright & Cullen 2001). Criminologists Michael Gottfredson and Travis Hirschi (1990) contend that effective parenting is the key to individuals' ability to control their impulses and delay short-term gratifications. Family studies also show that children who are raised with inconsistent discipline or with overly permissive or overly harsh discipline, particularly child abuse or neglect, are more likely to engage in later-life criminality (Capaldi et al. 1997; Kruttschnitt et al. 1986; Patterson & Stouthamer-Loeber 1984; Widom 1989; Zingraff et al. 1993).

Freud, women, and abuse. The treatment of women in Freudian theory has been particularly controversial. Freud believed that women were anatomically inferior to men and that they suffered from "penis envy" (Klein 1973). Women who were unable to adjust to their "natural" child-rearing role compensated for the absent penis by attempting to act like men (e.g., by pursuing careers). Other theorists working within the Freudian tradition attributed females' law violation to their inherent emotional dependency and intense need for love (Konopka 1966). To satisfy this need, "good" women traded monogamous sex for marriage, while "bad" women traded sexual promiscuity and prostitution for excitement and novel experiences (Thomas 1923). The remedy for such wayward women and girls was psychological adjustment to their traditional feminine role.

A number of female patients in Freud's psychoanalytic practice spoke to him of having had childhood sexual encounters with their fathers or other adult males. Initially Freud believed that these accounts were factual, for "the memory must be extracted from . . . [the patients] piece by piece, and while it is being awakened in their consciousness they become the prey to an emotion which . . . would be hard to counterfeit" (cited in Masson 1984:47). Freud hypothesized that hysteria in adult women was the result of such childhood sexual abuse. But in 1895, when Freud and Josef Breuer published *Studies in Hysteria,* Breuer would not agree to include Freud's **seduction theory** in the book, "probably believing quite correctly that the world was not ready to hear of [such] . . . brutalizing of girls" (Williams 1987:48). After much disapproval and even downright hostility from his professional colleagues, Freud retracted his theory and asserted that the "scenes of seduction" described to him were mere fantasies made up by his patients. Such widespread abuse of children, Freud now concluded, was not very likely (Masson 1984).

The sexual abuse of females by family members and others, however, is now widely documented (Belknap 2007; Russell 1984; Searles & Berger 1995). Within the home, many girls are emotionally and physically exploited by fathers and stepfathers (or by other relatives or mothers' boyfriends). The psychological trauma associated with such abuse is often (though not

always) extensive, and can include both short- and long-term effects, such as "fear, anxiety, depression, anger and hostility, inappropriate sexual behavior, . . . difficulties in school, truancy, and early marriage" (Chesney-Lind 1989:21–22). Often girls run away from home to avoid further victimization, only to find that life on the streets involves additional exploitation, as some are forced to turn to crime and prostitution in order to survive. Eventually, many of these young women are arrested and incarcerated, or they are returned to their homes and forced to remain with the abusers, who continue to exploit them (Schaffner 1999; Silbert & Pines 1981; Widom & Ames 1984).

Personality and Crime

There are other psychological perspectives that reject Freudian theory (in whole or in part), but that still postulate the existence of developmental personality types or ways of thinking that distinguish criminals from noncriminals. Criminals and delinquents have been variously described as emotionally unstable, mentally disordered, paranoid, schizophrenic, neurotic, egocentric, narcissistic, hedonistic, extroverted, aggressive, impulsive, hostile, defiant, attention-deficit disordered, learning-disabled, insecure, low in self-esteem, shortsighted, and so forth—the list goes on and on. Among the most extreme of personality types is the **psychopath** or **sociopath**, an individual who is said to lack not only impulse control but also the capacity to experience guilt or a sense of caring for or responsibility or obligation to others (Einstader & Henry 1995).

Sociological critics of personality theory point to the ambiguity of psychological labeling and to the multiple definitions of the personality concept, which "render it so vague that it could mean almost anything" (Sanders 1983:21). The majority of personality inventories (studies utilizing questions or true-false statements that attempt to ascertain personality types) examined in an early review failed to confirm the hypothesis that criminals have different personalities than noncriminals (Schuessler & Cressey 1950). Although subsequent assessments suggested a more positive reading of the post-1950s research, with the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, an instrument developed by Starke Hathaway and Elio Monachesi (1963), given the most favorable review, methodological problems led many criminologists to downplay the significance of this line of research (Tennenbaum 1977; Waldo & Dinitz 1967).

Some personality inventories have been faulted for containing similar items in both the personality and the criminality sections of the questionnaire, thereby biasing findings in favor of an association between the two (Caspi et al. 1994). For example, one section might include a true-false statement such as "Sometimes when I was young I stole things," while the other section might include "I have never been in trouble with the law."

Sometimes the criminal behavior itself is used as a criterion for the classification of the aberrant personality type. And like the biological research on crime, personality studies tend to rely on relatively small samples and focus on officially labeled criminals and delinquents. Moreover, the research finds that personality differences *between law violators* is at times greater than the differences *between offenders and nonoffenders.* The research also finds that the amount of mental disorder among offenders or the amount of crime among the disordered is no more than is found among the general population (Akers & Sellers 2009; Monahan & Steadman 1983).

What about the question of white-collar crime? There are a handful of personality studies that address this issue. For the most part the research indicates that white-collar offenders "fall within the range of normal personality types" (Friedrichs 2007:202). A few studies suggest that these offenders are more likely than nonoffenders to display "a tendency toward risk taking and recklessness, ambitiousness and drive, and egocentricity and a hunger for power." These traits, however, are also associated with legitimate business success. Other characteristics noted in the literature include a tendency toward irresponsibility, lack of dependability, fear of failure, an inability to delay gratification, and a desire to control or dominate others (Coleman 2002; Piquero et al. 2005; Wheeler 1992).

Psychologists have argued that much sociological criticism of personality theory reflects a disciplinary bias against individualistic explanations and unfairly represents the evidence (Andrews & Wormith 1989). Indeed, there are reputable studies that have found personality differences between offenders and nonoffenders (Caspi et al. 1994; Miller & Lynam 2001). Gottfredson and Hirschi (1990) argue that the myriad traits identified in this research tradition can best be characterized as a matter of **low self-control**, which is indicative of individuals who have difficulty delaying gratification and tolerating frustration, who are unable to solve problems through verbal rather than physical means, and who are self-centered and indifferent to the needs and feelings of others. They argue that self-control is "for all intents and purposes, *the* individual-level cause of crime" (p. 232). The association between low self-control and criminality is well-documented in the research literature, although not to the exclusion of (or to a greater extent than) other social variables (Baron 2003; Longshore et al. 2004; Morris et al. 2006; Pratt & Cullen 2000). Moreover, a critical task of criminological theory and research is to explain why such personality differences exist in the first place. Does the cause of crime reside within the individual, in the developmental years of childhood, or in broader social factors that we have yet to explore?

Behaviorism

Psychological **behaviorism**, also called "operant conditioning" or "learning-reinforcement" theory, offers another way of understanding individual

behavior. Behaviorism, which is associated with the work of B. F. Skinner (1953), differs from Freudian and personality theories in that it focuses on observable behavior rather than on unconscious or personality factors. It postulates that "behavior is acquired or conditioned by the effects, outcomes, or *consequences* it has on a person's environment" (Akers 1985:43). Behavior that is reinforced by a reward or positive consequence will persist, while behavior that is unrewarded or punished will be discontinued. Individuals learn to favor particular courses of action, including the criminal variety, depending on the particular mix of rewards and punishments that is attached to their behavior. Rewards and punishments may be *social* or *nonsocial* in nature. The social include favorable or unfavorable reactions from other individuals (e.g., you receive approval or disapproval from parents or friends); the nonsocial include the pleasurable or unpleasurable physical sensations associated with behavior (e.g., you feel euphoric or ill after consuming alcohol or drugs). Learning also takes place through the imitation or modeling of other people's behavior (Akers & Sellers 2009; Wood et al. 1997).

Since behaviorist explanations necessarily implicate social relationships, we will defer discussion of the behaviorist approach called "social learning" theory until considering sociological explanations of crime in Chapter 4. Essentially, behaviorism postulates that the psychological mechanisms underlying criminal behavior are the same as those underlying law-abiding behavior, and thus that, psychologically speaking, most criminals are actually not very different from noncriminals.

Applications of Psychological Theories

Psychological theories have been very influential in establishing the rehabilitative approach to crime control. These theories suggest therapeutic interventions designed to transform the offender from an individual with an abnormal or maladaptive personality into an individual with a normal personality. Such interventions typically employ professional therapists (e.g., psychiatrists, psychologists, social workers) who attempt to (1) help offenders uncover the childhood root causes of their behavior or gain insight more generally into why they behave as they do, and (2) train individuals to monitor and control their actions more effectively (Einstader & Henry 1995). These strategies also have been applied to at-risk youths with the goal of *prevention,* and as such pose some of the same ethical dilemmas that biological treatments pose—issues regarding accurate diagnosis, stigmatizing labels, and unwarranted intrusion into the lives of youths who have not yet committed crimes. On the other hand, failure to intervene to help individuals in need has potential costs as well.

Samuel Yochelson and Stanton Samenow (1976, 1977) reject the "couch therapy" approach to psychology and focus instead on the criminal's

current way of thinking. They are not interested in past environmental influences or the emotional burdens of childhood. Rather, they want to confront the individual's calculating, narcissistic personality. Offenders must acknowledge that they are responsible and accountable for their own behavior, and they must reject "errors in thinking" that rationalize or blame others for their actions. According to Yochelson and Samenow, only through the development of such "internal deterrents" will the likelihood of future criminality be reduced.

Overall, the rehabilitative record of conventional psychotherapies is weak (Lundman 2001; Whitehead & Lab 1989). Behaviorist interventions that manipulate the distribution of rewards and punishments (e.g., a token economy or point system that grants or denies privileges based on the person's behavior) appear somewhat effective in inducing conformity within correctional settings, but they have negligible impact upon release (Trojanowicz et al. 2001). Successful programs generally require a more comprehensive approach than is typically available. D. A. Andrews and colleagues (1990) believe that the most effective correctional interventions utilize behaviorist and social learning principles, are carefully matched to offenders' particular learning styles and psychological needs, and are comprehensively designed to enhance aggression management and stress management skills as well as academic and vocational skills, change antisocial attitudes and ways of thinking, reduce chemical dependencies, foster familial bonds, modify peer associations and role models, and help offenders access appropriate service agencies (Cullen & Applegate 1997; Gibbons 1999; Pearson et al. 2002).

Wayne Wooden and Randy Blazak (2001), however, are concerned about the mental hospitalization of youths, which has increased over the years. Many of these hospital commitments, they believe, are unnecessary and may involve "rebellious teenagers struggling with their parents" over clothing, hairstyles, music preferences, sexuality, dating, and "other issues once thought of as typical 'growing pains'" (p. 194). Wooden and Blazak also note that "adolescent treatment hospitals have become big business." Since insurance companies tend to reimburse a higher percentage of inpatient expenses than outpatient expenses, parents may find it more cost-effective and convenient to commit their children than to find affordable, quality outpatient counseling.

Jill Rosenbaum and Lorraine Prinsky (1991) asked representatives of a dozen inpatient treatment facilities in southern California whether a hypothetical 15-year-old boy needed hospitalization. The hypothetical scenario described parents who were concerned about their son's listening to heavy metal music, his spiked and color-dyed hair, his unconventional clothing, and the posters he put on his bedroom wall. Although the parents were not sure whether their son was drinking or using drugs, they confirmed that he

was doing well in school and was not violent, suicidal, or depressed. Nevertheless, nearly all the hospital representatives recommended placing the youth in an inpatient facility.

Still, there exists a need to address the genuine mental-health problems of those individuals who come under the jurisdiction of the juvenile and criminal justice systems. Due to "developments in pharmacology, stricter standards for involuntary commitment, and changes in public expenditures," many individuals who were once held in psychiatric hospitals are now incarcerated in jails and prisons, leading to what some have called the "criminalization of mental illness" (Markowitz 2006:45; Perez et al. 2003). Moreover, with about 20 percent of the US population experiencing mental-health issues of one kind or another, the availability of psychological treatment becomes an important part of any viable program of crime prevention (Thompson et al. 2003).

The insanity defense. Another controversial application of psychological thinking involves the insanity defense to crime. In the US system of law, the insanity defense is tied to the notion that "illegality alone does not make . . . a crime" (Sykes & Cullen 1992:37). Rather, the illegal act must be accompanied by *mens rea* (guilty mind)—that is, criminal intent. According to this view, the individual must possess criminal intent at the time of the crime for punishment to be morally justified. (US law does expect that persons will exercise reasonable care to avoid the unintentional harm of others. If one behaves recklessly—for example, kills someone in a drunk-driving accident—they can be held criminally liable for such conduct.)

The insanity defense in the United States derives from English law and the 1843 case of Daniel M'Naghten, who was tried for the murder of Edward Drummond, the secretary to Prime Minister Robert Peel. M'Naghten had intended to shoot the prime minister but killed Drummond by mistake. Apparently, M'Naghten suffered from the paranoid delusion that the government was a deadly enemy out to get him. His attorneys claimed that he was insane and hence not legally responsible for his actions. M'Naghten was found not guilty by reason of insanity. This case established the **M'Naghten Rule**, whereby a defendant could be found not guilty by reason of insanity if it could be clearly proven that, "at the time of the committing of the act, the party accused was laboring under such a defect of reason, from disease of the mind, as not to know the nature and quality of the act he was doing; or if he did know it, that he did not know that he was doing what was wrong" (cited in Sykes & Cullen 1992:48).

By the middle of the twentieth century, about two-thirds of the states in the United States had adopted this rule. In addition to recognizing defect of *reason,* US law also recognizes defect of *will.* Here the will is considered to be so impaired that individuals cannot refrain from doing what their reason

and emotion tell them to be wrong. Hence the doctrine of **irresistible impulse**, whereby defendants can be found not guilty by reason of insanity if mental illness prevented them from being able to control their behavior (this doctrine covers what some refer to as temporary insanity). Essentially, the irresistible impulse defense makes the cognitive awareness of right and wrong less significant than the volitional control of one's actions (Reid 1997; Sykes & Cullen 1992).

The American Law Institute, an organization that proposes model penal codes to encourage legal uniformity throughout the nation, developed a model insanity defense that incorporates elements of the M'Naghten Rule and the irresistible impulse doctrine: "A person is not responsible for criminal conduct if at the time of such conduct as a result of mental disease or defect he lacks substantial capacity either to appreciate the criminality [wrongfulness] of his conduct or to conform to the requirements of law" (cited in Sykes & Cullen 1992:48–49). Moreover, this model placed the burden of proof on the prosecution to establish the defendant's sanity; failing that, a defendant can be found insane. By the early 1980s, this definition had been adopted by more than half the states as well as by the federal government.

Then came John Hinckley, Jr., in a case that bears an uncanny resemblance to that of M'Naghten. During an attempted assassination of President Ronald Reagan in 1981, Hinckley shot and seriously disabled press secretary James Brady (see Chapter 1). At his criminal trial, Hinckley pled not guilty by reason of insanity. He was apparently fascinated with the movie *Taxi Driver* and obsessed with Jodie Foster, an actress who was featured in that film. Hinckley was trying to impress Foster or at least attract her attention. Sue Titus Reid summarizes the testimony of the defense psychiatrists who took the witness stand on Hinckley's behalf:

> Hinckley was psychotic, was consumed by paradoxical thoughts, was depressed, had hypochondriacal tendencies, hated himself, suffered from schizophrenia spectrum disorder, had an abnormal thought process, thought of himself as a little boy who had done something terrible, and was torn between childish love and dependence on his father and subconscious fantasies about killing him. (1997:128)

The prosecution countered that Hinckley had planned the crime in a cold and calculating manner, and offered its own psychiatric witnesses, who testified that Hinckley was legally sane. With the burden of proof on the prosecution, however, the jury ruled in Hinckley's favor.

The insanity defense has always had critics who argue that it allows dangerous criminals to avoid prison and sets them free to commit more crimes. Successful insanity defendants are not set free, however. Like Hinckley, they are remanded to mental hospitals under civil commitment.

Release from civil commitment requires the approval of the psychiatric authorities responsible for treating such individuals. Hinckley has not yet (and may never) receive a full discharge, although in December 2003 a federal judge ruled that he could have unsupervised visits with his parents outside the District of Columbia mental hospital where he is committed, provided these visits are restricted to the Washington area (Janofsky 2003).

The Hinckley case fueled a public backlash against the insanity defense and spawned the development of legal reforms to curtail its use. One reform, adopted by the federal government and several states, essentially returned the defense to its narrower M'Naghten definition regarding cognitive knowledge of right and wrong, and placed the burden to prove insanity on the defendant. A more controversial reform adopted by some states involves the development of a new legal category: **guilty but mentally ill**. Under the guidelines for this category, defendants may be held criminally responsible for their crimes, but they are first sent to a mental-health facility for treatment; afterward they are transferred to a prison to serve the remainder of their sentence.

John Klofas and Ralph Weisheit (1987) conducted an evaluation of the "guilty but mentally ill" reform in the state of Illinois, where it was instituted as an option to the traditional insanity defense. Klofas and Weisheit found that use of this new category did not reduce the number of insanity-defense verdicts, because it was used as an addition to, not as a substitute for, the traditional defense. Moreover, "guilty but mentally ill" offenders were not sent to mental-health facilities, and most did not even receive psychiatric treatment in prison.

Clearly the public fears that dangerous offenders will be deemed fit to reenter society before they truly are cured or rehabilitated. We have all heard cases of correctional officials concluding that an offender was ready to be released from custody when in fact the offender was not. The insanity defense is not the culprit in most of these cases, however, for a greater number of dangerous offenders are released from prisons than from mental hospitals. Moreover, the insanity defense is attempted by less than 1 percent of felony defendants. Only one-quarter of these defendants are successful, and relatively few are ever released from custody (Reid 1997).

* * *

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Jeffrey Dahmer: Murderer Among Us

Between 1987 and 1991, Jeffrey Dahmer committed 16 murders in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. Dahmer targeted gay males, people who often expect harassment from the police and who thus try to avoid contact with them. When stalking his victims, Dahmer chose venues such as shopping malls and gay bathhouses, where anonymity was ensured or where he could at least blend into the crowd. He would invite his victims to his apartment for a drink or to watch pornographic movies, or he would offer them money to pose for pictures. At his apartment he would immobilize them with the sedative Halcion or hit them with a rubber mallet. Sometimes Dahmer would sexually assault his victims before he killed them, but more often he killed them and then sexually assaulted the corpses. He also cut up his victims, stored body parts in his freezer, and even ate them (Fisher 1997).

Unlike John Hinckley, Dahmer was unsuccessful in his attempt to use the insanity defense. He was convicted and sentenced to life in prison; he was beaten to death by another inmate in 1994. What some analysts consider to be the real story of the Dahmer case, however, is how he was able "to move about the city . . . with relative impunity, escaping detection" for such a long period of time (Fisher 1997:164; Williams 1999b). Countless individuals, in both official and unofficial capacities, were in positions to realize what he was doing and take action to stop him.

In 1987, around the time of his second Milwaukee murder, Dahmer was "kicked out of [a] gay bathhouse for drugging another patron to the point [that he] . . . had to be taken to a hospital. . . . On another occasion, Dahmer drugged and sexually assaulted two men" at a hotel (Fisher 1997:179). Yet when the police were called to investigate, the victims, fearful of being publicly outed as gay, failed to press charges. The police dropped the matter.

In 1988, after Keison Sinthasomphone, a 13-year-old Laotian boy, managed to escape Dahmer's apartment and alert the police, "Dahmer was arrested for sexual assault and enticing a child for immoral purposes" (Fisher 1997:181). Though he pled guilty to the charges, he served only 10 months in jail. While under probation, Dahmer was required to see several psychiatric professionals, whom he used as a source of Halcion. And social workers who were assigned to do home visits missed the "shrine of bones in his living room because they were afraid—not of him but of visiting the inner-city neighborhood where he lived" (Williams 1999b:10).

Overall, during his murder spree, Dahmer "had at least seven contacts with police, was arrested three times, was put on probation twice, and was jailed once" (Fisher 1997:182). Repeated and urgent calls to the police from women of the mostly black neighborhood were seemingly discounted—calls complaining of a stench emanating from Dahmer's apartment and of his public drunkenness. And with more than a dozen gay men missing in one city alone, no one alerted the community that "a serial killer might be on the loose" (Williams 1999b:10).

In 1991, 14-year-old Konerac Sinthasomphone, brother of Keison,

continues

continued

escaped from Dahmer's apartment, drugged and naked. Five African Americans, aged 11 to 20, came upon him and observed "blood around his buttocks, testicles, and pubic hair." One of them called the police as Dahmer appeared at the scene to retrieve Konerac. When the police arrived, Dahmer explained that "Konerac was his roommate, and he was taking him home" (Fisher 1997:184). The black witnesses, emotional and shouting, urged the police to look at Konerac's "butt," but the officers wouldn't listen and told them to "shut the hell up" and "get lost." Apparently the police preferred to take the word of a murderer, "polite, calm, and white," over a group of exuberant black youths (p. 186).

Dahmer even invited the officers back to his apartment to see photos of Konerac, who Dahmer said was 19 or 20 years old, posing in black bikini underwear. The officers, who did in fact go to the apartment, later acknowledged detecting an unpleasant odor (which turned out to be a decomposing body). They did nothing, however, leaving Konerac to become Dahmer's twelfth victim. Back at their car, the officers "radioed the police dispatcher and between audible laughs said they had returned 'the intoxicated Asian naked male to his sober boyfriend'" (Fisher 1997:187). One added, amid more laughter, "my partner's gonna get deloused at the station." Even though follow-up calls from worried neighbors continued, the police dismissed the concerns with casual assurances that the 14-year-old was an adult (Williams 1999b).

Patricia Williams believes that the Dahmer case says a lot about the attitudes of those in power toward those without power. Dahmer's ability to escape suspicion rested on the official devaluing of gay lives and on a presumption of "adult Asian men as soft, effeminate, exotic, sexualized and perpetually childlike; of blacks as dangerous; and of women, particularly black women, as hysterical and unbelievable" (1999b:10).

4

Sociological Explanations of Criminal Behavior

ELIJAH ANDERSON (1999) BEGINS HIS ETHNOGRAPHY of Philadelphia street life with a tour down Germantown Avenue, an eight-and-a-half-mile thoroughfare that connects the northwest suburbs with the heart of the inner city. The shopping district at the northwest end attracts a diverse population of customers from all over the city. "Although most of the people are white, virtually every ethnic group is represented. . . . The community appears to be racially integrated in its public relationships, perhaps self-consciously so. . . . There are biracial groups of friends." There is a Borders bookstore as well as many small, upscale businesses: gourmet food shops, a camera shop, jewelry stores, clothing boutiques. "Street violence is the farthest thing from anyone's mind" (pp. 16, 18).

Further down the avenue, however, one reaches a neighborhood boundary. "There is more black street traffic. . . . Exterior bars begin to appear on the store windows . . . and doors. . . . The place isn't crime ridden . . . [but] it is prudent to be wary." Continuing on, the buildings become less well maintained. More graffiti is evident. More check-cashing and discount stores, and beeper and pawn shops. More vacant lots and abandoned, boarded-up buildings. Many of the people here are extremely poor. Swaggering youth "loiter on street corners . . . [and] men drink alcoholic beverages out of paper sacks." Off the main boulevard "open-air drug deals occur, prostitutes ply their trade, and boys shoot craps. . . . The neighborhood is sprinkled with crack dens. . . . Morning is generally the safest time of day. As evening approaches, the possibility of violence increases, and after nightfall the code of the street holds sway. . . . Under that rule the toughest, the biggest, and the boldest individual prevails. . . . People watch their backs. . . . [They] understand that you are not always tested, but you have to be ready" (pp. 20–23, 25–26, 29–30; see Chapter 8).

This brief account illustrates what sociologists refer to as **social ecology** (or human ecology), a concept adapted from the discipline of biology that refers to the relationship between human populations and the physical environment. The social ecology of a community influences its patterns of social interaction in ways that cannot be adequately understood by the sorts

of individualistic explanations discussed in the previous chapter. As we move into this terrain, we will need to use our sociological imagination and look beyond the individual, to the social environment.

Sociological theories of criminal behavior are as diverse as the individualistic theories explored in Chapter 3. We begin by distinguishing between macrosociological (*macro* meaning "large") and microsociological (*micro* meaning "small") levels of analysis. Typically, **macrosociological theories** focus on elements of social structure or entire societies or communities that account for group variations in criminal behavior. They look at the big picture, asking why certain groups of people living under particular circumstances commit more crime than other groups living under different circumstances. Macrosociological theories do not deny the autonomy or independence of the individual. They do not claim that everyone exposed to the same structural constraints and opportunities will respond in the same way. But they do examine the circumstances that increase the probability or likelihood that people will act one way rather than another.

As noted in Chapter 1, social structure does not exist independently of social action. Rather, social structures are enacted by individuals in specific situations. **Microsociological theories** examine the link between the individual and society by focusing on the processes by which "individuals acquire social attributes through interaction with others" (Barlow 1996:468). These theories acknowledge that people exposed to the same social structure do not always behave in the same way, and that people from dissimilar circumstances don't necessarily behave differently. Microsociological theories may be conceptualized as **social psychological theories** insofar as they consider how individuals learn to favor or disfavor criminal courses of action, how they interpret or account for the meaning of their actions, and how they are socialized or controlled through social relationships. In contrast to biological and psychological approaches that view individuals as deviant kinds of persons, microsociological theories emphasize the common ways in which normal people respond to varying social environments (Orcutt 1983).

Early European Contributions

Like the biological and psychological theories in the preceding chapter, most sociological theories partake of the scientific-positivist tradition. Some sociological theories, however, are more akin to social criticism in that they analyze the social problems of the day and offer a vision of a more ideal future. We begin our inquiry by briefly examining the contributions of a few early European thinkers who anticipated, influenced, or set the terms of the debate for the competing theoretical perspectives that were to constitute sociological criminology in the United States.

In many respects the roots of **sociological positivism** can be traced to the work of Belgian astronomer Adolphe Quetelet (1796–1874). Quetelet believed that social behavior could be studied scientifically in a manner similar to the study of nature, of the heavens and earth. He was a pioneer in the use of official statistics to make observations about crime, and was one of the first cartographers (mapmakers) to examine territorial or geographic variations in crime. Quetelet analyzed French crime rates and was impressed with their relative constancy over time. He concluded that there must be lawlike regularities that governed criminal behavior, just as there were laws that governed the physical universe (like the law of gravity), and that individuals placed in similar circumstances were prone to act in similar ways. Those with the greatest propensity toward crime were people in the lower classes and young males. But, said Quetelet, it was not poverty per se but the unequal distribution of wealth and sudden fluctuations in the economy that were most highly associated with crime. Women, he believed, committed fewer crimes because they were physically weaker, led more restricted lives, and drank less alcohol than men. Quetelet maintained, however, that women were more likely to benefit from lenient or chivalrous legal treatment, but only if they conformed to traditional, patriarchal gender roles and were married and economically dependent upon men (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995).

Like Quetelet, French sociologist Émile Durkheim (1858–1917) used statistical data to study social behavior. In his classic book *Suicide* (1897/1952), Durkheim noted that suicide rates varied between groups and regions and fluctuated over time. He argued that these patterns could be explained not by individualistic factors but by structural features of society.

Like many thinkers of his day, Durkheim assumed that humans were basically selfish or egoistic beings with potentially insatiable desires. It was the role of society to hold these desires in check lest chaos or social anarchy prevail. Durkheim developed the concept of the **collective conscience**, the sociological equivalent of Freud's superego. The collective conscience was the "totality of beliefs and sentiments common to average citizens of the same society" that provided the moral glue that held the society together (1893/1964:79). Durkheim believed that religion was a powerful source of social solidarity (moral glue), but that some religions were more controlling than others. He argued, for example, that suicide rates were higher among Protestants than Catholics because Protestantism was less doctrinaire and more tolerant of individual beliefs.

Durkheim observed that the collective conscience was stronger and social control greater in simpler societies—where people were less specialized in their social roles and the type of labor they performed—than in more diverse and complex societies such as in the United States. He coined the term **anomie** to refer to a state of normlessness whereby individuals were

isolated, cut adrift, and lacking in a common bond that brought them into sympathetic relationships with other people in society. Anomie, Durkheim argued, was most likely to occur during periods of social upheaval, such as the transition from traditional agrarian to modern industrial societies. During these times, individuals were forced into unfamiliar surroundings or circumstances (i.e., cities) where old rules governing social interactions no longer applied and new ones had yet to develop. Such conditions could lead to suicide and other forms of deviant behavior.

Durkheim also was influential in establishing the theoretical tradition in sociology known as **functionalism**. He viewed society much like a biological organism that consisted of a number of interdependent parts that contributed to the overall functioning of the whole. In a functionally integrated society, social institutions such as the family, schools, economy, and government help satisfy basic human needs and socialize individuals to adopt their appropriate roles in society (Parsons 1951). In a dysfunctional society, these institutions break down or become out of balance, straining the relationship between individuals and society and weakening commitment to the law. Durkheim believed that a certain level of crime in society was normal, inevitable, and even functional, for criminals provided a negative example that helped clarify the norms of acceptable behavior and integrated law-abiding members vis-à-vis a common internal enemy. Crime thus reinforced social solidarity by "drawing people together in a common posture of . . . [moral] indignation" (Erikson 1966:4).

German social theorists Karl Marx (1818–1883) and Friedrich Engels (1820–1895) differed with Durkheim on a number of counts, rejecting the assumption of societal consensus that was implicit in the notion of the collective conscience. They believed that **class conflict** between capitalists and workers was inherent to capitalist societies. Marx and Engels were, in essence, "conflict theorists" who argued that the very definition of crime and the enforcement of laws were matters of economic and political power that, under capitalism, disadvantaged the working class (see Chapters 1 and 5).

Marx and Engels were politically active on behalf of the laboring masses and worked for the abolition of capitalism. Writing before the advent of Soviet-style communism, which lasted from 1922 to 1991, they envisioned a classless, socialist society as the solution to the woes of humankind—a society "where everyone receives what he needs to satisfy his natural and spiritual urges, where social gradations and distinctions cease to exist" (Engels, cited in Greenberg 1993:51). Marx and Engels assumed that humans were fundamentally prosocial beings, but that the working class was too ground down by a system it did not understand or was unable to challenge effectively. In his book *The Conditions of the Working Class in England in 1844,* Engels wrote:

> Immorality is fostered in every possible way by the conditions of working class life. The worker is poor; life has nothing to offer him; he is deprived of virtually all pleasures. Consequently he does not fear the penalties of the law. Why should he restrain his wicked impulses? . . . Everyone looks after his own interests and fights only for himself. . . . Everyone sees in his neighbour a rival to be elbowed aside, or . . . [a] victim to be exploited for his own ends. (cited in Greenberg 1993:48–49)

To be sure, the practical attempts at nation building in the name of Marx and Engels have had a checkered history marked by undemocratic regimes and human rights violations. At the same time, many commonly accepted reforms that have occurred in capitalist societies—such as the eight-hour day, unemployment insurance, workers' (injury) compensation, and social security—have their roots in social movements that were inspired by socialist ideals. There is also a historical tradition of democratic socialism that believes in the expansion rather than in the denial of civil liberties and individual freedoms (Greenberg 1993).

Whereas Quetelet, Durkheim, and Marx and Engels worked primarily in the macrosociological tradition, the most influential early European microsocial theorist was French judge and sociologist Gabriel Tarde (1843–1904). Tarde noted the limitations of structural theorizing that made broad generalizations about criminal propensities but that could not explain why particular individuals commit crime. Tarde used the concept of **imitation** to advance an early form of social psychology, arguing that "individuals imitate each other in proportion to the amount of close contact they have" (cited in Barkan 2006:200). Tarde did not conceptualize imitation as more contemporary learning or behavioristic theorists do, however. For Tarde, imitation was a "generally unconscious . . . partly mysterious action" analogous to sleepwalking or being in a trance (cited in Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995:367).

Nevertheless, Tarde believed that the impulse toward crime derived not from the lower classes but from the higher stratum of society. According to Tarde, as Piers Beirne and James Messerschmidt observe: "The masses are . . . tied to the ideas and fancies of their social superiors. Drunkenness, smoking, moral offenses, political assassination, arson, and even vagabondage are . . . crimes that originated with the feudal nobility and [that] were transmitted, through imitation, to the masses. Criminal propensities . . . typically travel downward and outward—from the powerful to the powerless, from urban centers to rural areas" (1995:367).

Social Disorganization and the Social Ecology of Crime

In the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, social theorists like Durkheim were concerned with the transition of societies from rural and

small-town life to the larger urban milieu. Social commentators in the United States characterized the former as consisting of close-knit, extended families and strong communities that were bonded by a spirit of volunteerism and a common religious faith that enabled adults to "keep a firm grip on the process of socializing the young" (Sykes & Cullen 1992:291). But as families immigrated to the United States or emigrated from rural areas to the cities, they were often isolated from their larger kinship groups and enmeshed in a set of fleeting, impersonal neighborhood and workplace relationships. The families of most newcomers and others at the bottom of the class hierarchy were not able to reap the benefits of the new industrial economy and often had to endure the additional stress of overworked parents or prolonged unemployment. Immigrant families in particular, who were unfamiliar with the culture of the new world, had difficulty inculcating in the young the values and skills necessary to successfully compete. Hence the city became filled with criminals and delinquents and a host of "maladjusted" inhabitants (Park & Burgess 1924).

To a large extent, the contrast between the old and the new way of life was a caricature, a romanticization of the old that reflected a nostalgic view of days gone by. As statements about crime, however, such commentaries were part of an effort to supplant individualistic explanations (kinds of persons) with sociological explanations (kinds of places). Liberal social reformers, social workers, sociological academicians, and the like, adopted a paternalistic concern with the plight of the city dweller and hoped to use social science as a guide to the amelioration of their plight (Schwendinger & Schwendinger 1974).

The Contributions of Clifford Shaw and Henry McKay

It is in this context that sociologists Clifford Shaw and Henry McKay made the most significant contribution to what has been termed **social disorganization theory** (Shaw et al. 1929; Shaw & McKay 1942). Shaw and McKay were part of the University of Chicago school of sociology, which pioneered the use of ethnographic field methods (see Chapter 2). They also worked in the tradition of cartographers like Quetelet, mapping the territorial or ecological distribution of crime and other social conditions.

According to Shaw and McKay, the problem of crime was tied to the social ecology of communities that were socially disorganized. Their cartographic research indicated that crime and delinquency were highest in areas marked by concentrated poverty and unemployment, physical dilapidation of buildings, residential overcrowding, absence of homeownership, high residential mobility, influx of immigrant populations of diverse cultures, and lack of "constructive agencies intended to promote well-being and prevent maladjustment" (cited in Sykes & Cullen 1992:292). Importantly, Shaw and McKay did not view economic issues per se as the key to the problem:

> [Rather] children who grow up in these deteriorated and disorganized neighborhoods . . . are not subject to the same constructive and restraining influences that surround those in the more homogenous communities further removed from the industrial and commercial centers. These disorganized neighborhoods fail to provide a consistent set of cultural standards and a wholesome social life for the development of a stable and socially acceptable form of behavior in the child . . . [whose] most vital and intimate social contacts are often limited to the spontaneous and undirected neighborhood play groups and gangs whose activities and standards may vary widely from those of . . . parents and the larger social order. (1942:293)

Moreover, the traditions of these delinquent groups are self-sustaining, transmitted through successive generations. Youths "in these areas have contact not only with other delinquents who are their contemporaries but also with older offenders, who in turn had contact with delinquents preceding them, and so on back to the earliest history of the neighborhood" (p. 168).

The Chicago Area Project. In 1934 Shaw established the **Chicago Area Project** (CAP), which has been described as "the first systematic challenge to the dominance of psychology and psychiatry in public and private programs for the prevention and treatment of . . . delinquency" (Schlossman et al. 1984:2). The CAP pioneered the practice of community-level approaches to delinquency prevention that used community organizers to help residents exercise more control over their youths and to facilitate cooperative activi-

Group delinquency and gangs are all-too-common features of urban life in the United States.

ties among community groups for the solution of common problems (Berger & Gregory 2009).

The underlying philosophy of the CAP was that only through the collective mobilization and active participation of the entire community was it possible to impact significantly on the problem of delinquency. The CAP was overseen by a board of directors that raised and distributed money and assisted community groups in obtaining grants to match local government funds. Various committees that operated as independent, self-governing bodies with their own names and charters were formed. CAP staff organizers functioned in an advisory role, but decisions about policies and programs were made by resident members. The task for organizers was to convince local residents to assume responsibility and work together with the churches, schools, criminal justice system, businesses, and other community groups.

The CAP pioneered a number of activities that were later employed in other prevention programs, including the development of recreation and camping programs, youth clubs, and hobby and rap (discussion) groups. The goal of these activities was to provide youths with structured, supervised alternatives to crime; and they also served as springboards for bringing people together, counseling delinquent youths, and providing minimal employment for youth leaders. In addition, the CAP sent organizers called **detached street workers** into the community to provide "curbside counseling" for troubled youths and to identify indigenous gang leaders who might be encouraged to commit themselves to the project's goals.

The CAP also interceded in school-related matters by helping to reform curricula, mainstream students who had been incorrectly placed in classes for deficient or incorrigible youths (or conversely, place students who required special treatment into appropriate programs), transfer students to schools with more suitable programs or personnel, and reinstate students who had been expelled for minor delinquencies. Criminal justice interventions involved diverting youths to appropriate community agencies, reforming jails and prisons, and assisting parolees as they returned to community life.

The CAP was not without its problems and critics. It was often difficult to get residents to cooperate and to find common ground between them and various interest groups. For example, attempts to enlist the help of businesses in expanding employment opportunities for delinquent youths were not always successful. No effort was made to involve the absentee landlords who owned the rental properties and were interested only in speculative profits, not the quality of housing. The project was also forced to rely heavily on the volunteer services of the Polish Catholic Church, which was accused of using the recreational programs to proselytize. One of the strongest criticisms was levied by Saul Alinsky, the CAP's most well-known detached street worker. Alinsky faulted the CAP's inability to secure

needed economic reforms. These, he believed, required more confrontational tactics to force concessions from the political and economic elites of the city. Alinsky was acutely aware of the difficulty of sustaining interest in the project when resources necessary to achieve goals came from sources outside of the residents' control. Eventually, in the late 1950s, the CAP was absorbed by Illinois's Division of Youth Services and transformed into yet another bureaucratic organization that usurped local initiative. Nevertheless, the CAP serves as a prime example of the possibilities of engaging communities in problem-solving prevention efforts that do more than simply respond to crime on a one-to-one, after-the-fact basis (Berger & Gregory 2009; Krisberg 2005; Schlossman et al. 1984; see Chapter 13).

The Decline and Revival of Social Disorganization Theory

To criminologists of a liberal persuasion, the environmental focus of social disorganization theory was an improvement over individualistic approaches to crime prevention and control. By the 1960s, however, it fell into disfavor among liberals, who began looking to other theories for insight into the crime problem in the United States. Critics of social disorganization theory asked: Were not kinds-of-places theories simply the sociological analogue of kinds-of-persons theories, with entire communities now viewed as pathological, urban areas now seen as inherently criminogenic, and social disorganization now held responsible for breeding personal disorganization? Like in most individualistic explanations, the focus was exclusively on lower-class crime (particularly among immigrant groups), and communities were blamed for a problem that was not entirely of their own making. It was as if these communities existed in a vacuum and capitalist investment decisions leading to uneven economic development did not exist (see Chapter 8). It was as if the poor had power comparable to the wealthy to resist economic and social policies that were not in their interest and that might even increase crime (e.g., the construction of public housing projects that concentrate poor people) (Balkan et al. 1980; Einstader & Henry 1995).

More recent work in the social disorganization tradition has attempted to resolve some of these deficiencies. Researchers have shown how the **deindustrialization** of the economy (the shift from manufacturing to low-paid service work) and the flight of the middle class (white and black) from the inner city to the suburbs have depleted the former of valuable economic and social resources and left behind an even greater concentration of what William Julius Wilson (1987) calls the "truly disadvantaged," an **urban underclass**. Residential mobility and high population turnover have weakened informal neighborhood controls and decreased the number of residents who have a long-term stake in the community and who thus may be willing to intercede on each other's behalf to prevent victimization from crime. Impoverished, inner-city neighborhoods undergoing further economic

decline have experienced higher crime rates. Even neighborhood **gentrification** (redevelopment to attract more affluent residents) has increased crime, perhaps because poor residents feel relatively more deprived and because it is difficult for a heterogeneous population lacking common interests to establish informal social controls over youths (Bursik 1988; Bursik & Grasmick 1993; Taylor & Covington 1988).

In support of Shaw and McKay's propositions about the noneconomic correlates of crime, Robert Sampson and W. Byron Groves (1989) found that the effect of economic disadvantage on crime was due to weak local friendship networks, low participation in voluntary organizations, and low supervision of teenage peer groups. They also found that crime was associated with the disproportionate number of (primarily female-headed) single-parent families in these communities, this for the most part a consequence of male joblessness (Sampson 1987; Wilson 1987). Similarly, Leann Tigges and colleagues (1998) found that poor blacks were more likely than nonpoor blacks and nonpoor whites to be socially isolated; that is, they were less likely to live with another adult, less likely to have even one person outside of their household with whom they could discuss important matters, and less likely to be embedded in the types of social networks that provide access to social services and jobs.

Moreover, many poor women raising children alone in socially disorganized neighborhoods lack the parenting skills necessary to effectively discipline their children (Anderson 1999; Williams & Kornblum 1985). Often they have not had adequate parental models and may still be teenagers themselves. Some have succumbed to drugs or have become entrapped in abusive relationships. For poor, inner-city mothers faced with limited opportunities, insufficient social services, and unsafe housing, life is a constant battle against forces threatening to engulf them. It is a daily struggle to maintain dignity, to keep one's head above the rising tide of hopelessness and despair. As one mother waiting for her son to return safely home from school said: "Mostly, you try to keep them away from the drugs and violence, but it's hard. I tell my oldest boy I don't want him hanging out with the boys who are getting in trouble, and he says, 'Aw, mama, ain't nobody else for me to be with'" (Applebome 1991:1).

Social disorganization theory assumes that frequent interaction among residents helps generate the informal community controls that reduce crime (Bellair 1997). However, there are conflicting effects of individuals' embeddedness in social relationships. Eleanor Miller (1986), for instance, found that females' involvement in **extended domestic networks**—households composed of immediate kin (parents, siblings), extended kin (grandparents, uncles, aunts, cousins), and nonkin (friends, lovers)—was a primary means by which they were recruited into "deviant networks" of street prostitution and hustling. And Mary Pattillo (1998) found that involvement of gang

members and drug dealers in networks of law-abiding neighbors and kin sometimes impeded efforts to rid the neighborhood of its criminal elements. As one resident said, "I didn't wanna give this young man's name [to the police] because his mama is such a sweet lady" (p. 763).

Routine Activities and Crime

In the late 1970s, Lawrence Cohen and Marcus Felson (1979) advanced a **routine activities theory** of crime that moved ecological thinking in a dramatically different direction from that of the traditional social disorganization approach. Cohen and Felson argued that it was possible, theoretically speaking, to bypass explanations of criminal motivation and simply assume that there will always be a sufficient number of individuals willing to take advantage of the opportunity to commit crime. What criminologists needed to ascertain were the immediate situational circumstances that enabled such individuals to translate their criminal inclinations into action. The probability of crime increased, they observed, when there was a convergence in physical space and time of three basic elements: *motivated offenders, suitable targets,* and the *absence of capable guardians.*

According to Cohen and Felson, historical changes in the routine patterns of everyday life—such as dispersion of work and leisure activities away from the home, increased occupational and residential mobility, and greater participation of women in the work force—have dissolved protective kinship and friendship networks, leaving homes unguarded and individuals vulnerable in the public sphere (Felson 1998; Neuman & Berger 1988). In addition, the ever-expanding production of commodities has increased the abundance and variety of goods available to be stolen. Before the advent of the automobile, for example, who could have imagined the crime of motor vehicle theft or car-jacking? Before the mass marketing of athletic clothing and mobile technology, who could have imagined being mugged for a Starter jacket or iPod?

Like social disorganization theory, the routine activities approach focuses on the kinds of places that are associated with increased risk of crime. Research indicates that crime is not uniformly distributed across physical space and time. A disproportionate amount occurs along a relatively small number of streets or "hot spots," including areas in or around convenience and large discount department stores, high schools, public housing projects and high-rise buildings with easily accessible corridors and poorly monitored areas, drinking establishments, and other places and events, such as parties, where people engage in unstructured activities. People whose daily routines or lifestyles take them to these places, especially late at night, are more likely to be victimized by crime. Those who are themselves involved in crime are especially likely to be victimized (Felson 1998; Miethe & McCorkle 1998; Sherman et al. 1989).

Routine activities and violence against women. One criticism of routine activities theory focuses on its inability to adequately account for the victimization of women. Kathleen Daly and Meda Chesney-Lind (1988) observe that many criminological theories ignore or misconstrue issues of gender and lack applicability to women. They argue that theories should have **gender generalizability**—that they should be able to explain the experiences of both males and females. Cohen and Felson (1979), for instance, argued that circumstances that take women outside of the home (e.g., employment, education) or reduce available guardians (e.g., being single) increase women's risk of rape and other predatory offenses (see Lauritsen & Schaum 2004). But as previously noted, women (and girls) are often victimized by persons they know, frequently in the privacy of their own homes. While women are vulnerable in both the public and the private spheres of life, the problems of domestic battery, nonstranger rape, intrafamilial sexual abuse, and the like, are not adequately explained by routine activities theory. In fact, Herman Schwendinger and Julia Schwendinger argue that efforts to reduce female dependency on male guardianship may actually decrease sexual violence against women by empowering women "to dictate the basic terms on which men must relate to them" (1983:217).

The routine activities approach has been more useful when the violence in question is gang rape. Nathan McCall (1994) describes how he and his cohorts would prey on vulnerable adolescent females who were lured under false pretenses to isolated places and then raped by a group of males hiding in wait. Although females attracted to the "bad boy" image may be especially susceptible to this type of manipulation (Gaines 1993; Sikes 1997), these kinds of crimes are not perpetrated only by adolescent street gangs or youths from socially disadvantaged communities. They are a consequence of membership in male peer groups that condone abuse and sexual aggression against women. Research suggests, for example, that fraternity gang rapes by white, middle-class college students are not uncommon. College campuses bring together in physical space and time the recipe for crime that is predicted by routine activities theory: a group of motivated offenders (male-bonded sexually predatory males) and suitable targets (sorority members and other female partygoers) who are participating in particular activities (frequent partying and heavy drinking) in the absence of capable guardians (no parental or school supervisors) (Martin & Hummer 1989; Sanday 2007; Schwartz et al. 2001).

Situational crime prevention. In contrast to conventional crime prevention strategies aimed at changing the behavior of offenders (like the CAP), the routine activities approach is directed at modifying the behavior of potential victims. Programs of this nature have been variously called victim prevention, opportunity reduction, target hardening, and **situational crime**

prevention. Some of these programs entail measures that can be taken by individuals and businesses, and some involve entire communities. For instance, people can install locks, alarms, window bars, and surveillance cameras in their homes and businesses, and erect fences and gates around them. They can put identifying marks on property, hire security guards or private patrols, and acquire large dogs, mace sprays, or guns for protection. They can take courses in karate or other forms of personal defense. Homes, buildings, apartment complexes, and even entire communities can be architecturally designed to ensure that walkways and other public areas are highly visible and well lighted. Access to particular areas can be reserved for particular legitimate users and prohibited for others and for unstructured activities. Residents can organize themselves (often with assistance from police) into neighborhood or community-watch groups and even citizen patrols (Clarke 1992; Felson 1998; Newman 1972; Welsh & Farrington 2004).

A potential side effect of situational crime prevention is the problem of **crime displacement**, whereby motivated criminals simply decide to commit their crimes elsewhere or at other times. Research on displacement is mixed, but suggests that this problem is not an inevitable consequence of such measures (Felson 1998; Weisburd et al. 2006; Welsh & Farrington 1999). Situational crime prevention can be costly, however, providing benefits primarily for those who can afford it and for those who live in communities already less troubled by crime. Evaluation studies indicate that situational crime prevention strategies have been "oversold as a stand-alone" approach (Rosenbaum 1988:363). Best results have been obtained when these strategies are combined with offender-oriented prevention (Bennett & Lavrakas 1989; Curtis 1987).

Crime and the American Dream: Anomie-Strain Theory

In general, ecological theories attribute causal significance to the physical and spatial features of urban crime. Social disorganization theory in particular views crime as a maladaptive response to the urban environment. But the theory's focus on communities overlooks a broader critique of life in the United States, one that locates the source of the crime problem in "the organization of the whole society" (Einstader & Henry 1995:145). This critique was advanced by Robert Merton in his seminal 1938 article "Social Structure and Anomie."

Merton (1938, 1968) drew upon Durkheim's work on functionalism and anomie and gave it a peculiarly American twist. For Merton, the structural condition of anomie was constituted not by normlessness per se but by a structural disjuncture or lack of integration between *cultural goals* (or values) and *institutionalized means* (or opportunities). Merton believed that the predominant cultural goal of American society was the dream of financial

success and bountiful material consumption. People who lacked access to the legitimate means to turn this dream into reality were structured into a relationship of *strain* with society and experienced a sense of frustration, anger, and injustice about their lot in life. In this sense, crime is endemic to a social system that dangles the enticements of materialism before everyone without being able to deliver the goods to all.

Given the pervasive social inequality in the United States, **anomie-strain theory** postulates that the greatest pressures for criminal behavior reside in the lower classes and among disadvantaged racial and ethnic minority groups. Families from these backgrounds often lack the economic and social resources to prepare their children well for school, provide them with enriching cultural experiences, bail them out if they get into trouble with the law, finance their college education, and set them up in businesses or professions. Minorities also face the additional problems of discrimination from and lack of familiarity with the culture of white, middle-class institutional environments. Nevertheless, according to anomie-strain theory, those who turn to crime are not, at heart, different from noncriminals. They share the values that we all hold. They are not predisposed to crime. If given the chance, they would prefer to take a more conventional path to success (Cohen 1955; Hagan & McCarthy 1997; Williams & Kornblum 1985).

It is important to emphasize the **relative deprivation** component of Merton's insight. It is not poverty per se that is at issue, but *poverty amid affluence* in a society that values particular goals. Hence many studies have found that the level of economic inequality (the distribution of income or wealth) is more strongly related to crime than the level of absolute poverty (the amount of income or wealth) (e.g., Blau & Blau 1982; LaFree 1998; Messner 1989; Sampson 1985b). Indeed, there are societies around the world that suffer even worse poverty than exists in the United States without comparable levels of crime, in part because they have not (yet?) acquired the American "fetishism" of money (Messner & Rosenfeld 2001:63). Money is for Americans the measure of all success, the currency of achievement. We pursue it relentlessly. There is "no final stopping point" (Merton 1968:190).

In this scheme of things, all else tends to be devalued or set aside. Many of us, for instance, value education mainly as a vehicle for occupational attainment and economic rewards, and we do not hold "the acquisition of knowledge [or] learning for its own sake" or its role in promoting good citizenship in high regard (Messner & Rosenfeld 2001:70). At the same time, the predominance of the economy as the central social institution in society makes it difficult for other social institutions to exert countervailing prosocial controls. Family life, for example, is "dominated by the schedules, rewards, and penalties of the labor market. Whereas parents worry about 'finding time' for their families, few workers must 'find time'

for their jobs. On the contrary, many feel fortunate that the economy has found time for them" (p. 72).

Adaptations to Strain

Merton postulated that individuals adapt to structurally induced anomie or strain in a variety of ways. Table 4.1 presents his typology of five general **modes of adaptation**: *conformity, ritualism, innovation, retreatism,* and *rebellion.* These adaptations should be conceptualized as behavioral options that emerge out of the particular mix of legitimate and illegitimate opportunities available to individuals differentially situated in the social structure. Often, people develop group solutions to common problems, as in urban street gangs or organized crime, for example (Cloward & Ohlin 1960; Cohen 1955).

Merton actually had little to say about why some individuals pursue one adaptation or another. That, he acknowledged, would require consideration of individualistic or microsociological criteria (see Agnew et al. 2002). He also didn't consider crime to be an automatic consequence of strain. People could pursue noncriminal **conformity** not only through financial success but also by moderating their expectations at particular points in their lives to exact a more realistic fit between goals and means—for example, by delaying short-term gratification of needs to pursue long-term future rewards. **Ritualism**, on the other hand, is a noncriminal adaptation that involves a more permanent scaling down or relinquishment of unattainable success goals and an overemphasis on the institutionalized means in and of themselves (e.g., the bureaucrat who always follows the rules, however irrational they may seem). The ritualist response may entail resigning oneself to working in a dead-end job or to just getting by to make ends meet.

Innovation in Merton's scheme is arguably the most prevalent criminal adaptation to strain. Innovation occurs when people continue to embrace financial success goals but pursue them through illegitimate means. Such individuals are following the cultural ethos of "winning at all costs" or "anything goes" (Derber 1996). The predominance of property crimes in

Table 4.1 Merton's Typology of Individual Adaptations to Strain

Mode of Adaptation	Cultural Goals	Institutionalized Means
Conformity	+	+
Ritualism	–	+
Innovation	+	–
Retreatism	–	–
Rebellion	–/+	–/+

Notes: + = acceptance; – = rejection; –/+ = rejection and substitution.

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Ethnic Succession in Organized Crime

Since the middle of the nineteenth century, organized crime has provided an illegitimate opportunity structure for disadvantaged immigrant groups seeking a short-term route to the "American dream." The Irish were perhaps the first ethnic group to make the successful transition from urban gangs to organized crime, using their muscle to ensure electoral victories for local politicians, who in turn offered criminals protection for their illegal enterprises. By the end of the nineteenth century, Jewish immigrants from Eastern Europe started to challenge Irish dominance in organized crime, and during the Prohibition era of the 1920s, during which alcohol was outlawed, the Italians began to make their mark (Abadinsky 2007; McCaghy et al. 2003).

Italian American organized crime benefited from the established traditions of European Mafia groups. In nineteenth-century Sicily, the Mafia (which in Arabic means "place of refuge") constituted a nongovernmental system of organized power that operated through a network of "gangs" or "families." Mafioso served as middlemen or mediators between the Italian elite and the peasantry—delivering votes, arbitrating disputes, and offering protection in exchange for remuneration or immunity to do as they pleased. Such men were respected for their loyalty to family and kin and for the ability to maintain their authority, even if that required the use of violence (Abadinsky 2007; Hobsbawm 1959).

In the United States, each new wave of immigration brought new ethnic groups who imitated as well as fought with those who came before them. Intergroup competition was lessened somewhat by an expanding US economy, which generated more legitimate opportunities for the offspring of earlier arrivals, thus reducing the group's involvement in organized crime. This pattern of entering into and exiting out of organized crime has been dubbed **ethnic succession in organized crime** (Abadinsky 2007; Ianni & Reuss-Ianni 1976).

In spite of the Italian American dominance, which lasted from the Prohibition era to the 1970s, non-Italians made substantial contributions. Meyer Lansky, for example, a man of Polish Jewish descent, played a major role during Prohibition and in the post-Prohibition development of the heroin trade and the casino-hotel industry. And Chinese groups have operated within US urban communities that contain significant Chinese populations since the beginning of the twentieth century (Abadinsky 2007; Chambliss 1988).

Frank Hagan observes that the Italian American Mafia, also known as La Cosa Nostra ("this thing of ours"), now consists of a "dwindling empire with . . . remaining strongholds" in limited areas such as the suburbs of New York and Chicago (1998:400). It has lost control of the heroin market and has been a marginal player in the cocaine trade. The federal government has successfully prosecuted a number of key leaders and has exerted greater supervisory authority over the distribution of Teamster Union pension funds, which the Mafia once controlled and used to finance some of its operations. Members facing prison terms no longer observe the traditional "code of silence,"

continues

continued

instead trading concessions from the government (including access to witness-protection programs) for information about the criminal activities of others. Hence the solidarity considered central to the Mafia's successful reign has been crumbling. Currently the Mafia's primary competition comes from African American, Latino, Asian, and Russian organizations, as well as from white outlaw motorcycle gangs (Abadinsky 2007; Albanese 2004; Reuter 1995; see Chapter 6).

official statistics is but one indication that innovation is the criminal adaptation of choice. Innovation is also found in the experience of disadvantaged ethnic groups who have used organized crime as a vehicle for upward social mobility and a shortcut to the American dream. As Al Capone once said: "Don't get the idea that I'm one of those goddamn radicals . . . that I'm knocking the American system. . . . Capitalism . . . gives to each and every one of us a great opportunity, if we only seize it with both hands and make the most of it" (quoted in Cockburn 1967:118–119).

Although anomie-strain theory has focused on lower-class criminality, Merton (1968) acknowledged white-collar innovation as well. Take, for instance, the nineteenth-century capitalist "robber barons," who justified their unethical actions as the legitimate pursuit of property and wealth. As Gus Tyler notes:

> Land grants, covering the acreage of full states, were gained by bribery of colonial legislators and governors. Original accumulations of capital were amassed in tripartite deals among pirates, governors, and brokers. Fur fortunes were piled up alongside the drunk and dead bodies of . . . Indians. Small settlers were driven from their lands or turned into tenants by big ranchers employing rustlers, guns, outlaws—and the law. In the great railroad and shipping wars, enterprising capitalists used extortion, blackmail, violence, bribery, and private armies with muskets and cannons to wreck a competitor and to become the sole boss of a trade. (1967:44–45)

More generally, and up to this very day, corporate innovators respond to competitive pressures, unpredictable economic markets, and government regulatory controls by adapting illegal means to meet the "bottom line," achieve a competitive edge, or quite simply, make as much money as possible (Friedrichs 2007; Passas 1990; see Chapter 6).

Not all economic crimes, however, are committed for financial success goals. Many are committed for the challenge or thrill, out of peer pressure, or to "keep the party going" (Hagan et al. 1998; Jacobs & Wright 1999; Shover & Honaker 1992). Merton recognized that the discrepancy between

cultural goals and institutionalized means could produce strain regardless of the nature of the particular goal. Thus David Greenberg (1977) observed that much male delinquency is not a strategy for long-term economic gain but an attempt to satisfy the immediate concerns of adolescence—for example, acquiring a masculine self-image (e.g., through sexual conquests and acts of defiance, including violence) and maintaining an adolescent lifestyle (e.g., purchasing iPods, cell phones, fashionable clothes, CDs and DVDs, cigarettes, alcohol, and drugs, concert tickets, motor vehicles).

Albert Cohen (1955) was one of the first to point out that, for youths, a great source of strain is not the job market per se but an educational system that is ostensibly designed to prepare them for economic success. Cohen argued that lower-class youths are deprived of the preschool cultural resources available to higher-class youths (e.g., books, educational toys, educated parents) that could help socialize them for school achievement, yet teachers judge them by the same standards as their more privileged peers. Hence they are more likely to experience the strain of school failure, lose their stake in conformity, and engage in delinquency. Research suggests, however, that school failure is associated with delinquency among youths of all social classes; and low-achieving, middle-class youths may even be more delinquent than their lower-class counterparts (Agnew 2000; Frease 1973; Maguin & Loeber 1996; Polk et al. 1974).

Greenberg (1977) noted that much of youths' experience of school strain derives from the rules and regimentation of the school itself, the boredom and perception that education is a waste of time, and the denial of adolescents' autonomy at a point in life when they are trying to establish their independence. Some students view school as a hostile territory and express resentment directly through vandalism of school property and even assaults against teachers. Indeed, much juvenile crime is committed on school grounds and sometimes involves crime against other students. Proximity to high schools is also related to higher crime rates in adjacent residential areas (Agnew 2000; Lawrence 1998; Roncek & Faggiani 1985; Roncek & LoBosco 1983).

In addition to innovation, Merton described two other deviant (often criminal) adaptations to strain: retreatism and rebellion. **Retreatism** involves withdrawing altogether from the pursuit of legitimate success goals, whether through legal or illegal means. Retreatists are individuals who have essentially dropped out of society and adopted escapist lifestyles such as through addiction to alcohol and drugs. Retreatists may also be homeless or suffer from mental disorders: "They are in society but not of it. . . . [They] piece out an existence by eating little, sleeping a lot, and abandoning the effort to create patterns of daily life they can respect. . . . Some finally succeed in annihilating the world by killing themselves" (Merton 1964:219).

This is how Kenny Hall remembers his addiction to drugs:

> There was no participation in this thing that we call life. . . . I woke up, I got my drugs, and I went to sleep. . . . I was sleeping in basements. . . . I was sleeping on rooftops. . . . I didn't want to be seen during the daylight hours . . . [so] I would catch the [subway] . . . and . . . just ride it all day long. . . . I felt that ashamed about myself. . . . I would come out at night when the sun went down. . . . I would walk on the side of the building in the shadows where no one could see me. . . . I would do what I had to do to satisfy my addiction. . . . When the sun would come up, I would go back underground again. (profiled in Moyers 1991)

Similarly, Margaret, a drug addict and prostitute, observes: "I think using drugs is like committing suicide. Only you doing it slower. . . . Instead of taking a gun and blowing your brains out. . . . It might take you a lotta years, but eventually it's gonna kill you. If it don't kill you, it's gonna lame you or something" (quoted in Pettiway 1997:38, 50).

The last of Merton's adaptive types is **rebellion**, the rejection of legitimate goals and means and the substitution of new ones. Cohen, for instance, characterized the delinquent adaptation as largely "nonutilitarian, malicious, and negativistic" (1955:25). Delinquent boys "not only reject the dominant values system, but [they] do so with a vengeance. They 'stand it on its head' . . . exalt its opposition . . . engage in malicious, spiteful, 'ornery' behavior of all sorts to demonstrate not only to others, but to themselves . . . their contempt for the game they have rejected" (Cohen 1966:66).

In his book *Monster,* Sanyika Shakur (1993) describes the nonutilitarian nature of gang violence in the inner city, where groups fight over symbolic possession of "turf" that none of the combatants own. As he says of his years with the Eight Tray (83rd Street) Crips: "I don't own a brick on 83rd. . . . I don't own a brick in this country. . . . You ain't fighting for nothing" ("Eight Tray Gangster" 1993). Later in life, however, Shakur strove for a different kind of rebellion. "Little did I know," he writes, "that I had been resisting all my life. By not being a good black American I was resisting. But my resistance was retarded because it had no political objective" (1993:330). In prison, Shakur was exposed to the political ideology of the revolutionary New Afrikan Independence Movement, which has as one of its objectives the securing of separate land (even separate states) for African American people. "My personal belief is that separation is the solution. . . . This country's 130-year-old experiment of multiculturalism has failed. Perhaps it was never designed to work" (p. 332).

Shakur came to this conclusion in prison after being exposed to the ideas of Malcolm X, a man who had undergone a transformation in prison from street hustler to political activist with the Nation of Islam. Shakur was impressed with Malcolm X's words in *Message to the Oppressed:* "Out of

frustration and hopelessness our young people have reached the point of no return. We no longer endorse patience and turning the other cheek. We assert the right of self-defense by whatever means necessary, and reserve the right of maximum retaliation against our racist oppressors, no matter what the odds against us are" (cited in Shakur 1993:214). Quite clearly, Shakur's goals are controversial and unrealistic. More than a few African Americans, however, might sympathize with the spirit of his sentiments.

A Decade of Liberal Reform

One of the most dynamic eras in the annals of crime prevention history was the 1960s, when federal programs predicated on anomie-strain theory provided the rationale for liberal crime prevention policies aimed at improving the economic and educational opportunities of low-income and minority youths. Along with the Chicago Area Project, they remain the prototypes for contemporary offender-oriented prevention efforts. The programs of the 1960s, which were part of the Lyndon Johnson administration's "War on Poverty," had two basic thrusts: (1) opportunity programs that were administered by social-service professionals and (2) comprehensive community action projects that mobilized residents to engage in local collective action (Berger & Gregory 2009).

Opportunity programs. The Economic Opportunity Act of 1964 authorized involvement of the US Department of Labor in delinquency prevention through the Neighborhood Youth Corps and the Job Corps. The Neighborhood Youth Corps included both summer and year-round training and work programs for youths, some of whom were enrolled in school and some of whom were not. The Job Corps placed low-income urban youths into residential centers for job training and had both an urban and a rural component. The urban centers trained youths in skilled trades such as auto mechanics and carpentry. The rural centers often emphasized forest conservation skills but provided training for many other jobs as well (Quadagno & Fobes 1995).

In addition, the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare (HEW) and the Department of Housing and Urban Development (HUD) established a broad range of prevention initiatives. HEW's Upward Bound program tried to facilitate educational achievement by increasing the motivation and skills of disadvantaged youths. HUD's Model Cities program provided inner-city youths with college prep courses, college scholarships, and job placements, as well as direct social services such as counseling, drug abuse treatment, assistance to unwed mothers, and recreation and teen clubs.

Although the aim of these programs was to provide equal opportunity for individuals to compete in the US economy, they did not always fulfill their promise. At times they merely offered job training without a concomi-

tant guarantee of employment upon completion of the program. African American trainees even experienced discrimination from some of the skilled trade unions (Quadagno & Fobes 1995). Evaluation studies measuring the effects of these efforts on the long-term labor status of youths and on rates of delinquency were mixed and often unimpressive (Berger & Gregory 2009; McGahey 1986). The most favorable results came from the Job Corps. According to Elliott Currie:

> Those who completed the program got better jobs, earned more, were less dependent on welfare, and cut down their use of drugs, compared to similarly deprived youth who hadn't participated. They also committed fewer crimes, measured both by their own reports and by arrests during and after the program. The biggest effect on crime came during their enrollment in the program itself . . . but it also continued, though at a less dramatic level, after they went back to city life. (1985:13)

Unfortunately, rather than reaching hard-core delinquent or at-risk youths, the programs tended to help those who were more motivated and upwardly mobile to begin with. They were important in strengthening the black middle class but left behind an intransigent underclass, who remained living in urban squalor. Moreover, the success of some only increased the sense of relative deprivation and strain among those who remained behind (LaFree & Drass 1996; Wilson 1987).

Comprehensive community action projects. The comprehensive community action projects (CCAPs) began in 1961 under the auspices of John F. Kennedy's President's Committee on Juvenile Delinquency and Youth Crime and continued under the Office of Economic Opportunity. These were large-scale, multidimensional programs established under federal control but rooted in local communities. In many respects, CCAPs were direct descendants of the earlier Chicago Area Project. But in the 1960s, New York City's **Mobilization for Youth** was the model for such efforts (Berger & Gregory 2009; Empey & Stafford 1991).

Mobilization for Youth aimed to achieve four goals: (1) create job opportunities through work subsidies, vocational training, and career guidance; (2) improve educational opportunities through teacher training, development of relevant curricula and teaching methods, increased parent-school contacts, and preschool programs; (3) provide services to youths and families through detached street workers, recreation, rap (discussion) groups, childcare, and counseling; and (4) establish neighborhood councils and mobilize low-income residents for social action to redress grievances in areas such as housing, healthcare, and employment discrimination.

Inspired by Mobilization for Youth, the federal government offered funding and planning assistance to other communities to set up their own

CCAPs, which expanded to over a thousand by the mid-1960s. However, the social action component of CCAPs led to withdrawal of political support. In Mobilization for Youth, for instance, residents were encouraged to participate in strikes, protests, and confrontations with public officials. The intended goal was to make political leaders aware that the community was an organized interest group that demanded their attention.

Mobilization for Youth was thus a classic case of "biting the hand that feeds you," and it was not long before it was derailed by accusations that it had communist sympathies and had misused government funds. Community organizers favoring social action strategies were purged and funds were curtailed. The remaining CCAPs were transformed into predominately counseling and treatment programs, or stressed vocational, educational, or legal assistance (Berger & Gregory 2009; Empey & Stafford 1991).

It is doubtful there was ever full political support for the dramatic changes attempted in the name of anomie-strain theory (Marris & Rein 1973). When put into practice, the programs probably exceeded what Merton himself might have imagined. Steven Messner and Richard Rosenfeld also point out a fundamental flaw in the assumptions of anomie-strain theory and the way the theory was applied to increase opportunities: in a society that celebrates "the unrestrained, competitive pursuit of monetary success, . . . greater equality of opportunity and a redistribution of economic resources would not by themselves . . . eliminate the strong temptations to try to win by any means necessary" (2001:98). Nevertheless, many liberals and progressive advocates of social change continue to believe that the programs of the 1960s contained the essential ingredients of effective crime prevention (see Chapter 13).

Gender and Strain

Like other theoretical formulations, anomie-strain theory has been criticized for lacking gender generalizability. As Allison Morris points out, "one might expect women to commit more crime than men since their [economic] opportunities are more limited" (1987:76). But as noted previously, female crime rates are lower than male crime rates (see Chapter 1). Anomie-strain theory explains this paradox in terms of traditional patterns of gender socialization, which encourage females to assign greater value to domestic or relationship goals than to financial success goals (Broidy & Agnew 1997; Leonard 1982).

On the other hand, the changing position of women in society over the past few decades has led some criminologists to believe that financial goals have now become more salient for women. Rising rates of divorce and out-of-wedlock births have increased the number of female-headed households. Women have expanded their participation in the labor force and girls have been increasingly socialized (by parents, schools, and media) to develop

occupational or career ambitions. To the extent that actual opportunities for women have not kept pace with rising expectations, females may be experiencing greater strain (Broidy & Agnew 1997).

These observations are consistent with the apparent rise in rates of female criminality observed by some criminologists in the mid-1970s (Adler 1975; Simon 1975). This increase occurred primarily in the area of nonviolent property offenses, such as shoplifting, passing bad checks, check and credit card forgery, and welfare fraud. Rise in these crimes was also facilitated by the opportunities afforded by the expansion of self-service retail outlets, consumer credit, and governmental welfare (Steffensmeier 1978; Steffensmeier & Cobb 1981).

Furthermore, evidence from self-report surveys indicated that female delinquents were more likely than nondelinquents to see themselves as having fewer opportunities (Datesman et al. 1975; Rankin 1980; Segrave & Hastad 1985). Delinquent girls were more likely to believe that they would not finish high school or find satisfactory employment, though they were not more likely to believe that females experienced discrimination in the job market (Cernkovich & Giordano 1979b). Gary Hill and Elizabeth Crawford (1990) found measures of blocked opportunities to be more highly associated with crime among young black women (ages 18 to 23) than among young white women. We will explore the complexity of the gender-crime relationship, and its intersection with race/ethnicity and class, more thoroughly in Chapter 9.

General Strain Theory

Criminologists who dispute anomie-strain theory's focus on lower-class criminality have revised the theory to account for delinquent behavior across all social classes. Robert Agnew (1992) advanced a social psychological or micro-level **general strain theory**, arguing that strain results not simply from the actual or perceived failure to achieve economic or educational goals, but more generally from a broader array of stressful or negative life experiences. These include the actual or anticipated *removal* of "positively valued stimuli" (e.g., death of a parent, end of a romantic relationship, moving from one's neighborhood) as well as the actual or anticipated *presentation* of "negatively valued stimuli" (e.g., an abusive parent, an unfair teacher, hostile peers). Agnew also proposed that the relationship between strain and delinquency is mediated by a youth's *emotional reactions* (e.g., frustration, depression, anger) and *coping strategies* (e.g., talking to others, cathartic physical exercise, revision of goals), which affect the behavioral outcomes of structurally induced experiences.

A growing body of research lends support to Agnew's propositions (see Baron 2004). The practical implications of the theory suggest the importance of remedial interventions that improve familial, peer, and school rela-

tionships and that provide youths with resources that improve their coping strategies (e.g., positive adult mentors, anger management and conflict resolution training) (Agnew 1995, 2000, 2001).

Social Learning and Symbolic Interaction

Outside of general strain theory, the theories reviewed in this chapter have entailed macrosociological approaches to crime. We now turn more directly to microsociological explanations. As noted previously, these theories address how individuals learn to favor or disfavor criminal courses of action, how they interpret or account for the meaning of their actions, and how they are socialized or controlled through social relationships. We begin with the important contribution of Edwin Sutherland.

Edwin Sutherland and the Theory of Differential Association

Sutherland stood heads above his contemporaries when it came to recognizing the problem of white-collar crime. He was acutely aware of the restrictive focus on lower-class crime in most criminological explanations (be they biological, psychological, or sociological), and he appreciated the need for a general theory that could explain the existence of criminality in all social strata.

Sutherland was drawn to a micro-level orientation from his exposure to Tarde's theory of imitation and to a body of thought known as **symbolic interactionism**. George Herbert Mead (1863–1931), arguably the most influential symbolic interactionist, was concerned with the symbolic meaning of social action for the individual. The very same experience, Mead (1934) noted, could mean different things to different people. Such meanings, and consequently a person's very sense of self or personal identity, are acquired through social interaction with others (Sandstrom et al. 2006).

Sutherland's **differential association theory** (1947) has been classified as both symbolic interactionist and behaviorist in orientation (Einstader & Henry 1995; Empey & Stafford 1991). As noted in Chapter 3, behaviorism is at variance with much psychological theorizing about crime in that it assumes criminal behavior to be learned or conditioned in the same manner as law-abiding behavior—through the particular mix of rewards and punishments that are attached to a person's behavior. However, whether one situates Sutherland in the interactionist or behaviorist tradition, he clearly viewed crime as an outcome of normal social psychological processes.

According to differential association theory, "Criminal behavior is learned in interaction with other persons in a process of communication . . . within intimate personal groups" (Sutherland, cited in Akers & Sellers 2009:86). The learning of crime includes not only "the techniques of committing the crime, which are sometimes very complicated and sometimes

very simple," but also "the specific direction of motives, drives, rationalizations, and attitudes" underlying the illegal behavior. A person becomes delinquent or criminal when he or she is exposed to "an excess of definitions favorable to violation of law over definitions unfavorable to violation of law." Since individuals are typically exposed to both crime-inducing and crime-inhibiting associations, what matters is the relative *frequency* (how often you spend time with particular others), *duration* (how much time you spend with them on each occasion), *priority* (how early in life you began associating with them), and *intensity* (how much importance you attach to them) of each.

Perhaps the most obvious example of differential association is the adolescent peer group that provides social approval for participating with others in underage drinking, drug use, gangs, and other forms of crime. Participation in such activities is reinforced through the acquisition of friendship ties, while nonparticipation may lead to exclusion. Nathan McCall (1994) recalls how he was initially reluctant to participate in gang rapes: "I was in no great hurry to have sex in front of a bunch of other dudes. . . . [But] I wasn't about to let it be said that I was scared of pussy." The first time he participated, he felt sorry for the 13-year-old girl he and his friends had raped, "knowing she would never be able to live [it] down. . . . But the guilt was short-lived. It was eclipsed in no time by the victory celebration we held after she left" (p. 48).

Sutherland was aware, as symbolic interactionists have noted, that individuals are malleable and subject to change over time in the course of ongoing interactions (Sandstrom et al. 2006). In his book *White Collar Crime,* he presented an account by a young man who underwent a redefinition of self upon entering the labor force after college:

> While I was a student in the school of business I learned the principles of accounting. After I had worked for a time for an accounting firm I found that I had failed to learn many important things. . . . An accounting firm gets its work from business firms and, within limits, must make the reports which those business firms desire. On my first assignment I discovered some irregularities in the books of the firm and these would lead anyone to question the financial policies of that firm. When I showed my report to the manager . . . he said that was not a part of my assignment and I should leave it out. Although I was confident that the business firm was dishonest, I had to conceal this information. Again and again I have been compelled to do the same thing in other assignments. I get so disgusted with things of this sort that I wish I could leave the profession . . . [but] it is the only occupation for which I have training. (1949:239)

Although this story is anecdotal, the criminological literature is replete with studies that support the general thrust of Sutherland's theory. In particular, self-report delinquency research has confirmed the theory's basic tenets.

Since these studies typically involve broader tests of social learning theory, we now turn to that theory.

Social Learning Theory

In a large body of theory and research, Ronald Akers advanced a **social learning theory** of crime that merges principles of differential association theory with those of behaviorist psychology in order to examine processes that both "motivate and control criminal behavior" and "promote and undermine conformity" (Akers & Sellers 2009:89). From Sutherland, Akers takes the concepts of *differential association* and *definitions* and adds the behaviorist concepts of *imitation* and *differential reinforcement.* Imitation refers to one's observation and replication of role models' behavior in both actual and simulated environments (e.g., the media). Akers's research indicates that imitation is "more important in the initial acquisition and performance of novel behavior than in the maintenance or cessation of behavioral patterns once established" (p. 93). Differential reinforcement "refers to the *balance* of anticipated or actual rewards and punishments that follow or are consequences of behavior" (pp. 91–92, emphasis added). As noted previously, rewards and punishments can be both social and nonsocial, and they can range from approval or disapproval of parents and friends to the euphoric or unpleasant physical effects of drugs. As well, studies find anticipation of informal sanctions from others to be a more salient deterrent to crime than anticipation of formal sanctions from the law.

Akers (1998) acknowledges the macro-level social phenomena that structure environments of social learning, although these are not his primary concern. He is interested in specifying the precise micro-level mechanisms by which learning takes place. On this score, social learning theory has fared rather well in empirical research, especially in studies of juvenile delinquency:

> There is abundant evidence to show the significant impact . . . of differential association in primary groups such as family and peers. . . . [Delinquency] may be . . . directly affected by deviant parental models, ineffective and erratic supervision and discipline . . . and the endorsement of values and attitudes favorable to deviance. . . . [I]n general, parental . . . criminality is predictive of . . . children's future [criminality]. . . . The role of the family, [however], is usually as a conventional socializer against delinquency. . . . It provides anticriminal definitions, conforming models, and the reinforcement of conformity through parental discipline. . . . Other than one's own prior . . . behavior, the best single predictor of the onset, continuance, or desistance of . . . delinquency is differential association with conforming or law-violating peers. . . . It is in peer groups that the first availability and opportunity for delinquent acts are typically provided. Virtually every study that includes a peer association variable finds it to be significantly and usually most strongly related to delinquency . . . and other forms of deviant behavior. (Akers & Sellers 2009:99–101)

Moreover, social learning theory does not lack gender generalizability. Akers and colleagues (1979), for example, found that differential association and other social learning variables were effective predictors of alcohol and drug use among both male and female adolescents. Similarly, Peggy Giordano (1978) reported that peer-group involvement was central to females' acquisition of attitudes favorable to delinquent conduct. She and her colleagues also found that females were just as likely as males to indicate that they got drugs or alcohol from friends or that they hung out at friends' houses when parents were away: "Females spend as much . . . time in the company of their friends as do males. . . . [Those] who . . . become involved in delinquent acts . . . adopt both a set of attitudes in which they [see] delinquency as appropriate, possible, or desirable . . . and a friendship style in which they . . . encourage each other as a group to act on these orientations" (Giordano et al. 1986:1194; see also Figueira-McDonough et al. 1981; Inciardi et al. 1993).

In terms of practical applications, both social learning theory and differential association theory suggest rehabilitative interventions that utilize group dynamics to reinforce conventional behavior. Such applications are referred to variously as guided group interaction, peer-group counseling, positive peer culture, and **therapeutic communities** (Gottfredson 1987). In juvenile correctional settings, these approaches offer advantages over individual-oriented treatments. Insofar as offenders often manifest their law-violating behavior as part of a group, the group therapy situation is the natural vehicle for personal change or growth:

> The [beginning] stages of the group are used to vent hostility and aggression. Initially, the groups' members are self-centered and unable to realistically or meaningfully involve themselves or their peers in the problem-solving process. Later, as the group progresses and the . . . members see that their . . . peers have similar problems and backgrounds, empathy and group identification is facilitated, . . . ultimately produc[ing] insight and new patterns of adaptation. (Trojanowicz et al. 2001:363–364)

These groups are often staffed by ex-offenders and ex-addicts and "show remarkably consistent reductions" in criminal behavior for those who complete the programs (Lipton 1996:12).

Techniques of Neutralization

Both social learning theory and differential association theory make use of the concept of "definitions" when describing the process by which individuals come to define or interpret law-violating behavior as acceptable or unacceptable. In some studies, definitions have been operationalized according to Gresham Sykes and David Matza's concept (1957) of **techniques of neutralization**. Sykes and Matza argued that most law violators have some

appreciation or respect for conventional values and must therefore neutralize the hold these values have on them through various self-rationalizations or justifications.

In their research on delinquent youths, Sykes and Matza identified five general techniques of neutralization. *Denial of responsibility* involves the delinquent's assertion that his or her behavior is due to external forces such as "unloving parents, bad companions, or a slum neighborhood." Youths often view themselves "as helplessly propelled into" unlawful behavior, as "more acted upon than acting" (p. 667). For example, a youth may explain that "the alcohol made me do it" or "the other guy started the fight." *Denial of injury* describes the offender's view that no harm has been caused by his or her actions—for instance, by drinking alcohol, smoking marijuana, or "borrowing" someone's car for a joyride. *Denial of the victim* is used as a way to distinguish people who are deserving targets of crime, such as a black person who's gotten "out of his place," a teacher who's been unfair, or a store owner who's ripped off customers. *Condemnation of the condemners* shifts attention away from the youth and toward the disapproving others, who are viewed as "hypocrites, deviants in disguise, or impelled by personal spite" (p. 688). For example, a youth may resent police officers who are corrupt, teachers who show favoritism, or parents who abuse their children. Finally, *appeal to higher loyalties* involves the imperative to sacrifice the rules of the larger society for the demands of the smaller group, such as the friendship clique or gang.

Critics have faulted Sykes and Matza for failing to establish that techniques of neutralization actually *precede* rather than *follow* delinquent acts, arguing that techniques of neutralization are mechanisms that facilitate the "hardening" of youths already involved in crime (Hamlin 1988; Minor 1984). Others have observed that rationalizations are used not so much to neutralize moral commitments as to minimize "risks or other tactical considerations" (Schwendinger & Schwendinger 1985:139). For instance, delinquents may rationalize stealing from people they perceive as "careless victims"—that is, as people whose "inefficiency in protecting their possessions makes them 'responsible' in part for their own victimization" (e.g., people who leave their keys in their car, who don't lock up their bicycles, or who leave their houses unlocked) (Carpenter et al. 1988:104).

These criticisms notwithstanding, the concept of neutralization techniques sensitizes us to the way in which offenders interpret or account for their actions. Rapists, for example, employ culturally available "rape myths" they have learned from the media and peers (Jackson 1978; Scully & Marolla 1984; see Chapter 10). These myths contain neutralization techniques that deny responsibility (e.g., the urge was uncontrollable), deny injury (e.g., she really liked it), and deny the victim (e.g., she was a cock-teaser so she had it coming). As one rapist, a married man, explains:

"Sometimes you just get the urge to go out and fuck the living shit out of some broad. . . . It doesn't matter who they are or what they look like. . . . Most women like to get their box battered as much as a man likes to get his balls off. They want to be grabbed and taken hard. It makes them feel like a woman" (Skipper & McWhorter 1981:29).

White-collar criminals, as Sutherland observed, rely on comparable rationalizations for their crimes (Benson 1985). In a well-documented price-fixing case that came to light in the early 1960s, corporate personnel from General Electric (GE), Westinghouse, and other electrical equipment manufacturers conspired to avoid the competition that would have kept prices down (Geis 1978). The conspirators all testified that this practice was ongoing before they had been hired by their respective companies and that they were expected to conform. They also denied that they had caused any harm. One GE spokesman rationalized his company's actions this way: "The prices which . . . purchasers . . . have paid during the past years were appropriate to value received and reasonable as compared with the general trends of prices in the economy" (p. 63). And a Westinghouse executive replied, when asked during a Senate subcommittee inquiry whether he was aware that the meetings he had with competitors were illegal: "Illegal? Yes, but not criminal. . . . I assumed that criminal action meant damaging someone, and we did not do that. . . . I thought that we were more or less working on a survival basis in order to try to make enough to keep our plant and our employees" (p. 67). This conspiracy, however, went on for several years and netted the industry millions of dollars in illegal profits.

Labeling Theory

As discussed in Chapter 1, labeling theory challenges the legalistic definition of crime, which, according to this theory, is not an objective condition but a process of social definition and the societal reaction to rule-violating behavior. Labeling theory is not concerned with explaining **primary deviation**, the initial impulse for rule violation, but with **secondary deviation**, how labeling transforms the initial behavior into a stable pattern. Drawing on the symbolic interaction tradition, labeling theory is concerned with the process by which individuals develop a sense of personal identity or self through interaction with others. It postulates that labeling of persons as "criminal" can become a self-fulfilling prophecy that promotes further involvement in crime. The offender internalizes the negative stigma and suffers a decline in self-esteem, while hostile reactions from others reduce opportunities to resume a conventional status (Becker 1963; Lemert 1951; Schur 1971).

Although results of delinquency research on the effects of labeling on juveniles' self-esteem have been mixed, they are not generally supportive of the proposition that youths experience a decline in self-esteem following

arrest or juvenile-court contact. Some studies have found that self-esteem is more likely to decline among youths who are less involved in or less committed to delinquency (e.g., first-time, middle-class offenders) than among youths who are more involved or more committed (e.g., high-frequency, lower-class offenders) and already possess "a negative social status, . . . [who are] not highly integrated into society . . . [and who are] less sensitive to and less affected by the judgments of officialdom" (Waegel 1989:113). Labeling may be irrelevant for those already designated as social outsiders, as having delinquent peers and engaging in delinquency may (in the short run) actually increase their self-esteem (Jang & Thornberry 1998; Kaplan et al. 1986). Labeling theory, however, distinguishes between *relative* and *absolute* labeling effects. Relative labeling refers to the impact of varying degrees of sanction (e.g., probation versus incarceration), while absolute labeling refers to "the difference between those who are labeled and those who are not" (Paternoster & Iovanni 1989:385). The research on absolute labeling, as compared to the research on relative labeling, has been more supportive of the theory's propositions regarding secondary deviation (Shoemaker 1996).

Issues of self-esteem aside, ethnographic studies of gangs illustrate how excessive official intervention in the lives of youths may make matters worse, as conflict with the police solidifies youths' commitment to the gang (Hagedorn 1988). As one gang member recounts:

> The police . . . would pull me into their car and harass me. I kept telling them that I was not a banger. But they don't believe anything. . . . They asked me questions about . . . friends, guys from the hood who are gangbangers, and, since I wouldn't tell them what they wanted to hear, they would say things like, "Yes, you are one of those hoodlums from this street. We've been watching you for a long time, and now we got you, and you're going to pay." (quoted in Padilla 1992:85)

According to another youth:

> I was picked up on several occasions . . . because I was Puerto Rican and was walking down the street. I wasn't into gangbanging, but the cops kept asking me questions about my gang and shit. One time . . . [they] picked me up and dropped me off in a white neighborhood . . . [and] took my money so I couldn't catch the bus back to the hood. The white dudes from that neighborhood had a field day with me. . . . I tried protecting myself . . . but I did get the shit smashed out of me. So, what do you do after something like that happens to you? . . . I turned. I became an official member of the [gang]. (pp. 87–88)

The stigmatization associated with official labeling also makes it difficult to find employment after serving punishment for one's crime (Pager

2003; Schwartz & Skolnick 1962). After serving three years for armed robbery, Nathan McCall (1994) could not land a newspaper job even after receiving a college degree in journalism. As he writes: "Every time I filled out an application and ran across that section about felony convictions, it made me feel sick inside. . . . I knew what they were going to do. . . . A black man with a felony record didn't stand a chance" (p. 234). Through perseverance, however, McCall eventually became a successful journalist, but only after he decided to lie about his criminal record. He hoped that if he got his foot in the door and had a chance to prove himself, people might finally forgive him for his past.

John Braithwaite's observations (1989) about **disintegrative** and **reintegrative shaming** are helpful as we contemplate the obstacles faced by McCall and others like him in their attempts to reintegrate into conventional society. Shaming is social disapproval or condemnation designed to invoke remorse. In disintegrative shaming, the offender continues to be treated as an outsider, is not forgiven for past sins, and thus is more likely to relapse into crime after having difficulty reentering the community. In reintegrative shaming, on the other hand, the offender is shamed, but if remorseful, is forgiven, welcomed back into the fold, and enmeshed in supportive community relationships. Japanese society is more inclined toward reintegrative shaming than American society, and Japan has been more successful at lowering rates of criminality (Vincentnathan 1995).

The fact that labeling may promote criminal identification has led some criminologists to favor a policy of "radical nonintervention" or use of less punitive measures when dealing with some offenders (Schur 1973). For instance, youths who commit minor crimes can be diverted from the juvenile justice system into community-based programs that offer various rehabilitative services. Other criminologists who are critical of the overreach of the law have favored a policy of decriminalization—the removal of criminal sanctions—of so-called victimless crimes committed by adults (e.g., gambling, drug use) that for the most part lack the forced victimization of predatory crimes of theft and violence (Meier & Geis 1997; Morris & Hawkins 1970). Such nonintervention strategies—especially decriminalization—remain controversial and raise complex issues that we will explore later in the book (see Chapters 5 and 9).

Social Control and the Life Course

The major micro-level alternative in criminology to social learning and symbolic interactionism is **social control theory**. The concept of social control can be found in the works of both early European and US social theorists and has been considered to be the micro-level analogue of social disorganization theory (Bursik 1988). Whereas social disorganization theory

attributes crime to *communities* marked by weakened social control, control theory focuses on *individuals* who are weakly controlled (Reckless 1967; Reiss 1951). Unlike social disorganization theory, however, control theory assumes that weakened social control may occur at any level of society, under conditions of economic deprivation or affluence.

Travis Hirschi's Social Control Theory

In his landmark book *Causes of Delinquency,* Travis Hirschi (1969) advanced the most influential formulation of social control theory. Hirschi believed that most criminological theories ask the wrong question: Why *do* people engage in criminal behavior? Hirschi thought the more appropriate question to ask is: Why *don't* people engage in criminal behavior? He assumed that human self-interest provided sufficient motivation for crime, and hence what was in need of explanation—the key theoretical issue—was how these impulses are controlled.

According to Hirschi, most other macro- or micro-level sociological formulations are essentially "bad things happen to good people" theories—that is, they assume that people are largely benign and naturally prone to conformity, unless exposed to social strain, deviant associations, social stigmatization, and so forth. These theories, however, fail to address questions like: Why do so many (if not most) economically disadvantaged people not commit crime? Why would one be attracted to delinquent peers in the first place?

Following Durkheim, Hirschi argued that "the more weakened the groups to which [one] belongs, the less he depends on them, the more he consequently depends only on himself and recognizes no other rules of conduct than what are founded on his private interests" (Durkheim 1952:209). According to Hirschi, conformity arises only if, through the socialization process, a person establishes a bond with the conventional society. When this bond is weak, one is freed from social constraint and is more at risk for delinquency.

Hirschi conceptualized the social bond in terms of four key elements. *Attachment* refers to the ties of mutual affection and respect between children and their parents, teachers, and friends. People with such positive ties (with their parents especially) are reluctant to place those ties in jeopardy by engaging in law-violating behavior. *Commitment* suggests an individual's stake in conformity, as indicated by a youth's willingness to conform to the ideal requisites of childhood (e.g., getting an education; postponing smoking, drinking, and sex) and their assessment of anticipated losses associated with nonconformity. *Involvement* refers to participation in conventional activities that minimize idle and unsupervised time (e.g., chores, homework, organized sports, Scouts). *Belief* indicates acceptance of the moral validity of laws.

During childhood and adolescence, parents are the key agents of social control, since "the family is the most salient arena for social interaction" at this stage of life (Thornberry 1987:873). In Chapter 3 we noted elements of family life that are associated with delinquency, including (among other things) the degree of parental-child affection and communication. In his self-report survey research, Hirschi (1969) measured attachment to parents by asking youths various questions such as: "Do you share your thoughts and feelings with your parents?" "Do your parents know where you are when you are away from home?" Those who answered affirmatively to questions like these—as well as other measures of the social bond—were less likely to engage in delinquency. Importantly, Hirschi placed emphasis on the *quality* of the relationship between children and parents rather than on the *number* of parents in the home (e.g., single-parent versus two-parent families). All other things being equal, it is desirable to have two parents in the home (Rankin & Kern 1994; Rebellion 2002), but research indicates that the quality of family interaction has similar effects on delinquency regardless of the number of parents (Cernkovich & Giordano 1987).

Although Hirschi's theory has received considerable empirical support through self-report studies, the evidence has appeared most compelling as an explanation of (1) minor rather than serious delinquency; (2) the onset of delinquency rather than the continuation of delinquency; and (3) delinquency in early rather than late adolescence (Agnew 1985; Krohn & Massey 1980; Paternoster & Triplett 1988). Moreover, as Terence Thornberry notes: "Attachment to parents is not . . . an immutable trait, impervious to the effects of other variables. Indeed, associating with delinquent peers, not being committed to school, and engaging in delinquent behavior are so contradictory to parental expectations that they tend to diminish the level of attachment between parents and child" (1987:874).

In his later work with Michael Gottfredson, Hirschi argued that effective familial bonds that promote the development of personal *self-control* in young children are the first line of defense in the fight against crime (Gottfredson & Hirschi 1990; see Chapter 3). However, if the family and then the schools fail in bonding the individual to society, the criminal justice system becomes the last line of defense. Contrary to labeling theory, but consistent with conservative proscriptions for dealing with crime, Hirschi and Gottfredson suggest that law enforcement should be strictly applied to increase the certainty of apprehension, and that punishment (not rehabilitative treatment) should be employed, since criminal justice intervention comes too late to effectively reform criminals (Einstader & Henry 1995).

While some social control theorists downplay the significance of class, Terry Williams and William Kornblum (1985:16) ask a question consistent with Hirschi's perspective: How is it that some lower-class youths "manage not only to survive in a community devastated by crime, drug addiction, and

violence, but to be recognized as achievers and encouraged to realize their potential as fully as possible"? The answer, for many youths, is family involvement:

> In every low-income community there are young people who work and go to school and fulfill family responsibilities. The largest proportion of these youths is from homes where parents have struggled for years to provide them with as many of the benefits of stability and education as possible, even at great sacrifice to themselves. The influence of family values . . . , the relative security of religious beliefs and practices, fortunate experiences with teachers and school—all of these factors are important in shaping the life chances of young achievers. (p. 17)

However, Williams and Kornblum also agree with the African proverb "It takes a village to raise a child." They believe that positive adult mentors who "spend time with . . . youth . . . are among the most precious resources a community can have" (p. 106). Mentors who nurture self-esteem and foster aspirations—whether they are from schools, religious organizations, youth groups, or athletic associations—make a world of difference in a young person's life. Williams and Kornblum thus take a different tack than Hirschi and Gottfredson, one more consistent with anomie-strain theory. They maintain that efforts to encourage adult mentoring of youths should be incorporated into governmental programs that promote "continual opportunities for growth" so as to provide disadvantaged youth "a constant supply of diverse opportunities for entry into the economic and social mainstream" (p. 113).

Gender and Social Control

Research on the gender generalizabilty of social control theory has generally shown it to be applicable to females as well as males (see Belknap 2007; Berger 1996). Lower female crime rates may be explained, in part, by greater parental supervision of daughters, who are more likely than sons to be discouraged from taking risks and "sowing their wild oats." Whereas males learn to view physical aggression as a way to accomplish masculinity and acquire status among peers, females learn that aggression is unfeminine and something to avoid. Although some girls can be rather emotionally manipulative and abusive to other girls—the "mean girls" popularized in recent popular media (Wiseman 2002)—they are less likely than boys to blame others for their problems and channel their frustrations toward external targets. Thus female-dominated friendship networks can have a mitigating influence on the delinquent behavior of both girls and boys in the group. At the same time, females are more likely than males to internalize their frustrations and suffer from depression. In addition, as noted previously, family life in some ways can be more stressful for girls, as they are more

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Religion and Crime

Although the United States is one of the most churchgoing countries in the world (Hadaway et al. 1993), contemporary political discourse is filled with lamentations about America's moral decline. Conservative politicians and religious leaders often blame rising crime rates and immorality on the decline of religious beliefs and the growth of moral relativism. They assume that religiosity is associated with less crime because it promotes "goodness, morality, concern for the rights and welfare of others, righteousness, and rewards in the hereafter for proper behavior in life" (Binder et al. 1988:465). Within criminology, social control theory suggests an inverse relationship between religion and crime insofar as religion may increase the bond between individuals and society and promote moral beliefs that discourage deviancy.

Few studies of religion and crime have focused on *adult* criminality. T. David Evans and colleagues (1995) found that participation in religious activities (attending religious services and social events, reading religious material, listening to religious broadcasts) was inversely related to self-reported criminality among adults. And Harold Grasmick and colleagues (1991) found that respondents who identified themselves as religious and felt that religion was an important part of their life were less likely to say they would cheat on their income taxes.

Most criminological research, however, has focused on *juvenile delinquency,* and the results have often been mixed. In one of the first major studies that questioned the relationship between religion and delinquency, Travis Hirschi and Rodney Stark (1969) discerned no association between delinquency and church attendance or belief in the supernatural. To explain their findings, they suggested that churches were unable to instill neighborly love in their members and that "belief in the possibility of pleasure and pain in another world cannot now, and perhaps never could, compete with the pleasures and pains of everyday life" (pp. 212–213).

Other research suggests that the relationship between religion and delinquency may vary by denomination and geographical context. Several early studies found the lowest rates of delinquency among Jews and persons from fundamentalist or highly ascetic Christian denominations (e.g., Baptist, Mormon, Church of Christ) and that religion appeared to inhibit delinquency more in rural and Southern communities than in urban and non-Southern areas (see Berger 1996). Still other research indicates that the relationship between religion and delinquency is mediated by additional social factors such as association with peers. Stephen Burkett and Bruce Warren (1987), for example, found that youths with less religious commitment were more vulnerable to the influence of delinquent peers. Stark, however, argues that the critical issue is not a youth's personal beliefs but the beliefs of most of his or her friends: "In communities where most young people do not attend church, religion will not inhibit the behavior even of those . . . who personally are religious. . . . In communities where most kids are religious, then those who are will be less delinquent than those who aren't" (1984:274–275).

continues

continued

Other criminologists conclude that the impact of religion is so "closely tied to the family and other influences" that it has little independent effect (Elifson et al. 1983:521; Cochran et al. 1994; Giordano et al. 2008). Nevertheless, it seems unwise to dismiss religion as a factor in young people's behavior, for some studies have found significant effects, although the relationship appears strongest for behaviors, like alcohol and drug use and teenage sex, that are not universally condemned by secular society (Burkett & Ward 1993; Jang & Johnson 2001; Johnson et al. 2000, 2001).

In recent years we have heard more about faith-based efforts to reach at-risk youths and convert them from gangs, drugs, and violence. Religious leaders now run "safe haven" centers for at-risk youths that combine religious and recreational activities. Some clergy work with police to pull the hard-core kids off the streets—where they can hopefully be reached in a prison ministry—and get the "more winnable" ones into alternative community programs (Leland 1998:22). Evaluation of faith-based rehabilitation programs for both juveniles and adults, though still in its infancy, is a growing part of contemporary criminological research (O'Conner et al. 2006), although some have raised concerns about the use of tax dollars by religious organizations to proselytize their faith (Goldberg 2007).

vulnerable to sexual victimization in the home, leading some to run away and become caught in a spiraling web of criminality and victimization out on the streets (Broidy & Agnew 1997; Campbell 1993; McCarthy et al. 2004; see Chapter 3).

Social Bonds Across the Life Course

Robert Sampson and John Laub (1993) have extended social control theory to help explain how the establishment of bonds in adulthood can attenuate and modify previous life-course experiences or patterns of behavior. A **life course** is a developmental pathway or "sequence of culturally defined age-graded roles and social transitions that are enacted over time" (Caspi et al. 1990:15). During childhood and adolescence, the family, school, and peer groups are the most significant sources of informal social control. During young adulthood, higher education and/or vocational training, work, and marriage are most important. During later adulthood, work, marriage, parenthood, and involvement in community are most important.

Sampson and Laub analyzed longitudinal data collected by Sheldon Glueck and Eleanor Glueck (1950, 1968) on 500 delinquent and 500 nondelinquent males born between 1924 and 1935 who were followed from childhood until they were 32 years of age. They found that childhood and adolescent delinquency were predictive of later-life criminality, but that young men who married and found stable employment were more likely to

desist from crime than those who did not. Their research supports a theory of "informal social control that recognizes both stability and change in antisocial behavior over the life course" (Sampson & Laub 1990:609; see also Horney et al. 1995).

Sampson and Laub argue that marriage per se does not increase social control, but that close emotional ties and a strong attachment to one's spouse increase the bond between individuals and society. Marriage also reduces time spent with law-violating peers, as other studies have also found (Simons et al. 2002; Warr 1998). And while employment per se does not increase social control, it does so when accompanied by job stability, job commitment, and workplace ties. Under these conditions a person develops a social investment in institutions of conformity and becomes embedded in networks of relationships that "create interdependent systems of obligations and restraint that impose significant costs for translating criminal propensities into action" (Laub & Sampson 1993:311). At the same time, Christopher Uggen (2000) found that males in their late twenties and older were more likely than males in their late teens and early twenties to report declines in criminality due to employment.

It is important to consider also that the circumstances for personal reform are not entirely of one's own making. Structural features of the labor market, for instance, "have as much to do . . . with employment outcomes . . . as do individual predispositions to work" (Laub & Sampson 1993:318–319). The subjects in Sampson and Laub's study "grew to young adulthood in a period of expanding economic opportunities during the 1950s and 1960s." Some also experienced positive life-course changes as a result of military experience, which made them eligible for numerous benefits offered by the G.I. Bill.

Sampson and Laub also found that marriage and employment did not have the same impact on everyone in their study. Such experiences "only provide[d] the *possibility* for change to occur" (Laub & Sampson 1993:318, emphasis added). At some point, individuals who desist from crime must make a decision to change (Anderson 1999; Giordano et al. 2003; Juette & Berger 2008). Importantly, the faith and support that others had given them weighed heavily on their minds. Like many others, Nathan McCall, for example, was tempted to return to crime after being released from prison:

> One night. . . . I stopped at a convenience store. . . . It was late and there was only one attendant. . . . I thought, I can take this place by myself. . . . I'd been doing that a lot lately. I'd enter stores, case them, and assess my chances of being able to pull off another job. . . . [That night] I sat there for a long while, struggling inside my head. . . . Then I thought about something . . . that I had . . . that most cats coming out of the joint did not: I had supportive parents. I thought about my mother and stepfather, who had suffered through . . . years of hell with me. . . . I thought about how

> hard they'd pulled for me since I'd gotten out. They gave me money. I had a place to lay my head. . . . They cared about me. . . . I couldn't let them down. (1995:236–237)

Life-course research in criminology returns us to the tension between social structure and social action that is a central element of the sociological imagination (see Chapter 1). Individuals are influenced by external constraints but are at times capable of defying the odds. This capacity for personal agency or self-efficacy, however, does not emerge spontaneously. It is a capability, like language, that is nurtured through social experience and acquired in varying degrees of proficiency. McCall's ability to eventually steer a successful life course from prison to the *Washington Post* newsroom was in no small part dependent on early family and school experiences that he could fall back on. (Before succumbing to delinquency through peer influences, McCall had been "into honor rolls and spelling bees" [p. 27].) He did not create his life completely anew, but continually struggled to overcome social deficits that his involvement in crime had created (e.g., a prison record that limited employment opportunities).

People who desist from crime must overcome considerable adversity in their lives. Life-course research encourages us to reject static models of human behavior in favor of one that recognizes both stability and change in criminal conduct over time.

5

Conflict Theory and Critical Criminology

WISSAM ABYAD, IMPRISONED IN 2003 FOR ALLEGEDLY committing "habitual debauchery," was serving a 15-month sentence in a dark and clammy prison cell in Cairo, Egypt. Since the cell had no toilet or running water, he and his five cellmates who shared a small cubicle were forced to urinate in a bathtub that had no drain. Prior to his incarceration, Abyad had agreed, after several online conversations, to meet a man named "Raoul" at a McDonald's restaurant in an upscale section of Cairo. Upon his arrival at McDonald's, Abyad was surrounded by four men, who grabbed him and muscled him into a police car. He never even had sex with "Raoul" (Dahir 2002).

Abyad represents just one of many victims of "choreographed crackdowns" on gay men in Egypt, where police entrap men like him through Internet stings. Police also raid gay discos and private parties, tap the phones "of known gay men in order to trace their friends," and use threats, allegedly even torture, in order to turn cornered men into informants (Dahir 2002:27).

At the time Abyad was imprisoned for his "crime," only 13 states in the United States still outlawed **sodomy**, a term coined after the biblical story of the decadent ancient city of Sodom. Nine of these states had laws that criminalized sodomy—which includes oral and anal sex—for both *same-sex* and *different-sex* couples, but in practice these laws have been used only against gay men and lesbians. Sodomy statutes have historically been used to deny gay and lesbian parents custody or visitation rights on the grounds that their children may be exposed to "criminal activity." Additionally, these laws have been used as the basis for discrimination in housing, employment, schools, healthcare, and immigration status. Their existence also increases the likelihood of police harassment and decreases the likelihood that gays and lesbians will report hate crimes or domestic violence, or seek refuge at shelters for victims of battery (Graff 2003; see Chapters 7 and 10).

In a six-to-three decision in **Lawrence v. Texas** (2003), the US Supreme Court struck down a Texas ban on same-sex sodomy, eviscerating sodomy laws in those 13 states and carving out "a zone of sexual freedom"

for sexual minorities (Kim 2003:6). This decision has not meant the end of discrimination, but the history of sodomy laws in the United States and elsewhere does illustrate the conflict perspective on crime introduced in Chapter 1. Understanding this perspective will constitute an essential part of your sociological imagination.

According to **conflict theory**, definitions of crime and the enforcement of criminal laws often lack societal consensus and are subject to the assertion of economic and political power and the struggles of competing groups in society. Such conflict, as we shall see, can take various forms. **Critical criminology**, an offshoot of conflict theory, emphasizes how social structures of inequality impact the criminalization process in ways that advance the interests of societal elites at the expense of those who are disadvantaged. Critical criminologists reject a legalistic definition of crime in favor of one that defines it as a violation of human rights or as analogous social injury—that is, as an act or condition that may be legal but whose harmful consequences are similar to those of illegal acts.

Group and Class Conflict

Culture Conflict and Crime

Criminologists designate one type of group conflict as **culture conflict**. Culture conflict occurs "when persons acting according to the norms and violations of their own group violate those of another group that have been enacted into law" (Akers & Sellers 2009:229; Sellin 1938). During the Prohibition era (1919–1933), for example, people who drank alcohol were in violation of the Eighteenth Amendment to the US Constitution. The **prohibition movement** (also known as the temperance movement) was composed mainly of pious, middle-class rural and small-town Protestants who believed that drinking was sinful. They were especially concerned about the cultural practices of working-class Catholic immigrants and other urban dwellers whose presence in the United States appeared to threaten their way of life (Gusfield 1963). Today, many people believe that the government's prohibitionist drug policy, especially its laws against marijuana use, constitute an unfair and unnecessary overreach of the law, and that drug abuse should be treated as a medical rather than criminal problem (we will explore the contemporary debate over drug policy later in this chapter). Abortion law is another area where culture conflict emerges. Some people believe that abortion is murder, while others consider it a private matter that should be subject to a woman's right to choose what is done to her body.

Culture conflict also occurs in cases where foreign immigrants "violate the laws of a new country simply by behaving according to the customs of the old" (Akers & Sellers 2009:229). Two contemporary cases in Wisconsin

illustrate this point. In one, an Ethiopian immigrant was convicted for possession of khat, a plant that is routinely chewed in East Africa and the Arabian peninsula as a stimulant. During the trial, the attorney for the defendant argued, unsuccessfully: "Every culture has their stimulant. This is their stimulant. There's been no evidence that [khat] has any adverse effect on anybody" (Treleven 2006:A1). Omar Jamal, the executive director of the Somali Justice Advocacy Center in neighboring Minnesota, complained that prosecutions like this are "an excuse to get us, because [they think] we're all terrorists" (p. A5).

In another case, a Hmong immigrant was convicted of rape in an act that would not have been considered criminal in his home country of Laos. Traditional Hmong marriages in Laos often involve a man taking a girl of his choice (usually between 14 and 18 years of age) to his family home. He dispatches a clan messenger to the girl's family to inform them "of her whereabouts and to deliver a token sum of money to start bride-price negotiations" (Titunik 1992:1). The girl is then forced to have sex with the prospective groom, at which point the man is in a strong bargaining position, as the girl's loss of virginity renders her unmarriageable to others. In the United States, however, young Hmong women and their families are much more likely to reject this practice, and some have charged the "suitor" with kidnapping and sexual assault. According to a Hmong social worker in Wisconsin, the traditional Hmong view is that if "you are willing to go [in a car] with a guy, you are willing to marry him. The man may not understand that in this country if you get in someone's car, it might just mean you want a date" (p. 8). The district attorney in the case added that he saw the prosecution "as an opportunity to send . . . [a] message to the [Hmong] community that sexual assault like this wouldn't be passed over simply as a culture issue. You've got 12-, 13-, and 14-year-old girls who are forced into motherhood and thereby deprived of all the opportunities that teenagers ought to have" (p. 9).

Racial Conflict, Social Protest, and Collective Violence

In other types of group conflict, dissident groups engage in protest to change existing political arrangements. Over the years, for instance, protesters associated with the civil rights, women's, antiwar, and other social movements have engaged in **civil disobedience**—the deliberate yet nonviolent public refusal to obey a law that one thinks is unjust.

In 1955, as noted in Chapter 1, Rosa Parks refused to move to the back of a bus, sparking a movement of civil disobedience that challenged segregation laws and forever changed the social fabric of the United States. During the civil rights protests of the 1950s and 1960s, Southern blacks were arrested countless times for "sitting-in at lunch counters, libraries, and movie theatres, . . . for 'kneeling-in' at segregated churches . . . [and] for

peacefully marching after being unfairly denied parade permits" (Barkan 2006:424). In his famous 1963 "Letter from Birmingham Jail," Martin Luther King, Jr., wrote:

> One has not only a legal but a moral responsibility to obey just laws. Conversely, one has a moral responsibility to disobey unjust laws. . . . Any law that uplifts the human personality is just. Any law that degrades human personality is unjust. All segregation statutes are unjust because segregation distorts the soul and damages the personality. . . . [But] in no sense do I advocate evading . . . the law. . . . One who breaks an unjust law must do so openly, lovingly, and with a willingness to accept the penalty. . . . [That person] is in reality expressing the highest respect for law. (King 1994:463)

Group conflict can also spill over into violence, as in the case of urban race riots. African Americans, for example, have at times rioted in response to real or perceived brutality by the police. A familiar example is the 1992 riots that occurred in Los Angeles and other parts of the country after the acquittal of the police officers who were accused of beating Rodney King, an African American who had been stopped for speeding. According to some observers, such incidents represent "small-scale political revolts stemming from blacks' anger over their poverty and others aspects of racial oppression by white society" (Barkan 2006:419–420; see Chapter 11).

Arguably the most well-known period of urban race rioting in the United States occurred during the 1960s. During that era, some 500 riots involving an estimated 350,000 participants caused massive property damage and the deaths of nearly 250 people, most of whom were shot by police and National Guard troops. These riots were more common in cities suffering from depressed economic conditions (Barkan & Snowden 2001; Myers 1997). In one study of the 1965 Watts riot in Los Angeles, over half of the African Americans interviewed felt that the revolt had been "a purposeful event which had a positive effect on their lives" (Tomlinson & Sears 1967:73). Another post-Watts study concluded that while a majority of African Americans "expressed disapproval of the violence and destruction," this disapproval "was often coupled with an expression of empathy with those who participated" and a sense of pride that African Americans had brought worldwide attention to their plight (Cohen 1967:4).

Some analysts believe that these riots helped stimulate governmental policies, such as the expansion of welfare and equal employment opportunity legislation, that benefited the black community. Michael Betz (1974), for instance, found that cities that experienced riots during this era subsequently received more welfare funding than cities that did not. The riots, however, also provoked an antiblack backlash from whites and brought forth a more punitive response from police in the form of increased arrests and use

of deadly force (Barkan & Snowden 2001; Piven & Cloward 1971; see also Chapter 7).

The struggles of Native Americans. Racial conflict has also been endemic to the history of native peoples in North, Central, and South America, who suffered greatly as a result of European conquest. Between the sixteenth and nineteenth centuries, the indigenous populations of these areas declined by about 90 percent, a loss of some 70 million people. Most of the deaths were due to exposure to diseases against which the native peoples had no resistance. Susceptibility to disease, however, was aggravated by the depletion of food supply, forced territorial displacement, and overall hardship that accompanied European domination (S. Katz 1988, 1996).

Between 1775 and 1890, in the United States alone, the native population declined by an estimated 1.5 million. While less than 4 percent of Native Americans who died during these years were killed through military conflict or genocidal massacres sponsored or encouraged by governmental officials, the American principle of **manifest destiny**—the belief in the inevitable territorial expansion of the United States—legitimized the seizure of Native American land and the attempted annihilation of Native American culture (Katz 1996; Stannard 1992). During that period, the federal government ratified some 370 treaties with individual tribes as sovereign nations, but most of these treaties were broken by the United States. There is a saying among Native Americans: "They made us many promises . . . but they never kept but one; they promised to take our land and they took it" (Balkan et al. 1980:198–199). In 1890, about 200 unarmed Native American men, women, and children were massacred by the US Seventh Cavalry at Wounded Knee, South Dakota. This battle "symbolizes the end of formal fighting and the destruction of Indian civilization as it . . . previously existed" (Hagan 1997:94). Since then, many Native Americans have lived in abject poverty on government reservations around the country.

Over the years, Native Americans, like other oppressed groups, have organized to protest their plight. In 1968, the American Indian Movement (AIM) was founded by Dennis Banks and other Native Americans to combat police harassment and brutality. AIM's goals quickly expanded to the restoration of traditional Native American culture and the pressuring of the US government to honor its broken treaties (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995; Hagan 1997).

The village of Wounded Knee, on the Oglala Sioux Pine Ridge Reservation, has been the site of further conflict. In 1973, about 200 armed AIM militants seized and occupied the village for 71 days, demanding US Senate investigations of police practices on Native American reservations and the problem of broken treaties (Hagan 1997). During a shoot-out with authorities, several people on both sides were injured and two Native

Americans were killed. Another incident occurred in 1975, when two FBI agents entered the Pine Ridge Reservation in search of a Native American suspected of stealing a pair of boots. In a subsequent shoot-out, the two FBI agents and an AIM member were killed. Four AIM members were charged with murder and one, Leonard Peltier, was convicted and sentenced to life in prison. Many people familiar with the case believe that Peltier was convicted despite questionable evidence (including testimony of fabricated eyewitnesses and suppression of exculpatory evidence) and "apparent improper conduct by the prosecution and judge at his trial" (Barkan 2006:413). Amnesty International considers Peltier to be a "political prisoner," and over 14 million people around the world have "signed petitions demanding a new trial" for him (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995:302; Peltier 1989).

Class Conflict and Left Realism

Some conflict theorists, following Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels (see Chapter 4), view crime as a consequence of class conflict and the social inequalities and competitive forms of interaction endemic to capitalist societies, where property acquisition goals predominate and economic relations define people as objects to be exploited for personal gain. According to this view, crime occurs in all classes of society, although criminal law is unevenly enforced and most often directed at subordinate groups. Corporations commit **crimes of economic domination**, which range from illegal price-fixing and fraudulent financial bookkeeping, to the manufacture of harmful consumer products, the operation of hazardous workplace conditions, and the discharge of toxic environmental pollution. Workers, in turn, commit **crimes of accommodation and resistance**, which include theft from employers and the general public that are disorganized and ineffectual adaptations to the existing social order, as well as participation in illegal strikes, membership in dissident groups, and acts of collective rebellion that challenge the status quo. In addition, the government commits **crimes of repression**, which range from acts of police brutality and illegal surveillance of citizens, to state-sponsored terrorism and genocide (Balkan et al. 1980; Quinney 1977; see Chapters 6 and 7).

According to conflict theorists, one of the central characteristics of a capitalist economic system is the creation of a **surplus population** of potential workers who are unemployed or marginally employed. This population provides a large pool of laborers whom employers can hire when needed (e.g., when workers strike or are unwilling to do menial work) and who keep wages down by increasing competition for jobs. Individuals in this group are the most prone to involvement in street crime—predatory theft, violence, drug use, involvement in gangs, and the like—which is the primary concern of the criminal justice system (see Chapter 8). Although the surplus population is a volatile and potentially rebellious group, street

crime only exacerbates the plight of the disadvantaged, as it is primarily committed not against the affluent but against the most vulnerable people in society (Balkan et al. 1980; Quinney 1977).

Though critical criminologists have focused attention on the neglected criminality of the privileged class, a branch of critical criminology called **left realism** emphasizes the harmful nature of street crime as well. In doing so, left realists also reject grand utopian schemes, such as Marx and Engels's vision of a classless society, and call instead for realistic solutions to the problem of street crime. They support more limited local organizing and government-sponsored strategies that are generally consistent with a liberal approach to crime prevention (see Chapter 4). Left realists encourage efforts to improve police-community relations as well as the development of citizen protection patrols, and they favor rehabilitative modes of punishment designed to reintegrate offenders back into society. They also favor government-funded social services and job-creation programs, but would go further than most liberals in using the tax system to create disincentives for corporations to close plants or relocate jobs to lower-wage foreign countries. Finally, they advocate promotion of workplace democracy by including workers and community representatives on the boards of directors of large corporations (DeKeseredy & Schwartz 1996; Lea & Young 1984; Michalowski 1983).

The emphasis of some critical criminologists on the criminogenic qualities of capitalism should not be misconstrued as an assertion that *only* capitalism causes crime (Greenberg 1993). While corporate crime ceased to exist in some communist nations (e.g., the former Soviet-bloc nations) and in some noncapitalist societies (e.g., China, Cuba, and North Korea), government corruption as well as illegal markets in monetary currencies and other commodities have been common. There does appear to be less street crime in these countries than in capitalist nations like the United States, but this may result more from government repression than from the attempt to satisfy economic needs. Nevertheless, as Ronald Akers and Christine Sellers (2009:251) ask, "If there is something inherently criminogenic" about capitalism, why do different capitalist nations have dissimilar rates of crime? Clearly, sweeping generalizations about capitalism fail to account for such variations.

Feminist Criminology

Another branch of critical criminology is known as **feminist criminology**, the perspective taken by those who are dissatisfied with the neglect of gender in much of sociological theorizing about crime (conflict theorizing and critical theorizing included). **Feminism** is a social movement concerned with understanding and alleviating the oppressive conditions that women

(and girls) experience as a group. According to Meda Chesney-Lind, "Gender stratification in patriarchal society is as powerful a system as is class. A feminist approach . . . requires explanations of . . . behavior that are sensitive to its patriarchal context" (1989:19; see Chapter 1).

Gender and Crime

As discussed in Chapter 1, gender refers to the "social statuses and meanings assigned to women and men" (Richardson et al. 1997:19). It involves institutionalized arrangements of power that, in patriarchal societies, entail men's dominance over women. Even in today's times of changing gender roles, women on average make less money than men and are more likely to be employed in lower-paid service, retail, and clerical positions that offer fewer opportunities for advancement. They are often segregated into "gender appropriate" occupations such as nursing, childcare, preschool and elementary school teaching, secretarial work, and waitressing. Even when women work outside the home, as the majority do today, they typically remain responsible for a greater share of child-rearing and daily home maintenance, and they are more often than men expected to compromise their careers for their families. In the corporate world, women have made significant gains but are still more likely to be excluded from the upper managerial ranks. Likewise, women remain underrepresented in positions of political power.

Traditional gender roles are rooted in these structural arrangements. Males have been socialized to associate risk-taking, competitiveness, aggressiveness, and occupational ambition with masculinity. Females, in turn, have been given relatively less support and freedom to explore the world in these ways, and they have been encouraged to associate femininity with being sexually attractive to males and establishing nurturing relationships with others. Even parents who are concerned about sexism and who favor gender equality hesitate to stray too far from traditional socialization practices for fear that their children might be perceived as or become "deviant," and they are more likely to view sex as ruining daughters' but enhancing sons' maturation (Berger 1996; Morash & Chesney-Lind 1991).

According to feminist criminologists, traditional criminology has marginalized women's experiences and ignored, neglected, or misrepresented female offenders and victims. Traditional criminology, for example, has tended to characterize females' relative disinclination to commit crime as a sign of inadequacy or inferiority (e.g., socialized passivity or dependency). Why not see it instead as a model for responsible prosocial behavior? Feminists believe that the problem of "gender generalizability" requires placing gender at the center of criminological analysis rather than merely applying traditional criminological theories to women (see Chapter 4). How ironic it is, they say, that traditional criminology has focused on male

offenders without emphasizing that crime is a means by which men express and enact their masculinity (Daly & Chesney-Lind 1988; Messerschmidt 1993; Morash & Chesney-Lind 1991).

Feminist criminologists focus on the nexus of gender, race/ethnicity, and class, and urge us to recognize the multiple inequalities and **intersectionalities** that arise from diverse and crosscutting social statuses and identities. Recognizing intersectionalities helps us avoid, for instance, viewing *women* "as a unified category" or thinking of *race* "in ungendered terms" (Daly & Maher 1998:3, 5). As suggested previously, not all women and men "do gender" according to traditional norms and expectations. Many, in fact, defy gender stereotypes to construct alternative femininities and masculinities. We will develop this idea further in Chapter 9.

Whereas traditional criminology has tended to distinguish "them" (the lawbreakers) from "us" (the law-abiding), feminist criminology highlights what are often "blurred boundaries between victimization and criminalization"—for example, when girls flee abusive households and their "street survival strategies" result in their arrest and incarceration (Daly & Maher 1998:8). Walter DeKeseredy and Martin Schwartz (1996) also illuminate such interconnections when they note that the problem of male violence *against women* is related to the problem of male violence *against men.* Given evidence indicating that "children who grow up watching their mother being abused are more likely than other children to become delinquents and adult criminals both inside *and* outside the home," they suggest that "one way to reduce street crime against *men* is to reduce violence in the home against *women*" (pp. 478–480).

The Criminalization of Gay and Lesbian Sex

Feminist criminologists have been at the forefront of the gay and lesbian rights movement and of efforts to advance understanding of sexual diversity. Historically the laws that criminalized sodomy in every state in the United States were not "stand-alone statutes . . . [but] part of a much larger package of law that prohibited all forms of nonprocreative and nonmarital sex" (John D'Emilio, quoted in Graff 2003:A22). Sodomy was considered immoral, regardless of the sex of one's partner, because it allowed people to enjoy sex without the possibility of producing a child.

In 1969 a historic uprising occurred when police officers in New York City's Greenwich Village raided the Stonewall Inn gay bar. Although police raids were common and patrons "were expected to endure humiliation, slurs, and brutality in silence," one hot summer night the accumulated anger and frustration bubbled over and patrons of the bar as well as the throng of supporters who gathered "fought back against the police so valiantly that the cops were forced to retreat" (Feinberg 1996:7). The uprising, which became known as the **Stonewall Rebellion**, continued for four nights and

was a landmark event in the history of the gay rights movement in the United States (Armstrong & Crage 2006).

In the past two and a half decades, two cases involving prosecution for sodomy have resulted in landmark US Supreme Court decisions. In the 1986 case of **Bowers v. Hardwick**, an Atlanta police officer came to the home of Michael Hardwick with a warrant to arrest him for failing to appear in court to face a charge of carrying an open bottle of beer outside a bar. The officer was let into the house by one of Hardwick's roommates and found Hardwick having consensual sex with a male friend in his bedroom. Both Hardwick and his friend were arrested for violating Georgia's law against sodomy. The Court, in a five-to-four decision, upheld Georgia's statute, ruling there was no constitutional right to privacy for homosexual conduct.

In 1998 a Texas county sheriff's office received a false tip about an armed man in a Houston apartment. When the investigating officer arrived on the scene, he drew his gun and pushed open the unlocked apartment door, only to find John Lawrence and Tyrone Garner locked in an embrace. Arrested for "deviate sexual intercourse," Lawrence and Garner were handcuffed and hauled off to jail in their underwear. The two were released the next day and fined for violating Texas's "Homosexual Conduct Law" (Graff 2003).

In the 2003 case of *Lawrence v. Texas,* introduced at the beginning of this chapter, the US Supreme Court struck down the Texas ban on same-sex sodomy, thereby correcting, in David Cole's words, "the wrong the Court committed in *Bowers v. Hardwick* . . . when it narrowly upheld a sodomy statute with the tortured reasoning that since gays and lesbians have been repressed and vilified from time immemorial, it cannot be unconstitutional to continue to do so" (2003:5). Justice Anthony Kennedy, writing the majority opinion, asserted that the law criminalizing consensual gay sex "demeans the lives of homosexual persons . . . [who] are entitled to respect for their private lives" (cited in Bull 2003:35).

Clearly this newly granted right to privacy provides some constitutional protection to gay and lesbian people. However, as of this writing it has not affected the US military's "**don't ask, don't tell**" policy, which has resulted in over 10,000 discharges since its adoption in 1993. The policy prohibits military personnel who "demonstrate a propensity or intent to engage in homosexuality" from serving, because it creates "an unacceptable risk to the high standards of moral, good order and discipline, and unit cohesion that are the essence of military capability." Thus the estimated 65,000 gays, lesbians, and bisexuals in the military have to remain closeted, even though the two dozen other nations that allow open service for sexual minorities (including Australia, Canada, Great Britain, and Israel) have not reported any personnel problems. Among the member nations of the North Atlantic

Treaty Organization (NATO), only the United States, Turkey, and Portugal prohibit open service for sexual minorities (Belkin & Bateman 2003; Human Rights Campaign 2007).

Neither has *Lawrence v. Texas* affected legislation designed to prohibit gay marriage, which some people condemn as undermining the sanctity of the family. Ironically, those states that are most hostile to gay marriage are among the states with the highest rates of divorce, while those states that are more supportive of gay marriage are among the states with the lowest rates of divorce (Belluck 2004). Currently, only a few states in the United States have legalized gay marriage (gay marriage is also legal in Canada, Belgium, Spain, the Netherlands, and South Africa). Perceiving a political constituency for antigay policies, some politicians persist in making rather outlandish statements, as when now former senator Trent Lott (Republican, Tennessee) called same-sex love a "disease" like kleptomania and alcoholism, and now former senator Rick Santorum (Republican, Pennsylvania) compared homosexuality to incest, bigamy, polygamy, and adultery. This kind of rhetoric fuels the public's **homophobia**—the fear and disdain of anyone who is not heterosexual—and it encourages ongoing discrimination, harassment, and hate crimes against those who are different (Ireland 1998; see Further Exploration and Chapter 7).

Peacemaking Criminology

Critical criminologists' concern for suffering in the world has led to a movement that Hal Pepinsky and Richard Quinney (1991) call **peacemaking criminology**. Whereas *peacemaking* involves attempts to weave and reweave ourselves "with others in a social fabric of mutual love, respect, and concern," *war-making,* as noted in Chapter 1, entails the belief that threats to our personal and collective security can be traced to identifiable evil people who must be suppressed through intimation, incarceration, and in some cases execution (Pepinsky 1999:59).

The Way of Peace

Peacemaking criminology participates in a grand tradition of social prophecy consistent with Judeo-Christian teachings and other social philosophies (e.g., Marxism), including ideas of Mahatma Gandhi and Martin Luther King, Jr. (Fuller 1998; Quinney 1999). In the prophetic tradition, human beings are seen as estranged from their fundamental state of goodness. Imagining the possibility of a better world is considered the first step toward its realization. According to Quinney, such an imagining requires recognition of the "interconnection between the inner peace of the individual and the outer peace of the world. The two develop and occur together.

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Gender Outlaw: A Transgendered Perspective

The intersectionalities of gender, sexuality, and crime are complex and nuanced, given the diverse identities of "men" and "women" in society. And sometimes it is the very narrowness of what is deemed gender-appropriate that marks one as deviant. Leslie Feinberg "grew up a very masculine girl." She liked to keep her hair short and felt most comfortable in T-shirts, jeans, and sneakers. "When I was most at home with how I looked, adults did a double-take. . . . The question 'Is that a boy or girl?' hounded me. . . . The answer didn't matter much. The very fact that [they] had to ask . . . already marked me as a gender outlaw" (1996:3–4).

As a young woman in Buffalo, New York, in the 1960s and 1970s, Feinberg learned that if she was not wearing at least three pieces of "women's" clothing, as she was *required by law* to do, she was vulnerable to arrest (biological males had to wear at least three pieces of "men's" clothing). And work was hard to come by, as Feinberg "was considered far too masculine a woman" to get a job in a restaurant, store, or office (p. 12). Desperate for employment, she put on earrings and a wig in preparation for one job interview:

> On the bus ride . . . people stood rather than sat next to me. They whispered and pointed and stared. "Is that a man?" one woman asked her friend, loud enough for us all to hear. The experience taught me an important lesson. The more I tried to wear clothing or styles considered appropriate for women, the more people believed I was a man trying to pass as a woman. I began to understand that I couldn't conceal my gender expression. (p. 12)

Feinberg decided to try a different tack. She glued on a pair of theatrical sideburns and drove to a nearby art gallery:

> As I walked around, nobody seemed to stare. That was an unusual experience and a relief. I allowed my voice to drop to a comfortably low register and chatted with one of the guards about the job situation. He told me there was an opening for a guard and suggested I apply. An hour later, the supervisor who interviewed me told me I seemed like a "good man" and hired me on the spot. I was suddenly acceptable as a human being. The same gender expression that made me hated as a woman made me seem like a good man. (p. 12)

Feinberg's life changed dramatically when she began working as a man. But although the daily harassment she had endured for years subsided, she lived in constant fear of being discovered. She took male hormone shots in order to grow a beard and had breast reduction surgery as well. These changes gave her a "greater sense of safety," but using public restrooms was still awkward, not to mention risky, and applying for jobs that required physical exams was out of the question (p. 13). Passing as a man took an emotional

continues

continued

toll, as Feinberg "long[ed] to live openly and proudly," to let people know her true identity (p. 15).

Feinberg is **transgendered**. Someone who is transgendered bridges, blurs, or traverses gender boundaries. In a society where men are assumed to be masculine and women feminine, a transgendered person's biological sex appears to be at odds with his or her gender expression. Feinberg is categorized as "male" on her driver's license. That she was issued such a license demonstrates, as she says, "that many strangers 'read me' as a man, rather than as a masculine woman." Each time Feinberg has been pulled over for a traffic violation, the officer has requested, "'Your license and registration—sir.' Imagine the nightmare I'd face if I handed [him] a license that says I'm female. The alleged traffic infraction should be the issue, not my genitals" (p. 61).

To avoid this nightmare, Feinberg broke the law by putting an "M" in the box marked sex on her driver's license application—at the risk of being fined, having her license suspended, and being sentenced to up to six months in jail if discovered. Categorizing herself as "male" on a passport application could subject her to a felony violation. Not wanting to take that risk and not feeling safe traveling with a passport marked "female," her freedom of travel is restricted.

Feinberg could have her birth certificate amended to read "male" to avoid these legal problems. She has chosen not to do so, however, because she believes that the policy that mandates this categorization violates her rights as a human being. Feinberg reminds us that racial categorization used to be required on all legal documents, but protest against this practice resulted in the removal of that mandatory check-off box. She asks, "Why should I have to legally align my sex with my gender expression? . . . Why do we still have to check off *male* or *female* on all records? Why is the categorization of sex a legal question at all? Why are those categories policed?" (pp. 61–62).

Transgenders like Feinberg, who do not conform to the gender expression expected of them, can be distinguished from **transsexuals**, those who "traverse the boundary of the sex they were assigned at birth" (p. x). A female-to-male transsexual, for instance, is one who believes himself to be male although he was born in a female body. Transsexuals usually cross-dress and commonly use hormones and surgery to alter their bodies. Although Feinberg cross-dressed and shaped her body hormonally and surgically to decrease the likelihood of harassment, she is not transsexual since she does not consider herself the "other sex." The word "transgender" is thus commonly used to distinguish someone like Feinberg, whose gender expression is not considered appropriate for his or her sex, from male-to-female or female-to-male transsexuals. Nevertheless, "transgender" is also used as an "umbrella term to include everyone who challenges the boundaries of sex and gender" (p. x).

Western culture is deeply committed to a binary (either/or) conceptualization of sex and gender. According to Anne Fausto-Sterling, this "two-party sexual system [stands] in defiance of nature. For biologically speaking, there are many gradations running from male to female" (1993:22; see Chapter 1). "People whose bodies or behavior unsettle" the clear division of "M" or "F," however, are often subjected to discrimination and a world of hurt (Graff 2001:20; Rosenberg 2007).

Sexual minorities and their supporters have challenged the societal homophobia and discriminatory treatment they have endured over the years.

The struggle is to create a humane existence, and such an existence comes only as we act peacefully towards ourselves and one another" (2000:21). Beyond this, peacemaking criminologists argue, we must acknowledge that while "few are guilty . . . all are responsible. If we admit that the individual is in some measure conditioned or affected by the spirit of society, an individual's crime discloses society's corruption" and requires us all to take responsibility to think and act in ways that will make the world a better place in which to live (Heschel 1962:16).

The peacemaking approach encourages us to view crime as a social relationship of *power:* "To perpetuate a crime . . . is to impose one's power on others, while to be punished for . . . crime is to be subject to the power of others" (Hagan 1989:1; see Chapter 1). Thus, crime may be understood as an act of power that inflicts suffering and denies the humanity of another, and the most fundamental cause of crime may be seen as *any* social process that equates differences among people with evaluations of worth and that allows people the "delusion that they are unconnected to those with whom they interrelate" (Henry & Milovanovic 1994:124). From this point of view, the search for the causes of crime somehow misses the point. Crime is not something apart from ordinary social life but is an integral part of society, for the ability to subject one to the power of another is much of what passes for family life, business practice, and the exercise of governmental authority (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995).

According to peacemaking criminologists, the elimination of crime will

require the elimination of suffering more generally. They believe that the strategy of waging war on crime through punitive policies is fundamentally flawed, for it participates in the very power dynamics that constitute crime itself. They ask that we search for another way, the way of peace, which entails strategies of negotiation and conflict resolution, redemption and reconciliation, and nonviolent resistance to social injustice. Ultimately, peacemaking criminologists argue, it will be necessary to establish a *more just social order* before we can establish *law and order* (Fuller 1998; Pepinsky & Quinney 1991).

Peacemaking solutions to crime focus on the prevention rather than on the repression of crime. Although crime prevention often means different things to different people, practitioners in the public health community have delineated three general approaches: **primary**, **secondary**, and **tertiary prevention** (Moore 1995). Primary prevention attempts to keep criminal behavior from arising in the first place, and is directed at the entire community and not just at individuals who are seeking or need rehabilitative treatment; secondary prevention concentrates on early identification and treatment of vulnerable or at-risk youths; and tertiary prevention entails interventions that protect society from offenders and that reduce the likelihood of recidivist behaviors (Moore 1995). Clearly the most effective prevention strategy is one that combines all three modalities. In many respects, the Chicago Area Project of the 1930s and the opportunity and community action projects of the 1960s (e.g., Mobilization for Youth) anticipated this still-needed comprehensive strategy (see Chapter 4).

The concluding chapter of this book reviews what we believe to be essential ingredients of effective crime prevention, and explores peacemaking approaches to criminal justice reform. Here, we focus on two areas of social policy where peacemaking criminologists advocate alternatives to the conventional war on crime: drugs and gun regulation.

Deescalating the War on Drugs

In addition to a focus on prevention, peacemaking criminology entails a policy of deescalating the war on drugs. According to Franklin Zimring and Gordon Hawkins (1992), the drug war has focused not on the *adverse consequences* of drug use but on *drug use itself.* Little distinction has been made between experimental, casual, regular, and addictive use (see Office of National Drug Control Policy 1989). Drugs have been viewed as a moral problem, and the effort to control drugs has been characterized as a battle between the forces of good and the forces of evil.

Critics of this war-on-drugs approach believe that it has been both ineffective and destructive. Mike Gray, for example, notes that roughly two million tons of cargo arrive at various ports of entry in the United States each day:

> Los Angeles alone will land 130,000 containers [each] month. Customs inspectors will examine 400. The other 129,600 will pass through without so much as a tip of the hat. And as this tidal wave of . . . [cargo] moves off the wharf on endless lines of semitrailers and flatcars, it's worth remembering that the entire annual cocaine supply for the United States would fit in just 13 of those . . . [containers]. A year's supply of heroin could be shipped in [just one]. (1998:152)

Critics of drug policy also argue that criminalization of drugs increases the theft and violence that are sometimes associated with drug use—crimes that are unrelated to the pharmacological properties of most illegal substances. Criminalization heightens the risk of selling drugs and hence increases drug prices, making it more difficult for users to obtain funds to support their habits. Since the drug market is unregulated, entrepreneurs (including organized crime networks) use violence rather than advertising or the courts to gain advantage over competitors and to resolve disputes with competitors, employees, and customers. In addition, users lack safeguards to regulate the potency of the drugs they take and the ingredients that are added to them. Criminalization also creates disrespect for the law by making criminals out of some users who are not involved in other crimes, and it forces users to associate with more hardened offenders. Finally, criminalization of drugs is the primary source of both corruption in law enforcement and police reliance on aggressive and controversial tactics (e.g., military-style policing, undercover surveillance, use of criminal informants) (Fuller 1998; Goode 2005; see Chapter 11).

Some critics believe that drugs should be either decriminalized or legalized. **Decriminalization** would reduce the penalties for possession of small quantities of drugs to roughly the equivalent of a traffic offense, while simultaneously maintaining stiff penalties for possession of larger quantities as well as for growing, manufacturing, and selling drugs. **Legalization**, on the other hand, would set up a government-regulated system comparable to that used for alcohol.

Zimring and Hawkins dispute the notion that drugs represent "a unitary social problem" that compels a choice between criminalization and decriminalization or legalization (1992:110). Instead, they contend, the legal status of each drug should be determined on a case-by-case basis. The harm caused by a drug law should not be worse than the harm caused by the drug itself. And drug policy should focus not on eradicating use per se but on the prevention of drug-related predatory crime, serious injury and death from drug overdoses, drug-related HIV/AIDS cases, driving under the influence, harm to newborns, and drug use by children and adolescents.

Although Zimring and Hawkins believe that most of the current crop of illegal drugs are too dangerous to be legalized, they maintain that the war approach should be abandoned. The federal government alone spends about

$18 billion a year on drug control, less than 30 percent of which is allocated to prevention and treatment (Lock et al. 2002). Drug treatment programs have been especially hurt by the war on drugs, as spending on these interventions has been cut in half since the early 1980s. This policy should be reversed in light of research that shows a substantial drop in criminality following drug treatment (Harrison 2001). Moreover, drug policy for minors "demands a definition of the drug problem . . . that includes tobacco and alcohol," two drugs that cause more harm than the illegal substances (Zimring & Hawkins 1992:135). And since society assumes that minors lack the maturity of judgment to use tobacco or alcohol responsibly, they should not be penalized as harshly as adults for irresponsibly violating drug laws.

Erich Goode (2005) also opposes the legalization of most illegal drugs. He does believe, however, that arrest of users and even petty dealers should be a last resort and that these offenders should be offered alternatives such as rehabilitative treatment and community service, with arrest used if necessary to get them into these programs. Goode also favors the use of needle-exchange programs for intravenous drug users and addicts to prevent the spread of disease, especially HIV/AIDS, as well as the expansion of **methadone maintenance** programs for heroin addicts. Methadone is a synthetic narcotic that can be administered to addicts in the hopes of regulating and gradually reducing their drug use, lowering their involvement in other crimes, and enabling them to hold steady jobs. Although the results of these programs have been mixed, methadone maintenance remains one of the most cost-effective treatments available for heroin addiction, often leaving the addict "much better off than on heroin—with respect to his well-being and ours" (Kaplan 1983:222).

The special case of marijuana. Many drug policy critics believe that marijuana is the illegal drug that is most suitable for decriminalization, if not legalization. In fact, in 1972 a bipartisan commission appointed by President Richard Nixon called for the nationwide decriminalization of marijuana. Although Nixon rejected this recommendation, a dozen states since then have at least passed decriminalization laws for possession of small amounts of marijuana—Alaska, California, Colorado, Maine, Minnesota, Mississippi, Nebraska, Nevada, New York, North Carolina, Ohio, and Oregon (see www.norml.org)—and these states have not experienced increases in marijuana use that can be attributable to the new policy (Goode 2005; Schlosser 2003). There also has been increasing recognition of the useful medicinal purposes of marijuana (e.g., to alleviate nausea or increase appetite in cancer and AIDS patients) (Gray 1998; Stein 2002).

According to a 1998 report published in *The Lancet,* Great Britain's leading medical journal, people who smoke marijuana daily for many years risk developing psychological dependency, subtle impairments of memory,

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Drug Policy in Historical-Comparative Perspective

Some Western European countries have had relatively more success with drug policies that are less restrictive than those used in the United States. During the 1920s, when US Federal Bureau of Narcotics director Harry Anslinger was harassing the American Medical Association for its permissive approach to drug use, the British Royal College of Physicians remained steadfast in its belief that drug addiction was a medical, not a criminal, problem. At that time, "the Englishman with a habit could go to his family physician, get a prescription for heroin—or morphine, or cocaine . . . [etc.]—and pick it up at the corner pharmacy" (Gray 1998:155). In the 1960s, however, the addiction rate in Great Britain doubled, although the total number of addicts in the entire country (1,400) was still just a fraction of the number in the city of Manhattan, New York, alone (and although the population of Great Britain was more than 25 times greater than the population of Manhattan). The increase provided the impetus for a change in British drug policy. Addicts were no longer allowed to obtain drugs from a general medical practitioner, and methadone maintenance programs were introduced. This shift in policy was followed by escalating heroin prices and increased violence in the drug trade.

In 1976 the Netherlands adopted a policy of nonenforcement for drug-law violations involving 30 grams or less of cannabis (marijuana, hashish) in order "to erect a wall between the so-called soft drugs . . . and hard drugs like heroin and cocaine" (Gray 1998:166). As a result, "youth clubs" and "coffee shops" were permitted to sell cannabis. During its first seven years, this new drug policy "had little if any effect on levels of [cannabis] use" (MacCoun & Reuter 1997:50). Although cannabis use in the Netherlands did increase between 1984 and 1992, similar increases were reported in the United States between 1992 and 1996. Presently, with the more lenient policy, the rate of cannabis use in the Netherlands is no higher than in the United States. Furthermore, there is little evidence that cannabis use has been a "gateway" to the use of harder drugs in the Netherlands. In the city of Amsterdam, for example, where use of cannabis is higher than in other parts of the Netherlands, about 22 percent of persons 12 years of age and older who have ever tried cannabis have also tried cocaine. In the United States this figure is 33 percent (Cohen & Sas 1996; MacCoun & Reuter 1997).

Nevertheless, in 1995, under pressure from other European countries, the Dutch parliament passed legislation reducing by half the number of shops where cannabis could be sold and limiting purchases to five grams (though the legislation did not restrict the number of shops a consumer could visit) (*US News & World Report* 1996a). The parliament also authorized the courts to require hard-drug addicts with a history of (nondrug) criminal behavior to undergo two years of compulsory rehabilitation. Otherwise, "people holding small amounts of heroin or cocaine for personal use are ignored," as are lower-level street dealers (Gray 1998:168). The Dutch police aggressively pursue major drug distributors, however.

Other countries have also dealt with heroin addiction differently than the United States. In 1994, Switzerland began the first large-scale controlled experiment in *heroin* maintenance, a three-year program under the super-

continues

continued

vision of the World Health Organization and the Swiss Academy of Medical Sciences that provided heroin to a thousand regular users. Evaluation of the program indicated that crime among the addicted subjects declined by 60 percent, that half of the formerly unemployed users found work, and that a third who had been on welfare became self-supporting. Homelessness among these users was eliminated and improvements in their health were noted. About 8 percent of the users gave up heroin altogether (*The Economist* 1998; Killias et al. 2000).

In Switzerland, hard-core heroin addicts (those who have used heroin for over two years and have been unsuccessful in previous attempts to stop) are provided drugs, medical advice, and assistance in locating employment and housing. Needle-exchange programs and self-injection rooms are also available. In the city of Bern, the nation's capital, this approach has stabilized the rate of HIV transmission, eliminated drug-related deaths, increased the number of addicts who are steadily employed, and reduced the amount of nondrug crime.

Italy, whose drug policy has vacillated over the years, has provided criminologists with a "natural experiment" on the effects of drug prohibition. Italy's first antidrug law, the Drug Act of 1923, included no criminal penalties for drug use or possession, and provided a maximum sentence for trafficking of only six months' incarceration. And although the maximum sentence for trafficking was increased to three years in 1930, no additional penalties for use or possession were implemented unless the offender was "in a state of serious psychic disorder" (MacCoun & Reuter 2001:231).

The Drug Act of 1954 was the first law in Italy to define drug use as a serious crime, increasing sanctions for both use and trafficking to up to eight years in prison. According to Robert MacCoun and Peter Reuter (2001), the law was passed to enable Italy to comply with various international treaties, not to address an upswing in the drug problem. The 1954 law, with its heightened sanctions, did not prevent the apparent escalation of soft-drug use in the late 1960s or heroin use in the early 1970s.

In 1975, Italy's law underwent further revision, lengthening the penalty for trafficking in hard drugs to 18 years in prison, in response to the rising use of opiates and increasing involvement of organized crime in heroin trafficking. At the same time, the maximum sentence for trafficking in cannabis was shortened, penalties associated with drug use were eliminated, and chronic use was reconceptualized as an illness. Social, psychiatric, and medical services for addicts were made available as well.

In 1990, following a decade of burgeoning drug deaths and the spread of AIDS among intravenous drug users, Italy once again expanded sanctions for drug trafficking and reestablished criminal penalties for possession of drug quantities that exceeded an "average daily dose" (p. 232). Three years later, however, a successful referendum led to the striking of the phrase "personal use of psychoactive drugs is forbidden," effectively eliminating the criminalization of drug use in the country.

MacCoun and Reuter evaluated the impact of Italy's vacillating drug policy on drug use and drug-induced deaths and concluded that the law has had little effect. They suggest that changing cultural trends in drug use and international patterns of drug trafficking influenced Italy's drug problem more than the laws that were in place at any particular point in time.

bronchitis, and cancers of the lung, throat, and mouth. These are certainly good reasons to avoid using the drug. *The Lancet* noted, however, that marijuana poses "less of a threat to health than alcohol or tobacco" and that "moderate indulgence . . . has little ill effect on health" (cited in Schlosser 1999:47).

Clearly, marijuana is the most widely used illicit drug in the United States. According to survey data, about 40 percent of the US population has used marijuana (or hashish) at some time in their life, about 10 percent in the prior year, and about 6 percent in the prior month (US Department of Justice 2003). Most people who use marijuana do not use other illegal drugs, and many are successful students and workers in mainstream occupations (Goode 2005; Zimring & Hawkins 1992). According to Gray, if marijuana is removed from the equation, the number of illegal drug users in the United States drops precipitously, shrinking the drug war "from a national crusade to a sideshow" (1998:174).

The Regulation of Guns

In their book *Crime Is Not the Problem,* Zimring and Hawkins observe that people in the United States often "use the terms 'crime' and 'violence' interchangeably," as if they were one and the same thing. Many also believe "that there is much more of *all kinds* of crime in the United States than in other developed countries" (1997:3, emphasis added). This is not the case. The United States substantially exceeds other industrial nations not in its rate of nonviolent crime but in its rate of lethal violence. The United States also stands out for its greater availability of guns. As Zimring and Hawkins observe:

> Firearm use is so prominently associated with the high death rate from violence [in the United States] that starting with any other topic would rightly be characterized as an intentional evasion. . . . If crime is nominated as the problem, guns are involved in [only] one of every 25 cases; if lethal violence is nominated as the problem, then guns are implicated in seven of every 10 cases. . . . Guns alone account for more than twice as much homicide in the United States as all other means combined. . . . No program for the prevention of lethal violence can possess even superficial credibility without paying sustained attention to guns. (pp. 106, 108, 200)

While the US Supreme Court ruled in 2008 that an individual has a right to keep a handgun in his or her home for the purpose of self-defense, this decision was a response to an outright ban on handguns, leaving open the question of other types of regulations that may be constitutionally permissible. Thus another peacemaking strategy of crime prevention involves increased regulation of guns.

Guns are a pervasive feature of the landscape in the United States, with

an estimated 300,000 firearms in circulation, a third of which are handguns (Wellford 2005). Opponents of gun control often remind us that "guns don't kill people, people kill people." But the truth of the matter, says Tom Diaz in his provocative book *Making a Killing: The Business of Guns in America,* is that "people attack people, but people with guns kill people," and they kill people (including themselves) primarily with handguns (1999:196). Diaz notes that over "three-quarter of a million Americans have died in firearm suicides, homicides, and unintentional injuries" since 1960 (p. 8). Nearly three times as many have been "treated in emergency rooms each year for nonfatal firearm injuries. The United States leads the industrialized world in the rate at which children die from firearms: A 1997 study by the federal Centers for Disease Control analyzed firearms-related deaths for children under age 15 in 26 countries and found that *86 percent* . . . occurred in the United States" (p. 8, emphasis added).

To be sure, the small proportion of gun users who are responsible for these incidents is dwarfed by the much larger proportion of law-abiding citizens who safely use guns for legitimate purposes, and many of this latter group view guns as "venerated objects of craftsmanship and tangible symbols of such fundamental American values as independence, self-reliance, and freedom from governmental interference" (Diaz 1999:3). Diaz, however, encourages us not to view guns as "a repository of American values" but as a business or industry that generates $2–3 billion in sales each year (Hays 1999). But unlike most other businesses, the gun industry is exempt from government safety regulations aimed at ensuring that consumer prod-

Guns often serve as a symbolic repository of American values.

ucts are "designed and manufactured in such a way as to minimize [their] threat to human life" (Diaz 1999:13). Whereas manufacturers of toys and power tools, for instance, "must meet minimum safety standards, gun makers are free to (and almost universally do) ignore even the most rudimentary improvements in firearms design that might help ensure the safety of users and those third parties, like children, who may happen upon a firearm" (p. 14).

Critics of the gun industry charge that gun makers have been slow to design and manufacture devices such as tamper-proof safety locks, devices that indicate that the gun is loaded, and other "smart gun" technologies (e.g., fingerprint scanners, radio wristband transponders) that prevent anyone but the owner from firing the weapon (Bai 1999). Instead, gun makers have been offering their customers ever-increasing lethality: "new guns that are specifically designed to be better at killing—guns with greater ammunition capacity, higher . . . caliber or power, [and] increased concealability" (Diaz 1999:15). And like the tobacco industry (see Chapter 6), the gun industry has targeted children in order to increase its future market share. The National Shooting Sports Foundation, for example, has advised manufacturers to invest in school education programs that focus on hunting and wildlife management:

> There's a way to help ensure that new faces and pocketbooks will continue to patronize your business: Use the schools . . . they can be a huge asset. . . . Schools collect, at one point, a large number of minds and bodies that are important to your future well-being. How else would you get these potential customers . . . together, to receive your message about guns and hunting. (cited in Diaz 1999:188)

Opponents of gun control argue that there is already enough regulation on the books. Gun retailers, who compose the primary market for guns, are required to obtain a federal firearms license, and handgun buyers at licensed retail establishments are subject to a background check to screen out unauthorized users (e.g., convicted felons). According to Diaz, however, about 40 percent of all gun transfers in the United States involve private transactions in secondary markets "such as sales through classified advertising in newspapers or newsletters, contacts made through the Internet, and sales or 'swaps' across backyard fences or at . . . 'flea markets' or 'gun shows' . . . [that] in almost all states . . . are entirely free of . . . regulatory oversight" (1999:4). Anthony Braga and Glenn Pierce add that although theft from legal gun owners is an important source of firearms for criminals, over half of all guns used in crimes find their way into the hands of offenders "through one or a series of non-theft primary and/or secondary market transactions." Insofar as "new firearms are more likely to be used in gun crimes than . . . older firearms," legal retail outlets are substantially impli-

cated in the illegal gun market, as licensed dealers sell guns to disreputable customers, including "straw purchasers" (and members of organized purchasing rings) who buy guns for other people (2005:720–721). Gun critics also accuse gun manufacturers of intentionally oversupplying dealers in low-regulated "gun-friendly" areas with handguns even though they know that the excess supply will flow into other areas with more stringent antigun laws, and they note that licensed dealers in the United States also supply guns to criminals abroad. According to an exposé by Jake Bergman and Julia Reynolds, "even after September 11, America remains a global shopping center for terrorists, mercenaries, and international criminals of all stripes" (2002:19).

Nevertheless, opponents of gun control argue that gun regulation does not work, that it leaves law-abiding citizens unarmed and defenseless against criminals who care little about antigun laws. While only about 1 percent of guns in private hands are used for self-protection in any given year (Kleck & Gertz 1995), one study found that about a third of incarcerated felons said they had been "scared off, shot at, wounded or captured by an armed victim" (Wright & Rossi 1986:155). Moreover, research by economist John Lott (1998) has shown an association between lower official crime rates and the presence of "right to carry" laws that license citizens to carry concealed weapons. Lott's study, based on data from over 3,000 counties, is impressive. Overall, however, this research has been inconsistent, as some studies have identified communities where crime rates rose rather than declined as a result of easing restrictions on concealed weapon carrying (Black & Nagin 1998; Kovandzic & Marvell 2003; McDowall et al. 1995). Moreover, Diaz (1999) questions whether it is just law-abiding citizens who will be advantaged by "right to carry" laws. He notes that hundreds of holders of concealed weapon licenses have themselves "committed a wide variety of crimes" (p. 171). In the gun-friendly state of Texas, for instance, "holders of concealed handgun licenses [have been] arrested for weapons-related offenses at a rate 22 percent higher than the general [adult] Texas population." Thus states and locales that ease restrictions on concealed weapon carrying may be playing "Russian roulette" with the citizenry.

Although research has found little evidence that gun control reduces crime (Walker 2001; Wright & Vail 2000), local antigun measures, as noted, are often muted by more lenient laws elsewhere. Moreover, evidence indicates that the current federal system of instant background checks is flawed, as many states rely on outdated records and inadequate computer technology that allows thousands of convicted felons and other people legally prohibited from using guns, including those with serious mental-health problems, to purchase them (Anderson 2004a; Breen 2007). Thus James Wright and Teri Vail conclude: "Has control reduced crime and violence in the United States? The answer, clearly, is no. Would stronger controls, enacted

on a national level, do so? This has to be considered an open empirical question" (2000:580). Lawrence Sherman (2001) believes that research on the effects of programs that implement gun-safety measures is especially needed. However, political ideology and not empirical research will likely remain the ultimate adjudicator of the debate (Vizzard 2000).

In the immediate aftermath of the well-publicized 1999 Columbine High School shootings in Littleton, Colorado—in which Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold (armed with semiautomatic weapons, sawed-off shotguns, and homemade bombs) went on a shooting rampage, murdering 13 people and wounding 23 before killing themselves (see Further Exploration, p. 323)—the political climate seemed more favorable to gun-law reform. But this proregulatory climate soon passed, as the National Rifle Association and other antiregulatory constituencies made it clear that politicians favoring gun control risked losing elections. Hence, many Democratic politicians, who are more likely than Republicans to favor gun control, backed away from the issue (Abramsky 2005; Clift 2007; Vizzard 2000).

Still, gun control remains a hotly contested terrain fraught with volatility. After Columbine, for example, the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) filed a lawsuit against gun manufacturers, alleging that they were complicit in the illegal firearm trade and liable for their failure to install safety features on their products (Hays 2003). Although the NAACP lost the lawsuit, it implicated the industry in practices that fueled gun violence in black and Hispanic neighborhoods and thus highlighted some of the racial dimensions of the gun control debate. Indeed, the NRA had been fanning the flames of racial controversy regarding this issue for some time. In 1994, for instance, NRA board member Jeff Cooper wrote:

> Los Angeles and Ho Chi Min City have declared themselves sister cities. . . . It makes sense—they are both Third World metropolises formerly occupied by Americans. . . . No more than five to ten people in a hundred who die by gunfire in Los Angeles are any loss to society. These people fight small wars amongst themselves. It would seem a valid social service to keep them well-supplied with ammunition. (cited in Diaz 1999:191)

And as the late Charlton Heston, a former NRA president, said in a 1997 speech before the right-wing Free Congress Foundation:

> Heaven help the God-fearing, law-abiding, Caucasian, middle class, Protestant, or—even worse—Evangelical Christian, Midwest, or Southern, or—even worse—rural, apparently straight, or—even worse—male working stiff, because not only don't you count, you're a downright obstacle to social progress. . . . The Constitution was handed down to guide us by a bunch of those wise old dead white guys who invented this country. . . . So why should I be ashamed of white guys? Why is "Hispanic pride" or

> "black pride" a good thing, while "white pride" conjures up shaved heads and white hoods? . . . I'll tell you why: Cultural warfare. (cited in Diaz 1999:192)

Postmodern Currents in Criminology

As we entered the new millennium, we often heard that the *postmodern* era had arrived. This term connotes a diverse and complex array of ideas that have recently engaged the discipline of criminology. While some criminologists dispute the value of exposing undergraduate students to all the nuances of postmodern criminology, it is useful for students to be familiar with some of the issues that have been raised by this body of critical criminological thought (Arrigo 1999a; Friedrichs 1999).

Postmodernity as a Stage of Society

It is important to distinguish between **postmodernity** as a stage of societal development and **postmodernism** as a mode of analysis or social criticism (Lemert 1997). The *modern* period of societal development is often associated with the industrial revolution of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries and the growing mechanization and bureaucratization of social life. This period was characterized by faith in science as a means of gaining control over the forces of nature and of achieving progress for humankind. The postmodern period is associated with the technological revolution in mass communications and computerization (e.g., television, Internet) that began in the latter half of the twentieth century, with implications that we are only beginning to understand.

In postmodern society we increasingly experience life as "a media-generated 'virtual' reality," where we lose sight of the difference between what is symbolic or simulated and what is real (Schwartz & Friedrichs 1994:225). Mass advertising drives us to view consumption as the ultimate measure of self-worth, creating an insatiable appetite for "things" that are consumed not just for their practical function but also for what we think the product says about us—that a car begets sex appeal, a toothpaste self-confidence, a soft drink popularity (Barak & Henry 1999). Or take the infotainment crime shows, for instance, which blur the distinction between news and entertainment (see Chapter 1). Although we are given the impression that we are "really there," we are in fact being subjected to a well-orchestrated form of legal theater that powerfully influences our perceptions of crime and criminal justice (Manning 1999). Moreover, local incidents such as the Rodney King beating, the O.J. Simpson trial, and the Columbine High School shootings are transformed into media events that take on broader national significance as they become embedded in the public's consciousness and become fodder for media "talking heads" seeking to exploit them for television ratings as well as fodder for politicians vying for politi-

cal gain. At the same time, the media's incessant coverage of triviality—what are Paris Hilton or Britney Spears doing today?—facilitates an egregious diversion of the public's attention, as "a missing white woman can easily be turned . . . into a global red-alert [e.g., Natalee Holloway], and a holocaust in Africa can be marginalized as a sidebar story," if it is covered at all (Kaplan 2007:143).

To be sure, media-generated reality may have a democratizing influence as well, opening up the "backstage" of a criminal justice system that was previously private, beyond public scrutiny (Manning 1999). Now that we have seen police brutality on videotape, for example, everyone (not just racial/ethnic minorities) knows that such behaviors exist. And it is sometimes average citizens, armed with video camcorders or cell phone cameras, who are offering us this glimpse of the world. Indeed, we have George Holliday, a manager of a plumbing company, to thank for videotaping the Los Angeles police officers who beat Rodney King that March 1991 morning (Cowley 1991; Skolnick & Fyfe 1993). Nevertheless, one is left wondering whether some zones of privacy should remain protected. Believing that they should, the US Supreme Court issued a ruling in 1999 that prevents journalists and photographers from accompanying police into people's homes in order to observe searches or arrests. The Court argued that such practices violate citizens' Fourth Amendment right to privacy (Greenhouse 1999).

On a more ominous note, the potential for political thought control has increased considerably in the postmodern era, where "truth is subservient to power" and where power, when strategically applied, "*makes* truth" (Danner 2007:20). Recall the propaganda campaign and program of strategic disinformation orchestrated by the George W. Bush and Dick Cheney administration to win public support for the Iraq War (see Chapter 1). As one administration official told reporter Ron Suskind, "[You live] in what we call the reality-based community . . . [of people who] believe that solutions emerge from your judicious study of discernible reality. . . . That's not the way the world really works anymore. We're an empire now, and when we act, we create our own reality" (quoted in Danner 2007:23). Thus, for example, the phrase "war on terror," repeated endlessly, has been "carefully crafted . . . to maximize its fear appeal and to conflate legitimate efforts to combat radical Islamic terrorism with the Iraq war" (Westen 2007:78).

Robert Kennedy, Jr. (2004) offers another example of the Bush-Cheney administration's manipulation of language for political purposes. Midway through Bush's first term of office, in 2003, Republican pollster Frank Lutz wrote a memo to Republican Party officials advising them that their opposition to environmental regulation was "probably the single issue" for which they were most vulnerable politically. Lutz cautioned that the public was inclined to view their antiregulatory stance as being under the control of "corporate fat cats who rub their hands together and chuckle maniacally as

they plot to pollute America for fun and profit" (cited on p. 3). To counter this view, Lutz advised Republicans to clothe their antiregulatory policies in pro-environmental rhetoric. Thus Bush's "Healthy Forest" initiative masked a policy designed to promote logging to cut down old-growth forests, and his "Clear Skies" initiative masked an effort to repeal key provisions of the Clean Air Act (see Chapter 6).

Of course, as George Orwell, author of the disutopian novel *1984,* noted over six decades ago in his classic essay "Politics of the English Language" (1946/2007), political rhetoric is often intentionally designed to obfuscate. "Political language," Orwell wrote, consists "largely of euphemism, question-begging and sheer cloudy vagueness . . . [and is] often used in a consciously dishonest way . . . . The invasion of one's mind by ready-made phrases . . . can only be prevented if one is constantly on guard against them" (2007:212–213, 217).

Crime in the computer age. The computerization of society is another characteristic of postmodern society. Crimes that were unheard of two decades ago have now become commonplace. In the world of computer crime, it is not even necessary for motivated offenders and suitable targets to meet in the same physical space and time (see discussion of routine activities theory in Chapter 4). A knowledgeable computer programmer, for instance, can access payroll or bank accounts from afar and program the computer for a crime that will take place at some future date. In one case, an employee of a big-city welfare department stole $2.75 million "by entering fraudulent data into the computerized payroll system and . . . creating a phantom workforce complete with fake social security numbers" (Rosoff et al. 2007:508–509). In a practice known as **salami slicing**, or "shaving," programmers siphon off small amounts of money from a large number of accounts to yield huge ill-gotten gains. In one case an employee of an investment firm stole $200,000 by creating fraudulent computer accounts and then filling them "by diverting three tenths of a cent interest [earned] from actual accounts" (p. 509). Some computer thieves are fairly adept at covering their crimes. "We only read about the failed computer criminals. The really successful ones are never detected in the first place" (Schuyten 1979:D2).

Increasingly, computers are being used for a variety of illegal and disturbing purposes. Corrupt banks, for example, have used computers to electronically transfer (launder) illegal drug proceeds, and terrorists and right-wing hate groups have used the Internet to plan crimes and communicate with members, sympathizers, and potential recruits (see Chapters 6 and 7). Additionally, information about making bombs has become easily available on the Internet, and **computer hackers**—individuals who gain access to an individual's or organization's computer system without authorization—have

caused abundant damage. Hackers are primarily intelligent young men who are often "motivated by the challenge of figuring out how to beat a security system" and who exhibit a "high level of skill, knowledge, commitment, and creativity" (Barlow & Kauzlarich 2002:109). Hackers have spawned their own subculture, in which they exchange information on the Internet, communicate through a common argot, and develop a sense of camaraderie (Carter & Bannister 2002; McCaghy et al. 2003).

Most hackers don't commit crimes but simply enjoy exploring a system to learn about its capabilities and vulnerabilities. Some, however, implant malicious **computer viruses** into other systems. Viruses are sets of instructions that cause a computer to perform unauthorized operations and that spread from one computer system to another as "the 'infected' program is copied or transmitted. . . . Viruses may be relatively benign, such as . . . [one] that merely displays an innocuous message on a computer screen," or they can create serious damage by erasing files, changing data, or forcing the system to crash (Barlow 1996:208). Hackers have forced businesses to shut down and caused millions of dollars in damage. They have broken into military computers and stolen sensitive information about weapon systems and battle simulations. Copyright infringement, through the illegal downloading of software, music, and business information, abounds. Computerized power grid systems and electronic voting machines are also susceptible to hacking (Dugger 2004; Krane 2003).

In recent years, two types of cyberfraud—**identity theft** and **phishing**—have become growing concerns, and some observers think that the conventional hacking subculture is being transformed by a professional class of **organized online criminals** who operate a cyperspace underground economy that reaps tens of billions of dollars each year (Blitstein 2007). Identity theft involves cybercriminals who access databases that contain information on individuals (e.g., social security numbers, credit reports, ATM and charge accounts) and then use this information for fraud and theft. Corporations that sell private customer information to other companies make the public even more vulnerable to this type of crime (Carter & Bannister 2002; Court 2003; Rosoff et al. 2007).

Phishing refers to cybercriminals who send unsolicited e-mails to Internet users to try to lure unsuspecting "fish" into providing them with passwords and financial data (the "ph" is probably a tribute of sorts to the first generation of "phone freaks" who hacked into telephone systems). The unsolicited e-mails give the appearance of originating from a legitimate business, typically a business that the "fish" has used, such as a bank, a credit card company, eBay, PayPal, or Amazon.com. The e-mail instructs the recipient that they need to "update" or "validate" their account information in order to keep their accounts active. If the user accepts the bait, a link directs them to a website that imitates the legitimate site, complete with

matching logos, colors, and design. If the user submits the information, the data can be used to commit identity theft. These phishing e-mails are sent out in mass (spam), so even if only a small proportion of recipients respond, large amounts of money can be stolen.

In addition to their use for financial-related crimes, computers have been used to facilitate sexual exploitation. Child pornographers and pedophiles use the Internet to buy and sell pornographic materials, exchange information, and "troll" for potential victims (McCaghy et al. 2003; Rosoff et al. 2007). These people share information and experiences, and their ability to communicate with each other validates their sense of normality, makes them think, "See, I'm not so weird. There's lots of people out there who like the same things I do" (Washington 2002:A5). Computers have even been used for **cyberstalking**. One victim described feeling terrified and confused when men started calling and even knocking on her door soliciting sadomasochistic sex. After the police told her they couldn't help, she started taping the creepy phone messages and returning the calls, explaining to the solicitors that she was being victimized and asking for help in tracking the culprit. Eventually she discovered that "a stalker had assumed her identity in cyberspace and was posting ads on the Internet seeking men to fulfill kinky sexual desires" (Foote 1999:64). The cyberstalker had been giving out not only her address but also directions to her apartment, "details of her social plans and even advice on how to short-circuit her alarm system." The cyberstalker was eventually arrested and charged with solicitation for rape, computer fraud, and violating a law that criminalizes stalking and harassment on the Internet.

Cyberstalking and using the Internet to transmit child pornography or arrange sexual liaisons with juveniles are criminal offenses. But most of the sexually explicit interactions or transmissions via computer (from "hot chats" to digital videos) are not. In fact, there are some 300,000 Internet sites that offer cyberpornography, which US courts have ruled is constitutionally protected "speech" (Schlosser 2003). Also available are interactive pornographic CD-ROMs. For instance, a *Penthouse* CD-ROM titled "Virtual Photo Shoot" features "video footage of models . . . [that] changes instantly in response to the viewer," who directs the actions by choosing from an array of commands such as "take bra off," "suck finger," or "touch self" (Tierney 1994:18).

So-called **webcams** offer yet another computer-based virtual experience. Nowadays there are countless numbers of people who have set up video cameras in their homes in order to bare their lives on the Internet. Although most of what viewers see consists of people (predominately women) doing everyday things, some viewers spend hours watching, hoping to catch a glimpse of an attractive woman stripping down to her underwear, toweling off after a shower, or entertaining a lover. One can't help

wondering whether some viewers will conclude that women are natural exhibitionists or whether some real-life "peeping Toms" will tell themselves, "My looking in windows can't really be so bad if these girls set up cameras in their bedrooms!" The question remains whether virtual realities like webcams and cyberpornography will play a role in desensitizing some portion of the public to the harms of sexual exploitation (Reichard 1998:35; see Chapter 10).

The computerization of society is also evident in postmodern methods of crime control, including computerized national systems of crime data, high-tech military hardware, metal detectors, and electronic surveillance of offenders and communities. The Compstat computer tracking system, first used by the New York City police and then adopted by other departments, "offers the police unprecedented power to track and analyze daily crime statistics block by block and deploy resources accordingly" (Laporte 1998:217). Police departments and even newspapers have established interactive websites where citizens can report illegal activity and receive up-to-date information about crime in their neighborhoods. Police officers are even "working a new beat, turning to MySpace—an online network of individuals linked through personalized home pages—to collect clues and crack offline cases" (Romano 2006:48).

Some of these developments seem beneficial, but some raise serious concerns about privacy and about living in a **surveillance society**, where every facet of our lives can be monitored (Lyon 2001). Do we really want police patrolling our streets with closed-circuit cameras? Do we want our employers training cameras on us at work? Or department store personnel watching us in dressing rooms? Do we want the companies we do business with sharing information about us with the government, as when AT&T, Verizon Communications, and BellSouth turned over records of millions of phone calls to the National Security Agency (NSA), without a court order, so the NSA could "data mine" the information to uncover connections between people suspected of knowing someone who might ostensibly be associated with terrorist activity? Indeed, with the passage of the Patriot Act after September 11, 2001, the government has been granted unprecedented authority to monitor our cell phones, e-mails, and Internet use if it deems it necessary to do so (Garfinkel 2000; Kellman & Cassata 2006; Stevens 1999; see Chapter 1).

Finally, there is evidence that the integrity of our democracy is threatened by computer technology, such as through the use of touch-screen voting machines (without paper records), which have already produced some rather curious results. These machines are highly susceptible to tampering. As Avi Rubin, a specialist on electronic-voting security observes, "With electronic machines, you can commit wholesale fraud with a single alteration of software. . . . There are a million little tricks you can build into the

software that allow you to do whatever you want" (quoted in *Rolling Stone* 2006:54). Indeed, anecdotal accounts of the 2004 presidential election indicate several cases where votes intended for Democratic candidate Senator John Kerry were recorded for President Bush, votes for Democratic constituencies were undercounted, or Bush was given extra votes (A. Miller 2005; M. Miller 2005; Palast 2007). Accusations of fraud have been fueled by a report that Walden O'Dell, head of Diebold Incorporated, one of the major manufacturers of electronic voting machines in the United States, sent a Republican fundraising letter, prior to the 2004 election, indicating that he was "committed to helping Ohio deliver its electoral votes to the president" (cited in Smyth 2003). Ohio, as you will recall, was the state that tipped the election in Bush's favor. As an investigation into voting irregularities in Ohio headed by Democratic congressman John Conyers concluded:

> The role of voting machines and computers in our election represents an increasingly serious issue in our democracy. Our concerns are exacerbated by the fact that there are few companies who manufacture and operate voting machines, and they tend to be controlled by executives who donate largely, if not exclusively, to the Republican Party and Republican candidates. Issues such as the need for verifiable paper trials and greater accountability all warrant further investigation and possible legislation. (cited in A. Miller 2005:60)

Postmodernism as Social Criticism

Postmodernism is a term used to describe not only a stage of society but also a mode of analysis or social criticism. In this regard, there are two general trends in postmodern thought: **skeptical postmodernism** and **affirmative postmodernism** (Friedrichs 1999). Skeptical postmodernists are deeply cynical about the modernist belief that science and technology can be used to achieve a better world, viewing notions of progress as an illusion. One of the primary impacts of modernization, they believe, has been the extension and amplification of the scale of violence throughout the world, not only in wars but in genocide as well. As Michael Dobkowski and Isidor Wallimann observe: "The 20th century can be characterized as the 'age of genocide.' The 'progress' of this century has been constant along its journey of horrors—from the massacre of the Armenians, to Stalin's planned famine in the Ukraine, to the Holocaust, to the killing fields of Cambodia, to the ethnic massacres in Burundi and Rwanda, to the ethnic cleansing in the former Yugoslavia" (1998:1). And Charles Lemert adds: "Postmodernism, if it is about anything, is about the prospect that the promises of the modern age are no longer believable because there is evidence that for the vast majority of people worldwide there is no realistic reason to vest hope in any version of the idea that the world is good and getting better" (1997:xii).

Some skeptical postmodernists also question whether it is possible to

discover any central enduring "truths" about the human condition or the nature of social relationships. They believe there are multiple or different truths, each with its own undergirding of political interests aimed at domination of one group by another. Thus doubt is "the essential postmodern sensibility" (Musolf 1993:233), compelling us to view calls for radical social change or even for reform as "self-indulgent fantasy and illusion" (Schwartz & Friedrichs 1994:237).

There is, on the other hand, an affirmative postmodern vision that celebrates the value of "differences" among people (e.g., race/ethnicity, gender, sexual orientation), that wants to give voice to those who have been marginalized by society, and that is optimistic about people's ability to change both themselves and the world in which they live (Schwartz & Friedrichs 1994). Unfortunately, differences in society are all too often "criminalized, stigmatized, or otherwise devalued" (Arrigo 1999b:259). To these postmodernists, the essential nature of crime is the use of "power to deny others their ability to *make a difference*" (Henry & Milovanovic 1996:116, emphasis added). Social justice in a good society would not require "that we do away with difference but that we think carefully about which differences . . . [should] matter and that we continually critique our own role in perpetuating differences that should not matter" (Wonders 1999:123).

In affirmative postmodernism, of which peacemaking criminology is a part, "social justice" is valued over "criminal justice" (Arrigo 1999b). Although what constitutes a just society and how it can be achieved are precisely the issues that divide many of us today, affirmative postmodernism provides us some food for thought. To reiterate a point made previously, the most fundamental cause of crime may be viewed as any social process that allows one "the delusion that they are unconnected to those with whom they interrelate" (Henry & Milovanovic 1994:124). Criminals, quite clearly, often feel unconnected to their victims. In this respect they are a reflection of ourselves, for many of us experience our world as a collection of "atomized individuals in crass pursuit of their own aggrandizement" (Cullen et al. 1999:197). How many of us long for a better world, one that fosters and sustains mutuality and community? As Michael Lerner writes in *The Politics of Meaning:* "Crime will be reduced [only] when people feel a social bond toward one another. That bond . . . is the cumulative product of a society that validates the spiritual and ethical dimensions of human reality, that embodies in all its actions a respect for every human being, and that encourages and rewards mutual recognition and caring among all" (1996:3, 146).

PART 2

Patterns of Criminality and Victimization

6

Corporate and Organized Crime

IN *UNSAFE AT ANY SPEED*, RALPH NADER EXPOSED, IN 1965, the structural design defects in General Motor's Corvair that caused it "to become uncontrollable and to overturn at high speeds" (quoted in Cullen et al. 1987:152). Nader offered the Corvair not as an isolated case but as an example of all-too-common corporate misconduct that sacrifices "human well-being for profits"; a serious contemporary dilemma, Nader believed, was "how to control the power of economic interests which ignore the harmful effects of their applied science and technology" (1965:ix). His exposé of the automobile industry established him as the leading spokesperson of the contemporary consumer rights movement. It also gave impetus to federal legislation that established the National Highway Traffic Safety Administration (NHTSA), a division of the Department of Transportation, to regulate the automobile industry in the United States.

Several years later, in 1971, Ford Motor Company chairman Henry Ford II and Ford president Lee Iacocca met with President Richard Nixon in the White House Oval Office to express their concern about NHTSA safety standards. As excerpts from the infamous Watergate tapes reveal, Ford told the president: "What we're worried about . . . is the economy of the United States. . . . If the price of cars goes up because emission requirements is gonna be in there, . . . safety requirements are in there, bumpers are in there . . . it'll kick up the prices of cars . . . so high that people . . . [are] gonna buy more foreign cars" (quoted in Cullen et al. 1987:156–157). Iacocca added that he had repeatedly complained to Department of Transportation officials that the automotive industry couldn't withstand further regulation. He continued:

> And the Japs are in the wings ready to eat us up alive. So I'm saying . . . "Would you guys cool it a little bit? You're gonna break us." . . . And they talk about Naderism, and . . . the great pressure on them [and that] "people want safety." . . . I say, "What do you mean they want safety? We get . . . letters. . . . We get thousands on customer service. . . . We don't get anything on safety!" (pp. 157–158)

President Nixon was quite sympathetic to Ford Motor Company's anti-regulatory stance. "We can't have a completely safe society or safe highways or safe cars and pollution-free and so forth," he said. "Or we could . . . go back and live like a bunch of damned animals. . . . But . . . the environmentalists and . . . the consumerism people . . . aren't really one damn bit interested in safety or clean air. What they're interested in is destroying the [capitalist] system" (p. 156).

Between 1971 and 1976, Ford Motor Company manufactured Pinto automobiles that suffered massive fuel-tank leaks during rear-end collisions at low to moderate speeds (about 30 miles per hour). These leaks stemmed from a design problem involving the placement of the gas tank only six inches from the rear bumper. This placement was intended to reduce trunk space to make the car smaller, lighter, and cheaper in order to compete with Japanese and German automakers who had cornered the market on small-car sales. Upon impact, however, large quantities of gasoline could spill out of the Pinto if the tube leading from the tank to the gas cap was severed or if the bolts on the differential housing (the bulge in the middle of the rear axle) punctured the tank. "At that point, all that was needed to ignite the fuel and . . . create an inferno was a spark—from steel against steel or from steel against pavement" (Cullen et al. 1987:161).

At one time it was estimated that these Pintos caused the deaths of at least 500 burn victims who otherwise would not have been seriously injured (Dowie 1977). This estimate was probably exaggerated. But an NHTSA report published in 1978 did verify 38 Pinto fires involving 27 fatalities (26 due to burns and 1 due to impact injuries) and 24 nonfatal burn injuries (Birsch & Fielder 1994). As these figures are based on police accident reports, which often fail to report fires or distinguish between deaths due to fire and deaths due to impact, some fire deaths were probably not recorded as such. Douglas Birsch and John Fielder conclude, "It is likely that the number of unnecessary deaths exceeded [the NHTSA estimates] . . . but it is impossible to determine accurately how many deaths there were" (1994:10).

Especially controversial was the fact that the design problem was known to Ford managers and engineers *before* the Pinto was put on the market. Ford had considered alterations that could have prevented the gas leakage (e.g., lining the gas tank with a rubber bladder, covering the bolts on the housing with a polyethylene shield). Ford officials, however, did not think these safety measures were worth the cost. As one high-ranking Ford engineer recalls: "Safety wasn't a popular subject around Ford in those days. With Lee [Iacocca] it was taboo" (quoted in Dowie 1977:21).

Despite considerable resistance and delay by Ford, the NHTSA eventually forced the company to recall the Pinto and fix the problem. Ford also paid many millions of dollars as a result of civil lawsuits brought against it, and was prosecuted in an Indiana criminal court for "reckless homicide" in

the 1978 deaths of three teenagers. This was the first time in history that a homicide indictment had been brought against a corporation for manufacturing a defective product (corporations may be considered "persons" for the purpose of criminal prosecution). But the jury found reasonable doubt as to Ford's criminal intent and acquitted the company (Cullen et al. 1987).

Corporations in capitalist societies are set up for legitimate business purposes. Ford Motor Company, for example, did not manufacture the Pinto for the purpose of killing and maiming consumers. Yet in the course of ostensibly legitimate business activities, law violations all too often occur. Although these are usually civil and regulatory violations rather than criminal violations, they are violations nonetheless.

In this chapter we use our sociological imagination to examine the phenomenon of organizational crime perpetrated by businesses in the United States. We will not be constrained by a legalistic definition of crime but will also consider analogous social injuries. Most of the chapter focuses on **corporate crime** committed by corporate employees on behalf of the companies in which they work. The principal driving force of such crime is to increase company profits. Individuals benefit indirectly, as they are often rewarded for the (illegal) profits they make for their organization. In the latter part of the chapter, we examine crimes committed by business organizations that are set up explicitly for criminal purposes, commonly known as **organized crime**. These groups aim to profit from illegal enterprises in areas such as drugs, gambling, and loan-sharking (lending at exorbitant interest rates). As we shall see, however, the activities of organized crime often resemble and blur into the world of legitimate business.

Previously we discussed how anomie-strain theory may be used to explain corporate and organized crime (see Chapter 4). This theory, most often applied to lower-class criminality, views crime as a response to blocked opportunities for the achievement of culturally valued financial success goals. Financial success goals are especially acute in business organizations, and an organization's prestige and status—as well as the prestige and status of its members—are dependent upon its ability to maintain and expand profits. Competition with other organizations, unpredictable economic markets, or the simple desire to make as much money as possible can exert sufficient pressure on organizations to engage in unlawful behavior.

Anomie-strain theory also suggests that crime occurs not only when legitimate opportunities are blocked but also when illegitimate opportunities are available. In this regard, organizations provide members with greater resources for committing crime on a large scale, and for getting away with it, than individuals acting alone would have. The division of labor within the organization allows for the diffusion of tasks and responsibility, making it difficult to pinpoint the person (or persons) who actually

committed the act. Importantly, individuals higher up in the organizational hierarchy are able to delegate tasks and responsibility to others in order to protect themselves. Organizations also provide members with means of protection through bribery or corruption of law enforcement. What is noteworthy about legal organizations, however, is that the same resources that are used for lawful behavior are the ones that are used for unlawful behavior (Cressey 1972; Vaughan 1983).

Business Concentration and Corporate Crime

The **industrial revolution**, which began in Great Britain and took hold in the United States in the nineteenth century, introduced both power-driven machinery and factory organization into the production process. In the post–Civil War United States, industrialization dovetailed with westward expansion to fuel unprecedented economic growth. The business **corporation** emerged as the capitalist economic unit most capable of coordinating and rationalizing large-scale economic activity and of providing a vehicle for the concentration of investment capital. Through the legal chartering of corporations, the government (mostly state governments) granted these enterprises the right to own property, manufacture and buy and sell products, and bring lawsuits as if they were individual persons (Inverarity et al. 1983).

In the latter half of the nineteenth century, the railroads played a key role in the initial expansion of corporations by providing a system of transportation that integrated the nation into a single marketplace. Thus companies like Montgomery Ward and Sears Roebuck were able to sell their products directly to consumers through mail-order catalogs. Similarly, national "chain" stores were able to integrate wholesaling, distributing, and retailing functions, to guarantee sufficient supply and uniform products, and to extend credit to subsidiaries.

The corporate mode of organization proved highly suitable to the national marketplace. Its military-like, top-down organizational structure was capable of administering hundreds of subunits across a wide geographic territory. An expanded cadre of professional executives, middle-level managers, and functional and technical specialists worked together "to mobilize capital, equipment, technological talent, and labor over the extended periods associated with modern industrial production" (Inverarity et al. 1983:223).

One of the problems facing corporations, however, was their inability to rationalize or achieve predictability in the marketplace. Competition among firms threatened their profitability, even their survival. Businessmen came to realize that cooperation might serve them better than competition. Railroads, for example, entered into pools or trade associations that fixed rates of profit and allocated business among competing lines. Some corpo-

rations entered into cooperative trusts or holding companies whereby a board of trustees would "coordinate the economic activities of the various member corporations, who voluntarily surrendered their individual autonomy to a centralized authority" (Inverarity et al. 1983:225).

At the same time, corporations remained unaccountable to the public, despite the fact that their concentrated wealth and cooperative arrangements seemed antithetical to many Americans' belief in a "free market" competitive economy. Small farmers in particular blamed the exploitative profit-making of railroad and grain elevator operators for a series of agricultural depressions that occurred in the last third of the nineteenth century. They attributed "falling prices, rising costs, increased debts, and massive foreclosures [to] the monopolistic control of corporations and trusts," and they organized opposition political groups and parties to press for regulatory reform (McCormick 1977:31).

Antitrust Law and the Decline of Moral Indignation

As state laws proved inadequate to regulate corporations that were national in scope, the US Supreme Court gave the federal government the exclusive right to regulate interstate commerce. In 1890 the US Congress passed the landmark **Sherman Antitrust Act** (SAA), which contained both criminal and civil provisions. For the first time in history, business combinations that resulted in a *restraint of trade* (including cooperative agreements to fix prices) or the *monopolization* of an industry became federal offenses that could be prosecuted as criminal misdemeanors. The SAA also "authorized injunctions to prevent further misconduct . . . [and] allowed any private person who was adversely affected . . . to bring a civil suit and to recover treble damages for any injury suffered" (Inverarity et al. 1983:230). Maximum criminal penalties were set at that time at one year's imprisonment and a $5,000 fine.

The SAA defined as crimes business activities that were previously legitimate. The moral stigma associated with these new crimes, however, was relatively weak, for although the large corporation was perceived as a threat to the traditional American way of life, it was also viewed as a source of economic efficiency, employment, and improved living standards. Some regulation of corporations was deemed necessary, but not regulation "so stringent as to curtail seriously the desirable" benefits of corporate capitalism (Inverarity et al. 1983:227).

Albert McCormick (1977) has argued that the most critical period for establishing a new law as an effective mechanism of social control occurs immediately following the law's enactment. Failure to enforce the SAA was thus a key factor in the neutralization of the moral stigma associated with antitrust violations. McCormick notes that no extra funds were allocated by Congress for antitrust enforcement, and a separate antitrust division in the

Department of Justice was not created for another thirteen years. Up until then, the Department of Justice had initiated just six criminal cases and sixteen civil cases. Among these, only one criminal case and three civil cases were successfully prosecuted, and no one was incarcerated.

Although the US Supreme Court upheld the constitutionality of the SAA, laying the groundwork for future expansion of regulatory law, the Court narrowed the scope of the SAA's applicability. In a 1895 case the Court ruled that the law did not apply to companies that manufactured their products within a single state. Thus the American Sugar Refining Company, for instance, which accounted for 98 percent of the country's sugar manufacturing, was not considered an illegal monopoly. And in a 1911 case involving the Standard Oil and American Tobacco corporations, the Court ruled that the SAA applied only to "unreasonable" and not "reasonable" business combinations. The SAA, therefore, had relatively little impact on the growth and consolidation of corporations in the United States (Inverarity et al. 1983; Neuman 1998).

McCormick (1977) examined data on the 1,551 antitrust cases that were brought by the Department of Justice between 1890 and 1969. Less than half of these cases (45 percent) were brought as criminal violations, and only a third (35 percent) resulted in conviction. Moreover, nearly three-quarters of the criminal cases (73 percent) were brought between 1940 and 1944, during a time when monopolistic practices were deemed threatening to the US war effort. It was not until 1961, in the electrical equipment price-fixing case, that any corporate officials were actually imprisoned, and these men served just 25 days in jail (Geis 1978; see Chapter 4). In fact, the first 11 individuals to be imprisoned for antitrust violations were *labor* and *union* defendants.

James Inverarity and colleagues conclude that the SAA "symbolically affirmed a legal commitment to free competition while institutionalizing consolidation and regulation" (1983:231). For the most part, successful corporations could "have their cake and eat it too." Some federal involvement would help stabilize the economy and achieve greater market predictability. And a centralized regulatory authority made it easier for corporations to lobby the government on their behalf. At the same time, failure to establish an identifiable group of corporate offenders (and victims) neutralized the already tenuous moral stigma associated with antitrust violations and gave rise to a dual or contradictory economic value system. As McCormick (1977:36) observes, our society "officially recognizes and pays lip service to the ideals of free competition but practices private . . . collectivism," what Edwin Sutherland (1983) described as "corporate socialism" and others have simply called "corporatism" (Klein 2007). (In terms of numbers, small businesses still dominate the US economy, but in terms of scope, influence, and financial assets, corporations dominate.)

Criminogenic Market Structures

As discussed in Chapter 2, Sutherland (1949) found that nearly half of the 70 largest US corporations had engaged in law violations at their origin or in their early years of operation, making crime an essential part of their initial period of capital accumulation. He also observed that corporations within the same industry tended to have comparable rates of law violation, with companies in the meat-packing and mail-order businesses leading the way. Similarly, Marshall Clinard and Peter Yeager's study (1980) of the 477 largest manufacturing corporations found that the most frequent offenders in the 1975–1976 period were concentrated in three areas: the motor vehicle, oil refinery, and pharmaceutical industries. But while a majority of corporations had a record of law violation, 40 percent did not, and just 8 percent accounted for over half of the violations in the Clinard-Yeager study. What makes some corporations more prone to law violation than others? Are there conditions within particular industries or economic markets that are more or less conducive to law violation?

William Leonard and Marvin Weber (1970) introduced the term **criminogenic market structure** to identify elements of social structure that produce the strain that generates crime. According to Leonard and Weber, criminogenic market structures consist of industries characterized by (1) a high concentration of producers who can easily get together to avoid unprofitable competition, and (2) products that retain an inelastic demand, meaning that they remain in demand and continue to be purchased even if prices are increased.

The automobile industry, for example, is characterized by a high degree of seller concentration due to the formidable entry barriers inherent in a market that requires a high volume of sales in order to maintain a profitable business. Between the early 1900s and the late 1920s, the number of US automakers declined from 181 to 44. Currently there are only three US-owned auto companies (General Motors, Ford, and Chrysler). There has not been a successful new domestic entrant into the US market since Chrysler began in 1925, and in 1980 that company needed the federal government to guarantee a $1.5 billion loan to prop up its sagging profits (Simon 2006).

Historically, the automobile industry had a well-deserved reputation for emphasizing style over safety. But Leonard and Weber (1970) focus on a less acknowledged problem: the pressure manufacturers exert that constrains dealers' ability to operate ethically or within the law. The franchise agreements that manufacturers offer dealers typically require dealers to sell a high volume of vehicles at a low per-unit cost. If dealers fail to comply, they may lose their franchise or receive unfavorable treatment from the manufacturer (e.g., slow delivery or insufficient supply of popular models), thus forcing dealers to recoup profits elsewhere. For instance, dealers may order new cars with accessories that customers have not ordered and require

customers to pay for these if they want to receive the car. Dealers also mark up used-car prices excessively and fail to disclose the mechanical problems with these vehicles.

In addition, dealers enjoy an excessively high profit margin in their service departments. An industrywide flat rate is generally charged for particular repairs, allowing dealers to charge customers for more time than is actually spent fixing the vehicle. Dealers also have a monopoly on new parts, which enables them to charge exorbitant prices for these products. And they may charge for unnecessary repairs and unnecessary replacement of parts, as well as for repairs that are not made and parts that are not used. (Dealers are not the only establishments that make unnecessary or fraudulent auto repairs. Overall, about a third of the money consumers spend on auto repairs involves unnecessary or fraudulent work [Coleman 2002].)

Another industrywide practice involves dealers turning back vehicle odometers—even on "executive" cars that have been used by the dealers themselves. Dealers also cut corners by not inspecting vehicles before they are delivered to customers, and they may fail to honor warranties, claiming that repairs that should be covered are not. But again, according to some criminologists, it is the criminogenic market structure in the automobile industry that pressures dealers to engage in such practices. As Harvey Farberman notes, a small number of "manufacturers who sit at the pinnacle of an economically concentrated industry" have established an economic policy that "causes lower level dependent industry participants to engage in patterns" of unethical and illegal activities (1975:456).

James Coleman (2002), however, finds the evidence regarding the effect of market structures on corporate crime more difficult to evaluate. Much corporate crime research, he observes, is based on official records and thus suffers from some of the same flaws as official rates of ordinary crimes (e.g., large numbers of crimes are unreported). Coleman suggests, for example, that the high rates of law violation in the motor vehicle, oil refinery, and pharmaceutical industries studied by Clinard and Yeager (1980) may be due, in part, to the fact that "industries whose products cause serious and clearly identifiable harm to the public or the environment tend to be subject to more stringent regulation than those that do not" (p. 208).

Coleman also notes the inconsistent results of quantitative research on the association between market structure and official rates of antitrust violations by US corporations. Some studies have found higher rates of antitrust violations among firms in highly concentrated industries (industries with few firms), some have found higher rates in moderately concentrated industries, and some have found no relationship at all between antitrust violations and degree of industry concentration. Coleman reasons that antitrust practices like price-fixing would appear easier in markets dominated by a few large firms, but that more competitive markets, on the other hand, might

exacerbate the economic strains that encourage crime. In addition, Coleman notes that these studies are methodologically flawed in that they tend not to consider the effects of international competition.

Inconsistent findings in studies of corporate bribery of government officials also suggest an ambiguous relationship between market structure and crime. Coleman concludes that in noncompetitive industries dominated by a few firms, "political bribery aimed at influencing government policies and programs" may be more common, but that intense competition in less concentrated industries "appears more likely to be associated with commercial bribery [of sales or purchasing agents] to promote the sale of a firm's products" (pp. 206–207). In either case, it is clear that one cannot understand the behavior of organizations without examining the broader opportunity structure within which they do business.

Corporate Culture and the (Mis)management of Power

Marshall Clinard (1983) interviewed 64 retired middle-level managers from 51 Fortune 500 corporations and found that about a third of these executives disapproved of the ethical standards practiced in their respective industries. When explaining corporate crime, they tended to downplay *external* factors such as "corporate financial problems, unfair practices of competitors, or the type of industry" and to emphasize the *internal* cultural environment of the organization (p. 70). These middle managers said that in many cases the ethical history or tradition of the corporation had been established long ago by the company founder and had been passed on to subsequent generations of managers. Over 90 percent of the middle managers felt that *top managers* were responsible for setting the ethical (or unethical) tone of corporations. Over 70 percent thought that top management was generally aware of *all* the violations that were occurring in their companies, and an additional 22 percent thought that top management knew about *some* of the violations. The middle managers believed that top managements' knowledge was especially likely in cases of product-safety design defects, illegal kickbacks and foreign bribery, and antitrust (including price-fixing), labor, environmental, and tax violations.

Clinard's middle managers also drew a distinction between top managers who are "professionally oriented" and those who are "financially oriented." The former are concerned with a corporation's responsibility to consumers, the community, and society at large, while the latter are concerned only with company profits and their personal ambition and financial gain. One manager explained, "Corporations with many violations are being run primarily for the top and bottom line in order to make a buck." Another said, "Violations are likely if top management is seeking to advance their personal reputations and be 'hot shots'" (p. 57).

Top managers are more likely than middle managers to attribute law

The public has often been reluctant to believe that people in business suits are capable of committing serious crimes.

violations to financial strains facing the company. According to one top-management official, "Business executives . . . have no right to wrap themselves in the mantle of moral philosophers and judges—especially to the detriment of the interests of their shareholders whose money they are using" (Silk & Vogel 1976:229). Top management, however, "tends to 'signal' its expectations [to subordinates] rather than [issue] specific orders to break the law" (Friedrichs 2007:207). A high-ranking Ford Motor Company engineer recalls, "Whenever a problem was raised that meant a delay on the Pinto, Lee [Iacocca] would chomp on his cigar, look out the window and say, 'Read the product objectives and get back to work'" (Dowie 1977:21). As Christopher Stone observes, top management prefers "not to know" everything their organization is doing and "they arrange patterns of reporting so they cannot find out (or . . . if they do find out, . . . only in such a way that it can never be proved)" (1975:53).

All types of organizations, including corporations, tend to "selectively recruit new members who in many respects match those already there" (Vaughan 1982:1389). New managers are led "through an initiation period designed to weaken their ties with external groups, including their own families, and encourage a feeling of dependence on and attachment" to the company (Clinard & Yeager 1980:63). Employees learn not to question standard operating procedures. We previously noted, for instance, that executives involved in the electrical equipment price-fixing conspiracy testified that price-fixing had been an ongoing practice before they joined their respective companies and that they were expected to conform (see Chapter 4). In another case involving the marketing of an anticholesterol drug that was known by company officials to have harmful side effects, "no one involved expressed any strong repugnance or even opposition to selling the unsafe drug. Rather they all seemed to drift into the activity without thinking a great deal about it" (Carey 1978:384). Dennis Gioia, who became Ford Motor Company's field recall coordinator in 1973, remembers that, at the time, he "perceived no strong obligation to recall [the Pinto] and [saw] . . . no strong ethical overtones to the case whatsoever" (1996:54).

Even when managers have ethical reservations about what they are doing, the pressure from superiors to meet production quotas and target dates can be immense. As one of Clinard's subjects relates, "You get the pressure so strong from top management that you will make judgmental efforts to make things come out right even if you use unethical practices such as lying about production or marketing progress . . . [or] cutting corners . . . on quality" (1983:142). Another middle-level manager said, "When we didn't meet our growth targets the top brass really came down on us. And everybody knew that if you missed the targets enough, you were out on your ear" (p. 143).

James Messerschmidt (1997) notes that corporate managers often conflate profit-making with masculinity. "Real man(agers)" take risks and are willing to "go to the limit" to bring the company success and prove themselves worthy combatants in the competitive struggle for corporate profits (p. 101). **Man(agerial) masculinity** requires one to set aside personal or emotional concerns and make decisions without regard to their effects on people. In this context, a cost-benefit approach is the perfect vehicle for corporate decisionmaking. In the midst of the Pinto controversy, Mark Dowie (1977) published a chart from a Ford Motor Company memorandum that contained calculations regarding the costs and benefits of installing a special valve in all cars and light trucks to prevent carburetor and other fuel leakages during a rollover accident (see Figure 6.1). Ford reasoned that the costs ($137 million) of installing this valve far outweighed the benefits ($49.5 million). Notice that in this estimate the potential benefits ignored by Ford included saving human injuries and lives.

Figure 6.1 Ford Motor Company Cost-Benefit Memorandum

Costs
Sales: 11 million cars, 1.5 million light trucks
Unit cost: $11 per car and truck
Total cost: 11,000,000 x ($11) + 1,500,000 x ($11) = $137 million

Benefits
Savings: 180 burn deaths, 180 burn injuries, 2,100 burned vehicles
Unit cost: $200,000 per death,[a] $67,000 per injury, $700 per vehicle
Total benefits: 180 x ($200,000) + 180 x ($67,000) + 2,100 x ($700) = $49.5 million

Source: Adapted from Dowie 1977.
Note: a. Ford obtained the $200,000 figure from the NHTSA, which had given in to auto industry pressure to institutionalize cost-benefit analysis in regulatory decisionmaking. The memorandum was intended to persuade regulators to not adopt a new safety standard (Lee & Ermann 1999).

Regulatory Law and the Deregulation Movement

Federal regulatory agencies have the main responsibility for dealing with corporate law violations in the United States. These agencies evolved primarily during three periods of regulatory enactment (Friedrichs 2007). The first wave of regulation came in the early twentieth century in the wake of the social movement that had led to antitrust reform. Upton Sinclair's *The Jungle* (1906), an exposé of the horribly unsanitary conditions in the meatpacking industry, was especially instrumental in generating public support for passage of the Pure Food and Drug Act and the Meat Inspection Act in 1906. And because Sinclair's book triggered a dramatic drop in sales due to loss of public confidence in meat products, the larger corporations also supported this legislation, since government-inspected meat served to restore public confidence. Smaller companies, however, were unable to absorb the additional cost of regulatory compliance. Hence some regulatory reform actually helped larger corporations consolidate their control of the market.

The second wave of regulatory initiatives was associated with President Franklin Roosevelt's New Deal policies of the 1930s. This period of reform was motivated in large part by the 1929 stock market crash and the ensuing economic depression. Many people lost their life savings to failed banks. The government hoped that public confidence could be restored through greater regulatory protection afforded by newly established agencies such as the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation (FDIC), the Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC), and the National Labor Relations Board (NLRB).

The third wave of regulatory reform occurred during a period of social protest and liberal reform in the 1960s and early 1970s. The Consumer Protection Agency (CPA), the Environmental Protection Agency (EPA), and the Occupational Safety and Health Administration (OSHA) are among the regulatory bodies that were created during this era. The Food and Drug

Administration (FDA), established by the Pure Food and Drug Act in 1906, was also given expanded regulatory powers at this time. At the outset, FDA regulatory activity was limited to spot-checks designed to detect adulterated or mislabeled food and drugs. But over the years, well-publicized scandals involving harmful products prompted legislation to broaden its role in consumer protection (Clinard & Yeager 1980).

The FDA now requires food, drugs, cosmetics, and medical devices to be tested to ensure that they are safe and effective before they are sold to the public. Coleman describes the approval process this way: "Before permitting a drug to be put on the market, the FDA requires the manufacturer to conduct extensive tests (first on laboratory animals and then on small groups of patients under carefully controlled conditions) and finally, the drug is released to a limited number of physicians to see how safe it is in ordinary medical use." He also notes, however, that "although these procedures appear to be careful and cautious, they are seriously weakened by the fact that the manufacturer, not the FDA, conducts the tests. Because drug companies often have an enormous financial stake in the drugs they test, there is a strong motivation to bias the testing procedures or even falsify the data" (2002:136).

The recent case involving the "blockbuster" drug Vioxx, manufactured by Merck & Company, is a case in point (Vioxx is the brand name for rofecoxib, which has also been marketed as Ceoxx and Ceeoxx). Vioxx is an antiinflammatory drug designed to treat arthritis, acute pain conditions, and dysmenorrhea. Merck put the drug on the market in 1999, but it was withdrawn in 2004 due to reported adverse side effects experienced by thousands of users—including heart attacks, strokes, blood clots, and sudden deaths. Merck had spent over $160 million marketing the drug, which was prescribed to millions of people worldwide, and earned a profit of about $2.5 billion annually. During the subsequent FDA investigation and civil lawsuits brought against Merck, it was revealed that the company had withheld test data from the FDA showing some of these adverse effects. In November 2007, Merck settled the pending lawsuits for $4.85 billion (NewsInferno.com 2007; *Wisconsin State Journal* 2007a).

David Friedrichs suggests that regulatory agencies have been unable to prevent incidents like this, in part, because the previously "high level of consensus on the desirability of government regulation" has been eroding for some time (2007:256). In the late 1970s, an economic downturn coupled with high inflation was crippling the economy. Corporate officials and their political supporters blamed federal government regulation (and high taxes) for much of the nation's economic woes. They felt that regulation had been carried too far, that there were too many rules, and that the rules were too costly, complex, and unfair. They thus called for the **deregulation** of the economy.

The movement toward deregulation emerged full blown with the 1980

election of President Ronald Reagan. Coleman (2002) believes that the Reagan administration would have liked to dismantle the federal regulatory structure almost entirely, but the public did not support such a radical approach. Instead the administration began a three-pronged effort to debilitate regulatory agencies: (1) the Office of Management and Budget, a federal agency that assists the president in preparing the budget and evaluating government agencies and programs, was authorized to review all new regulatory proposals, subject them to cost-benefit analysis, and reject them if deemed appropriate; (2) the budgets and staff of regulatory agencies were dramatically cut; and (3) new administrators sympathetic to deregulation were appointed to head the regulatory agencies.

Kitty Calavita (1983) notes that curtailment of the Occupational Safety and Health Administration was an especially high priority of the Reagan administration, which was hoping to put the labor movement on the defensive. OSHA had been established in 1970 as, Calavita believes, a symbolic concession to organized labor, whom President Nixon had been courting for support of his reelection. At that time it was estimated that harmful workplace conditions in the United States killed at least 100,000 workers and disabled 390,000 others each year. From the very beginning, however, OSHA was underfunded and understaffed. Although it was supposed to promulgate new standards, in its first four years of operation it adopted only one, a maximum legal level of asbestos exposure. In the meantime, workers were being exposed to nearly 600 new toxic substances generated annually by corporate industrial production.

As OSHA is housed in the Department of Labor, it came under the supervision of Raymond Donovan, Reagan's first secretary of labor. Prior to his appointment, Donovan was one of two principal owners of Shiavone Construction, a New Jersey firm that had been accused many times of making illegal payoffs and bribes to union officials and local politicians. Shiavone also had a lengthy history of OSHA violations. In the six years prior to Donovan's appointment, Shiavone had been cited for 135 violations, 57 of which were for workplace conditions involving "a substantial probability that death or physical harm could result." In addition, the National Labor Relations Board had filed six charges against Shiavone for unfair labor practices (i.e., violating federal wage standards), and the Department of Labor's Employment Standards Administration had investigated a dozen complaints of race and sex discrimination. In 1985, Donovan became the first cabinet officer in US history to be criminally indicted while in office. Charged with criminal fraud associated with the operation of Shiavone, he was forced to resign, even though a jury eventually found him not guilty (Brownstein & Easton 1982).

Anne Gorsuch, an antiregulatory state legislator from Colorado, was Reagan's choice to head the Environmental Protection Agency. Gorsuch's

appointment was sponsored by Joseph Coors, the archconservative mogul of his namesake brewery, who had founded the Mountain States Legal Foundation, a group dedicated to eviscerating environmental regulations. During Gorsuch's term in office, she increasingly staffed the EPA with people who had once worked for the very companies they were supposed to be regulating. In 1982, the so-called **Sewergate** scandal erupted, involving the EPA's rather cozy relationship with regulated firms—assurances of nonenforcement of environmental laws, "sweetheart" deals allowing polluting industries to avoid full payment of environmental cleanup costs, and delays in waste-site cleanup timetables. The scandal forced Gorsuch to resign. And Rita Lavelle, who had been appointed to head the EPA's $1.6 billion Superfund environmental cleanup program, was convicted on criminal charges of perjury for lying under oath about her antiregulatory activities. The negative publicity associated with Sewergate forced Reagan to appoint a more moderate EPA director (Kennedy 2004; Szasz 1986b).

Another Coors protégé, James Watt, was appointed by Reagan to head the Department of Interior, which houses the Bureau of Mines. Watt was an advocate of **dominion theology**, which Robert Kennedy, Jr., describes as "an authoritarian Christian heresy that advocates man's duty to 'subdue' nature" (2004:24). During a Senate hearing, "Watt tried to explain why he was selling off protected public lands and water and mineral rights at what the General Accounting Office called 'fire-sale prices' . . . rather than preserving them for future generations: 'I do not know how many future generations we can count on before the Lord returns,'" Watt said (p. 25). Like Gorsuch, Watt was forced to resign because of public backlash and Democratic opposition to his radical deregulatory agenda.

During his term in office, President Bill Clinton was considerably more favorable to regulation than were his predecessors, but when President George W. Bush took office in 2001, the deregulatory movement returned full throttle. Gale Norton, for example, was appointed to head the Department of Interior. Previously, Norton had been a member of an antiregulatory group deceptively called Wise Use, whose founder, Ron Arnold, once said, "Our goal is to destroy, to eradicate the environmental movement. We want . . . to be able to exploit the environment for private gain, absolutely" (quoted in Kennedy 2004:27). Additionally, J. Steven Griles, a lobbyist for the mining industry, was appointed to head the Bureau of Mines. Inspectors and scientists, responsible for evaluating risks and enforcing law violations in these agencies, as well as the EPA reported that their efforts to protect the public from corporate practices that savaged and polluted the environment were being thwarted. The mining industry, for instance, was given a green light to destroy "the ancient mountains and pristine streams of Appalachia through a form of strip-mining known as mountaintop removal," whereby mining companies detonate hundreds of feet of

mountain tops in order "to reach the thin seams of coal beneath" and then dump the debris into adjacent valleys, devastating forests, waterways, and communities (Kennedy 2004:114). Former secretary Watt happily remarked that the Bush administration was "saying exactly what we were saying 20 years ago, precisely. Twenty years later, it sounds like they've just dusted off the old work" (quoted in Kennedy 2004:44). More recently, in 2008, federal investigators uncovered a scandal involving over a dozen Department of Interior officials who had engaged in illicit sex and drug use with representatives of oil companies that contract with the government to drill offshore and on federal land (CBS 2008; CNN 2008).

Some political sociologists would explain the processes at work here in terms of **capture theory**. According to this theory, "regulatory agencies begin by actively enforcing rules in the public interest, but as the political conditions that give rise to . . . regulation change, agencies slowly align with the [corporate] interests they are supposed to regulate and [corporate] influence grows until agencies defend the regulated [corporations] . . . instead of the public interest" (Neuman 2005:472–473). This process of capture is facilitated by a circulation of personnel in and out of the private and public sectors. And corporations ensure selection of the appointments they desire by making financial contributions to politicians who support their interests. At the same time, of course, different administrations may be more or less favorable to regulation, and politicians who receive support (financial or electoral) from proregulatory advocacy groups will often enact and enforce policies that heed their wishes.

Irrespective of the regulatory policies of particular administrations, however, larger corporations are always better able than smaller firms to withstand the constraints of regulatory controls. Their greater financial resources and market shares enable them to absorb costs or pass them on to customers, and they are more likely to have the technical and legal expertise to challenge regulations effectively and negotiate favorable terms with regulators (Coleman 2002; Yeager 1987). Typically, the regulatory response of first resort is for a federal agency to enter into negotiations with the corporation or issue an official warning that further action will be taken unless the corporation enacts measures to remedy the problematic activity. Successful negotiations may result in the corporation agreeing to "cease and desist" from further violations, or to recall a product in order to make necessary repairs. In doing so, the corporation admits to no legal culpability that can be used against it in subsequent civil or criminal cases. If a settlement cannot be reached, then the regulatory agency may decide to pursue further administrative, civil, or even criminal actions that carry heavier sanctions. Clinard and Yeager (1980), however, found that no penalties were issued in over three-quarters of the cases documented in their study.

The Economic and Physical Costs of Corporate Crime

Criminologists often note that the economic costs of white-collar crime, including corporate crime, exceed the costs of ordinary street crime. In their book *Profit Without Honor: White-Collar Crime and the Looting of America,* Stephen Rosoff and colleagues write, "Annual losses from white-collar crime are probably 50 times as great as the losses from ordinary property crime." The cost of the taxpayer bailout of a single corrupt, federally insured savings and loan in the late 1980s, for example, "surpassed the total losses of all the bank robberies" in US history (2007:xi).

White-collar crime also entails enormous physical costs. Jeffrey Reiman (2007), for instance, argues that far more people are seriously harmed each year from occupational hazards than from ordinary street crime. After reviewing the available data on deaths and injuries due to occupation-related diseases and other workplace hazards, he concludes that about 55,000 workers die, and another 2.3 million get sick or are injured, as a result of dangerous occupational conditions each year. This toll greatly exceeds the some 16,000 homicides and 860,000 aggravated assaults that occur annually (see Chapter 2). Although Reiman acknowledges that not all occupational hazards involve crime or other law violations, he observes:

> What keeps a mine disaster from being [viewed as] a mass murder . . . is that it is not a one-on-one harm. What is important in one-on-one harm is . . . the *desire of someone . . . to harm someone . . . else.* An attack by a gang on one or more persons or an attack by one individual on several fits the model of one-on-one harm; that is, for each person harmed there is at least one individual who wanted to harm that person. Once he selects his victim, the rapist, the mugger, the murderer all want this person they have selected to suffer. A mine executive, on the other hand, does not want his employees to be harmed. He would truly prefer that there be no accident, no injured or dead miners. What he does want is something legitimate. It is what he has been hired to get: maximum profits at minimum costs. . . . If ten men die because he cut corners on safety, we may think him crude or callous but not a murderer. He is, at most, responsible for an *indirect harm,* not a one-on-one harm. . . . The ten men are dead as an unwanted consequence of his (perhaps overzealous or undercautious) pursuit of a legitimate goal. (pp. 72–73)

We think it is important for students to be familiar with the pervasiveness of corporate crime, with how it impacts nearly every area of society. What follows is a review of some of the most notable instances of corporate crime that illustrate its historical and ongoing legacy, a legacy that has entailed significant costs to workers, consumers, and the general public. All told, these crimes constitute what conflict and critical criminologists refer to as "crimes of economic domination" (Quinney 1977), crimes that are imposed upon us from atop, crimes that underscore Gabriel Tarde's obser-

vation that "criminal propensities . . . travel downward and outward—from the powerful to the powerless" (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995:367).

Costs to Workers

In 1968, a coal-mining explosion in Farmington, West Virginia, killed 78 miners, which sparked legislative reforms to protect mine workers (Friedrichs 2007; Rosoff et al. 2007). To this day, however, miners remain vulnerable to death and injury from explosions, fires, and cave-ins. During the first six years of the George W. Bush administration, mining deaths increased to a 10-year high, reaching 24 in 2006. Critics blame this increase on the administration's rollbacks of mine safety regulations, the appointment of former mine industry executives and lobbyists to important regulatory positions, the dramatic cutting of agency budgets and enforcement staff, and the reduction in penalties for law violators. Critics also note the administration's opposition to proposals that would "require stronger standards on oxygen availability for mine emergencies, mine rescue teams, communications and tracking devices; . . . immediate notification of accidents and rapid emergency response; . . . [and] mandatory minimum penalties for egregious and repeated violations" (Dreier 2006:6). The January 2006 explosion at the Sago Mine in West Virginia, which killed 12 miners, was particularly noteworthy for drawing public attention to the problem, especially because the operator of this mine had been cited for safety violations 273 times by government regulators since 2004, although none of the fines had "exceeded $460, roughly one-thousandth of 1 percent of the $110 million net profit" earned by the company in 2005 (Urbina & Lehren 2006:1). Congress responded by passing new mine safety legislation scheduled to go into effect in 2009 (Huber 2007).

The mining industry, of course, is not the only area of employment fraught with danger to workers' safety. One incident that occurred in the wake of the Ford Pinto reckless-homicide trial is worth noting because it involved charges of murder and manslaughter being brought against the perpetrators. The case involved a Chicago-area firm called Film Recovery Systems (FRS), a multimillion-dollar company that salvaged silver from used X-ray plates. The process of silver extraction involves soaking the plates in a cyanide solution. Most of the employees at the FRS plant were immigrant workers from Mexico and Poland who could not speak or read English very well and who thus did not understand the labels on the 140 cyanide tanks. The employees were required to add and remove plates from the tanks manually, but they were not given proper protective gloves, boots, or aprons. And although inhaling cyanide fumes can be deadly, the workplace was not properly ventilated, and the workers were not given respirator masks. In 1983, Stefan Golab, a 59-year-old Polish immigrant, died from cyanide exposure. A week later the company was cited for 17 OSHA viola-

tions. OSHA also learned that the company had not warned its workers about the dangers of cyanide and that other workers had suffered recurring bouts of vomiting, headaches, and dizziness. One employee had lost 80 percent of his eyesight from a splash at his tank (Rosoff et al. 2007).

As a result of Golab's death, the FRS president, plant manager, and foreman were convicted of murder and received 25-year prison sentences. Due to a minor technicality, however, their convictions were overturned on appeal. While the three men had been convicted of murder, the corporation had been convicted of involuntary manslaughter, leading an appellate court to rule that the defendant and the company had been convicted of two mutually inconsistent offenses. Nevertheless, the FRS prosecution was a precedent-setting workplace injury case. While there had been prior corporate manslaughter cases, there had never before been an indictment for murder. Rosoff and colleagues (2007) favor more prosecutions of this nature, hoping they will deter work-related deaths. The stigma of criminal penalties, they believe, may potentially be more effective than civil or regulatory sanctions.

Currently, McWane Incorporated, based in Birmingham, Alabama, is one of the most egregious corporate violators of workplace health and safety regulations. Employing about 5,000 workers in a dozen plants around the country, McWane "has been cited for nearly 500 safety violations since 1995—*four times more than its six major competitors combined*" in the metal-foundry industry (Rosoff et al. 2007:188). Workers have been seriously burned, maimed (including amputated limbs), and even killed. They labor in "dim, dirty, hellishly hot" conditions and have been forced to suffer indignities such as urinating in their pants because they are denied bathroom breaks (Barstow & Bergman 2003:1).

Unlike the above examples, many of the occupational harms experienced by workers are not immediately observable. They involve debilitating diseases that take years (often decades) to develop. Craig Calhoun and Henryk Hiller (1988) label these types of diseases **insidious injuries**, which Rosoff and colleagues call **postponed violence** (2007:149). These injuries entail diseases for which the link between the cause of the malady and its manifest symptoms is obscure. They have a long gestation period and "strike only a segment of the exposed population, either randomly or patterned by varying individual vulnerabilities." Moreover, insidious injuries "manifest themselves by raising . . . risk for diseases that also have other causes" (Calhoun & Hiller 1988:163). Occupational exposure to workplace toxins, for example, may multiply the risk of cancer from other sources such as cigarette smoke and air pollution.

Exposure to asbestos has been one of the most publicized sources of insidious injuries, affecting millions of workers in the United States. Asbestos is a fibrous mineral mined from rock that has been used mainly as a

fire retardant in products such as textiles, brake linings, and especially construction materials (insulation, ceiling and floor tiles, pipe wrap, shingles, textured paint, cement). Asbestos fibers can crumble and become airborne. Long-term inhalation of these fibers can cause several debilitating if not fatal lung diseases, including cancer, as well as damage to other internal organs.

The Johns-Manville Corporation has been a major manufacturer of asbestos. Internal company documents going back to the 1930s and 1940s indicate that the company had full knowledge of the harmful effects of asbestos. To protect itself from financial liability, Johns-Manville had a policy of negotiating settlements with sick workers if they agreed to drop all other claims against the company. In addition, a Johns-Manville medical director advised that workers who had contracted illnesses but who had not yet manifested debilitating symptoms should not be informed of their condition. It was not until 1964 that Johns-Manville finally warned workers of the dangers of asbestos exposure. By 1972 it was still refusing to install a dust-control system to protect them. Company executives had calculated that it was more profitable to pay worker compensation to disabled employees or to the families of the deceased than to install the system (Calhoun & Hiller 1988).

In 1973 the EPA began implementing various policies to ban some asbestos applications and to ensure that asbestos in schools would be replaced if it didn't meet safety requirements. Currently, the manufacture, processing, importation, and distribution of most asbestos products have been banned in the United States. Several asbestos manufacturers have lost civil lawsuits and have been forced to pay millions of dollars in damages to injured or deceased workers or their families. In 1982, Johns-Manville negotiated a bankruptcy settlement with the federal government and was allowed to reorganize. The settlement called for Johns-Manville to set up a trust fund of nearly $3 billion to settle claims with injured parties in exchange for immunity from further lawsuits (Calhoun & Hiller 1988; Rosoff et al. 2007).

Like the asbestos industry, the textile industry has been a significant source of insidious injuries to workers. Exposure to cotton dust causes an irreversible lung disease called byssinosis, or brown lung. The industry's history of denying harm and suppressing information parallels that of the asbestos industry. J. P. Stevens, the second largest textile manufacturer in the United States, is one of the most notorious perpetrators of workplace-induced byssinosis, and it has been singled out by the National Labor Relations Board as "the greatest labor-law violator" in the country (Rosoff et al. 2007:180).

The 1983 film *Silkwood,* based on a true story, highlighted the dangers of working in the nuclear power industry. In the early 1970s in Oklahoma, Karen Silkwood was employed by the Kerr-McGee Corporation, a company

that manufactured highly radioactive (and carcinogenic) plutonium fuel for nuclear reactors. Kerr-McGee had a history of careless handling of plutonium—for instance, storing the material in leaking drums and shipping it in improper containers. Inside the plant, a number of workers, including Silkwood, were contaminated. After Silkwood was elected to be a union representative, she decided to go public in an effort to pressure Kerr-McGee to take measures to protect its employees. She contacted a *New York Times* reporter, saying she had obtained internal company documents indicating that Kerr-McGee had falsified records regarding levels of plutonium exposure in its plant. On her way to deliver the documents to the reporter, she was killed in a car accident. Investigative journalist Jack Anderson claimed there was evidence that Silkwood's car had been run off the road and that the documents she was carrying had been stolen. A 1977 congressional investigation, however, concluded that her death had been an accident. The following year, a civil jury ruled that Kerr-McGee was liable for having exposed Silkwood to plutonium and was ordered to pay $10.5 million in damages to her estate (Rashke 1981; Rosoff et al. 2007).

Costs to Consumers

In many respects, price-fixing is the perfect corporate crime against consumers. The higher cost of the product can be distributed across millions of customers so that each person only pays a small price for the crime. Moreover, at the time of the purchase, consumers do not realize they are being victimized by crime. They may think they are being ripped off by greedy companies, perhaps, but they don't consider themselves crime victims. Yet corporations make millions of dollars in illegal profits each year from price-fixing activities.

The 10 largest fines ever imposed for price-fixing were handed down during the Clinton years. In 1996, Archer Daniels Midland (ADM), a grain and soybean processing conglomerate whose products are used in a wide range of goods, led the way with a record-breaking $100 million fine. ADM's price-fixing violation involved the lysine used in animal feed and the citric acid used in food and beverages. ADM agreed to the fine in order to avoid an even more costly penalty (which the government agreed to waive) for antitrust activity involving its high-fructose corn syrup. However, as ADM had $2 billion in cash on hand, it was easily able to absorb the $100 million fine (Coleman 2002; Rosoff et al. 2007).

The Clinton administration also pursued a controversial antitrust case against Bill Gates's Microsoft Corporation. In 1999, a federal judge ruled that the company had abused the virtual monopoly it had on its Windows operating system to gain an unfair advantage over competitors on the sale of other products. The most egregious practice involved Microsoft pressuring Windows retailers to sell Microsoft's Internet Explorer browser rather than

the Netscape Navigator browser. At one time, Netscape controlled a larger share of the Internet browser market, but Microsoft now dominates that area. Microsoft also denied competitors technical information about Windows, which caused problems for consumers using other companies' products (Rosoff et al. 2007).

The judge in the federal case suggested that severe sanctions might be in order, including breaking Microsoft into two or more companies and increasing governmental monitoring of its contracts with retailers and its future corporate acquisitions. Microsoft appealed the ruling, and when the Bush administration took office a modest settlement was proposed. This settlement essentially limited sanctions to a requirement that Microsoft provide competitors with technical information that would allow them to run their software more seamlessly with Windows.

Recent concerns about the concentration of corporate power have revolved around Wal-Mart, which "does more business than Target, Sears, Kmart, J.C. Penney, Safeway, and Kroger combined" (Rosoff et al. 2007:80). Consumers are of course attracted to Wal-Mart's low prices, but this is not without cost. Wal-Mart ruthlessly pressures suppliers to lower their costs, which Wal-Mart then passes on to consumers. But in order to meet this demand, suppliers are increasingly forced to outsource their production to low-wage and low-regulated countries like China, hence contributing to the decline in the US economy overall. But it is not harm to the economy that has brought Wal-Mart into conflict with the law. Rather it is charges of race and gender discrimination, firing workers for union activity, and other acts of exploitation, such as not paying workers for overtime, forcing them to work "off the clock," and locking doors to prevent them from leaving. These practices have resulted in scores of civil lawsuits and complaints to the Equal Employment Opportunity Commission and the NLRB (Featherstone 2005).

We have already noted some of the economic and physical costs to consumers associated with the motor vehicle industry, including those related to the Ford Pinto, which is not the only dangerous vehicle manufactured by Ford over the years. But neither is Ford alone. The "sidesaddle" fuel tanks on General Motors pickups and trucks built between 1973 and 1991, for instance, are estimated to have caused over 1,800 deaths, making it "the worst fire-crash fire defect in the history of the United States" (Center for Auto Safety 2008:1). And faulty rear-end latches on Chrysler minivans built between 1984 and 1995 resulted in passengers (especially children) in moderate-speed rear-end collisions being thrown out of those vehicles, killing an estimated 37 people (Safetyforum.com 2003).

At the beginning of the new millennium, Ford was once again embroiled in a major product-defect case. This case involved Firestone tires manufactured by Bridgestone Corporation, which were commonly used on

Ford's Explorer sports utility vehicle (SUV) as well as some other Ford vehicles. The defective tires, which were prone to tread separation that caused blowouts at high speeds, are estimated to have caused over 200 traffic deaths and 700 injuries. The tragedies are made even more egregious by the fact that both Bridgestone and Ford knew about the problem but failed to do anything about it. Bridgestone's initial response to the revelation of the defect was to blame Ford, since the Explorer was dangerously prone to rollover accidents, even though Ford had advertised the SUV as handling like a car. Some 20 million tires were recalled as both companies settled lawsuits in the millions of dollars (*Nation* 2000; Naughton 2000; *Wisconsin State Journal* 2002).

The Vioxx controversy discussed previously is just one of many corporate crimes against consumers involving the pharmaceutical industry. One of the noteworthy cases over the past few decades involved the drug thalidomide. In the early 1960s, thousands of pregnant (mostly European) women who had taken thalidomide, which was prescribed for morning sickness and sleeping disorders, had given birth to severely deformed infants. Although thalidomide was first developed in Europe, Richardson-Merrell, a US corporation, purchased the rights to sell it in the United States even though it knew the drug had already been withdrawn from the German market because of suspected birth defects. The FDA did prohibit the sale of thalidomide in the United States, despite heavy lobbying from Richardson-Merrell, but not before the corporation had distributed free pills for doctors to pass on to patients (Dowie & Marshall 1980).

In the early 1970s, another pharmaceutical corporation, the A.H. Robbins Company, marketed an intrauterine device (IUD) for birth control called the Dalkon Shield to about 2.2 million women in the United States and another 2.3 million worldwide. Sold without adequate premarket testing, the Dalkon Shield turned out to be both ineffective and harmful. A design defect in the wick used to insert and remove the IUD allowed bacteria to travel up into the uterus, where it caused infection. Thousands of women who used the device were rendered sterile, suffered miscarriages, or gave birth to stillborn or premature babies with congenital birth defects. At least 18 women in the United States alone died from its use before the FDA forced its withdrawal from the US market. A.H. Robbins, however, continued to sell the Dalkon Shield abroad for at least another nine months. The company even persuaded the US Agency for International Development (USAID) to distribute it in over 40 countries overseas. One USAID official reported that the IUD was still being used in Pakistan, India, and possibly South Africa five years later. In the late 1980s, after paying millions of dollars to settle thousands of lawsuits, A.H. Robbins agreed to a settlement and declared bankruptcy, reorganized, and established a $2.5 billion fund to compensate victims (Ehrenreich et al. 1979; Mintz 1985; Perry & Dawson 1985).

In 1980, women bore the costs of another harmful product when Procter & Gamble (P&G) sent 60 million sample packages of its superabsorbent Rely tampon to American consumers, representing over 80 percent of US households. Unfortunately, Rely not only contained cancer-causing synthetics such as polyurethane, but also allowed potentially deadly bacteria to grow and move from the vagina or cervix into the uterus and then the bloodstream, causing a possibly fatal condition known as **toxic shock syndrome**. Symptoms of this disease include high fever, vomiting, sunburn-like skin rash, peeling skin on hands and feet, and damage to internal organs, including the lungs, which fill with fluid until respiratory or cardiac failure ensues. At P&G, complaints about such problems were considered routine—the company had been receiving over 100 complaints per month—and company officials first attributed them to allergies. In just the first year of distribution, however, the Centers for Disease Control documented 55 fatal and over 1,000 nonfatal cases of toxic shock syndrome. P&G did bow to FDA pressure to pull Rely off the market, and it agreed to pay for a massive advertising campaign to warn women to stop using the product. But the corporation never admitted that the product "was defective or that they had done anything wrong" (Rosoff et al. 2007:134; Swasy 1993).

During the 1980s, the Eli Lilly pharmaceutical corporation marketed Oraflex, a painkiller intended for arthritis patients. When the company asked the FDA to approve the sale of the drug in the United States, it did not inform the FDA of at least 26 deaths that had been linked to Oraflex overseas. The drug was sold in the United States for about six months, but it was withdrawn after reports of deaths began circulating in the news. The company and one executive were criminally prosecuted; they pled guilty and were fined (the company was fined $25,000 and the executive $15,000). It is alleged that Oraflex caused the deaths of about 50 people overall as well as serious liver and kidney damage in more than 900 others (Coleman 2002; Rosoff et al. 2007).

Decades after Upton Sinclair exposed contaminated food products in the meat-packing industry, millions of Americans continue to become ill from food poisoning, and some 5,000 die each year, from diseased meat and poultry products, some as a result of corporate law-violating practices (Rosoff et al. 2007). In 1998 it was revealed that the Department of Agriculture had been "permitting hundreds of meat and poultry plants to operate virtually uninterrupted even while federal inspectors [filed] tens of thousands of citations against them for unsanitary conditions and food contamination" (Jaspin & Montgomery 1998:A7). One Arkansas plant operated by Tyson Foods was cited for 1,753 "critical" violations in 1996 alone, yet it did not lose a single day of production ("critical" is defined by the Department of Agriculture as a condition that is "certain" not only to cause contamination, but also to reach consumers and to have a detrimental effect

upon them). Clearly, law enforcement against food-industry violators was not one of the priorities of the Clinton administration, perhaps because of Clinton's long-standing ties to Tyson, which go back to his early political career in Arkansas (Hitchens 1999; Lewis 1996).

A highly significant case in the 1990s involved silicone-gel implants used for breast enlargement. Although scientists working for Dow Corning, the leading implant manufacturer, had been concerned about implant leaks and ruptures since the 1970s, Dow falsified some of its quality-control tests and continued to sell the product to some 150,000 women annually for three decades. Dow claims that its critics have not proven any adverse effects from the silicone implant. However, thousands of women have filed legal claims against Dow, alleging that silicone released into their bodies has caused tremors, extreme fatigue, and connective tissue diseases such as rheumatoid arthritis, scleroderma, and lupus. Plaintiffs also believe that children breast-fed by mothers with silicone in their system have suffered similar symptoms. Dow and other breast-implant manufacturers have lost several multimillion-dollar civil lawsuits. In 1995, Dow filed for bankruptcy after determining that an agreement it had made the year earlier, to pay over $4 billion in liability costs, would not cover the claims against it (Rosoff et al. 2007).

Another significant area of anticorporate litigation in the 1990s involved the insidious injuries caused by tobacco products. Smoking has been recognized for decades "as the primary preventable cause of death in the United States" (Rosoff et al. 2007:108). Its role in heart disease and lung cancer is incontrovertible. Even research conducted by the tobacco industry itself, dating back to the 1960s, recognized these adverse effects, although this information was not disclosed until it was leaked three decades later. And it was not until the mid-1990s that we learned that the industry manipulated the level of nicotine beyond the amount that occurs naturally in tobacco in order to increase the addictive quality of the product. Internal corporate memos indicate that tobacco company officials viewed cigarettes as nothing more than "nicotine-delivery systems" and saw themselves as being "in the business of selling nicotine" (cited on p. 109). Yet they continued to deny that they were manipulating nicotine levels, and they repeatedly suppressed research that demonstrated nicotine's addictive properties.

It is now also clear that tobacco corporations, in spite of their denials, intentionally marketed their products to teenagers. Internal documents from Philip Morris, for example, show that in the 1970s the company commissioned a poll to ascertain the smoking habits of youths as young as 14 years of age. Philip Morris wanted to know which competing brands were discouraging the use of its Marlboro cigarettes among the young. An R.J. Reynolds internal memo indicates that company officials felt "unfairly constrained from directly promoting cigarettes to the youth market," but that

they believed it was imperative nevertheless to "offer . . . the '21 and under' group . . . an opportunity to use our brands" (cited on p. 112).

Much of our current knowledge of industry suppression of information comes from the Liggett Group, one of the smallest of the main tobacco corporations, which broke ranks with the industry by agreeing to settle claims against it and by releasing what it described as a "treasure trove of incriminating documents" from 30 years of meetings with other tobacco companies (cited on p. 111). Although most individual lawsuits against tobacco companies have been unsuccessful, in 1998 the attorneys general of all 50 US states settled lawsuits totaling some $250 billion to recoup public funds that have been spent treating tobacco-related illnesses.

More recently, problems with toxic products imported from China have been in the news. The initial concern was over dog and cat food. David Goldstein describes the early signs of the problem, which were first publicized toward the end of 2006:

> America's dogs and cats started dying painful, mysterious and sometimes gruesome deaths. . . . Previously healthy pets would suddenly vomit blood and bile, produce bloody diarrhea and lose control of bladder and bowel. Some animals displayed unquenchable thirst, while others refused to eat or drink at all. Victims became lethargic and withdrawn, their limbs wobbly, eyes cloudy and stomachs painfully distended. Then seizures set in. (2007:5)

It is estimated that between December 2006 and February 2007 alone, after food importers began monitoring the problem, as many as 39,000 pets were sickened or killed. The problem was finally traced to contaminated wheat gluten in the food.

In the ensuing months, we then learned about "antifreeze in toothpaste, banned antibiotics in farmed seafood and lead paint on Thomas the Tank Engine toys—all imported from China and all unwittingly consumed or otherwise used by Americans for months, if not years" (Goldstein 2007:5). Problems with lead in other toys from China, such as children's necklaces and fake Halloween teeth, soon came to light. We also learned of Chinese-manufactured baby cribs, some of them best-selling models in the United States, causing the deaths of at least three children who suffered falls resulting from faulty rail design (Possley 2007; Simmons 2007).

Questions were raised as to why the US government was not protecting the public from these harmful products. The deregulation policies of the George W. Bush administration, in particular, were harshly criticized. It was actually the *Chicago Tribune,* not the Consumer Product Safety Commission (CPSC), for example, that discovered the problem with the cribs and pressed the latter to issue a recall. Indeed, Nancy Ford, head of the CPSC, had throughout her term of office resisted Congress's efforts to

increase her agency's staff and responsibility so that it could more effectively monitor problems like this. As a result of the China controversy, however, we can expect enactment of proregulatory legislation that is likely to initiate "the most comprehensive changes in the CPSC since the Reagan administration dramatically scaled back the agency in the 1980s" (Tankersley & Possley 2008:A5; Possley 2007).

Costs to the General Public

One does not have to work under hazardous conditions or use dangerous products to be harmed by corporate law-violating behavior. Since World War II, for example, the production of hazardous synthetic chemicals and other toxic waste has increased dramatically in the United States. Today, billions of pounds of waste are added to the environment each year, a large majority of which is disposed of unsafely. The physical harm of exposure to toxic substances in our ground, water, and air is immense; and it is estimated that 70–90 percent of all cancers may be environmentally induced (Friedrichs 2007; Reiman 2007; Szasz 1986a).

One of the most famous cases of toxic waste disposal involved the Hooker Chemical Corporation. During the 1940s and early 1950s, Hooker burned and stored millions of pounds of chemical waste, some of it containing carcinogenic substances such as dioxin and benzene, in Love Canal, an abandoned waterway near Niagara Falls. The canal was subsequently covered up and turned into a housing development. By the late 1970s, contaminated black sludge began seeping into the basements of homes, and resi-

Unsafe disposal of hazardous waste harms the environment and endangers the health of the population.

dents reported an unusually high number of miscarriages and stillborn and deformed babies. A 1980 study found that over 900 Love Canal children were suffering from "seizures, learning problems, eye and skin irritations, incontinence, and severe abdominal pains" (Griffin 1988:27). Internal Hooker documents indicate that the company had known about the problem as early as 1958 but had failed to notify the residents. In 1984, Hooker settled a lawsuit and agreed to pay $20 million to residents who had been forced to move from their homes. In 1995, after 16 years of resistance, Occidental Petroleum, the parent company of Hooker, agreed to reimburse the federal government $129 million for cleaning up the site (Friedrichs 2007; Rosoff et al. 2007).

Over the years, other communities throughout the United States have suffered problems similar to those in Love Canal, and residents have been forced to evacuate their homes because of leaks from hazardous waste sites or contamination of drinking water. As these problems disproportionately affect poor, minority residents, some have raised concerns about **environmental racism**. One early study, for example, estimated that in 1987, about a third of the hazardous waste landfills in the contiguous United States were located in just five southern states, and that 60 percent of the waste contained in these sites was located in three predominately African American zip code areas (Bullard & Wright 1989–1990). A large body of subsequent research has also documented extensive racial and ethnic disparities in exposure to hazardous waste throughout the country, with black and Hispanic residents more likely to be exposed than white residents (e.g., Cole & Foster 2001; Mohai & Saha 2007; Pulido et al. 1996; Stretesky & Lynch 1999).

For decades, harbors, beaches, and waterways all around the country have been polluted with toxic waste. These materials enter the food chain and have deleterious consequences that may not be fully recognized for years. In 1988, for instance, the New York–New Jersey coast was inundated with medical waste that washed onto public beaches. "Among the debris were hypodermic needles, IV tubing, catheter bags, and vials of blood—some of which tested positive for AIDS" (Rosoff et al. 2007:152). Some of this debris was dumped by disreputable haulers who contracted with hospitals to dispose of the waste properly but then disposed of it illegally. Some of the waste, however, is suspected to have come from hospital personnel disposing of it themselves. Nine million people lived in the affected area.

In a well-publicized industrial accident in 1984, a deadly poisonous gas was leaked from a US-owned Union Carbide (UC) plant in Bhopal, an impoverished city in India. It is estimated that as many as 5,000 people died and 200,000 were injured (20,000 permanently) from this tragedy. The gas leak apparently occurred as a result of UC's decision to cut corners on safety, even after it had received warnings from its engineers about a potential problem at the plant. Civil lawsuits were brought against UC by injured par-

ties and survivors of those who were killed, which the company settled for $470 million. Indian authorities indicted top UC executive Warren Anderson for manslaughter, but Anderson sought refuge in the United States and avoided prosecution (Coleman 2002; Friedrichs 2007; Venkatesan 2003; Vosters 2003).

In 1989, another notable accident involved the oil tanker *Exxon Valdez,* which spilled 11 million gallons of oil when it struck a reef off the coast of Alaska, devastating the wildlife, environment, and economy of the region. Questions regarding Exxon Corporation's responsibility for the disaster arose as evidence surfaced that the company had known of the ship captain's drinking problem but had failed to take appropriate action. In addition, Exxon had reduced the size of the crew, causing the remaining crew members to work while fatigued. The company paid $100 million in criminal fines, $1 billion in civil settlements, and $2.5 billion in punitive damages, the latter of which was reduced to about $500 million after a successful appeal (Friedrichs 2007; Oliphant 2008; *Wisconsin State Journal* 2006a).

More recently, in the late 1990s, residents in the Hickory Woods neighborhood of Buffalo, New York, 25 miles down the road from Love Canal, began complaining about "Love Canal symptoms" caused by toxic waste byproducts left over from the operation of a steel plant (Goldbaum 2000; Rosenberg 2003). Environmentalists cited delays and funding cuts in the federal government's Superfund cleanup program as part of the problem. Environmentalists also noted that the George W. Bush administration, as in the days of Sewergate, had been cutting deals with offending corporations, placing the brunt of cleanup costs around the country on taxpayers, not polluters (Daly 2003; Grunwald 2003). Additionally, environmentalists were critical of the administration's failure to act on the problem of global warming; and they expressed concern about corporate-sponsored "think tanks" that seek to undermine the general scientific consensus that human-made pollutants are a significant cause of climate change (Kennedy 2004; Mooney 2005). But while the atmosphere continues to heat up, oil companies—including Exxon, which is now part of ExxonMobil—are "buying up rights to explore Arctic and sub-Arctic lands soon-to-be exposed [or already exposed] as global warming melts the polar ice" (Kurlantzick 2006:26).

In addition to such physical harms, the general public also bears the economic costs of corporate misconduct. For example, through income tax evasion, corporations avoid paying the US government untold billions of dollars—money that it must collect from taxpaying citizens instead—by engaging in fraud, funneling money into dubious tax shelters and offshore banks, and reincorporating abroad (Beinart 2002; Friedrichs 2007; Komisar 2001). As well, private corporations that conduct business with the US government in areas such as weapon manufacturing, privatization of military functions, homeland security, disaster relief, energy supplies and services,

and construction (corporations such as General Dynamics, Lockheed Martin, Blackwater USA, and Halliburton) reap billions of dollars through unethical and illegal practices such as fraudulent overcharging, the provision of shoddy products and services, outsourcing contracted work for profit, noncompetitive "no-bid" contracts, and open-ended contracts that allow companies to keep coming back to the government for more and more money (Klein 2007; Scahill 2007; Simon 2006). Such practices have been readily apparent during the Iraq War and the aftermath of Hurricane Katrina. Taxpayers also are bilked through Medicare and Medicaid insurance fraud by hospitals, health-maintenance organizations, home-care providers, medical laboratories and equipment suppliers, and pharmaceutical companies (Friedrichs 2007; Levine 2007; Rosoff et al. 2007; Simon 2006).

The savings and loan scandal. One of the most devastating financial debacles in the history of the United States involved the savings and loan (S&L) scandal of the 1980s. By the time the borrowed money for the entire taxpayer bailout is paid back, some 20 years into the twenty-first century, the estimated bill may exceed an unfathomable $1 trillion. Moreover, it is no small matter that criminal activity was a major factor in 70–80 percent of the failed S&Ls and that as much as 25 percent of the losses resulted from crime (Rosoff et al. 2007).

What was this scandal all about? The federally insured S&L system was established in the early 1930s as a depression-era measure designed to ensure the availability of home loans, promote the construction of new homes, and protect depositors from the types of financial devastation (massive investment losses and withdrawal of bank funds) that followed the 1929 stock market crash. Federal regulations prohibited S&Ls from making risky investments, essentially confining them "to the issuance of home loans within 50 miles of their home office" (Calavita & Pontell 1990:331). By the 1970s, S&Ls could no longer compete with other financial institutions such as mortgage companies (for home loans) and mutual funds and money markets (for savings investments). They were locked into long-term, low-interest loans they had previously made and were prohibited by law from offering adjustable-rate mortgages and from paying more than 5.5 percent interest on deposits (even during a period of double-digit inflation).

During the 1970s the S&L industry's net worth declined dramatically, and by 1980 the great majority of S&Ls, 85 percent, were losing money. At that time, a complete bailout of the industry, utilizing taxpayer dollars, might have cost about $15 billion. But instead of cutting losses at this level, President Reagan and the US Congress opted for a strategy of deregulation. Federal legislation passed from 1980 to 1982 phased out restrictions on interest rates and opened up new areas of investment for S&Ls, which were now authorized to "make consumer loans up to 30 percent of their total

assets; make commercial, corporate or business loans; and invest in nonresidential real estate worth up to 40 percent of their assets" (Calavita & Pontell 1993:530; Jackson 1990; Pizzo et al. 1989).

The new (de)regulations also gave the S&Ls unprecedented access to funds by removing the 5 percent limit on brokered deposits (brokered deposits are "jumbo" or aggregated deposits placed by middlemen that yield high interest rates for investors and exorbitant commissions for brokers). These funds were used to finance risky speculative investments that had the potential for either high payoffs or financial calamity. In addition, S&Ls were allowed to provide 100 percent financing to borrowers, essentially giving them risk-free loans. And the government dropped the requirement that S&Ls "have at least 400 stockholders with no one owning more than 25 percent of stock," thereby allowing a single entrepreneur to own and operate a federally insured S&L (Calavita & Pontell 1993:530). At the same time, the amount of federal depository insurance was raised from $40,000 to $100,000 per account.

Deregulation was "the cure that killed" (Calavita & Pontell 1993:312). S&Ls lost billions of dollars through legal investments that were previously illegal, and the deregulated climate opened the industry to insider abuse and criminality. Kitty Calavita and Henry Pontell (1990, 1993) identify three general categories of fraudulent activities that occurred: unlawful risk-taking, collective embezzlement, and illegal cover-ups.

Unlawful risk-taking involved S&Ls extending their investment activities beyond the levels allowed by law—for example, by exceeding the 40 percent limit on commercial real estate loans. In addition, S&Ls failed to conduct adequate marketability studies required by law to insure the feasibility of their investments.

Unlike ordinary instances of embezzlement, which typically entail lone, relatively subordinate employees stealing from the company in which they work, **collective embezzlement** involved misuse and theft of funds by S&L top management. During the 1980s, some S&L owners and managers treated their institutions as personal slush funds, throwing elaborate parties and purchasing expensive luxury goods like artwork, antiques, yachts, airplanes, and vacation homes. They also violated the law by giving themselves and their associates excessive "salaries as well as bonuses, dividend payments, and perquisites" beyond what was "reasonable and commensurate with their duties and responsibilities" (Government Accounting Office, cited in Calavita & Pontell 1990:323). In addition, S&L operators engaged in a number of fraudulent loan schemes. For instance, "straw borrowers" outside of an S&L were used to obtain loans on behalf of individuals within the S&L, thus circumventing the legal limit on the proportion of an institution's loans that could be made to insiders. Another scheme entailed insiders from one S&L authorizing loans to insiders of another S&L in return for a similar loan.

Illegal cover-ups entailed the manipulation and misrepresentation of an S&L's financial books and records to conceal fraudulent practices from government regulators, hence preventing regulators from learning about an S&L's impending financial insolvency and delaying the closure of the institution. Regulators were not always adversaries of S&Ls, however. Some, wooed by lucrative "job offers at salaries several times . . . their modest government wages," even collaborated with S&L operators to shield them from scrutiny and criminal prosecution (Calavita & Pontell 1993:535). And S&Ls also poured millions of dollars into the campaign coffers of influential members of Congress, who shielded them from regulatory oversight.

By 1990, over 300 S&L executives, accountants, and lawyers had been convicted of criminal law violations related to the scandal. The average prison term they received was just over two years. The average sentence for ordinary bank robbery at the time was nearly eight years (Simon 2002).

Insider trading and financial fraud. Some observers believe that capitalism in the United States today has evolved into a "casino economy," whereby money is "made from speculative ventures designed to bring windfall profits from having placed a clever bet. . . . In contrast to **industrial capitalism**, where profits are dependent on the production and sale of goods and services, profits in **finance capitalism** increasingly come . . . from . . . [buying and selling stock]. . . . Nothing is . . . produced but capital gains" (Calavita & Pontell 1990:335–336).

Who benefits from this type of economy, and is the game fair? Corporate profits have risen as companies have downsized and put countless employees out of work. As Rosoff and colleagues note, "It has become an economic fact of life that stock prices generally jump when companies terminate workers" (2007:263). In addition, many investors do not play by the rules. In 1934, the Securities Exchange Act criminalized **insider trading**. Insider trading occurs when "stockholders, directors, officers, or any recipients of information not publicly available . . . take advantage of such limited disclosure for their own benefit" (p. 247). The logic behind the prohibition of insider trading is that the legitimacy of capitalism depends upon the expectation of a positive association between the economic risk taken by an investor and the potential return to that investor. But "the insider trader collects the highest returns with little risk at all, while the ordinary investor, who assumes most of the risk, is exploited like some naive bumpkin lured into a rigged game of chance" (p. 262).

Between 1934 and 1979, the SEC took just 53 actions against insider trading. Between 1980 and 1987, it took 177 (Friedrichs 2007). Indeed, the 1980s was a period in which the crimes of such high-flying insider traders as Ivan Boesky and Michael Milken dominated the news. Although some of these traders were prosecuted, they still profited in the long run. For exam-

ple, in 1987, Boesky was fined $100 million and sentenced to three years in prison. It is estimated, however, that he made about $200 million in illegal trades alone. And in 1989, Milken was fined a record-breaking $600 million and sentenced to two years in prison; his financial dealings had earned him over $1 billion (Rosoff et al. 2007; Stewart 1991).

Perhaps because insider trading continues to be profitable, the practice has by no means declined. The widely publicized case of homemaking diva and corporate entrepreneur Martha Stewart reminds us of this truism. Stewart, after apparently receiving privileged information from her stockbroker, sold some 4,000 shares of ImClone Systems Incorporated stock the day before "a negative government report on the ImClone cancer drug Erbitux sent its share price falling" (McClam 2003:D10). Stewart avoided losses of about $50,000 from the deal but was subsequently indicted and convicted on criminal charges, for which she served five months in prison (Rosoff et al. 2007).

Despite the publicity Stewart received, her actions pale in comparison to the devastating acts of financial fraud perpetrated by corporate executives at scores of companies that were aided and abetted by numerous other corrupt accounting, stockbrokerage, and investment-banking firms. Enron is arguably the "poster child" corporation that has come to represent this multibillion-dollar scandal (Friedrichs 2007). Under the leadership of Kenneth Lay and Jeffrey Skilling, Enron was transformed from a "small pipeline operation" into a powerful energy-trading business that was at one time "nominally" the eighth largest corporation in the country (Kuttner 2003a:48). Enron capitalized on its dominant market position to create an artificial energy shortage that enabled it to raise prices, most notably in California. As that state was experiencing energy blackouts and escalating prices, Enron's stock price soared. But Enron was not really making as much money as it appeared to be—it was "cooking the books." It did this by creating myriad corporate subsidiaries and using these subsidiaries and other accounting gimmicks to disguise debt and financial losses.

When the bubble finally burst, Enron investors lost about $60 billion, which included the pensions and retirement savings of thousands of people, among them Enron employees who were prohibited by the company from selling their stock. In the meantime, just before the stock price collapsed, Enron executives collectively unloaded nearly $1 billion worth of stock for themselves. Lay and Shilling were convicted of multiple crimes, although Lay died before sentencing and his conviction was posthumously vacated. Shilling was required to pay about $50 million into a restitution fund for Enron victims and is currently serving a 24-year sentence (Pasha 2006; Reiman 2007; Rosoff et al. 2007).

Global Crossing (an optical fiber company), WorldCom (a telecommunications company), Adelphia (a cable company), and Quest Communica-

tions (a telephone company) were among the most well-known of the other corporations that lost billions of dollars through fraud. Prestigious accounting firms like Arthur Andersen helped these companies (Enron included) manipulate their books, and investment-banking firms like Citigroup and J. P. Morgan Chase & Company lent money and touted their clients' stocks to line their own pockets at the expense of naive investors. Even Dick Cheney, before being elected vice president, got into the act. As chief executive officer of Halliburton from 1995 to 2000, Cheney cashed out stock worth about $30 million before he resigned and before Halliburton's stock plummeted amid allegations that the company had engaged in the types of schemes that had brought Enron and others down (Bussey 2002; Gordon 2002; Reiman 2007; Toffler 2003).

More recently, amid the first installment of the multibillion dollar taxpayer bailout approved by the government to help prop up failing financial institutions in 2008, the FBI initiated a fraud investigation of several major financial and insurance firms (CNNMoney 2008). One notable case involves Bernard Madoff, former chairman of the Nasdaq stock market and founder of Bernard L. Madoff Investment Securities. For years, Madoff perpetrated a fraudulent **Ponzi scheme**, bilking investors out of some $65 billion and sending them monthly statements about stock trades that were purely fictional (Hays 2009). A Ponzi scheme, named after Charles Ponzi, a conman of the early twentieth century, is a pyramid swindle that offers investors "unusually high returns, with early investors paid off with money from later investors" rather than from genuine profits (Honan & Wilchins 2008:1; Rosoff et al. 2007). The scheme is built on a "house of cards," as it requires an ever-increasing flow of money from new investors to keep it going.

Questions have also been raised about the **predatory lending** practices of some of the firms involved in the bailout, which have caused home buyers to default on their loans and lose their homes. Predatory lending entails the practice of deceiving borrowers into accepting unfavorable terms, such as charging them excessive payment fees, convincing them to accept variable rates that "balloon" into exorbitant payments, and steering them away from loans with better terms that they may have been qualified to receive. Moreover, the recent wave of predatory lending has disproportionately targeted African American home buyers (Center for Responsible Lending 2008; Oliver & Shapiro 2008).

The Business of Organized Crime

Though corporations are set up for legitimate business purposes, law violations all too often occur during the course of ostensibly legitimate activities. Moreover, the same organizational resources that are used for lawful behavior are the ones that are used for unlawful behavior. The essential difference

between corporate crime and organized crime is that the latter sets up its enterprises explicitly for illegal gain. Nevertheless, organized crime often resembles and blurs into legitimate business. Organized crime also obeys what Sheila Balkan and colleagues describe as "the general law of capitalist accumulation"—that is, the reinvestment of profits to ensure expansion of the enterprise (1980:151).

The mainstay of organized crime as a distinct form of criminality is its systematic involvement in illegal goods and services. It is a multibillion-dollar industry that derives its largest source of revenues from drugs, illegal gambling, and loan-sharking; but it also is involved in high-stakes thievery (hijacking cargo from trucks, warehouses, docksides, and airports), stealing stocks and bonds from brokerage houses, and fencing valuable property (including motor vehicles). Other areas of criminality include prostitution and pornography, cigarette and alcohol bootlegging, arms trafficking, and arson-for-profit. Since the late 1970s, illegal disposal of hazardous waste has been a growing area of activity; such enterprises may be run as clandestine operations or as legitimate businesses that are operated illegally (Abadinsky 2007; Albanese 2004; McCaghy et al. 2003).

In addition, organized crime has significant holdings in legal businesses in such areas as the building trades and construction, the garment, fish, meat, and liquor industries, stevedoring (loading and unloading of ships), garbage collection, vending machines, casinos and hotels, restaurants and bars, entertainment, real estate, and securities and investment businesses. While these businesses allow organized crime to earn profits legally, they also generate substantial untaxed income that is skimmed off the top. Legitimate businesses also provide organized crime with a front for operating illicit activities, with a tax cover to report earnings to the Internal Revenue Service, and with a facade of respectability that allows them to circulate among the social and political elite. Sometimes, organized crime will buy into or infiltrate another business and draw on its established line of credit to order products (which are sold like "stolen property") until the business is bled dry and forced into bankruptcy. At other times, organized crime will use its readiness to engage in violence to muscle out competitors who operate their businesses "by the book."

Extortion is another area of profit-making for organized crime. Extortion includes the sale of "insurance" to proprietors to ensure that their businesses "remain free of unusual 'accidents,' such as delivery people being beaten, store windows being broken, merchandise being vandalized," and so forth (McCaghy et al. 2003:272). It also may entail intimidation of either employees or employers and managers in labor negotiations. Workers can be "kept in line" (e.g., deterred from organizing unions and striking) through threats of violence. Employers and managers, in turn, can be forced to grant concessions to workers through threats of strikes or walkouts.

Over the years, organized crime has infiltrated the leadership of some labor unions, referred to as **labor racketeering**, most notably the International Brotherhood of Teamsters. Although organized crime has at times used its clout to negotiate favorable contracts for workers, it also has used its position of power to plunder union benefit and pension funds and to invest these funds in other organized crime enterprises. On other occasions, organized crime has used its influence in unions to negotiate **sweetheart contracts** with employers. A sweetheart contract is an agreement between union leaders and union employers and managers that includes terms unfavorable to rank-and-file workers or permits employers and managers to violate collective bargaining agreements (e.g., using nonunion labor) in return for payoffs to the corrupt union leadership (Abadinsky 2007; Albanese 2004; Block & Chambliss 1981).

The Blurred Boundaries Between Organized and Corporate Crime

Several criminological studies have explored the blurred boundaries between organized crime and corporate crime. As already noted, organized crime is involved in the illegal disposal of hazardous waste. Disreputable haulers dump hazardous materials into landfills, sewers, and waterways, along roadways, or just about anywhere they wish. This illegal service saves millions of dollars for corporate manufacturers that would otherwise incur far greater costs if they had to dispose of their waste safely themselves (Szasz 1986a).

Corporations are indeed fortunate that the **Resource Conservation and Recovery Act** (RCRA) of 1976 protected them from legal liability for what happens to the waste they turn over to haulers. In his research on the creation of the RCRA, Andrew Szasz (1986a) documented how corporations lobbied heavily for a regulatory structure that would place the burden of responsibility on those involved in the final stage of disposal. He notes that the federal government could have mandated "generators to treat all of their wastes themselves, or legislated that generators retain full responsibility for their wastes even if they assign them to other parties for shipping and disposal" (p. 12).

Corporate generators of hazardous waste argue that "they do not know they are dealing with organized crime" and that "they are in fact being cheated because they pay large amounts for treatment and disposal that are not performed" (p. 17). But since corporations "explicitly fought for RCRA language that entitled them to a state of ignorance," Szasz finds their claims unconvincing. He observes, for instance, that "organized crime control of garbage hauling and disposal had been considered a fact of life in New Jersey for decades" and rational industrial managers "would have had ample reason to distrust the identity of their contractual partners" (p. 17).

On the other hand, Szasz does not think that corporations consciously wished to create a regulatory structure that encouraged organized crime involvement in hazardous waste disposal. Rather, they simply acted out of a general attitude of indifference and resistance to accepting "social responsibility for . . . the environmental and public health consequences" of their operations (p. 19).

The tobacco industry is another area of commerce that illustrates the blurred boundaries between organized and corporate crime. As a result of the $250 billion settlement to recoup public funds spent treating tobacco-related illnesses, together with declining cigarette sales in the United States, tobacco companies have increasingly looked to foreign markets to sustain their profits. Evidence indicates that illegal (tax-free) smuggling is a significant way for tobacco products to make their way into these markets. This occurs through criminal organizations, which are sometimes aided and abetted by tobacco companies themselves (Dickey & Nordland 2000; Schapiro 2002).

Take the case of British American Tobacco (BAT), the parent company of Brown & Williamson. One BAT salesman responsible for marketing BAT products in Colombia estimates that, at one time, 95 percent of BAT's cigarettes in that country were contraband. He says that BAT encouraged and benefited from smuggling as a way to establish market dominance for its own products and those of its parent company. Evidence suggests that Philip Morris did the same—for example, by heavily advertising its cigarettes in Colombia at a time when its legal imports were next to zero. Both BAT and Philip Morris also initiated mass advertising campaigns and provided local distributors with favorable wholesale prices at a time "when their sales were almost entirely illegal" (Schapiro 2002:13). Additionally, the companies launched a rather cynical ploy, pressuring and bribing Colombian government officials to "lower taxes as a means of reducing the incentive for smuggling" (p. 15). With the lower tax rates in place, the companies gradually increased their legal imports. On top of all this, evidence suggests that criminal organizations within Colombia used drug profits from their US sales to purchase the contraband tobacco, making the tobacco companies complicit in the laundering of drug proceeds.

This is a global problem, and in 1999 and 2000 several countries in Latin America, Europe, and Canada filed racketeering lawsuits against tobacco corporations (racketeering in this context refers to an ongoing criminal conspiracy). Most of the suits have been dismissed on technical grounds, but some are still ongoing. Les Thompson, the former president of Northern Brands, a Canadian affiliate of US-based R.J. Reynolds, pled guilty to criminal charges. According to Thompson, Northern Brands attempted to avoid paying Canadian taxes on its cigarettes by shipping "five billion cigarettes per year to the US side of a small . . . Indian reservation" on the Canadian-US border with the intention of smuggling them back into

Canada for illegal resale. Thompson also said that R.J. Reynolds set up Northern Brands "expressly for the purpose of smuggling cigarettes back into Canada and was fully aware of the affiliate's efforts to encourage and support smuggling" ("Smoking Gun" 2003:3).

Still another area where organized crime interfaces with legitimate business is arson-for-profit. In his research in the city of Boston, James Brady (1983) documented the collaboration between bankers and organized crime businessmen, whom Brady calls "racketeers," in arson-for-profit schemes. Brady found that arson in Boston was not randomly distributed. For the most part, it occurred in poor neighborhoods (primarily minority) and in buildings in these neighborhoods owned by absentee landlords (primarily white). There was curiously little arson in government-owned housing projects occupied by the poor. Brady connects this pattern to declining property values in neighborhoods where most of the arsons occurred. Some landlords, no longer finding their investments worthwhile, stopped paying their mortgages, essentially abandoning their properties. Some tried to recoup their losses by burning their properties and collecting insurance money. But this is not, argues Brady, the crux of the arson problem.

The incentive for banks to be complicit in arson-for-profit stems from the practice of **redlining**. Redlining is a discriminatory lending practice that denies residents and small businesses in some communities loans for home and business purchases and improvements. Although redlining is illegal, banks prefer to lend money to people who invest in more profitable suburban areas. Redlining, according to Brady, is a principle cause of depreciating property values in the inner city, for as property values decline, landlords lose their incentive to repair their buildings and may even abandon them altogether.

Banks that foreclose on properties with unpaid mortgages are left holding an investment with little market value. Their association with racketeers, however, helps them recover their profits. In Boston, Brady found that racketeers were willing to purchase these properties from banks, provided they were required to pay little or no down payment. Banks not only agreed to this arrangement but also were willing to write mortgage loans that far exceeded actual market values of the properties.

With the artificial purchase price in hand, racketeers obtained additional second, third, and fourth mortgage loans and used this money to make other profitable investments. They also used the purchase price to acquire inflated insurance coverage. Then the racketeers hired professional arsonists to burn their buildings: "Often a series of fires of escalating scale [were] set to net the owner several partial insurance payments before the building [was] totally destroyed in one final blaze" (Brady 1983:11). Phony contractors were hired to "repair" the damage, and corrupt building inspectors were paid to file false reports, "concealing the fact that repairs were never made."

The banks profited from this ruse as well, often more than the racketeers themselves. As Brady notes:

> Since . . . the insurance company must pay the holder of the mortgage first in the event of a fire which destroys the building, . . . the potential losses represented by foreclosed properties are converted into a substantial profit for the bank because the new mortgage paid by the insurance company greatly exceeds the old bad debt assumed under foreclosure. . . . The relationship between banks and racketeers can become quite cozy as the racketeers return again and again to the same bank and often the same loan officer. (p. 11)

Why don't insurance companies do anything about this? Brady found that insurance companies seeking to expand their businesses did not want to develop a reputation for being tough on claims, and they were afraid of losing lawsuits if claimants who were denied payment took them to court. Neither did companies want to draw government attention to themselves, for fear it might lead to more regulation of the insurance industry itself. And some of the companies were owned by "foreign investors eager to break into the US insurance market . . . [who] were unaware of the scale of arson fraud in the United States" (p. 14). Brady describes one case where four insurance adjusters were convicted along with 28 other individuals for their participation in an elaborate arson-for-profit ring that included two finance company officers, four real estate agents, six lawyers, two housing contractors, a city housing inspector, the captain of the Boston arson squad, and the commander of the state fire marshal's arson squad, among others.

Another way in which banks benefit organized crime is through **money laundering**, the process by which illegal "dirty" money is made "clean" and recycled into the legitimate economy. Under US law, money laundering entails engaging in a financial transaction that the person knows to involve illegal proceeds, as well as attempts to conceal or disguise information about those proceeds or failing to comply with transaction reporting requirements (Abadinsky 2007).

Much of the money earned by organized crime is taken in as cash, most often in bills no larger than $20. When somebody shows up at a bank with a suitcase of small bills, bankers are surely aware that something is awry. Banks may even charge a percentage for accepting such deposits or for electronically transferring funds from one bank to another. In the United States, banks are required to report currency transactions of $10,000 or more. But this is not the case in many places abroad. Countries such as Austria, Panama, Switzerland, and the Cayman Islands, among others, "allow numbered bank accounts without identification of names" (Adler et al. 2007:364). Moreover, the sheer volume and speed of bank-to-bank electronic transfers make it "extremely difficult to trace . . . funds or document their

illegal nature" (Webster & McCampbell 1992:5). And complicit bank officials often accommodate organized crime by wiring the money between their bank's own account (rather than their customer's account) and the account of another bank, making the laundering of illegal funds nearly indistinguishable from legal banking transactions.

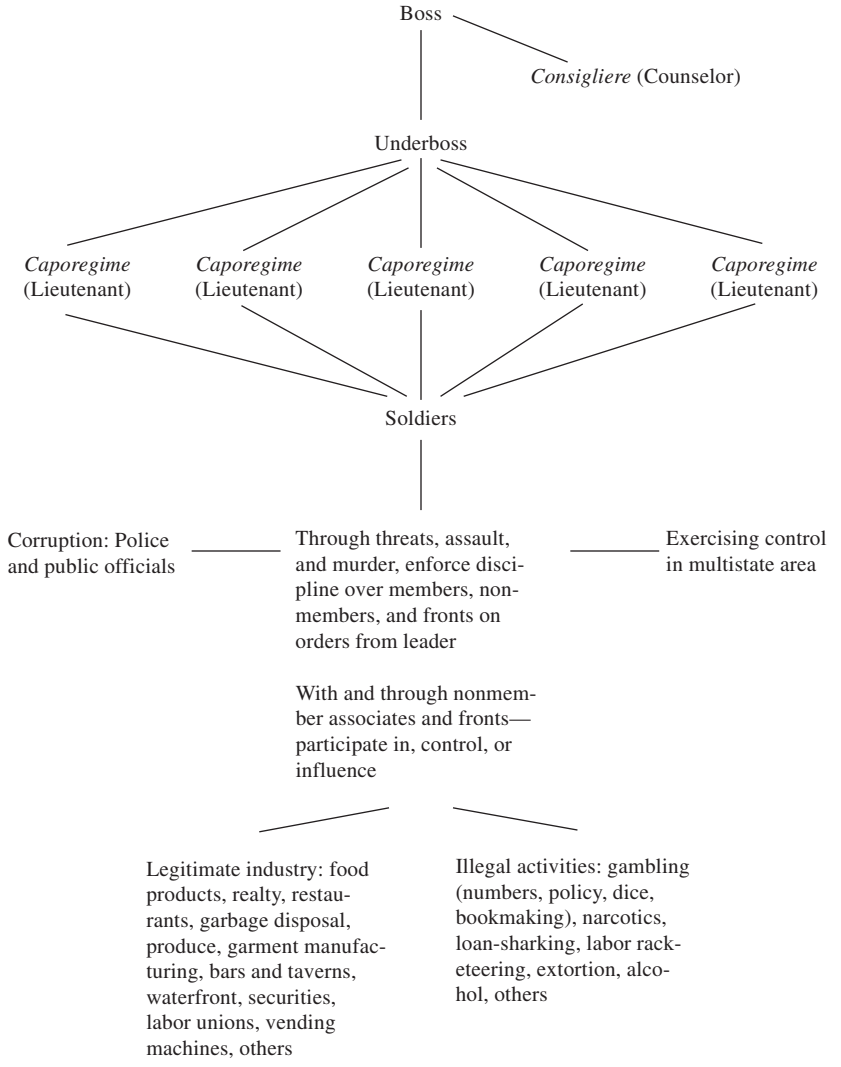
The Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI) illustrates a case where a bank's primary function was to provide financial services (including money laundering) to an assortment of drug and arms traffickers, smugglers, tax evaders, political dictators, and intelligence agencies around the globe. Established in 1972 by a Pakistani financier, the BCCI became one of the largest financial institutions in the world, with over 400 branches operating in 75 countries, including the United States. The BCCI's most infamous clients were a motley crew: the Colombian Medellín cocaine cartel, dictators Saddam Hussein (Iraq) and Manuel Noriega (Panama), the Abu Nidal terrorist organization, and the US Central Intelligence Agency. Between 1988 and 1992, the BCCI twice pled guilty to money laundering and once to racketeering, and it was forced to pay several million dollars in fines. Some bank officials were sentenced to prison after the bank was closed and its assets were frozen (Passas 1995; Simon 2007).

The Structure of Organized Crime Networks

In the early 1950s, Senator Estes Kefauver headed a special congressional committee that revealed the existence of the Mafia in the United States. Kefauver's committee described organized crime as a transplant of criminal organizations originating in Italy, most notably from the island of Sicily. Joseph Valachi, testifying a decade later before another congressional committee, became the first person in the United States to admit publicly that he was a member of the Mafia or, as he called it, **La Cosa Nostra** ("this thing of ours"). Valachi's characterization of organized crime was shared by criminologist Donald Cressey (1969), an adviser to the President's Commission on Law Enforcement and Administration of Justice. Both Valachi and Cressey described La Cosa Nostra as consisting exclusively of men of Italian descent who were organized into at least 24 tightly knit "families" throughout the United States. Each family had an internal, military-like hierarchical structure headed by a boss (advised by a *consigliere*), who served over an underboss and a number of captains *(caporegime)* and soldiers *(soldato)* (see Figure 6.2). These families were regulated by a national alliance known as "The Commission" (Abadinsky 2007; Albanese 2004).

In 1980 the Federal Bureau of Investigation published data indicating that La Cosa Nostra organizations were concentrated in the eastern half of the United States. Only 7 of the then 27 La Cosa Nostra groups were located west of the Mississippi River, and about half were located in the north-central and northeastern part of the country. Thus, as remains the case today,

Figure 6.2 La Cosa Nostra Crime Family



Source: Task Force on Organized Crime 1967:9.

there were many parts of the country where the criminal activities known as organized crime did not involve La Cosa Nostra (Albanese 2004).

Moreover, Valachi and Cressey's portrait of organized crime "overstates the degree of structural rigidity and militaristic hierarchies of com-

mand that characterize organized crime" (Calavita & Pontell 1993:524; Chambliss 1988). Members of La Cosa Nostra families have considerable autonomy to conduct illegal business on their own. The main function of the organization is mutual protection, including negation of law enforcement through corruption. Otherwise, by Valachi's own account, everyone operates on his own. Although La Cosa Nostra bosses around the country may occasionally get together to discuss matters of mutual concern or to engage in joint business ventures, this is far from a centralized commission that coordinates organized crime activities nationwide. Additionally, as mentioned, members of crime networks in the United States are by no means exclusively Italian, nor were they ever, and the influence of Italian groups has declined in recent years. Currently there are a variety of racial/ethnic groups that are playing a significant role in organized crime in the United States and throughout the world (Abadinsky 2007; Albanese 2004) (see Further Exploration, p. 128).

Joseph Albini (1971) offers an alternative view of the structure of organized crime, arguing that it consists of a series or network of **patron-client relationships**. A patron is an individual (like a La Cosa Nostra boss) who maintains a dominant position in a criminal network by virtue of his ability to offer practical assistance to others (e.g., financing, political protection). Clients, in turn, offer patrons something in return (e.g., a share of their illegal proceeds). A patron in one relationship may also be a client in another. Such networks consist of flexible, loosely structured associations that are held together primarily by members' mutual self-interest in illegal profit-making. Influence within a network depends on the number of significant patron-client relationships a person is able to establish and his ability to wield informal power. William Chambliss (1988) adds that the members of these networks are not simply conventional criminals. They include corrupt businessmen, politicians, and law enforcement officials who help finance and coordinate illegal activities and protect members from legal sanctions.

Finally, our theme of blurred boundaries between organized and corporate crime is highlighted by Dwight Smith's notion (1976) of **illicit enterprise**. The term *enterprise* refers to an activity that is entrepreneurial in nature, one that entails risk-taking in the operation of a business. Although the term *illicit* may connote criminal activity, it also suggests something more vague, something that is secret, underhanded, or unauthorized. Smith believes that conventional ways of understanding organized crime make a simplistic distinction between what is illicit and what poses as shrewd business practice. Is it really feasible, Smith (1980:370) asks, to "assume that loan-sharking bears no relationship to banking, or that fencing bears no relationship to retailing, or that narcotics importation and the wholesale trade have nothing in common"?

Take, for instance, Calavita and Pontell's observation regarding ele-

ments of the S&L scandal that "more closely approximate organized crime than corporate crime" (1993:519). They cite a Government Accounting Office study of 26 failed S&Ls that found that 62 percent of the S&Ls had undergone a change of ownership in the period just preceding their financial insolvency. Typically the new owners were individuals who had never been in banking before but who were attracted to the opportunities afforded by the deregulated environment. Calavita and Pontell argue that these cases indicate that the primary purpose of the S&L, like organized crime, "was to serve as a vehicle for illegal transactions" (p. 534). Or take the case of Adelphia, a large cable company that recently went bankrupt, costing investors billions in stock losses. Evidence indicates that members of the Rigas family, which founded Adelphia, used the company as their personal piggybank and improperly took off-the-books loans and other payouts amounting to $2.3 billion (Reiman 2007).

Andrew Szasz (1986a), in his previously cited study of the hazardous waste industry, introduced the notion of a **criminogenic regulatory structure** to explain the structural conditions that facilitated illicit commercial activities. Just as William Leonard and Marvin Weber (1970) observe that there are criminogenic market structures that generate crime, Szasz notes that there are regulatory frameworks that generate crime as well. Certainly the absence of regulation, as we saw in the S&L scandal, can exert criminogenic influence, allowing people's inclination toward greed and opportunism to transform into outright criminality.

7

Political and Governmental Crime

ON MAY 16, 1942, GORDON KIYOSHI HIRABAYASHI, an undergraduate student at the University of Washington, met with FBI special agent Francis Marion at the Seattle FBI office. "Five days earlier, [Hirabayashi] had defied a military order that required 'all persons of Japanese ancestry' to register for evacuation to the state fairground at Puyallup, south of Seattle . . . [where] Army troops herded them into cattle stalls and tents." From there they were "shipped to 'relocation centers' in desolate areas of desert or swampland, from California to Arkansas" (Irons 1988:39). Over 120,000 people were forced to endure what can only be described as concentration camp conditions, living under armed guard in tarpaper barracks. The internment of Japanese Americans was a response to Japan's attack on Pearl Harbor in December 1941. But the last camp did not close until more than a year after Japan surrendered to the United States in September 1945. And although the United States was at war with Germany and Italy as well, no such measures were taken against German Americans or Italian Americans.

Hirabayashi presented Agent Marion with a neatly typed four-page document titled "Why I refused to register for evacuation." Hirabayashi, who was a Quaker, explained that his opposition to the internment derived from his Christian principles. The evacuation order, he wrote, "forces thousands of energetic, law-abiding individuals to exist in a miserable psychological, and a horrible physical, atmosphere" (quoted in Irons 1988:40). A majority of the evacuees were, like Hirabayashi, native-born citizens whose rights had been denied without due process of law. "If I were to register and cooperate under those circumstances," he said, "I would be giving helpless consent to the denial of practically all of the things which give me incentive to live. . . . I consider it my duty to maintain the democratic standards for which this nation lives" (pp. 39–40).

Hirabayashi was placed in the King County jail, where he awaited trial for five months. There it was learned that he also had violated military curfew orders that were in effect before the evacuation had begun. In October 1942 he went to trial both for refusing to evacuate and for violating the cur-

few. During the trial, Judge Lloyd Black described the Japanese as an "unbelievably treacherous and wholly ruthless" people and sentenced Hirabayashi to two concurrent terms of three months in jail (quoted on p. 42).

Four decades after Pearl Harbor, Japanese Americans organized a redress movement and persuaded the US Congress to investigate what had occurred. The Commission on Wartime Relocation and Internment of Civilians concluded that the internment had indeed not been "justified by military necessity," but instead had resulted from "race prejudice, war hysteria and a failure of political leadership" (cited on p. 47). Hirabayashi was vindicated in court as well, as were others. In 1987 the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals vacated his two convictions. And by 1999 the US government had paid some $1.6 billion in restitution to over 82,000 people of Japanese descent who were interned during the war (*Wisconsin State Journal* 1999c).

The Hirabayashi case illustrates the phenomenon of **political crime**, which Frank Hagan defines as crime committed for ideological purposes. "Rather than being motivated by private greed or passion, the offenders believe they are following a higher conscience or morality that supersedes present society and law" (1997:2). Hirabayashi, convinced of the truth and justification of his own beliefs, acted on his convictions and found himself in violation of the law.

If one abandons a legalistic definition of crime, however, one is forced to conclude that the crime of the US government was far greater than any crime Hirabayashi committed. As discussed in Chapters 1 and 5, conflict theory views crime as a contested terrain involving competing groups that struggle to assert or acquire economic and political power. Crime emerges as the norms, values, or interests of one group come into conflict with those of another. Throughout history, various disenfranchised groups have engaged in violent and nonviolent resistance as a means of political rebellion. In turn, governments have sought to suppress such resistance and even violated their own laws (or the laws of other nations) as they commit "crimes of repression" and engage in illegal acts to advance their own interests or the perceived interests of the country, or to maintain conditions favorable to capitalist profit-making at home and abroad (Quinney 1977). Criminologists use the term **governmental crime** to refer to the corpus of "crimes committed in a governmental context," including crimes committed for economic or political gain; and they use the term **state crime** to denote crimes carried out by individuals or groups on behalf of a government or governmental agency (Friedrichs 2007:116; Ross & Rothe 2007). They also use the term **state-corporate crime** to refer to crimes involving the cooperation between state and corporate actors in the pursuit of mutual interests (Kramer & Michalowski 2006). In this chapter we will use our sociological imagination to explore a wide range of political and governmental crimes.

Crime and Political Rebellion

The criminal has on numerous occasions throughout history been cast in the image of a political hero of sorts (Quinney 1970). The Robin Hood legend of medieval times is a classic example of a thief who purportedly stole from the rich to give to the poor. Robin Hood was idolized as a rebel against a tyrannical social order. In the "Wild West" days of the United States, outlaws such as Frank and Jesse James were romanticized as well, as were depression-era bank robbers of the 1930s such as John Dillinger, Bonnie and Clyde, and Pretty Boy Floyd. At times, such offenders enjoyed the silent approval, perhaps even the protection, of the impoverished masses. In a quintessential Woody Guthrie folksong, Guthrie tells the tale of poor Oklahoma farmers who fed and temporarily housed Pretty Boy Floyd. In return, Floyd expressed his gratitude by leaving the farmers a large sum of money for their mortgage payments. In this folksong cum social commentary, the bandit's crimes, unlike the crimes of the rich, never drove a poor family from its home. To Friedrich Engels (1845), however, such criminality was but the crudest form of rebellion, for "criminals, by their thefts, could protest against the existing order only as individuals." Although many "doubtless sympathized privately with those who broke the law," crime never became "the universal expression of the workers' . . . discontent" (cited in Greenberg 1993:50). Moreover, if criminals stole from the rich, it was not because they were champions of the poor but because the rich simply had more that could be stolen (Hobsbawm 1959).

Collective Rebellion in US History

Compared to individual criminality, collective action, even in the form of mobs (disorderly crowds), riots, and violent insurrections, is a more potent form of "crime as rebellion." As Charles Tilly observes, "Great shifts in the arrangement of power have ordinarily produced—and have often depended on—exceptional movements of collective violence" (1989:62). The United States, for example, only acquired independence as a nation through revolutionary violence. And even after this country was founded, collective rebellions continued to play a significant role in its history.

Rebellions of US farmers were prominent in the latter half of the eighteenth century. Many farmers, finding it difficult to make ends meet, were forced into deeper and deeper debt. They began protesting the foreclosure of farms and the jailing of debtors. Some took up arms. In a rebellion that left 11 men dead and countless others injured, Daniel Shays led an armed group of farmers in several skirmishes with the Massachusetts militia until his forces were subdued in the winter of 1787. After being sentenced to death, Shays escaped to Vermont and was later pardoned (Barkan & Snowden 2001; Parenti 1983).

Nat Turner, an African American slave and preacher, led the most

famous slave rebellion in US history. In 1831, Turner, who believed that God wanted him to free the slaves, led a group of over 60 Virginian slaves in the massacre of about 60 whites, including the family of Turner's owner. Turner and about 20 others in his group were hanged, and Virginian whites retaliated and killed about 100 nonparticipating slaves (Oates 1983).

The unrelenting threat of white mob violence, as well as organized racial violence (e.g., the Ku Klux Klan), has constantly loomed over African Americans, both during and after slavery. African Americans accused of crimes or simply deemed "out of place" were victims of ceremonial mutilation-lynchings (see Chapter 2). And many urban race riots of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries involved white violence against blacks (Feldberg 1980; Waskow 1967). In the East St. Louis riot of 1917, for instance, white rioters stopped streetcars, and "Negroes, without regard to age or sex, were pulled off and stoned, clubbed, and kicked. . . . Mob leaders calmly shot and killed Negroes who were lying in blood in the street. As the victims were placed in an ambulance, the crowds cheered and applauded" (Kerner Commission 1968:21).

One of the most well-known rebellions in US labor history was the Haymarket riot of 1886. Several hundred workers gathered peacefully in Haymarket Square in Chicago to protest the police killing of six striking workers at an industrial plant the previous day. When about 200 police arrived at the scene, against the orders of the Chicago mayor, an unidentified person hurled a bomb at the police, killing one officer and wounding several others (some believe that the bomb-thrower was a provocateur attempting to instigate violence to discredit the workers). A riot broke out and the police fired randomly into the crowd. By the end of the day, eight officers and a number of workers were dead. Eight labor leaders were charged with aiding the unknown bomb-thrower. Seven were sentenced to death and one to prison. Four of these men were hanged, one committed suicide, and the remaining three were pardoned in 1893 (Brecher 1980; Lens 1973).

It is interesting to note how mob action in preindustrial European cities of the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries differed from contemporary inner-city race riots. Mob action of earlier times tended to involve protests whereby the urban poor articulated their demands to the political elites, who often made concessions (e.g., controlling food prices and distributing work) in exchange for the people's support. According to Eric Hobsbawm, the people who constituted the "classical mob" did not riot merely because they were angry or frustrated but because they "expected to achieve something" (1959:111). Authorities, in turn, recognized that the mob was in some sense a permanent entity to which they had to respond periodically (Rude 1964).

Twentieth-century urban riots in the United States, on the other hand,

appeared more spontaneous in nature, but they, too, often garnered the sympathy of the poor, as noted in our discussion of racial conflict in Chapter 5. Moreover, Frances Fox Piven and Richard Cloward (1971) argue that the expansion of governmental welfare in the late 1960s was a direct response to the political pressure and social unrest generated by the urban African American community. At the same time, the riots provoked a white backlash and a punitive response from the police.

In Chapter 5 we also discussed civil disobedience—the deliberate yet nonviolent public refusal to obey a law that one thinks is unjust—as a mode of rebellion. Throughout history, the practice of civil disobedience, often associated with India's Mahatma Gandhi, has been an effective means of achieving social change. Before the US Civil War, antislavery abolitionists, for instance, encouraged violation of the **Fugitive Slave Law**, which prohibited the aiding of escaped slaves or the interference with efforts to return slaves to their owners. Abolitionists often made their homes available to slaves fleeing Southern plantations, and they helped organize the **Underground Railroad**, an informal network that lent assistance to Southern slaves escaping to the North (Barkan 2006).

In speeches and essays, abolitionists Sarah and Angelina Grimke elucidated the interconnections between the struggle against slavery and the struggle for women's rights (Lerner 1998). Their advocacy of civil disobedience inspired Henry David Thoreau's famous 1849 treatise on the subject. Thoreau urged citizens to break the law if the law "is of such a nature that it requires you to be the agent of injustice to another" (1969:35). Later, suffragist Susan B. Anthony committed a celebrated act of civil disobedience when she cast her vote in the presidential election of 1872, in violation of federal law that denied women the right to vote. At her trial, the judge did not allow Anthony to speak in her defense and ordered the jury to find her guilty. When permitted a final word before receiving her sentence (a $100 fine), Anthony declared, "I shall earnestly and persistently continue to urge all women to the practical recognition of the old revolutionary maxim, 'Resistance to tyranny is obedience to God'" (cited in Barkan 2006:424).

Some 80 years later, as discussed in Chapters 1 and 5, Rosa Parks refused to move to the back of a bus, sparking a movement of civil disobedience that challenged segregation laws and forever changed the social fabric of the United States. And in his 1963 "Letter from Birmingham Jail," Martin Luther King, Jr., wrote that "one has a moral responsibility to disobey unjust laws" (1994:463). King's noble stance, however, did not stop the FBI from investigating him for subversive activities. According to a 1976 report of the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence, headed by Senator Frank Church and known as the **Church Committee**, civil rights leader King, from late 1963 until his death in 1968,

> was the target of an intensive [FBI] campaign . . . to "neutralize" him as an effective civil rights leader. . . . The FBI gathered information about Dr. King's activities through an extensive surveillance program in order to obtain information about the "private activities of Dr. King and his advisors" to use to "completely discredit" them. . . . The FBI mailed Dr. King a tape recording made from microphones hidden in his hotel rooms which one agent testified was an attempt to destroy Dr. King's marriage. The tape recording was accompanied by a note which Dr. King and his advisors interpreted as threatening to release the tape unless Dr. King committed suicide. (cited in Church Committee 1978:161–162)

The note read, in part: "King, there is only one thing left for you to do. . . . You are done. There is no way out. . . . You better take it before your filthy, abnormal fraudulent self is bared to the nation" (cited in Garrow 1981:126). The Church Committee concluded not only that the FBI's surveillance program against King was "vastly excessive in breath," but also that it was illegal (1978:162). The FBI is permitted by law to investigate persons suspected of crimes, but it is not allowed to investigate persons for the purpose of blackmailing or discrediting them as political leaders.

Terrorism

Terrorism may be defined as the use or threat of violence intended to accomplish a political objective, whether maintenance of the status quo or radical social change. Terrorists often target innocent people, although they generally do so to affect a government's policies or to overthrow a government altogether. One of the objectives of terrorism is to provoke a government to overreact, to break its own rules about the acceptable use of force and thereby undermine its own credibility. In the process, terrorists hope to polarize society and bring "fence-sitters" over to their side. On the other hand, **state-sponsored terrorism**, or state terrorism, is undertaken by governments themselves to control their own citizens' behavior or to change political arrangements in other countries (Friedrichs 2007; Gorenberg 2004; Martin 2003; White 2003).

Al-Qaida. Since the 1970s, US citizens overseas have been targets of terrorism resulting from conflicts abroad, but the 1993 bombing of the World Trade Center (WTC) in New York City demonstrated for the first time that terrorism could happen here, on our own soil. The explosion, which left six people dead and over a thousand injured, shattered our sense of security. The WTC bombing, part of a failed plot to bomb other targets as well, was the act of Islamic extremists working under the leadership of Shaikh Omar Abdul Rahman, a man with a checkered past. Rahman had been expelled from Egypt for being part of a conspiracy in the 1981 assassination of Egyptian president Anwar Sadat, who had entered into a landmark peace accord with Israel. Although Rahman was on the US State Department's list

of undesirables, he had been given a Central Intelligence Agency visa to enter the country. Rahman had been working with the CIA, which had been financing and training Afghan rebels who were resisting the Soviet Union's military occupation of Afghanistan between 1979 and 1989. Apparently it did not occur to the CIA that Rahman might try to target the United States. Rahman received a life sentence for his role in the bombing conspiracy. The other conspirators were given sentences ranging from 25 years to life (Kinser 2006; White 2003; Wright 2006).

At the time, few Americans had ever heard of Osama bin Laden or the terrorist organization Al-Qaida (see Chapter 1). Bin Laden, an exiled Saudi Arabian millionaire who had gone to Afghanistan to fight the Soviets, is suspected of financing the 1993 WTC bombing. He is also believed to be responsible for the August 1998 bombings of the US embassies in Kenya and Tanzania (which killed 12 Americans and nearly 300 Africans), the October 2000 bombing of the USS *Cole* during its docking in a Yemen harbor (which killed 17 sailors), and the infamous September 11, 2001, attacks (which killed over 3,000 people) (Dreyfuss 2005; Martin 2003; Sperry 2003; Wright 2006).

Al-Qaida, formed in the chaotic aftermath of the Afghan anti-Soviet resistance, recruited "Afghan Arab" veterans who had fought against the Soviets, and who were sheltered, at a minimum, by the Taliban, a fundamentalist Islamic military regime, which took control of most of the country in the latter half of the 1990s. Although the US government never recognized the Taliban as the legitimate government of Afghanistan, in the years prior to 9/11 the US State Department and some US oil companies were courting and negotiating with representatives of the regime, hoping to ensure their cooperation in the development of oil and gas pipelines in the region that would link energy reserves in the Caspian Sea to markets throughout Asia (Brisard & Dasquie 2002; Dreyfuss 2005; Martin 2003; Sperry 2003).

Gus Martin describes Al-Qaida as a transnational terrorist movement, with members and supporters throughout the Muslim world, that has as its main goals the linking of disparate "Muslim extremist groups . . . into a loose pan-Islamic revolutionary network" and the removal of "non-Muslim (especially Western) influences from Islamic regions and countries." It has groups, or "cells," in many different countries and communicates with members "using modern technologies such as telefacsimiles, the Internet, cell phones, and e-mail. Most al-Qaida cells are small and self-sustaining and . . . [only] receive funding when activated for specific missions" (2003:234–235).

After the 9/11 attack, the George W. Bush administration claimed that Al-Qaida was allied with Iraqi dictator Saddam Hussein and that Hussein was also responsible for the attack. Along with the claim that Hussein was

harboring weapons of mass destruction that he planned to use against the United States, the Bush administration used the alleged alliance between Al-Qaida and Iraq to justify launching a preemptive war against Iraq. These claims, as we later learned and will discuss in more detail later in this chapter, were false (Anderson 2004b; Associated Press 2008; Stevenson 2004). Moreover, the rush to invade Iraq diverted military resources from Afghanistan, allowing bin Laden to escape to the Pakistan side of the Afghanistan-Pakistan border, where, according to terrorist expert Peter Bergen, Al-Qaida and its leadership "has reconstituted itself and now operates rather comfortably" (2007:23; see also Bernsten & Pezzullo 2005). Moreover, Bergen argues, the Iraq War has proven to be a boon to Al-Qaida,

> creating a base for the terrorist organization where none had existed before, energizing **jihadists** [those who believe they are in a holy war against Western civilization and who are willing to die for their cause] around the world, and confirming for many Muslims bin Laden's contention that the United States was at war with Islam. . . . As the administration's own National Intelligence Estimate explains, "[T]he Iraq War has become the 'cause celibré' for jihadists . . . and is shaping a new generation of terrorist leaders and operatives." (p. 25)

The very real threat posed by Al-Qaida has reinforced the stereotype, shared by many Americans, of terrorists as persons of Middle Eastern descent. Prior to 9/11, however, the greatest terrorist threat facing the United States came not from forces abroad but from those indigenous to the United States. We now turn to a discussion of terrorism as a homegrown product, as we examine terrorism of both the political "right" and the political "left."

Right-wing domestic terrorism. Other than Islamic terrorism, many analysts believe that indigenous white-supremacist groups of the political right pose the most serious domestic terrorist threat to the United States. Few people acknowledged this threat until Timothy McVeigh detonated a rented truck filled with 4,800 pounds of explosives at the Alfred Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City on April 19, 1995. The bombing killed 191 men, women, and children, making it "the worst single terrorist incident ever committed" in the United States prior to 9/11 (Hagan 1997:160; Wright 2007).

McVeigh and his accomplice, Terry Nichols, were affiliated with the contemporary **militia movement**, which overlaps with and draws members from the broader **patriot movement**, a network of individuals and groups who distrust the US government and whose advocacy of the values of "individualism, an armed citizenry, and minimum interference from government," they believe, makes them "the true heirs of the ideals of the framers of the US Constitution" (Martin 2003:313). Bruce Hoffman describes the

militias as paramilitary organizations "oriented toward 'survivalism,' outdoor skills, guerrilla training, and outright sedition" and who vehemently oppose gun control and promote the stockpiling of arms and supplies in preparation for a final showdown with their enemies (1993:220). According to Martin (2003), at its peak in the 1990s, the militia movement had some 50,000 members (and several million sympathizers from the patriot movement), but membership declined in the aftermath of 9/11.

Being a militia sympathizer or a member of a militia group does not make one a terrorist, however. Many join such groups "out of a sense of powerlessness . . . [and frustration] with the rapid pace of change in the modern world" (White 2003:228). They are people who have never quite made it, who sense that some vague and shifting "system" has let them down. For them, joining a militia group can make them feel important, can give them a place to ground their manhood (Faludi 1999). Although most

The boundaries of the militia and patriot movements often blur into the domain of organized hate groups.

militia members were appalled by the Oklahoma City bombing, the paramilitary rhetoric of the militia can nevertheless incite some to violence and spawn extremist sects. Small groups of armed members have broken off into separate cells without centralized leadership, feeling encouraged to act on their own in the interest of the cause: resisting the intrusion of the federal government by whatever means necessary.

The boundaries of the militia movement blur into the domain of organized hate groups. McVeigh, for instance, was heavily influenced by *The Turner Diaries,* a right-wing novel written by William Pierce under the pen name Andrew MacDonald (1980). Pierce was the leader of the National Alliance, one of the most well-organized and well-financed neo-Nazi groups in the United States. The defining characteristic of Nazi ideology is its **anti-Semitism**—the hatred and discriminatory treatment of Jews—but neo-Nazis disdain other groups as well: racial and ethnic minorities, gays and lesbians, feminists, liberals, and people with disabilities. Through flyers, short-wave radio broadcasts, and the Internet, the National Alliance voices its opposition to these groups. In *The Turner Diaries,* a character named Earl Turner joins a violent revolutionary group that overthrows the Jewish-controlled "Zionist Occupied Government" (ZOG). In the book, ZOG has "outlawed gun ownership and invested human relations councils with police powers to force integration and **miscegenation** [the interbreeding or marriage between members of different racial groups] on the public" (Hamm 1993:50–51). Turner responded by leading an elite group of combatants called "The Order" in a series of terrorist attacks. The book describes the construction and detonation of bombs and endorses blowing up government buildings, power stations, fuel depots, industrial plants, missile silos, and synagogues, as well as assassinating government officials, liberal media figures, and Jews and other racial/ethnic minorities (Griset & Mahan 2003; Martin 2003).

Although not all militia members are hate mongers, many are. Randy Weaver, for example, was a white separatist and follower of **Christian Identity**, an anti-Semitic and racist movement derived from a nineteenth-century ideology known as Anglo-Israelism. Christian Identity preaches that white Europeans are the descendants of the lost tribes of Israel and that they have been chosen by God to lead the Aryan nations against the Satanic Jews and their allies. Christian Identity adherents believe in the inevitability of a global race war that only whites will survive. In 1992, Weaver sold an illegal firearm to undercover agents from the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms (BATF). He resisted arrest, fled, and holed up with his family in his mountain cabin near Ruby Ridge, Idaho. A federal marshal and Weaver's 14-year-old son were both killed in the shoot-out that ensued. The next day, before Weaver surrendered, an FBI sniper shot and killed Weaver's pregnant wife (Griset & Mahan 2003; Hagan 1997; White 2003).

The incident at Ruby Ridge has become one of the battle cries of the

militant right wing, as has the incident near Waco, Texas, involving David Koresh's Branch Davidian religious sect. In fact, Timothy McVeigh considered the Oklahoma bombing to be retaliation for what happened at Waco, and he planned the bombing to occur exactly two years following the FBI raid of the Branch Davidian compound (Hagan 1997). The Waco raid stemmed from federal authorities' concern about the huge number of illegal weapons that Koresh was stockpiling in the compound. As BATF agents attempted to serve a search warrant, they were met with a hail of gunfire that killed four agents and wounded several others. After a three-month standoff, the FBI stormed the compound, not anticipating that Koresh and his followers would set a suicide-fire that would kill over 70 men, women, and children. Many people blame the FBI for its inability to resolve the incident without so many lives being lost. Moreover, for six years the FBI denied that its agents had fired any flammable material at the site, only to admit later that tear gas canisters containing pyrotechnic devices had been fired at an area outside the compound (Sniffen 1999). (These devices are not believed to have started the blaze that erupted several hours later.) At the time of the incident, the National Rifle Association bemoaned that "not too long ago, it was unthinkable for federal agents wearing Nazi bucket helmets and black storm trooper uniforms to attack law-abiding citizens. Not today" (cited in Russakoff & Kovaleski 1998:114). McVeigh took his revenge. Although Koresh "had nothing to do with the right-wing movement, he had the right formula: guns, a survivalist compound, and . . . messianic illusions" about saving the world from impending doom (White 2003:225). McVeigh received the death penalty and Nichols a life sentence for their crime.

Another movement of the political right, the anti-abortion "pro-life" movement, has also been implicated in terrorism (Hagan 1997; White 2003). Pro-life advocates consider even legal acts of abortion to be murder. Most pro-life activism has involved civil disobedience, with arrests associated with Operation Rescue's campaign of picketing and blocking entrances to abortion clinics topping 40,000 by the early 1990s. The mainstream pro-life movement, however, has spawned an extremist fringe as well, and bombings and arsons have become a disconcerting part of the anti-abortion campaign. "Pro-choice" abortion rights advocates and physicians have been stalked, harassed, and threatened with death. "Wanted" posters with doctors' names and addresses have even been posted on Internet websites, with names crossed off when doctors are killed (Dodge 1999). In one case, an anti-abortion priest dubbed the murders "justifiable homicide" (quoted in Hagan 1997:103). In another, a clergyman blamed a new law against blocking clinic access for the violence of anti-abortionists, who were now "being forced into" killing (quoted in Gegax & Clemetson 1998:34).

Militant anti-abortion sentiments have also been expressed by the contemporary neo-Nazi movement. The telephone hotline of the White Aryan

Resistance, an organization founded by former California Ku Klux Klan member Tom Metzger in 1983, once contained the following inflammatory message:

> Almost all abortion doctors are Jews. Abortion makes money for Jews. Almost all abortion nurses are lesbians. Jews will do anything for money; including the rape of innocent children followed by the ripping and tearing of the living child from the young mother's womb while still squirming. Jews must be punished for the holocaust and murder of white babies along with their perverted lesbian nurses who enjoy their jobs too much. (quoted in Hamm 1993:56–57)

Left-wing domestic terrorism. Arguably, the heyday of left-wing terrorism in the United States was the 1960s and early 1970s, when violent groups emerged from the legal protests and civil disobedience of the anti–Vietnam War and civil rights movements of that era. The Weather Underground Organization (WUO), for instance, announced in 1969: "Kids know that the lines are drawn; revolution is touching all of our lives. Tens of thousands have learned that protest and marches don't do it. Revolutionary violence is the only way" (cited in Evans 1983:255). The WUO sought to promote chaos through violence in order to catalyze social upheaval and topple the capitalist system. The WUO took credit for about a score of bombings between 1970 and 1974. Although it faded from the scene after that, some former members were involved in incidents as late as the 1980s (Hagan 1997; White 2003).

Since the 1970s, the anti–nuclear power and environmental movements of the political left have used civil disobedience to promote their causes. In 1976 the Clamshell Alliance organized a sit-in of over 1,400 people at the nuclear construction site in Seabrook, New Hampshire. This demonstration is said to have launched the anti–nuclear power movement (Dwyer 1983). Over the years, radical environmentalists have chained themselves to trees and logging equipment to prevent the destruction of forests, and some have even camped out in treetop perches, "defying anyone to cut the tree down with them in it" (Gwartney 1998:61). Anti-technology environmentalist Theodore Kaczynski, however, was quite clearly a terrorist. Dubbed the "Unabomber," Kaczynski killed three people and wounded 23 others during nearly two decades of activity that preceded his capture in 1996 and subsequent sentencing to life in prison for his crimes. In a 35,000-word manifesto that was published (under threat of violence by Kaczynski) in the *Washington Post* and *New York Times* in September 1995, Kaczynski wrote:

> The Industrial Revolution and its consequences have been a disaster for the human race. . . . They have destabilized society, have made life unfulfilling, have subjected human beings to indignities, have led to widespread psychological suffering . . . and have inflicted severe damage on the natu-

> ral world. . . . The positive ideal that we propose is Nature . . . WILD nature: those aspects of the functioning of the Earth and its living things that are independent of human management and free of human interference and control. . . . With regard to revolutionary strategy, the only points on which we absolutely insist are that the single overriding goal must be the elimination of modern technology. (cited in *US News & World Report* 1996b:35)

The environmental philosophy from which Kaczynski derived his worldview is sometimes referred to as **deep ecology**, the belief that human beings are simply "ordinary member[s] of the biological community, no more important than" any other living creature (Eagan 1996:3). **Ecoterrorism**, of which Kaczynski is arguably the most extreme case, is a movement of people who advocate the use of violence and the willful destruction of property in order to "terminate, prevent, or minimize human alteration to any part of the natural environment or its animal species" (Nilson & Burke 2002:1). Some ecoterrorist groups, which are composed primarily of individuals from middle-class backgrounds, formed as offshoots of mainstream environmental groups like Greenpeace, which strongly disapprove of ecoterrorist tactics. The Sea Shepard Conservation Society, for example, established by former Greenpeace members, has sunk several whaling ships and rammed about a dozen other vessels over the years.

Earth First!, another ecoterrorist group, was formed for the explicit purpose of sharpening the conflict between the mainstream and radical environmental movements. Although they also engage in acts of civil disobedience, Earth First!ers' favorite tactic is "monkeywrenching—sabotaging logging equipment by inserting spikes into trees to damage saws, or pouring foreign substances into the fuel tanks of logging equipment" (Nilson & Burke 2002:3).

Radicals in the left-wing **animal rights movement** have also been involved in what some consider to be ecoterrorism (Hagan 1997). Most animal rights groups have engaged in peaceful protests against the hunting of deer, the wearing of fur, and the maiming, torturing, and killing of animals in laboratory experiments that they believe have little public benefit (i.e., that test nonessential consumer items such as cosmetics and household cleaning products). However, some activists have vandalized laboratories, freed animals, and thrown red paint (symbolizing blood) on persons wearing fur coats. In 1997, members of the Animal Liberation Front were responsible for the bombing of offices and feed trucks belonging to a Utah fur breeders' agricultural cooperative, causing about $1 million in property damage. The following year, members of the Earth Liberation Front set fire to three buildings and four chair lifts at a Vail, Colorado, ski resort, damaging property worth about $12 million. The Earth Liberation Front admitted to "starting the fires on behalf of the lynx," which were believed to be in

danger of losing their natural habitat due to the expansion of the resort (Nilson & Burke 2002:4).

In the summer of 2003, the Earth Liberation Front also took credit for setting fire to 20 new Hummer vehicles worth about $50,000 apiece at a southern California dealership, to protest what members perceived to be the wasteful extravagance of such "mastodons of the highway" (Madigan 2003:A3). This arson was but one of a series of vandalisms against SUV dealerships that damaged about 50 other vehicles in the area as well. The Earth Liberation Front also claimed responsibility for a fire that destroyed 1,500 apartments that were being built at a construction site, with damages estimated at $50 million, among other such incidents (Griset & Mahan 2003; Martin 2003; Tamaki et al. 2003).

Hate Crimes and Hate Groups

We have already noted the blurred boundaries between right-wing domestic terrorism and organized hate groups in the United States. **Hate crimes** are political crimes insofar as they involve attempts to preserve or assert the dominance of one group over another. Although history is replete with crimes that were motivated by hate, since the 1980s hate crimes have been increasingly perceived as a distinct category of criminality. Three well-publicized incidents stand out in the emergence of this perception. In 1984, Alan Berg, an outspoken Jewish radio talk show host in Denver, Colorado, was machine-gunned to death by white supremacists who called themselves "The Order" (after *The Turner Diaries*). Two years later, three black men were chased onto a highway by a mob of whites after the black men's car broke down in the Howard Beach area of New York City. One of the black men was killed by the oncoming traffic. The White Aryan Resistance saluted the actions of the Howard Beach mob. Years later, in 1998, a middle-age black man, James Byrd, was severely beaten, chained to a truck by his ankles, and dragged to his death by three white men in Jasper, Texas, leaving a trail of blood a mile long. Police found a lighter bearing white-supremacist symbols at the scene of the crime (Bureau of Justice Assistance 1997; Hamm 1993; Van Boven & Gesalman 1998).

Throughout history, members of dominant groups—primarily male members—have used violence and terror to draw social boundaries, exclude others, and sustain their dominance. As we will see in Chapter 9, the dominant form of masculinity in society has been defined not only in terms of men's power and social privilege vis-à-vis women, but also through men's ability to exercise authority and control over *other men.* And as we saw in Chapter 2, white-supremacist masculinity has been defined in terms of subordinate African American masculinity, with whites using violence against blacks as an attempt to preserve their dominance and bolster their masculine

self-esteem. Such violence also has helped to distract economically marginal white men from their economic plight and to direct blame for their problems toward social minorities rather than toward more privileged white men or an inequitable social system (Connell 1995; Lerner 1997).

Similarly, violence against gays has allowed some men to assert their masculinity by punishing those whom they perceive as "the betrayers of manhood" (Connell 1995:213). When society simultaneously puts a premium on males being masculine, devalues femininity, and "equates male homosexuality with femininity," the easiest and quickest way for some men to demonstrate masculine status is to put down gays or accuse someone of being gay (Rotello 2002:72). The word "faggot," however, does not necessarily reference actual or perceived homosexuality; it is a label of utmost contempt for anyone who is deemed to be sissy, weak, or simply uncool. When 13-year-old (heterosexual) Aaron Vays moved from Russia to New York to pursue a career in figure skating, the boys on the hockey team told him that "only sissies, girls, communists, and fags figure-skated" (Wilchins 2002:72). It wasn't long before the teasing and taunting by schoolmates became tripping and punching. Eventually, Aaron was beaten so badly he had to be hospitalized.

Gloria Steinem (1999) observes that the men who commit hate crimes think that white, heterosexual males have a "natural right" to dominance and that it is appropriate—even manly—to exert this dominance through violence against others. The irony is that while this *group* of men is arguably the dominant group in society, many *individuals* in this group feel powerless. They aspire to a level of dominance that they feel is expected of them but that they cannot achieve, and they lash out at others to compensate for their own feelings of inadequacy (Kimmel 2000).

Russell Henderson and Aaron ("Dopey") McKinney, high school dropouts who grew up hard and poor, were reviled for being "losers" in the status-obsessed college town of Laramie, Wyoming. Henderson, who had been battered by his mother's boyfriends, and McKinney, whose mother was known to lock him in the basement, were treated like wimps by everyone they knew. On one fateful night in 1998, Henderson and McKinney finished a pitcher of beer at a local bar and began searching their pockets, trying to come up with the $5.50 they owed. A small and graceful young man at the end of the bar offered to help. Matthew Sheppard, with his bleached hair, stylish clothes, and shiny patent leather shoes, appeared to be making a masculine "pass" by offering to pay for their drinks (Minkowitz 1999).

Sheppard told Henderson and McKinney that he was gay, and the two boys played along, inviting Sheppard to come with them to McKinney's place so they could get to know each other better. But once they were inside McKinney's truck, McKinney pulled out a gun and smashed its butt into Sheppard's head. The boys laughed as they beat their victim again and again

with gun and fists. As Sheppard pleaded for his life, they drove him out to a field, tied him to a fence, and left him to die.

The pistol-whipping death of Matthew Sheppard galvanized national outrage at hate crimes against gays and lesbians. The 1993 murder of Brandon Teena, memorialized in the 1999 film *Boys Don't Cry,* raised public consciousness about hate crimes against transgendered people as well (see Further Exploration, p. 162). Brandon Teena, born Teena Brandon, had been living as a man. Two friends of a young woman he was sexually involved with "took him into a bathroom, forcibly revealed that he had female genitals, then beat and raped him" (Wilchins 2003:72). Several days later they returned to finish him off. Unfortunately, Teena's murder was not an isolated incident. According to E. F. Graff, "Once a month, someone transgendered is murdered, and those are just the documented cases" (2001:22).

Homophobia, as noted previously, refers to the fear of and disdain for anyone who is not heterosexual (see Chapter 5). According to Michael Kimmel, homophobia entails "the fear that other men will unmask us, emasculate us, reveal to us and the world that we do not measure up, that we are not real men" (2000:13). Perhaps we don't seem man enough to be able to pay for our own pitcher of beer or man enough to be more appealing to a woman friend than a "man" with female genitals. And one does not have to be gay or lesbian or transgendered to be targeted for gender-related hate crimes. In 2001 an African American transit driver named Willie Houston and his fiancée were out on the town celebrating their engagement with friends. When they stopped at a public restroom, Houston's fiancée gave him her purse to hold while she went into the women's room. Meanwhile, Houston assisted a blind friend who wanted to use the men's room. When Houston entered the men's room with the male friend on one arm and the purse on the other, Lewis Davidson, who was in the bathroom at the time, became enraged and began to harass Houston. Wanting to avoid any further unpleasantness, Houston left the room. But Davidson went back to his car for a gun and returned to shoot and kill Houston in cold blood (Wilchins 2002).

Data on Hate Crimes

In 1990 the **Hate Crime Statistics Act** (HCSA) authorized the federal government to begin collecting hate crime data based on race, ethnicity, religion, and sexual orientation. This legislation was in large part the product of a political alliance that was formed among African American, Japanese American, Jewish, gay, and lesbian groups. In 1994 the Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act (see Chapter 1) added crimes based on disability to the HCSA list. Feminists argued that acts of violence against women (e.g., rape, battering) should be counted as hate crimes too, but they were unable to convince legislators to include gender in the HCSA. Those

who opposed the inclusion of gender believed that doing so would make the concept of hate crime too broad and cumbersome, since crimes against women are so pervasive in society. Currently, most states and the District of Columbia report hate crime data to the federal government and have laws covering such crimes. Some hate crime laws include special categories of offenses, while others simply enhance penalties for existing crimes (Anti-Defamation League 2003; Bureau of Justice Assistance 1997; Jacobs & Potter 1998; Jenness 1999).

Joel Best observes that *hate crime* was an "umbrella term" developed by a diverse set of political activists "to establish a common cause" (1999:57). Although many crimes are motivated by one person's hatred of another, the distinguishing characteristic of hate crimes is the bias or prejudice that offenders hold toward members of another group. Often the purpose of the crime is not just to victimize an individual but also to send a message to the entire group the victim represents. Thus hate crimes have a deleterious effect not just on selected individuals but also on entire communities, "raising levels of fear, mistrust, and hostility between groups" (Martin 1995:305). And since membership in the targeted group is often *ascribed* (meaning that the quality that marks potential victims—their race or ethnicity, for instance—cannot be changed), victims of hate crimes (and others who share similarities with those victims) are left with a sense of vulnerability and a feeling that there is nothing they can do to prevent future incidents. From the offenders' perspective, the victims are indeed interchangeable, because anyone fitting the description can become a suitable target (Levin & McDevitt 1999).

Data collection on hate crimes suffers from the same limitations, such as victim underreporting, as does data collection for the *Uniform Crime Reports* (Bureau of Justice Assistance 1997; see Chapter 2). Immigrants, for example, may fail to report victimization because they do not speak fluent English or because they come from cultures where victimization brings shame to the family name. Undocumented workers who are victimized may face deportation if they go to the police. And gay people often refrain from reporting because they fear negative repercussions (e.g., job loss, rejection by family and friends, hostile reactions from police and other criminal justice officials). In fact, several victimization surveys have found that most gays and lesbians have been victimized by hate crimes, although a large majority have not reported their victimizations to the police (Berrill 1992; Comstock 1991). One survey even found that 8 percent of antigay hate crimes were perpetrated by the police themselves. And in a 1988 Florida case involving the beating death of an Asian American gay man, the judge jokingly asked the prosecuting attorney, "That's a crime now, to beat up a homosexual?" When the prosecutor answered, "Yes, sir. And it's also a crime to kill them," the judge replied, "Times have really changed"

(cited in Berrill & Herek 1992:294–295). Other judges have publicly described gays as "sick people," "flaming queens," and "volunteers for AIDS." And offenders (even in murder cases) have employed the so-called **homosexual panic defense** to assuage the seriousness of the charge against them, alleging that their "violent actions were committed in self-defense against the victims' unwelcome and aggressive sexual overtures or were part of an acute psychological panic resulting from those overtures" (Berrill & Herek 1992:294–295).

When investigating reports, police also have trouble determining whether the crime in question was in fact a hate crime—that is, whether it was motivated by bias rather than some other factor. The offender and victim may offer different accounts of what transpired, and expressions of bias that did not instigate the crime may emerge during or after the incident. It may also be difficult to know which of a victim's multiple statuses was the source of the bias motivation (e.g., race, religion, sexual orientation, gender). Unfortunately, few states provide training to law enforcement personnel to enhance their ability to determine these factors (Anti-Defamation League 2003; Martin 1995).

With these caveats in mind, Table 7.1 presents data on hate crime incidents by bias motivation for 2007. *Race* bias constituted the most common type (51 percent), with anti-black bias accounting for 69 percent of the race incidents. *Religious* bias constituted the second largest category (18 percent), with anti-Jewish bias accounting for 69 percent of the religious incidents. *Sexual orientation* bias was next (17 percent), with anti–male homosexual bias accounting for 61 percent of the sexual orientation incidents; followed by *ethnic/national origin* bias (13 percent), with the anti-Hispanic category accounting for 59 percent of the ethnic incidents; and finally by *disability* bias (1 percent), with the anti-mental category accounting for 75 percent of the disability incidents.

Among these hate crime incidents, vandalism and destruction of property was the most commonly reported offense (38 percent), followed by intimidation (threatening words or conduct that place a person in reasonable fear of bodily harm) (27 percent), simple assault (18 percent), and aggravated assault (11 percent). The remaining offenses were divided among several crimes against persons and property. Murder accounted for less than 1 percent of the reported offenses (Federal Bureau of Investigation 2008, tab. 2).

Organized Hate Groups

Although fewer than 5 percent of hate crimes in the United States are committed by members of organized hate groups, there are hundreds of such groups that are active throughout the country (Levin & McDevitt 1999; Southern Poverty Law Center 2003). The **Ku Klux Klan** (KKK), whose name derives from the Greek word *kuclos* (meaning "circle"), is perhaps the

Table 7.1 Hate Crime Incidents by Bias Motivation (2007)

	Number of Incidents[a]	Percentage of All Hate Crime Incidents
Race	3,870	50.8
Anti-black	2,658	34.9
Anti-white	749	9.8
Anti–Asian/Pacific Islander	188	2.5
Anti–American Indian/Alaskan Native	61	0.8
Anti–multiple races, group	214	2.8
Religion	1,400	18.4
Anti-Jewish	969	12.7
Anti-Islamic	115	1.5
Anti-Catholic	61	0.8
Anti-Protestant	57	0.7
Anti–other religion	130	1.7
Anti–multiple religions, group	62	0.8
Anti–atheism/agnosticism/etc.	6	< 0.1
Sexual orientation	1,265	16.6
Anti–male homosexual	772	10.1
Anti–female homosexual	145	1.9
Anti-other[b]	348	4.6
Ethnicity/National origin	1,007	13.2
Anti-Hispanic	595	7.8
Anti–other ethnicity/national origin	412	5.4
Disability	79	1.0
Anti-mental	59	0.7
Anti-physical	20	0.3
Total	7,624[c]	100.0

Source: Federal Bureau of Investigation 2007b, tab. 1.
Notes: a. An incident may include multiple offenses.
b. Includes those listed as anti-homosexual, anti-heterosexual, and anti-bisexual.
c. There were three additional multibias incidents.

oldest hate group in the United States. Founded by a group of Confederate Army veterans in Tennessee after the Civil War, the KKK was a secret society of men who engaged in public demonstrations and overt intimidation to keep blacks and their white sympathizers (especially Jews) in their place. Known for their white robes and hoods and their cross-burning displays, KKK members also whipped, tortured, and even killed the people they opposed. Ted Gurr (1989) describes them as a "vigilante terrorist" group whose purpose is to defend the status quo or return society to the social arrangements of an earlier time.

By the 1920s, KKK membership had grown to over 2 million, with chapters throughout the South and in a few non-Southern states. The KKK was even successful in electing sympathizers to political office, but internal disputes and public criticism of its violent tactics weakened the organization and caused chapters to disband and membership to decline. In the 1960s,

the perceived threat of the civil rights movement rejuvenated the KKK, which carried out a number of terrorist attacks against civil rights activists. The FBI in turn made cracking down on KKK crimes a law enforcement priority, and several members were convicted and sent to prison (Griset & Mahan 2003; Martin 2003).

In the early 1970s, KKK membership fell to about 5,000, and new leaders emerged with novel strategies to attract members. David Duke, for instance, worked to improve the image of the "New Klan" by downplaying the violence, appealing to whites who held mainstream conservative views (e.g., opposition to affirmative action, immigration, high taxes, and gun control), accepting women into the organization, and establishing youth groups. Membership rose to about 11,500, but by the mid-1980s internal squabbles and competition from a vast array of right-wing hate groups soon depleted the ranks to about 5,000 again, which is about the size of the membership today. There are, however, over a hundred chapters around the country, with the strongest membership in the South and Midwest (Anti-Defamation League 2008; Hamm 1993).

The contemporary movement of right-wing hate groups has developed a perverse ideology that combines vitriolic hatred of racial/ethnic minorities, Jews, gays, and liberals with strident militarism and radical Christian fundamentalism. This movement appeals not just to the traditional rural and middle-age constituency of the KKK but also to a new generation of alienated youths, most notably the skinheads (Griset & Mahan 2003; Martin 2003; White 2003).

The **skinhead movement** originated in Great Britain in the early 1970s among angry, anti-immigrant, working-class youths united by white-power rock music and its violent and racist lyrics. Clark Martell is credited with forming the first skinhead group in the United States. In 1979, this 19-year-old high school dropout received a four-year prison sentence for arson as a result of torching the house of a Latino family in Chicago. In prison he read Adolf Hitler's *Mein Kampf* (My Struggle), and upon his release he joined the Chicago-based American Nazi Party. Martell became interested in white-power rock and formed a band called Romantic Violence that was patterned after the British skinheads. Paraphrasing a passage from *Mein Kampf,* Martell declared: "Our heads are shaved for battle. Skinheads of America, like the dynamic skinheads in Europe, are working-class Aryan youth. We oppose the capitalist and communist scum that are destroying our Aryan race. The parasitic Jewish race is at the heart of our problem" (cited in Hamm 1993:39).

Currently there is no centralized skinhead organization, but there are over a hundred groups active throughout the United States (Anti-Defamation League 2006). Most are organized like other youth gangs, with

local names that evolve over time (see Chapter 8). In his research, Mark Hamm (1993) found that not all skinhead youths shave their heads, and that most are drawn into the skinhead subculture through peer pressure and a common interest in heavy drinking. These youths are proud of their working-class heritage but are concerned about their prospects of obtaining or maintaining blue-collar employment. The hateful lyrics of white-power rock expose them to the ideology necessary to become "true believers." Jews and racial/ethnic minorities are portrayed in this music "as agents in a conspiracy to threaten the well-being of the average blue-collar worker." This message is conveyed with "such powerful emotion that youths . . . begin to link musical messages to their focal concerns about employment. Through almost daily exposure to songs such as 'Nigger, Nigger' and 'Race and Nation' . . . [they] are transformed into adherents of a bizarre form of Nazism" (p. 211). The music gives them a sense of participating in something larger than themselves. And once drawn into the subculture, they are exposed to the underground literature and electronic network of groups like WAR. Most skinhead youths, however, do not end up joining adult organizations that share their ideology.

The diffusion of hate groups around the country makes detection, infiltration, and control difficult for law enforcement. Another impediment is that, on the surface, some of these groups emphasize mainstream conservative issues. But even when they do not openly advocate violence, these groups provide the ideological fervor that provokes some to action. Such individuals become even more dangerous when they believe they are on a mission from God. Christian Identity, a movement noted previously, is just one of several distorted permutations of Christian belief among the militant right wing that use "free-wheeling fundamentalism and violent passages of Christian scripture quoted out of context" to justify their cause (White 2003:228).

Finally, Hamm (1993) notes that in the modern electronic age, someone can participate in the hate movement without even joining a group. The White Aryan Resistance, for example, is not really a membership organization at all. As founder Tom Metzger once explained: "W.A.R. wears no uniform, carries no card, and takes no secret oaths; [it] doesn't require you to dress up and march around on a muddy field; [it] works the modern way, with thousands of friends doing their part on the job, behind the scenes, serving their race" (cited in Langer 1990:89). Thus nowadays the movement is "linked together by an elaborate network of computer bulletin boards, cable access television, desktop publications, and telephone hotlines" (Hamm 1993:50), as well as by hundreds of Internet sites that create "a borderless universe of recruitment and organizing" (Anti-Defamation League 2006:1; Levin 2002; Sandberg 1999).

Governmental Crime and Presidential Scandals

William Marcy Tweed was a masterful local politician of the nineteenth century. "Boss Tweed," as he was known, led a powerful coalition of New York City Democrats. Tweed portrayed himself as a social reformer, establishing public parks programs and city construction projects and supporting the right of workers (largely Irish) to strike and form unions. Tweed, however, also favored lower taxes. Although this agenda of social programs and tax cuts made him popular with voters, it produced a fiscal deficit. Tweed attempted to solve this problem by secretly selling short-term city bonds to raise money, but the plan went awry in the early 1870s as the bonds came due and there was no money to pay back investors. Investigation into this debacle revealed that Tweed and his associates (the Tweed Ring) had been exploiting their political power for financial gain—by selling office supplies to the city through a private printing company and padding the bills, and by paying phony city bills in order to receive kickbacks on the profits. Tweed's corrupt administration cost New Yorkers millions of dollars. He was sent to prison, where he died, leaving a legacy that still haunts us today. As he said: "New York politics were always dishonest—long before my time. . . . This population is too hopelessly split up into races and factions to govern it under universal suffrage, except by the bribery of patronage and corruption" (quoted in Douglas 1977:84).

In 1872, around the time Tweed went to prison, the nation learned of a scandal involving a construction/finance company called Credit Mobilier, a subsidiary of the Union Pacific Railroad. Both were essentially owned by the same individuals, and when the Union Pacific Railroad was awarded a multimillion-dollar government contract to build a transcontinental railroad to the West, Credit Mobilier was given the job. Credit Mobilier submitted inflated bills to Union Pacific, and company officials pocketed millions of dollars. All this was made possible, in part, because Oak Ames was not only the director of Union Pacific but also a Republican member of the US House of Representatives. Ames had secured the compliance of a number of key congressmen by selling them Credit Mobilier stock at far below market value and allowing them to finance their investment with expected future dividends they had not yet earned. A congressional investigation of the **Credit Mobilier scandal** did little more than censure (officially condemn) the participants, including Republican congressman James Garfield, who later became president, and two Republicans who served as vice president under President Ulysses Grant, Congressman Schuyler Colfax and Senator Henry Wilson (Dickenson 1977).

During the Republican administration of President Warren Harding (1921–1923), Secretary of Interior Albert Fall secretly leased US Navy oil reserves in Elk Hills, California, and Teapot Dome, Wyoming, to private oil companies owned by Edward Doheny and Harry Sinclair, respectively. Fall

received a $100,000 loan from Doheny and over $300,000 in cash, bonds, and livestock from Sinclair. In 1923, Fall resigned and joined Sinclair's business. The so-called **Teapot Dome scandal** was investigated for several years, and in 1929 Fall was convicted of bribery and sentenced to a year in prison. He was the first federal cabinet member ever sent to prison for a crime committed while in office (Dickenson 1977).

The political scandals involving Tweed, Credit Mobilier, and Teapot Dome all involved the criminal abuse of political power for economic gain. Such crimes continue to the present day. During the Republican administration of Ronald Reagan (1981–1989), for instance, US Navy undersecretary Melvyn Paisley was responsible for procuring weapons systems for the government that were worth hundreds of millions of dollars. Paisley sold classified information to defense firms competing for government business, granted contracts to firms that paid him bribes, and awarded a contract to a company that he co-owned. In a federal law enforcement operation called **Operation Ill Wind**, Paisley and a number of other government officials, corporate executives, and defense consultants were convicted of bribery, tax evasion, and fraud. Paisley received a four-year prison term. Around the same time, the Department of Housing and Urban Development became a center of influence peddling and fraud, as HUD secretary Samuel Pierce and his aides steered lucrative government contracts to Republican Party benefactors and paid exorbitant consulting fees to Republican political insiders. Although Pierce himself was not prosecuted, a number of HUD officials were convicted in a scandal that cost taxpayers several billion dollars. In 1996, Democratic congressman Dan Rostenkowski, chair of the influential House Ways and Means Committee, was convicted of misappropriating several hundred thousand dollars of congressional funds for his own personal use during a corrupt political career that spanned three decades. He received a 17-month prison term. More recently, in 2005, Republican congressman Randy "Duke" Cunningham had the distinction of receiving "the longest prison sentence ever meted out to a member of Congress" (eight years, four months) for crimes related to his receipt of "$2.4 million in bribes from mostly defense contractors in exchange for government business and other favors" (*Wisconsin State Journal* 2005:A3; Rosoff et al. 2007; Simon 2006; Talking Points Memo 2007:4).

Governmental crime, however, can involve not only the abuse of political power for *economic* gain but also the abuse of political power for *political* gain, sometimes in pursuit of US foreign policy objectives and involving what we previously referred to as state crime or state-corporate crime. It is to these types of crimes that we now turn.

Watergate

The most famous burglary in the history of the United States took place on the morning of June 17, 1972. Five men dressed in business suits entered the

FURTHER EXPLORATION

The K Street Project Lobbying Scandal

Lobbyist Jack Abramoff, onetime president of the College Republicans, prided himself as a power broker between his corporate clients and the Republican-controlled Congress that came to power in 1994. Under the leadership of Georgia congressman Newt Gingrich, who served as Speaker of the House from 1994 to 1999, the Republicans advanced their "Contract with America," which was "aimed at restoring the faith and trust of the American people in their government" and which called for a dramatic reduction in the role of the federal government in American society (cited in Continetti 2006:8). Abramoff's chief political ally was Texas congressman Tom DeLay, the Republican majority whip and later majority leader, who was nicknamed "The Hammer" for his reputation for nailing down financial contributions for himself and his political allies. Matthew Continetti describes DeLay as a man "who viewed government as a business—one that maximized the advantages of business so that business would then donate to their political war chests" (2006:16).

Working with antitax activist and Gingrich protégé Grover Norquist—who once said that he wanted to shrink the federal government down to a size where it could be drowned in a bathtub—DeLay formed the **K Street Project**, named after the Washington, D.C., business corridor, where some of the most powerful corporate lobbyists in the country have their offices. The goal of the K Street Project was nothing less than the wholesale partisan realignment of the lobbying industry with the Republican Party (Moyers 2006).

As DeLay and his political allies pressured lobbyists to abandon their ties to the Democratic Party, an orgy of political corruption ensued. But Abramoff was arguably the "poster child" for the scandal and corrupt lobbying practices in the United States. Most noteworthy was Abramoff's role in bilking millions of dollars from the nation's Native American tribes, money that he claimed was being spent on lobbying to promote their interests in the casino industry. In addition to profiting himself, Abramoff persuaded the tribes to make large campaign contributions to his Republican allies. Then there was the case of the Marianna Islands, a territory of the United States, which was touted by DeLay as a paradise of "free market" capitalism. Garment factory owner Willie Tan courted Delay and paid Abramoff millions of dollars to lobby on his behalf for political support to exempt the Mariannas from US immigration and labor laws, enabling Tan to subject his workers to some of the most exploitative conditions in the world, while at the same time allowing him to labeling his products "Made in America." During this time, Abramoff had access to influential members of the George W. Bush administration, including the president himself (Continetti 2006; Moyers 2006).

While padding their campaign coffers, DeLay and his ilk were also traveling around the world at taxpayer expense (or as guests of corporate lobbyists), flying on corporate jets, dining in expensive restaurants (Abramoff owned his own high-priced restaurant in Washington, D.C., where his political friends ate for free), staying in luxury hotels, and playing golf on high-

continues

continued

priced courses. During these junkets, they met with some rather unsavory people, whom Continetti describes as "African dictators. Islamic fanatics. Russians with ties to military intelligence. Israeli guerrillas. Small-time mobsters" (2006:88).

The scandal finally reached the light of day in 2005, and a slew of indictments and guilty pleas ensued. Abramoff pled guilty to several counts of fraud and related offenses and is serving a prison sentence of four years. Meanwhile, DeLay was indicted for campaign-law violations and decided against seeking reelection to Congress (as of April 2009, his case has yet to go to trial). A score of other lobbyists and congressmen who were part of the Abramoff-DeLay network or who committed similar crimes of their own (e.g., Randy Cunningham) have also been convicted, with sentences ranging from fines to prison terms (Continetti 2006; Moyers 2006; Talking Points Memo 2007; Wilber & Johnson 2008).

headquarters of the Democratic National Committee at the Watergate hotel and office complex in Washington, D.C. They were there to check on malfunctioning electronic surveillance equipment they had planted during an earlier trip in order to spy on the Democratic Party. This time they were discovered by the night watchman, who called the police. The burglars, it turned out, were under the employ of President Richard Nixon's reelection campaign, the Committee for the Reelection of the President, dubbed CREEP. Nixon assured the US public that the matter was under investigation by the proper authorities and that he knew nothing about what had transpired. Nixon did not anticipate, however, that two years later he would be forced to disclose transcripts of tape-recorded White House conversations and admit that "portions of the tapes . . . are at variance with certain of my previous statements" (quoted in Miller 1974:29, *The Breaking of a President*).

Even prior to the discovery of the tapes, journalists investigating the burglary—especially Bob Woodward and Carl Bernstein of the *Washington Post*—had made headway unraveling the case. The press reported that a $25,000 check from Nixon's campaign fund had been deposited in the bank account of one of the Watergate burglars, and that the White House had tried to involve the FBI and CIA in the concealment of evidence that linked CREEP officials to the crime. We also learned that Nixon aides had ordered a burglary of the office of Defense Department analyst Daniel Ellsberg's psychiatrist in an effort to discredit Ellsberg. In 1971, Ellsberg had leaked "The Pentagon Papers" to the press, revealing how government officials—both Republicans and Democrats—had deceived the public about the government's conduct in the controversial Vietnam War (Rosoff et al. 2007; Simon 2006).

The infamous tapes were not discovered until the Senate Select

Committee on Presidential Campaign Activities had begun investigating the case in May 1973 and after White House presidential counsel John Dean had testified about the role he and others (including Nixon) played in a cover-up. Both the Senate committee and the special prosecutor who had been appointed by the Department of Justice asked Nixon to turn over the tapes. The president refused and the dispute moved through the courts. Eventually, in July 1974, the US Supreme Court forced Nixon's hand. The excerpt from the tapes that proved most damaging at the time was of a conversation that took place just six days after the Watergate burglary between Nixon and his chief of staff, H. R. Haldeman. In this conversation Nixon said:

> Now, on the investigation, . . . the Democratic break-in thing, we're back in the problem area because the FBI is not under control . . . because they've been able to trace the money . . . through the bank sources. . . . And . . . it goes in some directions we don't want it to go. [Former attorney general and current CREEP chairman John] Mitchell came up with yesterday, and . . . John Dean analyzed very carefully . . . and . . . concurs now with Mitchell's recommendation that the only way to solve this . . . is for us to have [deputy CIA director Vernon] Walters call [acting FBI director L. Patrick] Gray and just say "Stay to hell out of this, . . . we don't want you to go any further on it." (quoted in Miller 1974:26)

After transcripts of the tapes were released, the House Judiciary Committee recommended that Nixon be impeached for obstructing justice, abusing presidential powers, and illegally withholding evidence from Congress. Nixon saw the handwriting on the wall and reluctantly resigned on August 9, 1974. Vice President Gerald Ford became president, and he pardoned Nixon a month later for all federal crimes that the former president *might* have committed and for which he *might* have otherwise been prosecuted.

It is interesting to note that Ford had become vice president because his predecessor in that office, Spiro Agnew, had been forced to resign alongside Nixon. In 1973, federal officials began investigating charges that Agnew, as Baltimore County executive and governor of Maryland, had accepted bribes from contractors (e.g., highway construction companies) receiving government work. Apparently Agnew had continued to accept payments even while serving as vice president. Agnew pled "no contest" to charges of income tax evasion. He was fined $10,000 and sentenced to three years of unsupervised probation (Simon 2006).

Although Agnew's crimes had nothing to do with the Watergate burglary and cover-up, the **Watergate scandal** has come to refer not just to a single burglary but to a larger cluster of crimes and abuses of governmental power, including (but not limited to) other burglaries, illegal wiretapping, obstruction of justice, tax audits of political foes, false and defamatory stories disseminated about rival Democratic candidates, solicitation of campaign contributions in exchange for favors, and appropriation of campaign

Under the auspices of the presidency, the occupants of the White House have planned and executed governmental crimes.

funds for private use (Rosoff et al. 2007). In the end, a number of White House and campaign aides served time in prison. G. Gordon Liddy, the former FBI agent who masterminded the Watergate burglary and who committed other illegal acts, served the longest sentence (52 months). Liddy went on to become a syndicated radio talk show celebrity, proselytizing ultraconservative politics to his listening audience.

The Secret Government

In the Watergate tapes Nixon expressed concern that an investigation of his administration might disclose to the public "the whole Bay of Pigs thing . . . which would be very unfortunate . . . for [the] CIA and this country" (quoted in Miller 1974:27). It appears that the five Watergate burglars were former CIA operatives, four of them Cuban exiles who years earlier had been involved in a US-backed campaign to overthrow Cuban dictator Fidel Castro. In 1959, Castro had taken power after leading a successful revolution against his predecessor, dictator Fulgencio Batista. As Batista had been an ally of the United States, Castro turned to the Soviet Union for military and economic aid. Castro proceeded to nationalize US businesses in Cuba, and the United States stopped buying Cuban sugar exports. **Nationalization** refers to the process whereby a government assumes ownership of a nation's industries and natural resources, with the intent of benefiting the entire country rather than private corporate profits. This process may (but not always) involve compensation to corporations for the appropriation of their factories (Chambliss 1988; Kinser 2006; Moyers 1988).

As vice president during the time of the Cuban Revolution, Nixon had been one of the main strategists behind a plan to deploy about 1,400 CIA-trained Cuban exiles to invade the Bay of Pigs on the south coast of Cuba. When Nixon lost the 1960 presidential election to John Kennedy, the Kennedy administration inherited the anti-Cuba operation. The invasion took place in April 1961, about four months after Kennedy took office. But fearing that US involvement would be made public, Kennedy withheld the air support he had promised, and the invaders were left defenseless and forced to surrender.

The Bay of Pigs fiasco is perhaps the most well-known of several anti-Castro operations. There were as many as two dozen assassination attempts on Castro's life, and in some of these the US government sought the assistance of organized crime. Prominent figures in US organized crime did not like Castro, because unlike Batista, Castro refused to allow them to do business in Cuba (Miller 1974; Simon 2006; Waldron 2005).

The Cuban affair was not the first or the last in a long line of similar ventures. The CIA, established by the **National Security Act** of 1947, was a product of the Cold War with the Soviet Union, which began after World War II and lasted until the dissolution of that regime in 1991. Under the National Security Act, the CIA was permitted to gather intelligence information regarding perceived threats to national security and to also engage in covert activities to oppose such threats. In 1953 the CIA backed a successful coup in Iran against the democratically elected government of Mohammed Mossadegh (Kinser 2006). The Iranians had decided to nationalize the oil industry, which was controlled by the British, and the United States was concerned that this policy did not bode well for US oil interests in the region. A brutal dictatorship friendly to the United States was installed, until it was overthrown by an Islamic revolution led by Ayatollah Ruhollah Khomeini in 1979. The consequence of US interference in the affairs of another country is aptly noted by Edwin Firmage: "You create in that state sufficient forces of unrest that . . . don't have stability. . . . And those . . . chickens come home to roost. . . . You create a nation who hates you enormously, who views you as a devil, . . . until you have embassies taken, hostages held. . . . Hatred simply doesn't . . . rest" (quoted in Moyers 1988:39).

In 1954 the CIA backed the overthrow of Jacob Arbenz, the democratically elected president of Guatemala. Arbenz had embarked on an ambitious reform program to redistribute land to the impoverished peasantry. Some of that land was owned by the United Fruit Company, a US corporation. In the late 1960s, another US corporation, International Telephone and Telegraph, funneled $13 million through the CIA to help block the election of Salvadore Allende. Allende had been campaigning to nationalize International Telephone and Telegraph's holdings. After Allende was elected in 1970, the US government tried to destabilize the Chilean economy, withholding sup-

plies necessary for Chilean industries, pressuring world financial institutions to deny Chile loans, and organizing an international boycott of Chilean products. The CIA supported military leaders who opposed Allende and encouraged them to assassinate General René Schneider, who disapproved of a planned coup. General Schneider was killed in 1970. Three years later, the Allende government was overthrown, and Allende was killed as well. Some 45,000 pro-Allende Chileans were arrested, tortured, exiled, and even murdered. A similar story has been repeated elsewhere in Latin America and other developing countries: military dictators backed by the US government have ruled through fear, intimidation, and brutality; and government "death squads," some financed or trained by the CIA, have kidnapped, tortured, and murdered those who threatened their regime (Kinser 2006; Klein 2007; Moyers 1988; Simon 2006).

Some criminologists would consider such actions to be state-sponsored terrorism or state terrorism. While these acts may be authorized under US law, they may violate the laws of the nations where they are carried out. The United States, of course, has by no means been alone in its support of repressive, dictatorial regimes. Indeed, this has been the justification for US intervention. We are told that we live in a dangerous world and that our enemies are unscrupulous. As asserted in 1954 in a secret report prepared for the White House by a group of distinguished citizens headed by former president Herbert Hoover: "Hitherto accepted norms of human conduct do not apply. . . . If the United States is to survive, long-standing American concepts of fair play must be reconsidered. . . . We must learn to subvert, sabotage and destroy our enemies by more clever, more sophisticated, more effective methods than those used against us" (cited in Moyers 1988:42).

During the Cold War, the Soviet Union was considered to be our most dangerous adversary. That country, however, was not necessarily responsible for the governmental policies we opposed in places like Cuba, Iran, Guatemala, and Chile. But during the Cold War era, everyone had to choose a side. You were either with the United States or with the Soviet Union. Nevertheless, the notion that we interfered with the national sovereignty of other nations in order to preserve democracy and human rights does not withstand the scrutiny of critical analysis.

We have Nixon to thank for opening our eyes to our secret government, and the Church Committee, among others, for revealing what was really going on. Those perceived to be enemies were not just external forces but also those within our midst, not just domestic terrorists like the Weather Underground but also nonviolent activists like Martin Luther King, Jr., as well. The FBI, under the leadership of J. Edgar Hoover from 1924 to 1972, engaged in so-called counterintelligence operations against members of the American Civil Liberties Union, the Socialist Workers Party, the Southern Christian Leadership Conference, and numerous other nonviolent groups

and individuals, including some notable justices of the US Supreme Court. The Church Committee concluded that the FBI investigated too many people and collected too much information for too long to justify any legitimate law enforcement objective. Moreover, unethical and illegal methods were used. These methods included the range of activities found in the Watergate affair, and more: illegal wiretapping and opening of citizens' mail, burglary, character assassination, dissemination of misinformation to the media, and **agent provocateuring**, which involves undercover operatives who infiltrate organizations and try to encourage members to adopt violent tactics, which in turn are used to justify law enforcement against them. The CIA also conducted domestic operations, in violation of its 1947 charter, putting thousands of Americans under surveillance of one form or another (Charns 1992; Halperin et al. 1977; Marx 1981; Poveda 1990).

Bill Moyers notes that all this is made even "more chilling by the assassination of John Kennedy" (1988:44). The Warren Commission, appointed by President Lyndon Johnson and headed by US Supreme Court justice Earl Warren, concluded in 1963 that assassin Lee Harvey Oswald had acted alone. In 1979, however, a congressional investigation concluded that a conspiracy involving organized crime had likely been responsible for the assassination. Some factions of organized crime hated the Kennedy administration, not only for its abandonment of the anti-Castro Bay of Pigs operation, but also for pursuing criminal prosecutions, particularly against Carlos Marcello, a New Orleans Mafia boss, and Jimmy Hoffa, the Teamsters Union president who had criminal ties (Hagan 1997; Scott 1993; Simon 2006; Waldron 2005).

The CIA has also been embroiled in conspiracy theories regarding the Kennedy assassination. President Kennedy had incurred the wrath of CIA operatives who blamed him for the Bay of Pigs debacle. At times he even seemed to be an unreliable "cold warrior" in the escalating military campaign in Vietnam. A thorough investigation of the assassination might have revealed things about the secret government that were best left unknown. At a minimum it is clear that the Warren Commission did not investigate all leads. So suspicions linger, and accusations "of a dark, unsolved conspiracy behind [Kennedy's] murder" persist. "You can dismiss them, as many of us do, but since we know now what our secret government planned for [others], the possibility remains: once we decide that anything goes, anything can come home to haunt us" (Moyers 1988:44).

The Iran-Contra Scandal

Democratic president Jimmy Carter (1977–1981) was less supportive of the covert operations conducted by the CIA than were his predecessors (and successors). He appointed Admiral Stansfield Turner to direct the agency. When Turner reduced the agency's covert operation section from 1,200 to

400 agents, many in the CIA were quite obviously displeased (Chambliss 1988). They did not consider themselves dispensable. Better to have their old boss, George H. W. Bush, back at the helm (Bush had served as CIA director for the year prior to Carter's taking office). The election of President Ronald Reagan and Vice President Bush in November 1980 seemed like a dream come true to the CIA.

The most significant cluster of crimes that occurred during the Reagan administration became known as the **Iran-Contra scandal**. The two elements of this scandal—the Iran component and the Contra component—initially represented two independent foreign policy operations. Iran experienced an Islamic revolution that replaced the regime that had been installed and supported by the United States. In November 1979, pro-Khomeini forces seized the US embassy in Tehran, taking over 50 US hostages, who were not released until just after Reagan was inaugurated in January 1981.

The hostage crisis had been a major problem for the Carter administration. Had Carter been able to pull an "October surprise" just before the election, he would have had a better chance of winning. Former Carter administration official Gary Sick (1991), among others, believes a deal may have been struck between the Reagan-Bush campaign and representatives of the Iranian government to delay the release of the hostages. There is evidence that William Casey, the Reagan-Bush campaign director who later headed the CIA, had met with Iranian arms dealers who had contacts in the Iranian government. It has also been alleged that the Reagan-Bush campaign had informants within the US military-intelligence community who provided information about US aircraft movements related to the hostage crisis. And it is believed that someone associated with the Reagan-Bush camp stole briefing papers from President Carter's reelection campaign before the October presidential debates. While such charges have never been proven, the history of our secret government makes such allegations entirely plausible to more than a few people knowledgeable about that era. If true, it "would be tantamount to treason" (Hagan 1997:74; Simon 2006).

During the early years of the Reagan administration, pro-Khomeini forces bombed US (and French) embassies in the Middle East. Over 200 US troops stationed in Beirut, Lebanon, were killed in their barracks during a suicide bombing. More hostages were taken, including William Buckley, the CIA's chief of station in Beirut. The US government's official policy, the public was told, was not to negotiate with terrorists. It was also a violation of the **US Arms Export Control Act** to sell arms to countries (like Iran) that supported terrorism. But negotiate with Iran we did. And selling arms (missiles and missile parts) to Iran we did, too, at first through Israel, but later directly. In the process, arms-merchant middlemen such as retired US Air Force general Richard Secord and Iranian-born businessman Albert Hakim (now a US citizen) grew rich. Following the arms sales, hostages

were not always released. And when they were, more were taken. Perhaps the official policy of not negotiating with terrorists was the right stance after all. But there was money to be made, and the Reagan administration needed the money (Brinkley & Engelberg 1988).

This brings us to the Contra part of the Iran-Contra scandal. Like Iran, the Central American country of Nicaragua experienced a revolution in the late 1970s that the US government opposed. Dictator Anastasio Somoza, an ally of the United States, was removed from power, and the Sandinista National Liberation Front took control of the government. The Sandinistas turned to Cuba and the Soviet Union for economic and military aid. The Reagan administration, which believed the Sandinistas were fomenting revolution elsewhere in Latin America, found this unacceptable (Kinser 2006; Moyers 1988; Simon 2006).

The Contras, the armed Nicaraguan opponents of the Sandinista regime, did not have popular support in their country. They were essentially a creation of the CIA, which was now headed by Casey. Without the CIA and the money and training it supplied, there would have been no Contras. Although Reagan often compared the Contras to our "founding fathers," they included former military officers of the Somoza regime as well as men who condoned terrorism, accepted money from drug traffickers, and even trafficked in drugs themselves (see Further Exploration).

In the aftermath of the Vietnam War, the US public did not have the stomach for such a controversial foreign policy campaign, especially if it threatened to involve US troops. And the CIA-Contra operation did not get good publicity, as Nicaraguan harbors had been mined and oil facilities burned, and innocent people were being terrorized and killed. Excerpts of a CIA pamphlet on guerrilla warfare that the Contras had been reading were reported in the press: "It is possible to neutralize carefully selected and planned targets, such as court judges [and] security officials. . . . Professional criminals should be hired to [take] . . . demonstrators to a confrontation with the authorities to bring about uprisings and shootings that will . . . create a martyr" (Alpern 1984:30).

During the early 1980s, the US Congress, which has constitutional power over governmental appropriations, vacillated in its support of the Contras, approving funds, taking them away, then approving them again. But in a definitive legislative statement, the **Boland Amendment**, Congress proclaimed:

> During fiscal year 1985, no funds available to the Central Intelligence Agency, the Department of Defense, or any other agency or entity of the United States involved in intelligence activities may be obligated or expended for the purpose of which would have the effect of supporting, directly or indirectly, military or paramilitary operations in Nicaragua by any nation, group, organization, movement or individuals. (cited in Brinkley & Engelberg 1988:414)

FURTHER EXPLORATION

CIA Complicity in Drug Trafficking During the Cold War

During the Cold War, the Central Intelligence Agency cooperated with drug traffickers who assisted the United States in military and covert operations against Communist-aligned insurgents and governments around the world. This alliance with drug criminals immunized traffickers from law enforcement investigation and prosecution and contributed to the contraband that was imported into the United States, with devastating consequences for many communities.

CIA complicity in the global drug trade seems to have begun in the 1950s, when the agency collaborated with Corsican criminal syndicates in Marseilles, France, to curtail Communist influence on the city's docks at a time when the Corsicans were becoming the leading supplier of heroin to the United States. During that decade, the CIA also supplied anti-Communist forces in Burma with arms and air logistics, which they used to build a burgeoning trade in opium (McCoy 2003).

One of the most well-known cases of CIA complicity occurred during the Vietnam War, when the agency enlisted the support of General Vang Pao, the leader of an army of Hmong tribesmen in Laos whose primary cash-crop business was opium. Vang Pao operated a laboratory for the conversion of opium into heroin at its Long Cheng headquarters in northern Laos; and the agency permitted him to use its airline, Air America, to transport drugs. Some of the profits from the Southeast Asian drug trade were allegedly laundered through the Nugan Hand Bank, an Australian institution that had a branch in Thailand. Several CIA officials, including former CIA director William Colby, had close ties with this bank, and Drug Enforcement Administration agents reported that their investigation into this drug network was blocked by the CIA (Chambliss 1988; McCoy 2003).

During the 1980s, the same pattern of complicity and interference in DEA investigations was a byproduct of the CIA's support of Afghan guerrillas who were resisting the Soviet Union's invasion of their country, as well as the agency's involvement with Contra insurgents who were working with the United States to overthrow the Sandinista government of Nicaragua. In the latter case, CIA cargo planes and airstrips that were used for the illegal transport of arms to the Contras were exploited by traffickers to smuggle drugs from Latin America into the United States. Proceeds from the drug trade were also used by the Contras to fund the anti-Sandinista military campaign. This CIA complicity, which was investigated in the mid-1980s by the Senate Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics, and International Operations, headed by John Kerry, included tolerance of drug trafficking by Panamanian dictator Manuel Noriega and the notorious Colombian Medellín cartel. One drug trafficker, John Hull, a rancher from the United States living in Costa Rica, was a CIA agent or asset who operated half a dozen CIA-protected airstrips that were off-limits to local police and customs officials (Chambliss 1988; McCoy 2003; Scott & Marshall 1991).

Perhaps the most controversial allegation of CIA involvement in Latin

continues

continued

American drug trafficking was advanced by reporter Gary Webb in an investigative series published in the *San Jose Mercury News* in 1996. Webb exposed a connection between the Contra drug network and Danilo Blandon, a former Nicaraguan official who lived in California. Webb claimed that the Contra-Blandon connection was a significant part of the low-cost crack-cocaine market that emerged in some African American communities in the 1980s. Blandon allegedly supplied "Freeway Rick" Ross, an African American drug dealer in Los Angeles, with tons of cocaine, which Ross converted to crack to build a burgeoning drug business throughout California and the Midwest. Webb further alleged that the CIA had provided the Blandon-Ross network with immunity from investigation and prosecution by local law enforcement, the DEA, and US customs during the time of the anti-Sandinista operation. In the late 1980s, after the operation had ended, Blandon and Ross lost their protection and were prosecuted. While Ross received a 10-year sentence, the US Justice Department arranged to free Blandon and repatriate him to Central America (McCoy 2003).

Webb's exposé outraged African Americans, some of whom accused the CIA of willfully attempting to inundate their communities with drugs. When then-CIA director John Deutch denied any CIA complicity, over 2,000 protesters marched in the streets of Los Angeles demanding an official investigation. Maxine Waters, a Los Angeles congresswoman and leader of the Congressional Black Caucus, also wrote a letter to the US attorney general charging that Los Angeles may have been introduced to crack cocaine because of the actions of US government officials. At this point, President Bill Clinton instructed Deutch to attend a public meeting in Los Angeles, where he faced some 800 angry residents and promised a full investigation of the story that had appeared in the *Mercury News*.

Subsequently, a CIA investigation was launched under the direction of Inspector General Frederick Hitz. Seventeen investigators conducted 365 interviews and examined 250,000 pages of documents over a period of about 18 months and published a two-volume report. When Hitz formally presented the report to Congress in 1998, he said he had found no evidence that the CIA as an organization or anyone in its employ had been involved in trafficking that brought drugs into the United States. Hitz was parsing words, however, because he admitted that there were in fact instances in which the CIA had not terminated relationships with individuals who were alleged to be involved in drug trafficking, nor had the agency made any effort to investigate such allegations. Hitz also told Congress that at the start of the Contra operation in 1982, the CIA had reached an understanding with US Attorney General William French Smith that it would not report drug-trafficking violations by "nonemployee" assets to law enforcement authorities.

President Reagan signed the Boland Amendment into law in October 1984, creating a perplexing problem for his administration: How would it maintain the Contras when it was *illegal* to do so? What followed was nothing short of an assault on the US Constitution. As Senator John Kerry said, the

administration was "willing to literally put the Constitution at risk because they believed somehow there was a higher order of things, that the ends do in fact justify . . . the means. That's the most . . . totalitarian doctrine I've ever heard of" (quoted in Moyers 1988:28).

The task of supporting the Contras was given to the National Security Council (NSC), a White House advisory board headed by Robert McFarland. According to McFarland, Reagan instructed him to find a way to keep the Contras' "body and soul together" (quoted in Brinkley & Engelberg 1988:12). McFarland assigned a US Marine lieutenant colonel, Oliver North, the job of working out the details and being the White House liaison with the Contras. North and associates raised millions of dollars from private groups and individuals in the United States and from allies such as the governments of Saudi Arabia, Taiwan, and Brunei. Central American states such as Costa Rica, El Salvador, Guatemala, and Honduras were pressured or cajoled (with a promise of military aid) to allow their countries to be used as bases for the Contra resupply operation. At the request of CIA director Casey, North worked with Secord and Hakim to create a private (profit-making) organization, which they called **The Enterprise**, to coordinate the operation. Senator Daniel Inouye described The Enterprise as "a shadowy government with its own air force, its own navy, its own fundraising mechanism, and the ability to pursue its own ideas of the national interest, free from all checks and balances and free from the law itself" (quoted in Moyers 1988:24). The link between the Iran and Contra initiatives was forged as profits from the Iranian arms sales were diverted through The Enterprise to the Contras. This became, according to North, "an attractive incentive" to continue to sell arms to Iran (quoted in Brinkley & Engelberg 1988:16–17). Moreover, Casey envisioned The Enterprise as a permanent "off-the-shelf" entity with the stand-alone capacity to conduct covert operations beyond the purview of Congress.

The secrecy surrounding these operations began to crumble in October 1986, halfway through President Reagan's second term, when a Contra resupply plane linked to the CIA was shot down over Nicaragua. The story was covered worldwide. And in November a Lebanese magazine disclosed the arms sales to Iran. Reagan and other White House officials first denied the stories but soon decided they would have to cut their losses, concede that some improper conduct had occurred, and develop a cover story to protect the president. In the meantime, North and his secretary frantically destroyed as many incriminating documents and memoranda as possible. But they did not get everything.

The cover story cast North in the role of a renegade, a well-intentioned soldier who had gone too far. North, however, was not about to take all of the blame. When he was granted immunity to testify before the (televised) joint House and Senate hearing, which began in May 1987, he became a

media sensation. He was "a defiant hero, an obedient soldier, a blameless scapegoat whose conduct had been dictated or approved by his superiors" (Rosoff et al. 2007:394). "This nation," North said, "cannot abide the communization of Central America. We cannot have Soviet bases on the mainland of this hemisphere" (quoted in Moyers 1988:28).

During the Watergate scandal, it had taken two years to develop evidence that linked Nixon to criminal activities. Just over two years after the Iran-Contra scandal broke, Reagan's term expired. It was only later that we learned the full extent of Reagan's complicity, but by then any question of impeachment was moot. Several members of The Enterprise and a number of Reagan administration officials, however, pled guilty or were convicted of crimes (Casey, the man who probably knew the most about what had transpired, died in 1987). The sentences overall were less severe than the sentences given to the Watergate defendants. All but one received only probation or fines. Admiral John Poindexter, who had succeeded McFarland as NSC adviser, received a six-month prison term, but his conviction was overturned on appeal. Like North, he had been granted immunity for his congressional testimony. Thus, said the US Supreme Court, his right to a fair trial had been compromised. North had his three felony counts reversed on appeal as well. He pronounced himself "totally exonerated," became a highly paid luminary on the lecture circuit, and was Virginia's Republican nominee for the US Senate in 1994 (Rosoff et al. 2007:395). He lost the election and joined the ranks (along with Gordon Liddy) of ultraconservative talk show hosts.

Iraqgate

When the Iran-Contra story first broke, then–vice president George H. W. Bush claimed that he had been outside the policymaking loop. Later he would say that he knew nothing of the details. Bush was in fact a major player in Iran-Contra, although the public did not realize this until after he became president in 1989. As vice president, Bush had spoken out in cabinet meetings in favor of both the Iran and Contra operations, and he had participated in discussions about potential illegalities. He had even helped arrange an apparent "quid pro quo" deal (something done in return for something else) with Honduran president Roberto Suazo Cordova, promising to deliver over $110 million in economic and military aid in exchange for support of the Contras (Hagan 1997; Moyers 1990b).

The evidence regarding Bush's involvement began to mount during the 1992 presidential campaign. It was not just Iran-Contra, however, that dogged the Bush administration. Between 1980 and 1988, Iran and Iraq had been at war with each other. This may explain why the Reagan-Bush administration wanted to supply Iran with arms. But the administration was supporting Iraq and its dictator, Saddam Hussein, as well, perhaps because it felt it better to have these two countries fighting each other than causing problems for the

United States. After the Iran-Iraq War was over, the Bush administration mistakenly calculated that Iraq was now the key to establishing stability in the Middle East, and the administration continued to provide Hussein with military aid. When Hussein invaded Kuwait in August 1990, however, Bush felt compelled to take military action. Many gave Bush high marks for leading an international coalition to a decisive victory in the 1991 Gulf War. Yet few at the time knew the full extent of Bush's prior support of Hussein.

The scandal that we call **Iraqgate** did not surface until 1992, as Bush's reelection campaign was getting under way. The Atlanta branch of the Banca Nazionale del Lavoro (BNL), headquartered in Rome, had provided Hussein with several billion dollars in loans, guaranteed in part by the US government. The BNL claimed that the loans had been made for grain sales, but that Hussein had deceived them and used the money to build up his military (including nuclear) capabilities. This was just a cover story. In reality, the loans had been approved by the Bush administration with full knowledge of Hussein's intentions. The scheme, which was in violation of the US Arms Export Control Act, had apparently been devised because the administration assumed that Congress would not support a policy of military aid to Iraq. It was Iran-Contra politics all over again (Friedman 1993; Hagan 1997; Simon 2002).

The Bush administration attempted to delay an official investigation of the BNL as well as an inquiry into an Iraqi firm that was skimming money from the (bogus) grain program. Administration officials (including the CIA) lied to Congress and submitted altered documents to conceal their activities. But the cover-up began to unravel, in large part due to the relentless reporting of conservative syndicated columnist William Safire (e.g., 1992a, 1992b). A month before the November election against Arkansas governor Bill Clinton, Bush appeared on *Larry King Live* and said he had been an innocent dupe. That was the best spin he could put on the affair.

Bush lost the election, but before leaving office he pardoned a number of individuals associated with the earlier Iran-Contra scandal. Congressional Democrats lost any motivation to pursue the defeated ex-president. Safire (1993) reported that the Clinton administration agreed to forgo investigation of Iraqgate if Bush refrained from criticizing the new president during his first year in office. US taxpayers were left to pay some $2 billion of Hussein's defaulted loans. This was, of course, not the end of the story of controversial US actions against Iraq.

Sex, Lies, and Real Estate

Before Clinton was elected president, he had credibility problems of his own. During the 1992 campaign, Clinton made several misleading (if not false) statements regarding his efforts to avoid military service during the Vietnam War, his smoking of marijuana while in college, his extramarital

affair with Gennifer Flowers, and his dubious business associations with Arkansas "wheelers and dealers." These transgressions, the Bush campaign said, raised serious doubts about Clinton's honesty and moral character. Thus when choosing a president in 1992, the public was given a choice between "lies and damn lies" (Hitchens 1999).

Whitewater was perhaps the first Clinton scandal to be given a name. In the late 1970s, Bill and Hillary Clinton became partners with James and Susan McDougal in a 230-acre Whitewater real estate development project that went bust. The McDougals were owners of the Madison Guaranty Savings and Loan in Arkansas. Madison Guaranty failed during the savings and loan debacle of the 1980s (see Chapter 6), leaving US taxpayers with a $60 million bailout bill. The McDougals had engaged in several of the illegal financial schemes available to corrupt savings and loan operators, and after Clinton was elected president, they were convicted of several crimes. One scheme involved a fraudulent overvaluation of Madison Guaranty's real estate assets that was used by the McDougals to secure a $3 million government loan. Over a third of that money was lent to Jim Guy Tucker, Clinton's successor as governor of Arkansas, who used it to purchase a water and sewer utility. Susan McDougal served two years in prison for her crimes, James McDougal died in prison while serving a three-year term, and Tucker resigned from office and received four years probation and 18 months of home detention (Stewart 1996; Woodward 1999).

If money from the McDougals' illegal transactions had been used to repay Whitewater loans, the Clintons may have benefited indirectly. But according to James Stewart's account, "The Clintons had virtually nothing to do with Whitewater and were simply 'passive' investors" (1996:447). Their only wrongdoings pertaining specifically to Whitewater involved overvaluing assets on financial disclosure forms and overestimating losses on income tax returns. While these were relatively minor infractions, the story of the Clintons' financial activities during the 1980s hardly portrays them in a flattering light. They took advantage of whatever opportunities they had "to make easy money, even when that meant accepting favors or special treatment from people in businesses regulated by the state" (p. 445). The Clintons' behavior lent credence to accusations that they had used their influence to thwart regulators investigating Madison Guaranty and to facilitate the McDougals' financial crimes.

The Clintons managed to dodge the Whitewater bullet. More troublesome, however, was their pattern of withholding information and making misleading statements. Before coming to Washington, D.C., for example, Hillary had worked for the Rose Law Firm in Arkansas. The McDougals were among her clients. At first Hillary claimed that her legal work for the McDougals had been minimal, and she denied knowing anything about their crimes. Rose Law Firm records revealed, however, that she had billed the

McDougals for over a dozen meetings or conversations regarding questionable real estate transactions (Stewart 1996).

Throughout Clinton's presidency there were numerous occasions when his aides denied press reports or stonewalled official inquiries because they feared that Rose Law Firm records would be uncovered or that other dubious activities would be revealed. In the so-called **Travelgate** scandal, staff members of the White House Travel Office were dismissed. Administration officials said they were ridding the office of corruption, but their plans to divert White House travel business to Clinton friends suggested another motive. In **Filegate**, a White House aide was found collecting FBI files on hundreds of Republican Party officials in an effort that appeared aimed at finding information to discredit them. The aide was summarily dismissed. In **Fostergate**, aides removed documents from the office of White House lawyer Vince Foster, a former Rose Law Firm attorney, after he committed suicide. Someone obviously did not want these documents to be disclosed. The conservative press had a field day, circulating rumors that Foster (and others) had been murdered by assassins working on behalf of the Clintons (Conason & Lyons 2000; Stewart 1996; Woodward 1999).

Webster Hubbell, another former Rose Law Firm lawyer, had been made an associate attorney general in the Clinton administration's Department of Justice. He was forced to resign in the face of a criminal indictment for income tax evasion and mail fraud related to his practice of overbilling clients at the law firm. Hubbell received a prison sentence of nearly two years, but during an 18-month period following his resignation he received $500,000 in consulting fees from various Clinton associates. One $100,000 fee was paid by a subsidiary of the Lippo Group, an Indonesia-based conglomerate that was accused of illegally funneling foreign campaign contributions to the Democratic National Committee. Mochtar and James Riady, who had controlling interest in the Lippo Group, had banking interests in Arkansas that dated back to the early 1980s. One of Lippo's clients was the People's Republic of China. Although Clinton denied that he ever changed his policy position because of this association, he did reverse his campaign stance against open trade relations with China and approved the sale of vital missile technology to that nation (Stewart 1996; Woodward 1999).

Each of these episodes, taken in isolation, might appear relatively insignificant. But taken as a whole, they begin to add up. Moreover, the Clintons' strategy of first brushing aside accusations, then promising full disclosure while simultaneously frustrating every inquiry, did not serve the president well. According to Stewart: "It would have been relatively easy, early on, to disclose everything and correct the record. But as time passed, the Clintons' drop-by-drop concessions gave credence to their critics and undermined their integrity" (1996:432).

In the long run, President Clinton's sexual misconduct caused him the most political damage. After losing a court challenge, Clinton was required to give a deposition in a sexual harassment lawsuit initiated against him by Paula Jones. In that deposition, Clinton was asked about a sexual relationship he'd had with a young White House intern, Monica Lewinsky. Under oath, in January 1998, Clinton denied the allegation and then told the US public that he "did not have sexual relations with that woman." Seven months later, in the face of DNA evidence (traces of Clinton's sperm) found on Lewinsky's dress, the president admitted that he had not told the full truth about the affair (he admitted that he had received oral sex, which in his view did not constitute sexual relations). Questions remained as to whether Clinton had committed perjury in the Jones deposition and in the subsequent testimony he gave before a grand jury, and also as to whether he had encouraged Lewinsky to give false testimony (Hitchens 1999).

In December 1998 a majority of the House of Representatives passed two articles of impeachment against the president (for perjury and obstruction of justice), making Clinton the first *elected* president ever to be impeached (Andrew Johnson, who became president after the assassination of Abraham Lincoln in 1865, was the only other president to be impeached). In February 1999, however, Clinton (like Johnson) was acquitted in the Senate, where the vote fell far short of the two-thirds majority needed to remove the president from office. Nevertheless, the Clinton presidency was severely damaged and Clinton's place in history indelibly tarnished.

The Bush-Cheney Era

The disputed election of 2000. During his drive to the presidency, George W. Bush—son of the former president and then-governor of Texas—dodged accusations that he had used drugs during his youth (he acknowledged he had been a heavy drinker) and that he had received political favors to enroll in the National Guard to avoid serving in the Vietnam War and had not fulfilled all of his obligations to report for duty. After being defeated in the February New Hampshire primary by decorated war veteran Senator John McCain, Bush knew he had to win the South Carolina primary or his candidacy would be in serious jeopardy (Ackerman 2004; Corn 2003).

South Carolina Bush supporters, whom the Bush campaign claimed were acting on their own, started spreading vicious rumors about McCain. They made phone calls posing as pollsters and distributed leaflets, e-mails, and faxes saying that McCain had been brainwashed during his captivity as a prisoner-of-war in Vietnam, that he had fathered a child with a black prostitute, and that he had infected his wife with venereal disease and was responsible for her addiction to drugs. Bush never spoke out against these cruel smears made on his behalf, and he won the primary (Corn 2003). McCain, of

course, denounced these tactics, but during his own bid for the presidency in 2008 he waged a similar (though unsuccessful) scurrilous campaign against Senator Barack Obama, accusing him, among other things, of being anti-American and cavorting with terrorists (Berman 2008; Schell 2008).

The November 2000 election between Governor Bush and Vice President Al Gore came down to the wire. Both candidates needed to win Florida to give them enough Electoral College votes (270) to win the election. Before the Florida vote came in, Gore was leading Bush by an electoral margin of 267 to 246. Florida had 25 electoral votes, and Gore needed only three more to reach the 270 majority that would have given him the presidency. But in a winner-take-all system, a Bush victory in Florida would give him a 271-to-267 victory.

After the Florida polls closed, the media initially declared Gore the winner, based on information gathered from exit polls. However, later that evening, following the lead of Fox News Channel, a conservative news network, the media retracted its call for Gore and pronounced Bush the winner. Interestingly, the head of Fox's Election Night Decision Desk who made the call for Bush was none other than Bush's cousin, John Ellis (Boehlert 2000). Although Gore had won the national popular vote by over half a million, the official Florida vote count first placed Bush ahead by 1,784, just 0.03 percent of the 5.9 million ballots that were recorded in the state. Under Florida law, if the vote margin is less than 0.05 percent, a mandatory recount is required. The initial recount was performed inconsistently—some of the counties did not actually recount the ballots but merely rechecked the math from election night tabulations—but it reduced Bush's official margin of victory to just 327 votes (Corn 2003).

Meanwhile, reports of problems with Florida ballots surfaced, revealing ways in which the election may have been unfairly tipped to Bush over Gore. There was the case of the so-called butterfly ballot, for instance, which had candidates Bush and Gore on the left side of the ballot and conservative Reform Party candidate Pat Buchanan on the right side. Evidence indicated that many (especially elderly) Democratic voters found the ballot confusing, leading them to vote for Buchanan, or for both Buchanan and Gore, when they intended to vote for Gore. These "Democrats for Buchanan" ballots, which would have given Gore an estimated 6,000 to 9,000 additional votes, were forever lost to the vice president (Corn 2003; Dershowitz 2001; Palast 2003). And as we shall see, there were other sources of lost votes that also might have won Gore the election.

Given these problems, the Gore campaign requested an additional *hand recount* in four heavily Democratic counties—Miami-Dade, Broward, Palm Beach, and Volusia—as it was permitted by law to do. It was at this point that the nation was introduced to the problem of antiquated punchcard ballots, which require voters to push a stylus through a perforated hole to dis-

lodge a chad, which might be left "hanging" or merely "dimpled." A punch-card system, which is less accurate than an optical-scan system, was used in about 60 percent of Florida precincts, including the four counties that were the target of the Gore recount request. Poor (particularly minority) residents were more likely to have voted with the antiquated technology and hence to have had their ballots discarded. These lost votes were referred to as "undervotes," in comparison to invalidated "overvotes," which included instances where a voter marked or punched a ballot and also specified the name of the *same* candidate in the space designated for "write-in" votes (Corn 2003; Dershowitz 2001; Lantigua 2001; Palast 2003).

Kathryn Harris, the Florida secretary of state, was in charge of the state division that supervised the election process. In spite of the obvious conflict of interest, Harris was also cochair of the Bush campaign in Florida, where George W. Bush's brother Jeb happened to be governor. As the hand recount was still ongoing, Harris predictably exercised her *discretionary* authority to bring the counting to an end within seven days of the election, as she was permitted (but not required) by law to do. Predictably as well, the Gore campaign filed a legal appeal to extend the recount deadline, while the Bush campaign appealed to stop it (Silverman 2002).

As both sides jockeyed for position in the courts, the Gore team received a favorable decision from the Florida Supreme Court, which ruled that a hand recount of the *undervotes* for the entire state should be undertaken. This statewide recount was begun, but it was soon stopped when the Florida court was reversed by the US Supreme Court. In a slim five-to-four decision, the majority sided with the Bush team and decreed the election to be over. Thirty-six days after the initial ballots were cast, Harris certified that Bush had won by 537 votes.

Legal analyst Alan Dershowitz (2001), among others, has characterized the US Supreme Court's decision in *Bush v. Gore* as a case of "supreme injustice." US Supreme Court justices are nominated by the president (and confirmed by the Senate) and are chosen as much for their ideological predilections as their legal expertise. The composition of the 2000 Court clearly favored the Republicans, and many think its decision in *Bush v. Gore* was overtly political.

The basis of the Bush campaign's legal argument was that continuing the hand recount would violate the Fourteenth Amendment of the US Constitution, which says that a person may not be deprived of "the equal protection of the laws." In what was arguably a partisan interpretation of this clause, the Court ruled that continuing the recount would deprive Bush voters (but not Gore voters) of their right to equal protection. The majority reasoned that since the rules governing the hand recount varied from precinct to precinct—for example, whether or not both "hanging" chads and "dimpled" chads would be counted—the recount would be unfair to those

voters whose ballots had been counted by machines before the recount had begun. But, as Dershowitz asks (p. 61), wouldn't voters whose ballots were *not properly counted* by machines "suffer much more serious violations of their equal protection rights"? Given the diversity of ballot designs and voting technologies that existed throughout the state (and indeed the entire country), the logical extension of the Court's ruling would have been to invalidate the entire presidential election. As Win McCormack suggests, the Court "speciously ignored the fact that the Florida ballots, prior to any recount, were *already* counted differently, and that the very purpose of recounting was to correct for this discrepancy" (2001:32).

Moreover, the Court's legal logic was inconsistent with the majority justices' own prior rulings. Previously, for instance, the majority of judges had ruled that claims about equal protection violations "should be able to identify with some degree of specificity the alleged victim" and also prove that the contested actions had a clear discriminatory purpose (Dershowitz 2001:77). The majority had also previously ruled that the Court's function is to establish legal precedents, not to declare unique dispositions. Yet in *Bush v. Gore,* the majority wrote: "Our consideration is limited to the present circumstances, for the problem of equal protection in election processes generally presents many complexities" (cited on p. 81). In other words, as Dershowitz pointedly notes, "In future election cases, don't try to hold the Court to what it said in this case, because it decided this case not on general principles applicable to all cases, but on a principle that has never before been recognized by any court and that will never again be recognized by this court" (p. 81).

A year after the election, a consortium of eight media organizations completed an unofficial hand recount of the Florida vote. The consortium concluded that if only the admissible ballots of the four counties contested by Gore had been recounted, Bush would have won the election by about 225 to 400 votes. But if ballots for the entire state had been recounted, Gore would have won by about 40 to 400 (CNN 2001; Corn 2001, 2003; Fessenden & Broder 2001).

Journalists also uncovered additional controversies that had unfairly tipped the election to Bush and would have given Gore a larger margin of victory. Apparently, Florida election officials, under the direction of Secretary of State Harris, inappropriately did their best to deny former convicted felons from voting in the election altogether. Most states deny felons serving time in prison or on parole the right to vote, but all except 14 states restore that right upon completion of sentence. Florida is one that does not. In 2000 there were an estimated 50,000 to over 100,000 former felons who had moved to Florida from other states with their voting rights intact. According to Florida court rulings, these individuals have the right to vote in Florida elections. Nevertheless, the Governor's Office of Executive

Clemency mailed these people a notice informing them that they were "required to make application for restoration of civil rights in the state of Florida," in other words, to ask Governor Jeb Bush for clemency in order to vote (cited in Palast 2003:40). Few of these individuals followed up on this "requirement"—a requirement that had been ruled null and void by the courts (Lantigua 2001; see also Hull 2006; Manza & Uggen 2005).

As Florida election officials tried to purge their voter registration lists of people they deemed ineligible to vote, thousands of eligible voters were mistakenly removed. Take the case of the so-called former felons from Texas. ChoicePoint, a private firm with close Republican ties, was hired by the state of Florida to provide the names of Texas ex-felons who had moved to Florida. As it turned out, *none* of the approximately 8,000 people who were identified and consequently scrubbed from the voter list had actually been convicted of felonies—they had been convicted of misdemeanors. The state also hired Database Technologies of Atlanta, since merged into ChoicePoint, to provide it with lists of ineligible voters who had moved to Florida from other states. As it turned out, the Database Technologies lists contained an error rate of 15 percent. And because African Americans experience higher rates of incarceration than other groups (see Chapter 12), the majority of people targeted by these purging efforts were black. Since African Americans vote overwhelmingly for Democratic candidates, these efforts significantly advantaged Bush (Lantigua 2001; Palast 2003).

Another problem that contributed to the skewed results involved the data criteria that were used to match people who appeared on the ex-felon lists compiled by Database Technologies and ChoicePoint with people on the Florida voter lists. According to a vice president of ChoicePoint, Florida officials instructed the company to provide them with "more names than were actually verified as being a convicted felon" (quoted in Palast 2003:57). One way this was accomplished was to establish criteria that would identify a match even if only part of a name on an ex-felon list matched the name on the voting list. In one case, for example, Reverend Willie David Whiting, a black pastor living in Florida, was confused with Willie J. Whiting, a former felon from Texas, and hence the pastor was denied the opportunity to vote. Florida resident Johnny Jackson, Jr., was matched with Texas ex-felon John Fitzgerald Jackson. David Butler of Florida was matched with Ohio ex-felon David Butler, Jr. Randall Higgenbotham of Florida was matched with ex-felon Sean Higgenbotham, also of Florida. There were innumerable mistaken matches like these, as well as many misdemeanor offenders who were mistakenly identified as felons, as in the Texas ChoicePoint list. On top of all this, African American residents of Leon County "complained of a Florida Highway Patrol checkpoint on a road leading to a polling place . . . [that] amounted to harassment

of black voters" (Lantigua 2001:17). If these types of problems had not occurred, Gore might have received more than 30,000 additional votes (Palast 2003).

Iraqgate, part 2. Although Bush and his vice president, Dick Cheney, entered the White House under a cloud of controversy, this did not keep them from forgoing bipartisanship and implementing some rather radical domestic and international policies. On the domestic front, the Bush administration pushed through a huge tax cut that primarily benefited wealthy Americans and turned a multibillion-dollar national budget surplus achieved by the Clinton administration into a massive debt. In this tax cut, the top 1 percent of income-earners were targeted to receive over 50 percent of the benefits, while the bottom 20 percent received just 1 percent (Citizens for Tax Justice 2002, 2003). The administration also instituted an aggressive policy of deregulation that undermined the government's ability to control corporate crime and other harmful conduct (Corn 2003; Ivins & Dubose 2003; Kennedy 2004; see Chapter 6).

The Bush administration also pursued national unilateralism in global affairs, withdrawing from international efforts to develop environmental and weapons disarmament treaties. And although the administration was successful in putting together an international coalition to topple the Taliban regime in Afghanistan after 9/11, it decided to move forward without this cooperation—and in the face of international opposition—with a preemptive war against Saddam Hussein's Iraq, launched in March 2003, that some criminologists believe was in direct violation of international law (Kramer & Michalowski 2005).

The primary justification for the war was the Bush administration's claim that Hussein was linked to Al-Qaida in the 9/11 attacks *and* that he possessed weapons of mass destruction (WMD) that posed an imminent threat to the national security of the United States. These claims, as noted in Chapter 1, were false. Two years into the war, we also learned from the leak of the infamous **Downing Street memo**, written by the head of British foreign intelligence to Prime Minister Tony Blair in July 2002 (Downing Street is the location of the residence and official offices of the British prime minister), as well as from other sources, that intelligence in the White House had been "fixed around the policy" and that high-ranking US officials had intentionally ignored CIA admonitions that their allegations regarding Iraq's WMD could not be substantiated by the weight of the available evidence (cited in Pincus 2005:A18). In other words, there was no genuine effort to find out whether the concerns about Iraq were in fact true—for instance, by giving United Nations WMD inspectors a chance to make a determination—before US troops were committed to battle. In the administration's view, even if there was only a "one percent" chance that Iraq had WMD, the

preemptive war was justified (Cole & Lobel 2007; Greenwald 2004; Isikoff & Corn 2006; Suskind 2006).

Particular controversy arose over the president's January 2003 State of the Union address, preceding the invasion, in which Bush told the world that "the British government has learned that Saddam Hussein recently sought significant quantities of uranium from Africa," suggesting that Iraq had reconstituted its nuclear weapons program (quoted in *New Republic* 2003:8). At the time, however, White House officials knew full well that this claim had been disputed by its own intelligence sources. Indeed, the CIA had previously dispatched former ambassador Joseph Wilson to Niger, the alleged source of the uranium, to investigate this claim. Wilson had concluded, as he later wrote in a scathing *New York Times* op-ed piece published in July 2003, that it had not taken him long to determine "that the information was erroneous" and "that it was highly doubtful that any such transaction had ever taken place" (quoted in Kerr 2003:A9). Wilson also noted that Vice President Cheney's office had been specifically informed of his findings by the CIA, and that these findings had been discounted in order to legitimize the administration's efforts to skew intelligence so as to justify its desire for preemptive war. Moreover, it was later learned that documents alleging the Niger-uranium connection had come from Italian intelligence sources and had been forged, apparently with the knowledge of high-ranking Bush administration officials, as part of an organized strategic disinformation campaign to garner public support for the war (Giraldi 2005; Isikoff & Corn 2006; Wilson 2005; see Chapter 1).

The only aspect of the Niger case that resulted in criminal prosecution, however, was related to an article written by conservative political columnist Robert Novak a week after Wilson's op-ed piece was published. Novak reported that a White House official had informed him that Valerie Plame, the wife of Ambassador Wilson, was a CIA operative. Novak's outing of Plame, who had worked undercover for three decades and was, ironically, a specialist in WMD, destroyed her career and endangered her contacts overseas. While Novak's right to publish the information he received is protected by the First Amendment, the initial disclosure itself constitutes a felony crime that is punishable by up to 10 years in prison. Wilson believes that the leak of his wife's name was intended to stifle complaints from knowledgeable persons inside the government who knew that the administration had misrepresented intelligence about the threat posed by Iraq (Greenwald 2004; Wilson 2005).

When news of this scandal, dubbed **Plamegate**, surfaced, President Bush said in no uncertain terms that he would do everything in his power to get to the bottom of it and that anyone in his administration who was responsible would be summarily dismissed. A special prosecutor, Patrick Fitzgerald, was appointed by the Justice Department to investigate the case.

The investigation dragged on past the November 2004 presidential election, in which President Bush won reelection in another controversial vote that came down to the state of Ohio (see Chapter 5). Finally, in October 2005, Fitzgerald announced that he would seek an indictment against only one individual, I. Lewis (Scooter) Libby, not on charges related to the leak itself, but for obstruction of justice, perjury, and making false statements about it. Libby was Vice President Cheney's top aide, and Fitzgerald found compelling evidence that other White House officials, including Bush's top political advisor, Karl Rove, were directly or indirectly involved. Libby was eventually convicted and sentenced to two-and-a-half years in prison, a $250,000 fine, and two years of probation. President Bush, however, immediately commuted the sentence, leaving Libby to face only the fine and probation. No one else, contrary to Bush's initial tough stance, was held responsible for the crime (Corn 2007; Hutcheson 2007; Isikoff & Corn 2006).

Meanwhile, in the spring of 2004, reports of widespread abuse, humiliation, and outright torture of Iraqi prisoners held by US military personnel and private contractors in the **Abu Ghraib** prison outside of Baghdad hit the news, actions that were arguably in violation of US military and international law (Hersh 2004). Later we learned that these practices were not unique to Abu Ghraib but also occurred at the US base in Guantanamo, Cuba, and other sites around the world. Although the administration blamed these practices on maverick interrogators who had gone too far, and though some lower-level personnel were punished, later we learned that these practices were systematically sanctioned by high-ranking officials—including Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld, Vice President Cheney, and President Bush himself—who avoided any consequences for their actions (Lithwick 2008). We also learned later that the US government engaged in the practice of **extraordinary rendition**, whereby suspects were sent to countries like Egypt and Syria and tortured by agents of foreign governments. Moreover, little useful intelligence was gathered from these interrogations, and the Abu Ghraib photos that were disseminated on the Internet further undermined the credibility of the US war effort and the Bush administration's claims to be spreading freedom around the world, not only because of the abhorrent nature of these practices, but also because the overwhelming majority of Iraqis and other Muslims who were victimized by these practices were completely innocent bystanders to the malaise in the Middle East (Bonini & D'Avanzo 2007; Cole & Lobel 2007; Klein 2007; McCoy 2006).

At the time of this writing, the Iraq War has been waging for more than six years, over 4,000 US troops have been killed, and thousands more have been physically and mentally disabled, to say nothing of the other coalition troops, members of the press, and of course the Iraqis themselves who have met a similar fate. Along the way, dozens of US energy and construction

companies, as well as private military contractors such as Blackwater USA, have reaped billions of dollars in profits through government contracts to rebuild Iraq, provide security, and conduct military operations. Some of these contracts were awarded without competitive bidding and include corporations, such as Halliburton, that had close ties to the Bush administration (see Chapter 6). Moreover, the war profiteering has been marked by millions of dollars in wasteful spending and such outright fraud that Christian Parenti describes it as a "criminal racket" (2004:16; see also Klein 2007; Krane 2006; Scahill 2007; Scherer 2003).

The state crimes of the Bush administration that collectively are associated with what we call **Iraqgate, part 2**, are by no means the only scandals that marked this administration, but space precludes a full cataloging of everything that has transpired. Needless to say, these and other incidents discussed in this chapter have contributed to a growing cynicism of Americans toward their government and an erosion of **political legitimacy** in the United States. A legitimate political system is one that is generally accepted by the citizenry as representing its values and interests (Gerth & Mills 1946). A government forfeits this legitimacy when its leaders no longer enjoy that acceptance. Nowadays few would deny that the ties that once bound US citizens to their government have been "broken," though hopefully not beyond repair (Dean 2007; Nye et al. 1997; Rosoff et al. 2007).

8

Street Crime

DURING HIS RESEARCH ON GANGS IN DETROIT, Michigan, criminologist William Brown befriended a 15-year-old African American youth named Jimmy. Jimmy was living with his sister, for his mother was in prison and he had never met his father. Brown recounts the day he and his wife took Jimmy out for a birthday celebration:

> Where does a white, middle-class couple take a black soon-to-be-15 gang member for his birthday? . . . [W]e decided that the Detroit Zoo, followed by a movie, and perhaps dinner, would be both appropriate and appreciated. . . . It had never occurred to [us that Jimmy] . . . had never visited a city zoo. The day was absolutely perfect. . . . Jimmy was "hanging" outside his apartment . . . [in] "the projects." Although attempting to maintain the . . . attitude of a streetwise kid, there was a hint of excitement in Jimmy's voice as we exchanged greetings.
>
> . . . I knew that Jimmy had been involved in illegal drug sales . . . [but] he was, as usual, broke. . . . I gave [him] $20 so that he could have some sense of independence. . . . We walked around the zoo for nearly six hours. It was interesting . . . to watch Jimmy eat cotton candy, ice cream bars, [and] popcorn . . . like a normal kid on an outing. I had seen him navigate around a crack house and . . . he had been taking care of himself on the streets of Detroit for several years now!
>
> . . . Following the zoo . . . we went to a movie. . . . Jimmy ate two more boxes of popcorn and one ice cream sandwich and drank an extra-large drink. . . . After the movie we went to a preselected restaurant. At the restaurant we encountered many stares and subtle examples of disapproval from many of the [white] occupants. There were instances during our visit to this restaurant when I wanted to respond to some of the rude onlookers, but this was Jimmy's Day.
>
> . . . My wife and I will never forget Jimmy's 15th birthday. It was a day filled with good intentions. . . [but it] was also filled with cruelty. We removed Jimmy, for a day, from "the projects." . . . We gave him a glimpse of life outside his . . . environment of poverty. . . . The probability of escape for Jimmy, and for the thousands of "Jimmys" like him, is very low—despite all the political rhetoric of "American opportunity." (quoted in Shelden et al. 2004:294–297)

This chapter is about the social inequality that, for some, makes the

experience of street crime commonplace, and a rather ordinary day at the zoo an unusual life event. Although criminal behavior, as we have seen, is pervasive among all groups in society, it is not the *crimes of the powerful* but rather the *crimes of the powerless* that command the attention of law enforcement, politicians, the media, and the public. We call the constellation of behaviors that constitute this latter concern **street crime**: predatory theft, violence, drug use, involvement in gangs, and the like. In this chapter we advance our sociological imagination as we employ the conceptual categories of *class* and *race/ethnicity* to analyze some key dimensions of the street crime problem. In the following chapters we will extend this analysis by unraveling the *gender* dimensions of crime and by examining other forms of criminality and victimization.

We begin by providing an overview of the economic context of urban street crime in the United States. We then consider the circumstances of racial/ethnic minority groups. We examine several sources of crime data and explore the question of whether people of color are differentially involved in crime or differentially selected for arrest by law enforcement officials. Finally, we situate our analysis of urban street gangs in the context of a broader consideration of adolescent subcultures and the problem of law-violating behavior among middle-class youths.

The Economic Context of Urban Street Crime

Capitalist countries like the United States are marked by class inequality in the economic, educational, and cultural resources that are necessary, as we say in the Declaration of Independence, for "life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness." Capitalism is an economic system based on the principle of private rather than public ownership of the major means of economic production (see Chapter 1). In this system, a numerical minority of the population reaps a disproportionate amount of economic gain and consequent social privilege and political power, which some believe is deserved and others think is not. Nevertheless, capitalism has shown itself to be a dynamic system capable of adapting to new and changing conditions.

Alvin Gouldner observed that the social order cannot "be understood without making the concerns of economics focal and problematic, . . . without clarifying and focusing on the problem of [economic] scarcity" (1970:95). Indeed, many of the macrosociological theories in criminology (e.g., social disorganization, anomie-strain, and conflict theories) are in one way or another concerned with the relationship between class inequality and street crime. In this chapter we explore this relationship further by examining how transformations in the economy have affected patterns of street crime in the United States.

Over the past century, changing patterns of economic production have

dramatically changed the American landscape. In earlier years, manufacturing plants were built in and around downtown factory districts that were adjacent to working-class neighborhoods. This pattern of urban land use promoted labor solidarity and union-organizing efforts (Gordon 1978). Over time, however, the larger capitalist corporations began to move their manufacturing plants to outlying suburbs, where taxes were lower, land was cheaper, and the quality of life was more pristine, precipitating a depletion of the economic base of the central or inner cities. As these companies grew, they were able to separate their production operations from their administrative, marketing, and product-development functions, which were "moved to office buildings in downtown business districts with access to financial services and contacts with other firms" (Robinson 1993:298–299). Gradually, vibrant "industrial sites surrounded by working-class neighborhoods [were transformed into] downtown businesses adjacent to emptying manufacturing areas and deteriorating working-class districts." More recently, even the nonmanufacturing corporate functions have relocated to suburbia.

The transformation of the urban scene also was influenced by the massive migration of (largely rural) African Americans from the South to the North and to the West Coast. After the Civil War, Southern blacks had remained a source of cheap farm labor for white plantation owners. But such economic exploitation, along with adverse crop conditions, an abundant labor supply, and the mechanization of agriculture (to say nothing of white racial violence), encouraged African Americans to look elsewhere in their search for the American dream. During World War I, Northern employers actively encouraged black migration to meet the demands of the war economy and to ease the labor shortage, which had been worsened by the curtailment of European immigrant labor. At other times, however, African Americans constituted a surplus labor supply that was used by employers to suppress white workers' wages and replace white workers who went on strike (Palen 2005; Robinson 1993).

Black migration tapered off during the Great Depression of the 1930s but accelerated during World War II and continued through the 1960s. While about half of African Americans still live in the South, they are one of the most urbanized segments of the US population and are especially concentrated in large metropolitan areas (Palen 2005).

Over the years, capitalists also sought a more favorable business climate by shifting economic production away from the core cities of the northeastern and north-central regions of the United States to the southern and western states, where labor unions were weaker and wage scales were lower. At the same time, the federal government's subsidization of highway construction and home loans favored suburban growth, which was motivated as well by "white flight" from people of color. Financial lending institutions practiced redlining and rarely invested in the inner city, contributing further to

the depreciation of neighborhoods and property values (Brady 1983; Skogan 1986). Don Wallace and Drew Humphries (1993) attribute rising urban crime rates, in part, to these trends. In their research, they found that "central city hardship"—an index of several measures of socioeconomic disadvantage in central cities relative to their outlying suburban areas—was positively related to rates of several violent and property crimes. Similarly, other studies have found that the degree of suburbanization in a metropolitan area is associated with higher rates of inner-city crime (Farley 1987; Jargowsky & Park 2009; Shihadeh & Ousey 1996). To be sure, crime exists in the suburbs as well as in urban areas, and among suburban communities crime rates vary with class composition and with opportunities to commit crime (e.g., large shopping centers and malls). And while suburban poverty has been increasing in recent years, the street crime problem remains more acute in the depleted urban core (Palen 2005; Press 2007c).

According to Steven Margolin and Judith Schor (1990), the 1950s and 1960s were the golden age of postwar capitalism, when economic growth—and the G.I. Bill—created unprecedented prosperity for many people in the United States. However, capitalism has been marked by periodic swings in the **business cycle** (rises and falls in economic activity), some short-term, some long-term (Gordon et al. 1982). Over the long term, periods of economic growth eventually exhaust themselves due to factors such as the overproduction and underconsumption of products, outdated technologies, and diminishing supplies of skilled labor. A period of economic stagnation or decline then ensues, and businesses seek alternative strategies for growth. A phase of exploration and innovation typically follows, involving the "development and deployment of new production technologies and new social strategies for organizing the labor process" (Carlson & Michalowski 1997:214). These processes bring workers into or displace them from the productive process.

In the 1970s, unemployment, income inequality, and inflation increased, reducing the standard of living for a sizable portion of the US population. Between 1979 and 1982, the Federal Reserve Board raised interest rates to limit the expansion of credit and slow economic growth. While inflation consequently declined, unemployment and business bankruptcies soared. In the early 1980s, the Ronald Reagan administration hoped to stimulate the economy by shifting the tax burden away from corporations and the investing class, increasing military spending, and reducing social programs and corporate regulations. Corporations began to recoup profits by acquiring other companies, often by borrowing money (with tax-deductible interest) and by downsizing and relocating to lower-wage domestic and foreign labor markets. They also received low-cost government loans and subsidies (corporate welfare) to help them relocate abroad and to advertise their products in foreign countries. At the same time,

unions were weakened (e.g., striking air-traffic controllers were replaced), union membership fell to a historic low, and workers were increasingly kept in line by the threat of job loss (Carlson & Michalowski 1997; Hagan 1994; Schwendinger & Schwendinger 1993).

These trends have continued and have been exacerbated in recent years. While corporate executives earn increasingly exorbitant salaries, the average US worker has been laboring harder and for longer hours (Ivins & Dubose 2003; Simon 2007). Throughout the 1990s, the average work year in the United States expanded by 184 hours, with US workers averaging 350 more hours of work per year than their European counterparts. Economic recovery has also been uneven, consistent with the dual or segmented nature of the economy (Bluestone & Harrison 1982; Hagan 1994). The core or **primary labor market** consists of the more skilled and better-paying jobs, which are concentrated in the unionized manufacturing sector of the economy (e.g., auto, aircraft, steel, petroleum, rubber, electronics, chemicals). The periphery or **secondary labor market** jobs require less skill, pay less, and are less secure and often part-time. These latter workers include janitors, dishwashers, maids, laundry workers, migrant farm workers, and the like, who may be employed but remain marginal to the economy. During the golden age of capitalism, primary labor market jobs expanded but have since declined due to the deindustrialization of the economy. Technological changes (especially computerization) have created new opportunities for good-paying jobs, but these jobs require much more education than previous entry-level manufacturing ones. The expanded service economy, with low-paying jobs in the secondary sector, such as the fast food industry, has constituted the other major area of job growth. Overall, between 1973 and 2000, the real income of the bottom 90 percent of taxpayers fell by 7 percent, while the income (not including capital gains) of the top 1 percent rose by 148 percent, the top 0.1 percent by 343 percent, and the top 0.01 percent by 599 percent (Krugman 2004).

These structural or macro-level changes in the economy have impacted micro-level social life in neighborhoods across the country. They have particularly affected poor, urban minority communities, many of which now lack the very jobs that had encouraged urban migration in the first place. Under these conditions, street crime becomes part of the repertoire of economic activity of many people, along with governmental subsidies and temporary or part-time secondary labor market jobs (Hagedorn 1988; Wilson 1987), a topic we will return to later in the chapter.

Unemployment and Crime

Several criminological theories—from macro-level social theories to the micro-level theory of rational choice—converge in the expectation that unemployment increases the level of street crime. Certainly, a class-based

explanation of crime would predict such a relationship. Yet in a review of the literature on this topic, Theodore Chiricos (1987) reported on an apparent consensus of doubt among criminologists regarding the connection between unemployment and street crime. Some studies had found a positive relationship, some a negative relationship, and some no relationship between unemployment and crime. Conservative critics of liberal prevention policies used these findings to dismiss programs that attempted to increase job opportunities for the disadvantaged (Wilson & Herrnstein 1985).

In his review of over 60 aggregate-level studies, Chiricos (1987) tried to explain the inconsistent findings. **Aggregate studies** refer to those that use macro-level geographical areas like cities, states, or nations, rather than individuals, as the unit of analysis. Chiricos noted that property crimes (especially burglary and larceny) in these studies were more likely than violent crimes to be positively associated with unemployment. A positive relationship between unemployment and street crime was also more likely in studies that used data at lower levels of aggregation; that is, a positive relationship was more likely in studies that examined varying rates of unemployment and crime within a single city (intracity data) than in those that compared multiple cities or metropolitan areas (intercity and metropolitan data) or those that used longitudinal national data. Chiricos reasoned that intracity data may be more sensitive to the social context or "milieu effects" of unemployment in a particular area; in other words, high unemployment in "a particular neighborhood or section of a city or county . . . creates a climate of hopelessness or anomie with [criminogenic] consequences even for those not directly unemployed (e.g., teenagers or others not in the labor force)" (p. 95). More recently, Daniel Mears and Avinash Bhati (2006) argued that "resource deprivation" in a particular area of a city will have a spillover effect on crime in adjacent or spatially proximate areas. In a study of 343 "neighborhood clusters" in the city of Chicago, Mears and Bhati found that resource deprivation—as measured by an index that includes the unemployment rate, median household income, and the percentage of the population living below the poverty level—was positively associated with homicide rates in neighboring communities. These findings support Herman Schwendinger and Julia Schwendinger's contention (1993) that investments in economic-oriented prevention programs would help not only the participants who are directly involved, but other people as well.

An additional problem with research on the connection between unemployment and street crime is that the official government measure of unemployment includes only those individuals who are considered temporarily unemployed and who continue to look for work. It therefore excludes those who are more or less permanently (or structurally) unemployed. The 1970s was a period of economic hardship marked by rising **structural unemployment** characteristic of what conflict theorists call the "surplus population"

(see Chapter 5), whereby unemployment becomes a long-term rather than transitory state, and whereby those living at the margins of the economy increasingly lose faith in the possibility of advancement. According to Susan Carlson and Raymond Michalowski: "During periods of structural unemployment, a larger proportion of those who will lose jobs will be unable to reenter the labor force, or will do so at wages and under working conditions considerably less attractive than in the jobs they lost. Similarly, a larger share of young people hoping to enter the workforce for the first time will meet with failure or will find only dead-end 'hamburger' jobs" (1997:217).

Both Chiricos (1987) and Carlson and Michalowski (1997) found a positive relationship between unemployment and crime in the 1970s. In the post-1970s period, however, this relationship was weak, perhaps because the official unemployment rate had become increasingly decoupled from the plight of the structurally unemployed, who are the most likely to engage in street crime. At the same time, other studies found that prison incarceration rates increased with rising unemployment and declining labor force participation. Researchers postulate that during times of economic hardship, the criminal justice system is used to control the structurally marginalized surplus population (Chiricos & Delone 1992; Hochstetler & Shover 1997; Michalowski & Carlson 1999).

Still another issue that complicates the relationship between unemployment and street crime is the possible countervailing effect of unemployment, which may increase the incentive or motivation for crime but also decrease the opportunity for crime. The latter is an expectation of routine activities theory, for when unemployment rises, there are fewer economic goods (suitable targets) available to be stolen and there are more unemployed people at home (capable guardians) to protect their property (Cantor & Land 1975; see Chapter 4). Studies attempting to evaluate this countervailing effect, like the research on the relationship between unemployment and street crime as a whole, have been inconsistent (Arvanites & DeFina 2006; Kleck & Chiricos 2002). On the other hand, research that has examined the effects of both unemployment and deterrence variables (i.e., the certainty and severity of punishment) have found that the former have as much (or more) impact than the latter on lowering the crime rate (Chiricos 1987). In addition, studies show that prison inmates are more likely than the general population to be unemployed prior to incarceration, that unemployment prior to incarceration is a strong predictor of recidivism following release, and that ex-convicts who find employment have lower recidivism rates (Conklin 2003).

Terence Thornberry and R. L. Christenson (1984) were among the first to point out that the relationship between unemployment and street crime may be reciprocal or mutually reinforcing. In a longitudinal study of nearly

a thousand males born in Philadelphia in 1945, they found that unemployment was an immediate or short-term stimulus to increased criminal activity, but that crime over the long term also increased the likelihood of unemployment. John Hagan (1993) adds that involvement in early-life delinquency may actually precede unemployment in people's lives. Involvement in crime, especially for poor urban youths, embeds individuals in networks of criminal associations (including gangs) and at the same time distances them from networks of "job contacts that initiate and sustain legitimate occupational careers" (p. 469). This makes it increasingly difficult for youths to outgrow their youthful ties, and it eliminates possibilities for employment even before they become apparent. Unemployment, in turn, becomes a significant problem for accomplishing the transition to adulthood, making it more likely that earlier illegal commitments will be sustained. Hagan's own self-report survey research and a number of ethnographies of the urban poor support this hypothesis (Anderson 1999; Moore 1991; Padilla 1992; Sullivan 1989). Moreover, Elliot Currie (1985) notes that it is not just employment but also the *quality* of work that affects the rate of street crime. People's commitment to the conventional social order is, in part, influenced by the degree to which their work provides them with dignity, appreciation from others, and a sense of meaningful participation in their community (see also Uggen 1999).

Clearly, structural changes in the economy, including the problem of unemployment, have had an especially deleterious impact on the lives of the urban poor, a phenomenon that entails that intersection of class and race/ethnicity. We will explore this issue further shortly, but first we briefly consider the problem of homelessness and crime.

Homelessness and Crime

In the past, the homeless population in the United States consisted primarily of unemployed, alcoholic men over 50 years of age. The homeless were less visible than they are today, living mainly in "skid-row areas of large cities or hobo villages beside train tracks" (Newman 2000:356). Nowadays the homeless population is more diverse and is more visible on the streets and in parks, train and bus stations, and abandoned buildings. The decline in affordable low-income housing has been a major factor in the rise of homelessness in the United States. During the 1980s and 1990s, cities experienced dramatic reductions in single-room occupancy hotels, rooming houses, and the like. In addition, about "half a million units of low-income housing were lost to condominium conversion, abandonment, arson, and demolition," and federal housing subsidies for low-income people were cut by about 70 percent (Newman 2000:357; Palen 2005).

About 744,000 people in the United States are currently homeless on a given day (*Wisconsin State Journal* 2007c). Many actually have part-time or

full-time jobs but are unable to afford rent, and many more live on the brink of destitution. Some even rent storage lockers to live in because that is all they can afford, even though it is illegal to use those facilities for that purpose (Rickert 2008). A survey of 25 cities sponsored by the US Conference of Mayors found that about 44 percent of the homeless are single men, 13 percent are single women, 36 percent are families (usually mothers) with children, and 7 percent are children living on their own (Almanac of Policy Issues 2007). African Americans make up about 50 percent of the homeless, whites 35 percent, Hispanics 12 percent, Native Americans 2 percent, and Asians 1 percent. About 25 percent are veterans and 15 percent are mentally ill, the latter of whom, in the past, might have been hospitalized (Associated Press 2007b; ScienceDaily 2005; Snow et al. 1986).

Clearly the problem of homelessness is a national disgrace, even more so because the homeless, like the poor more generally, suffer more health

Children compose a significant part of the homeless population in the United States.

problems than the general population and die at an earlier age (Newman 2000). They also experience higher rates of criminal victimization, with the nonwhite homeless having higher rates of victimization than the white homeless (Coston 1992; Fitzpatrick et al. 1993). However, the homeless also commit crimes themselves, stealing and prostituting to survive and often to support drug or alcohol addictions. One study of the southern California beach community of Santa Monica found that the homeless were responsible for about half of the serious felonies in that city (Melekian 1990). A study of homeless shelters in New York City found that nearly a quarter of the occupants had been incarcerated within the preceding two years (Metraux & Culhane 2006). And since the homeless commit crimes against other homeless people, even shelters are ridden with theft, drugs, and violence.

Homeless youths in particular are preyed upon by their adult counterparts, who quite literally attempt to take the clothes off their backs. One boy describes his experience in a shelter this way: "I was just a kid. . . . They were pushing me around. . . . They asked me to take my clothes off, they wanted to steal my clothes. Like they were four against me" (Hagan & McCarthy 1997:45). Another boy recalls: "I fell asleep . . . and . . . in the middle of the night . . . I wake up and there's two guys at my bed. . . . One guy's trying to yank my boots off, and the other guy's undoing my pants. . . . Another night . . . I saw a guy get his face cut open, because he refused to give another a cigarette . . . and that's when I said, . . . 'I'm out of here'" (pp. 45–46). Of course, homelessness itself may be the "ultimate state of victimization" for people of all ages (Fitzpatrick et al. 1993:366).

In a study of homeless youths in Toronto and Vancouver, Canada, Bill McCarthy and colleagues (2002) found that some homeless youths manage to form fictive "street families" who provide mutual support and sufficient protection to minimize their victimization from predatory violence. One youth described a "street family . . . [as] basically a group of friends . . . you can count on . . . to help you" (p. 848). Another youth said that a street family consisted of "people loving and caring for you . . . being there for you. It feels better . . . than just being . . . alone when you don't know what to do" (p. 845). And another remarked: "The difference between a street sister or brother and an average person is . . . you know they are solid, that they're not going to rat, they are not going to steal from you. . . . Being solid is if somebody walks up to a group of us and picks on one person . . . your street brother or sister is going to stand up for that person" (p. 850).

Racial/Ethnic Status and Street Crime

A **minority group** can be conceptualized as a group whose members are singled out by the dominant group (or groups) in a society for unequal or

discriminatory treatment. In this section we are primarily concerned with the racial/ethnic minorities whose class position and disadvantaged social status increase their likelihood of involvement in street crime and contact with the criminal justice system.

Race should be understood as a social construction rather than as a biological phenomenon, and distinct groups, if they ever did exist, no longer exist today due to interracial mixing (see Chapter 1). Furthermore, racial classification schemes are often unable to accommodate many people who think of themselves as biracial or multiracial. These schemes also collapse some groups that are quite culturally distinct; for example, the category of "Asian" in reference to Chinese, Japanese, Korean, Vietnamese, and Filipino individuals. The term "ethnicity," typically referring to cultural distinctions among groups with different national and cultural origins, is ambiguous as well. The category of "Hispanic" or "Latino," for example, masks important distinctions between persons from different Spanish-speaking countries.

Previously we observed that criminal justice data tend not to reflect the racial and ethnic diversity of the United States. Most data are categorized only in terms of white and black, with Hispanics often included as white. And criminal justice officials may be poorly trained about race and ethnic classifications and may make decisions based on stereotypes. Moreover, criminologists analyzing these data have at times failed to acknowledge the social and political nature of such categories and have advanced explanations of crime that reflect racist assumptions about the biological inferiority of some groups of people. Such work ranges from the century-old formulations of criminologists like Cesare Lombroso to the more recent work on IQ and criminality by Richard Herrnstein and Charles Murray (see Chapter 3). Nevertheless, we still need to understand how "some crimes . . . come to be associated . . . directly or indirectly" with the categories of race and ethnicity (Holdaway 1997:396).

The Color of Crime Data: Patterns of Offending and Victimization

The racial composition of arrests. In Chapter 2 we discussed the *Uniform Crime Reports,* the most widely used source of official data on crime, as well as two other methods of counting crime and criminals: victimization surveys and self-report surveys. As noted, the *UCR* make a distinction between Index crimes (or Part I offenses) and non-Index crimes (or Part II offenses). Previously we presented race-specific (Index crime) arrest rates for the four racial groupings included in the *UCR:* white, black, American Indian/Alaskan Native, and Asian/Pacific Islander (see Table 2.5, p. 47). (These rates were calculated by dividing the total number of arrests for individuals in each group by the number of persons in that group.)

Blacks had the highest arrest rates for both violent and property crimes, followed by American Indians/Alaskan Natives, whites, and Asians/Pacific Islanders, respectively. We also noted that these rates could be interpreted as representing *differential criminal involvement* or *differential likelihood of selection.* In other words, we asked whether higher arrest rates reflect a group's greater involvement in these types of crimes, its greater vulnerability to being apprehended by the police, or both.

Table 8.1 breaks down (or disaggregates) the arrest data for Index and non-Index crimes for 2007 according to the percentage of arrests for each crime accounted for by each of the four racial groups. Ignoring for a moment the limitations of these data, a few conclusions can be drawn. American Indians/Alaskan Natives and Asians/Pacific Islanders constitute only a small proportion of arrests. This is not surprising, since these two groups constitute just 1 percent and 5 percent of the US population, respectively. The relatively small percentage of American Indian/Alaskan Native and Asian/Pacific Islander arrests makes any meaningful observations based on these data problematic, other than suggesting that Asians/Pacific Islanders are generally underrepresented in arrests in comparison to their percentage composition of the population (the number of American Indian/Alaskan Native arrests is comparable to that group's percentage composition of the population). This leaves us with the white and black arrests to examine.

The percentage of white arrests (which collapses data for Hispanic and non-Hispanic whites) ranges from 42 to 75 percent for Index crimes and from 24 to 89 percent for non-Index crimes. Whites constitute about 80 percent of the US population (65 percent non-Hispanic and 15 percent Hispanic). Examination of Table 8.1 shows that whites are *underrepresented* in arrests for all the Part I offenses. Among Part II offenses, the percentage of arrests for whites approximates or exceeds 80 percent only for drinking-related offenses: driving under the influence (89 percent), liquor laws (86 percent), and drunkenness (84 percent). Moreover, since other sources of data suggest that Hispanics have higher arrest rates than non-Hispanic whites for some crimes, particularly homicide, the underrepresentation of non-Hispanic whites is probably greater than suggested by these statistics (Mann 1993; Martinez 1996; Moore 1991; Padilla 1992). On the other hand, African Americans, who constitute about 13 percent of the US population, constitute 23 to 57 percent of arrests for Index crimes and 9 to 74 percent of arrests for non-Index crimes. African Americans are thus *overrepresented* in arrests for all the Part I and nearly all the Part II offenses, including drug abuse violations, one of the most controversial areas of law enforcement.

Another way of looking at these arrest data is to examine the types of crimes that each racial group commits most often. The more serious Index crimes constitute only 15 percent of all white arrests, 18 percent of black

Table 8.1 Racial Distribution of Arrests (2007)

	Percentage Distribution[a]			
	White	Black	American Indian or Alaskan Native	Asian or Pacific Islander
Percentage of population	80	13	1	5
Index crimes/Part I offenses				
Homicide[b]	48	50	1	1
Forcible rape	64	34	1	1
Robbery	42	57	1	1
Aggravated assault	64	34	1	1
Burglary	69	30	1	1
Larceny-theft	68	29	1	1
Motor vehicle theft	62	36	1	2
Arson	75	23	1	1
Non-Index crimes/Part II offenses				
Other assaults	66	32	1	1
Forgery and counterfeiting	70	29	1	1
Fraud	69	30	1	1
Embezzlement	64	29	1	2
Stolen property[c]	63	35	1	1
Vandalism	76	22	2	1
Weapons[d]	62	36	1	1
Prostitution and commercialized vice	58	39	1	2
Sex offenses[e]	73	25	1	1
Drug abuse violations	64	35	1	1
Gambling	24	74	< 1	4
Offenses against family and children	68	30	2	1
Driving under the influence	89	9	1	1
Liquor laws	86	10	3	1
Drunkenness	84	14	2	1
Disorderly conduct	64	34	2	1
Vagrancy	61	37	2	1
All other offenses (except traffic)	67	31	1	1
Suspicion	58	41	< 1	4
Curfew and loitering	64	34	1	1
Runaways	69	27	2	1

Sources: Federal Bureau of Investigation 2007a, tab. 43; US Bureau of Census 2008, tab. 8.
Notes: a. Percentages may not sum to 100 due to rounding.
b. Homicide = murder and nonnegligent manslaughter.
c. Stolen property = buying, receiving, possessing, etc.
d. Weapons = carrying, possessing, etc.
e. Sex offenses = all except forcible rape and prostitution.

arrests, 14 percent of American Indian/Alaskan Native arrests, and 20 percent of Asian/Pacific Islander arrests. Table 8.2 rank-orders the types of crimes for which whites and blacks, the two groups that account for the bulk of the arrests, are arrested most often. Note that among the top 10

Table 8.2 Rank-Order of Most Common Arrests for Whites and Blacks (2007)

White	Black
1. Driving under the influence	1. Drug abuse violations
2. Drug abuse violations	2. Other assaults
3. Other assaults	3. Larceny-theft[a]
4. Larceny-theft[a]	4. Disorderly conduct
5. Liquor laws	5. Aggravated assaulta
6. Drunkenness	6. Driving under the influence
7. Disorderly conduct	7. Burglary[a]
8. Aggravated assaulta	8. Drunkenness
9. Vandalism	9. Weapons
10. Burglary[a]	10. Robbery

Source: Federal Bureau of Investigation 2007a, tab. 43.

Notes: 1 = most common, 10 = least common. Arrests do not include crimes listed as "all other offenses (except traffic)," a catchall category reflecting state and local laws not listed in the *UCR.*

a. Index crime.

offenses for each group, whites and blacks are for the most part arrested for similar crimes—that is, their "arrest portfolios" tend to be the same (Mann 1993:45). Nevertheless, the overrepresentation of African Americans in these arrest data needs explanation. Although a class analysis of street crime (which we will explore further) suggests reasons for expecting some differential involvement of poor, urban minorities, there is evidence that supports a differential selection interpretation of arrest disparities as well. And ultimately, analyses of racial arrest data must confront the question of whether such disparities necessarily imply discrimination (Walker et al. 2004).

We will explore the question of police bias in more depth in Chapter 11. For now we note that there is mixed evidence on this score, making generalizations difficult. Some research has found that race does matter, but there are countervailing factors that complicate the picture. For example, studies have shown that African Americans are more likely to be arrested on the basis of weak evidence and "in 'on-view' situations rather than with an [arrest] warrant" (Walker et al. 2004:110). Officers are also more likely to invoke their power to arrest when the victim is white and especially when the victim is white and the suspect is black (Bynum et al. 1982; Smith et al. 1984). On the other hand, since most crime is *intraracial,* committed by offenders against victims of the same group (see below), this may lead to fewer black arrests because police may be less likely to respond to crimes involving black victims and complainants than to crimes involving white victims and complainants. In addition, research suggests that African Americans are more distrustful of the police and may be less likely to provide witness testimony that might effectuate an arrest. Thus, in a study of

over 335,000 arrests nationally, Stewart D'Alessio and Lisa Stolzenberg (2003) found that blacks were actually *less likely* than whites to be arrested following incidents of robbery and assault, and that race played no role in the likelihood of arrest for forcible rape. Furthermore, some research has found that police bias against African Americans is minimal when controlling for offense seriousness and prior record of the offender (see Barkan 2006; Berger & Gregory 2009).

Robert Sampson (1986) offers insight into the differential involvement versus selection issue from a class perspective. According to Sampson, police do patrol lower-class communities (which are often disproportionately populated by minority groups) more intensely than they patrol higher-status communities. He argues, however, that the bias in policing is more ecological, dependent on neighborhood context, than it is directed at individuals per se. In other words, given an encounter with the police, a person of one racial group may be no more or less likely to be arrested, but individuals differ in the chance that their offenses will be detected in the first place. Moreover, lower-class communities have a more active street life, largely because residents have less access to private space. "Since the regulation of public places is a central task of policing, . . . people in [these] . . . areas are subject to greater surveillance" (p. 878). Ultimately these processes translate into a greater likelihood of lower-class individuals (including racial and ethnic minorities) accumulating a prior record of offending, if even for only minor crimes (Chambliss 1994). Thus research that finds that prior record predicts likelihood of subsequent arrest ignores the possibility that earlier ecological biases may affect later arrest outcomes regardless of whether discrimination is present in these later cases.

In addition, police are more likely to invoke their power to arrest when the suspect is disrespectful, and African Americans are more likely to respond in ways that are perceived this way (Black 1980). But it is also likely that black suspects' reactions stem from the hostile treatment and shakedowns they not uncommonly receive from police. As Coramae Richey Mann notes, people of color "may be stopped for questioning in sections of cities where they are not often seen, or for driving a car which seems beyond their means or is assumed by the police to be of doubtful legal possession; [indeed] minorities are often hassled simply for having a conversation on the street" (1993:138). This pattern of law enforcement has been referred to as *racial profiling*—the practice of targeting a particular group for more intrusive law enforcement because of their race or ethnicity—a problem we will examine in more detail later in the book.

Other research suggests that the degree of law enforcement discrimination is related to the size and consequent perceived threat posed by the minority population, which criminologists interpret in terms of **minority group-threat theory** (Blalock 1967). When dominant groups or public offi-

cials are threatened by a large racial underclass, they are more likely to tolerate, condone, and exercise force to maintain social order. Thus Dale Dannefer and Russell Schutt (1982) analyzed police and juvenile-court records in six counties and found that racial bias (more severe dispositions independent of offense seriousness and prior record) was greater in areas marked by a higher concentration of minorities. They argue that law enforcement may have greater fear of residents "getting out of their place" as the presence of a minority group increases (p. 1115).

Steven Brandl and colleagues' time-series analysis (1995) of the city of Milwaukee between 1934 and 1987 also sheds light on this issue. Brandl and colleagues disaggregated data on police force size and examined the effects of the racial composition (percentage black) of the city, over time, on per capita number of patrol, detective, and civilian police. Controlling for the level of crime, they found that racial composition was positively related to total police force size and to total number of patrol officers, but not to total number of detectives nor to total number of civilian police. They concluded that "the results are consistent with the view that racial conflict promotes increases in the size of the unit most directly responsible for controlling those groups which threaten the interests of the powerful" (pp. 559–560).

In a study of 90 cities, however, Pamela Jackson and Leo Carroll (1981) found that a community's allocation of police resources (as measured by per capita police expenditures) exhibited a *curvilinear* relationship to the size of its minority population, irrespective of the level of crime. In other words, the degree of police resources increased with the size of a minority group until that group reached a critical mass, at which point the resources declined. Jackson and Carroll argue that as African Americans become a predominant group in a city, they translate their numbers into political power in ways that direct expenditures away from police control. In a subsequent study, Jackson (1985) drew similar conclusions from an analysis of cities with varying proportions of Latinos. Other research supports the general thrust of minority group-threat theory, although the relationship is complicated by variations in local political contexts (e.g., the role of citizen police-review boards, the effects of unionization on police wages, whether city council representatives are elected to serve particular districts or the entire city) as well as the shifting distributions of different minority groups within particular precincts (Kane 2003; Stucky 2005).

Victimization surveys. In Chapter 2 we presented data from the *National Crime Victimization Survey* indicating that African Americans and Hispanics experience higher rates of victimization than whites for both crimes against property and crimes against persons. In addition to these data, the *NCVS* collects information on respondents' *perception of the race*

of the offender for personal victimizations. According to these data, the rate of white offenders is 20.9 per 1,000 respondents, the rate of black offenders is 28.7, and the rate of other groups (American Indians/Alaskan Natives and Asians/Pacific Islanders) is 14.1 (US Department of Justice 2005). Although the rate for black offenders is higher than the rate for whites, the discrepancy is not as marked as in the *UCR* data.

Some victimization research also indicates that most crimes of violence are *intraracial.* A *NCVS* study found that 67 percent of whites were victimized by offenders perceived to be white, while 78 percent of blacks were victimized by offenders perceived to be black (US Department of Justice 1997). At the same time, the *NCVS* study found that black offenders were more likely than white offenders to cross racial lines. In other words, black offenders were more likely to victimize whites than white offenders were to victimize blacks. For *single-offender* victimizations, 17 percent of whites were victimized by persons perceived to be black, while 12 percent of blacks were victimized by persons perceived to be white; for *multiple-offender* victimizations, 24 percent of whites were victimized by persons perceived to be black, while 7 percent of blacks were victimized by persons perceived to be white. Some criminologists attribute this disparity to the relative sizes of the black and white populations. Since there are significantly more whites in the population than blacks, motivated black offenders have a greater chance of interacting with potential white victims than motivated white offenders have of interacting with potential black victims (O'Brien 1987). In addition, the relative affluence of whites may make them more attractive targets of property crime by black offenders than black targets are for white offenders. Samuel Walker and colleagues also offer a word of caution regarding *NCVS* data on African American offenders, which they believe may be inflated: "Victim memory is subject to decay over time and to 'retroactive reconstruction' to fit the popular conception of a criminal offender. If a victim believes that the 'typical criminal' is African American, this opinion may influence his or her perception of the race of the offender" (2004:45).

Self-report surveys. In Chapter 2 we discussed some of the ways in which self-report surveys have addressed the issue of race and crime. Initial research lent support to the discrimination hypothesis, as self-report delinquency surveys failed to confirm the black-white disparities found in the *UCR.* Attempts at reconciling the self-report and official findings focused on distinguishing the seriousness and frequency of delinquent conduct. One *National Youth Survey* study did confirm race differences (i.e., higher rates for African Americans) for some of the more serious and high-frequency offenders, but the *NYS* results were inconsistent over the years. However, *NYS* research did find consistent results for class differences, indicating that racial influences may best be explained by class influences.

Overall, the racial and ethnic disparities found in self-report studies have been less pronounced than those found in official statistics. For instance, the national Monitoring the Future project (see Chapter 2) shows negligible differences between white and black high school seniors in their self-reported involvement in a variety of property crimes and acts of violence—such as stealing, using a weapon to take something from another person, fighting, vandalism, and setting fire to property (US Department of Justice 2003). In addition, data from a national survey conducted by the US Department of Health and Human Services indicate that blacks do *not* generally use more illicit drugs than whites; and that Hispanics, Asians, and Native Hawaiians/Pacific Islanders use drugs less than both blacks and whites (see Table 8.3). American Indian/Alaskan Native is the only group that stands out as having a noticeably higher proportion of users. These findings call into question the "war on drugs," which has resulted in the disproportionate arrest and incarceration of people of color (see Chapter 1). In order to put this bias against racial and ethnic minorities into historical perspective, we now turn to a consideration of drug prohibition.

Drug Prohibition: A Design for Discrimination

A century ago there were relatively few laws on the books that prohibited the use of drugs in the United States. Cough elixirs with morphine (an opium derivative) were sold over the counter or ordered by mail from Sears Roebuck. Marijuana was used for migraine headaches, asthma, and other maladies, and sold in both fluid extracts and in cigarette form. Physicians used cocaine as a local anesthetic and as a treatment for fatigue and morphine addiction, and it was once the official remedy of the Hay Fever Association. Even Bordeaux wines, Coca-Cola soft drinks, liquors, cigarettes, tablets, ointments, and sprays contained cocaine. Doctors often pre-

Table 8.3 Self-Reported Use of Illicit Drugs by Race/Ethnicity (2007)

	Percentage Who Used		
	Over Past Month	Over Past Year	Over Lifetime
White	8.2	14.9	50.3
Black	9.5	16.0	43.1
Hispanic	6.6	12.2	34.2
American Indian/Alaskan Native	12.6	18.4	54.6
Asian	4.2	7.2	22.8
Native Hawaiian/Pacific Islander	7.5	13.3	40.9

Source: US Department of Health and Human Services 2007, tab. G.11.

Note: Data are for ages 12 and older. Native Hawaiian/Pacific Islander data are for 2006 (2007 data not available).

scribed opium to white, middle-aged women from the middle or upper class, the typical users of the time, to alleviate gynecological and nervous "disorders." And because it was thought to enhance an individual's physical and mental performance, employers also gave it to workers to increase productivity and hence employers' profits (Brecher 1972; Kennedy 2003).

A detailed account of how this state of affairs changed is beyond the scope of this chapter. The constellation of factors that influenced drug prohibition included such diverse issues as international treaties, the development of the medical profession, and law enforcement's interest in expanding its jurisdictional domain (Musto 1987; Waterston 1993). Here we focus on the well-documented historical connection between drug prohibition and racial/ethnic hostilities in the United States.

Opium, the first drug to be regulated in the United States, was used primarily by the Chinese in the nineteenth century. Although the first large wave of Chinese immigrants was composed predominantly of more affluent Chinese, they were succeeded by laborers who worked in the mining industry and built the railroads in the West. By 1875, racism and **xenophobia**—an irrational or prejudicial fear or dislike of strangers or foreigners—as well as concern that lower-paid Chinese workers would displace whites, led to ordinances that prohibited opium dens and smoking in San Francisco. Similar ordinances were passed the next year in Virginia City, Nevada. A major impetus for such laws was the belief that opium smoking enhanced workers' productivity, thereby placing nonsmoking whites at a disadvantage in the labor market. Federal legislation attempting to control Chinese drug use was also enacted. In 1887 the US government outlawed the importation of opium *by the Chinese,* even though it remained legal for other groups to import the drug for smoking until 1909. Fear of Chinese immigrants and racial hostility culminated two years later in the passage of the **Chinese Exclusion Act**, which prohibited immigration of additional Chinese into the country at that time (Helmer 1975; Musto 1987; Regoli & Hewitt 1997).

Cocaine was included with opiates in the **Harrison Narcotics Act**, passed by the US Congress in 1914, which regulated the possession and use of narcotics. Cocaine use, which was associated with African Americans, inspired racial fears in whites. Although poverty-stricken blacks used cocaine for relief from bronchial disease and tuberculosis, they did not use it to a greater extent than whites. In fact, it is likely that African Americans experienced lower rates of addiction because they were less likely to receive medical care and doctors' prescriptions for drugs (Helmer 1975; Kennedy 2003). Nevertheless, the media of those times promoted the myth of blacks' proclivity to drug-induced criminality. In 1903, for example, an article in the *New York Tribune* claimed that "many of the horrible crimes committed in the Southern States by the colored people can be traced directly to the cocaine habit," and in 1914 the *Literary Digest* asserted that "most

of the attacks upon white women of the South are a direct result of a cocaine-crazed Negro brain" (cited in Regoli & Hewitt 1997:379–380). According to David Musto's account (1987), fear of cocaine and its ability to create superhuman strength among African Americans was also the chief reason Southern police switched from .32-caliber to .38-caliber pistols. Although relatively few people were incarcerated for drug violations as a result of the Harrison Act compared to subsequent antidrug legislation, the act was disproportionately applied to African Americans. By the end of the 1920s, African Americans, who constituted just 9 percent of the population at the time, constituted 23 percent of all incarcerated drug offenders (Kennedy 2003).

Marijuana, a drug originally associated with Mexican immigrants in the Southwest, did not come under the control of the Federal Bureau of Narcotics (FBN) until the late 1930s, although many places had statutes outlawing its use by the mid-1920s. The Great Depression, which adversely affected employment opportunities, exacerbated the country's fear of Mexican workers, who, like the Chinese, worked for lower wages than whites. Employers in agriculture and other industries supported the anti-Mexican campaign because Mexicans had been successfully organizing unions and strikes. Also fueling the concern about marijuana was the generally accepted notion that violence and sexual promiscuity accompanied its use (see Chapter 1). The FBN, headed by Harry Anslinger, began an aggressive campaign to have marijuana added to the list of controlled substances under its jurisdiction. Finally, Congress passed the **Marijuana Tax Act** of 1937, which gave the FBN greatly expanded powers. By 1938, the first full year after the legislation went into effect, one of every four federal drug convictions involved a violation of that act. Violations of marijuana laws also expedited the deportation of Mexican workers back to their home country (Helmer 1975; Musto 1987; Regoli & Hewitt 1997).

Concern about cocaine use among African Americans resurfaced in the 1980s when media attention focused on crack cocaine (Chiricos 1996; see Chapter 1). Crack, a less expensive form of cocaine consumed primarily by low-income offenders, was frequently portrayed as an instantly addicting substance that incited violence among users. In the midst of a "moral panic," Congress passed the **Anti–Drug Abuse Acts** of 1986 and 1988, which specified mandatory prison terms for federal drug offenders (the length of time depending on the amount of the drug) and made penalties for crack cocaine 100 times greater than for comparable amounts of powder cocaine (see Chapter 13). For instance, a first-time offender convicted in federal court for possession of *5 grams* of crack (about the weight of two pennies and providing 15 to 20 "hits") would now receive a mandatory minimum sentence of five years in prison. The street value of 5 grams of crack is about $400. In contrast, an offender would need to possess *500 grams* of

Illegal drug use is prevalent among every racial and ethnic group in society.

powder cocaine, valued at about $10,000, to receive the same sentence (Wallace 1993).

This federal policy, together with those applied at the state level, has disproportionately impacted African Americans. Between 1980 and the early 1990s, for example, African American drug-possession arrests increased from about 21 percent to 35 percent of all drug-possession arrests, and black youth drug-possession arrests increased from about 13 percent to 40 percent of all youth drug-possession arrests (Mauer 1999). In 1980 the drug-possession arrest rate for white youths was actually higher than the rate for nonwhite youths, a situation that was reversed with the intensified policy of drug prohibition (Blumstein 1993; Tollet & Close 1991). Insofar as drug offenses have constituted the largest component of the rising prison population in the United States, US drug policy must be viewed as discriminatory in effect, if not also in intent (Bush-Baskette 1998; Tonry 1995; see Chapter 12). Fortunately, in a long overdue decision, the US Supreme Court ruled in December 2007 that judges should be granted the discretion to impose lesser sentences than proscribed by federal guidelines if they deem such reductions to be reasonable. It is not yet clear how this policy will affect those already serving excessively long sentences for their drug crimes (Greenhouse 2007; Sherman 2007).

Explaining Minority Involvement in Street Crime

The urban underclass. The historical and contemporary evidence of discrimination in drug policy is compelling. But minority involvement in street crime still requires explanation, and much research suggests that this involvement can be explained from a class perspective. Clifford Shaw and Henry McKay (1942), for instance, found that the ecological association between crime and adverse socioeconomic conditions in the city of Chicago persisted over the first three decades of the twentieth century, regardless of the racial or ethnic group residing in the area (see Chapter 4). In a follow-up study, Robert Bursik and Jim Webb (1982) documented a similar pattern in Chicago through the 1940s. During this time, crime rates remained fairly stable. Since the 1950s, however, racial/ethnic turnover has been accompanied by greater destabilization of these areas and increased rates of crime.

William Julius Wilson (1987) attributes the destabilization in Chicago and other urban areas to the general decline in entry-level manufacturing jobs as well as the movement of these jobs from the cities to the suburbs. These trends have deprived African American residents of the job opportunities enjoyed by earlier arrivals. Wilson argues that the structural correlates of crime and economic disadvantage—including poverty, joblessness, and family instability—are not race-specific; crime rates can be expected to vary with such community conditions irrespective of racial composition (Krivo & Peterson 1996; Sampson & Wilson 1995; Wilson 1987). But what Wilson wants us to understand is how these conditions have come to be concentrated in certain African American communities.

Wilson's work (1987) addresses a profound paradox that has developed since the mid–twentieth century: conditions for some minorities, especially some African Americans, have deteriorated at a time when civil rights and antidiscrimination laws have expanded. According to Wilson, the civil rights movement opened up opportunities for educated and middle-class African Americans to advance, but left behind the less educated and those with few job skills. Furthermore, Gary LaFree and Kriss Drass (1996) add, while expanded educational opportunities may have improved the prospects for graduates, they may have lowered the prospects for nongraduates. An increasingly educated work force may produce an educational inflation effect whereby "jobs are increasingly filled by those with more advanced credentials" and less educated workers are replaced with more educated ones (p. 617).

Wilson's thesis is consistent with research on the relationship between income inequality and crime, which finds that African American crime rates (over time and between geographical areas) are more highly associated with *intraracial* (within-group) inequality than with *interracial* (between-group) inequality (Harer & Steffensmeier 1992; LaFree & Drass 1996). In other

words, it is inequality among African Americans rather than inequality between blacks and whites that is associated with the most variation in crime rates. Similarly, Ramiro Martinez (1996) finds that intra-Latino inequality, not Anglo-Latino inequality, is related to rates of Latino homicide.

Expectations of racial and ethnic minority involvement in crime are consistent with anomie-strain theory, which postulates that the absence of economic opportunities will produce the greatest pressure for crime among disadvantaged groups. And the importance of within-group measures of inequality makes sense in light of strain theory's proposition about relative deprivation. Also, **reference-group theory** predicts that members of a group will be more likely to look internally rather than externally for standards of comparison: "People assess how well, or badly, they are faring economically not by comparing themselves with the population as a whole, but with particular reference groups with whom they share some status attribute" (Harer & Steffensmeier 1992:1036; Merton & Rossi 1968).

Furthermore, according to Wilson (1987), as both middle-class blacks and working-class whites migrated to the suburbs, the inner city was depleted not only of financial resources but of social resources as well: positive role models who reinforce conventional values, provide networks of informal social control, and offer support for schools, churches, recreation, and other community organizations (Bursik & Grasmick 1993). Fewer "old heads," those who are respected for their wisdom about avoiding crime and staying out of trouble, remain. Left to fill the void is a growing informal economy of off-the-books enterprises (e.g., unlicensed cabs, house cleaning, home and car repair), welfare dependency, and crime (e.g., drugs, stolen goods, prostitution, gangs) (Anderson 1999; Pattillo 1998; Robinson 1993).

While Wilson generally aligns himself with the liberal political movement, he has criticized liberals for failing to acknowledge the "social dislocations" that have become part of the urban underclass (1991:1). Male unemployment and imprisonment have reduced the number of reliable marriage partners, and female-headed households and out-of-wedlock births have risen. The increase in single-parent families has occurred in the larger society as well, but it is more pronounced among the poor (Brooks-Gunn et al. 1993; Krivo & Peterson 1996; Sampson & Wilson 1995). Although it is not surprising that a single mother in poverty has difficulty providing "her children with the social and material support needed for them to succeed," it is important not to misconstrue Wilson's position as a "decline in family values" argument (Neuman 1996:707). Wilson views these social dislocations not as a cause but as a *consequence* of structural changes in the economy that, in his view, have been exacerbated by the "blaming the poor" rhetoric of some conservative politicians and the failure (or absence) of government policies vis-à-vis the inner city.

Wilson (1987) also argues that there are **concentration effects** to these socioeconomic conditions that create and sustain a condition of social isola-

tion. Patterns of residential segregation associated with expanded suburban housing markets and government-constructed public housing projects have geographically concentrated the minority poor (Hagan 1994; Krivo & Peterson 1996; Massey & Denton 1993). Freeways have divided and isolated core sectors of heavily populated cities, further separating residents from centers of employment. Minority workers also experience employer discrimination and lack familiarity with the cultural norms of the white-dominated workplace. Deficits in workplace experience accumulate over the life course and the resultant social disadvantages are passed on to the next generation (Anderson 1999; Cancio et al. 1996; Kasinitz & Rosenberg 1996; Tienda & Stier 1996).

Moreover, persistent residential segregation by race means that the black middle class is exposed to more criminogenic influences than is the white middle class (Logan & Stults 1999). Black, middle-class neighborhoods are more likely than white, middle-class neighborhoods "to be nestled between areas that are less economically stable and have higher crime rates" (Pattillo 1998:751). As Robert Sampson and William Julius Wilson note: "In not one city over 100,000 in the United States do blacks live in ecological equality with whites. . . . The 'worst' urban contexts in which whites reside are considerably better than the average context of black communities" (1995:42). It bears repeating, however, that Wilson's insightful analysis of racial inequality is not meant to suggest that the problems of the urban poor are the fault of the people who live in the inner city or that residents prefer to live under such conditions. Rather, Wilson urges us to recognize that crime prevention efforts that do not address the intersection of race and class are inevitably bound to fail.

Beyond the subculture of violence. An alternative approach to explaining racial and ethnic minority involvement in crime focuses specifically on the problem of violence. According to Marvin Wolfgang and Franco Ferracuti's **subculture of violence theory** (1967), a subculture exists in certain segments of society (e.g., lower-class minority groups) that contains elements of mainstream (i.e., white middle-class) culture but that is more supportive of the use of physical force in everyday social interactions. This acceptance of force increases the probability of violent confrontations in response to jostles, insults, threats, or displays of weapons. Avoidance of violence by group members is more difficult, for it can lead to rejection by one's peers and loss of self-esteem.

Aggregate-level research testing this proposition has typically analyzed the relationship between the proportion of a given population that is nonwhite (e.g., percentage black or Latino) and rates of homicide. These studies, however, provide no direct measure of subcultural values, and some find that the nonwhite-homicide connection is nil when socioeconomic fac-

tors are taken into account (Kposowa & Breault 1993; Parker 1989; Sampson 1985a; Williams 1984).

Aggregate research has also tested the proposition that this subculture of violence is more pronounced in some regions of the United States. Studies have found that the South (followed by the West) has the highest rate of homicide (Huff-Corzine et al. 1986; Nelsen et al. 1994). Interestingly, *Southern whites* have especially high homicide rates. In addition, survey evidence indicates that in some defensive or retaliatory situations (e.g., in response to someone breaking into one's house, to someone seen beating a woman, or to someone seen beating a child after the child had accidentally damaged another's car), whites are more willing to use violence than blacks (Cao et al. 1997; Ellison 1991; Shoemaker & Williams 1987). Lynn Curtis (1975) adds that individuals throughout all sectors of society are influenced by multiple value systems. Mainstream cultural media, for example, often glamorize violence; and physical prowess and aggression, sexual conquest, shrewdness, the ability to manipulate others, and thrill-seeking/risk-taking behaviors are all part of the "subterranean values" of conventional culture (Matza & Sykes 1961). In any case, the United States clearly is a very violent nation. It has the highest homicide rate among industrial democracies, and even without the homicides committed by African Americans, the US rate would still be a statistical outlier (Zimring & Hawkins 1997).

Sampson and Wilson (1995) approach the issue of crime and cultural (or subcultural) values somewhat differently than Wolfgang and Ferracuti. In their view, cultural influences exist but

> vary systematically with structural features of the urban environment. . . . Community contexts . . . shape . . . [the] cognitive landscapes or ecologically constructed norms . . . regarding appropriate standards and expectations of conduct. That is, in structurally disorganized slum communities . . . a system of values emerges in which crime, disorder, and drug use are less than fervently condemned and hence expected as part of everyday life. (pp. 41, 50)

It is true that there are voices in these communities that denounce these practices, but according to Sampson and Wilson, these voices are being heard less often than in the past.

In his ethnographic research in Philadelphia, Elijah Anderson (1999) describes an oppositional street culture or **code of the street** that characterizes the inner-city, African American community (see Chapter 4). Even the most conscientious and concerned parents, he notes, feel it is important to encourage their children to be "streetwise," to learn how to handle themselves on the street. The heart of the street code is "respect," being treated with proper deference. Even a fleeting or awkward glance, or eye contact that lingers too long, can be taken as a sign of disrespect, or "dissing."

Anderson argues that this code is a cultural adaptation to residents' lack of faith in the ability of the criminal justice system to offer them protection without discrimination. Under these circumstances, residents take on the responsibility of self-protection (Kubrin & Weitzer 2003). Children witnessing disputes in the street see that "might makes right": "In almost every case the victor is the person who physically won the altercation, and this person often enjoys the esteem and respect of onlookers" (Anderson 1994:86). Under these conditions, humility or "turning the other cheek" is no virtue and can in fact be dangerous. Failure to respond to intimidation or dissing from another only encourages further victimization.

Ruth Horowitz (1987) found a similar code of personal honor in a Chicano community in Chicago. Here "honor revolves around a man's ability to command deference in interpersonal relations . . . [and avoid] any aspersions on his masculinity" (p. 440). Gang youths and nongang youths differ in that the former "seek out and initiate challenges to another's honor as one way of publicly asserting . . . and enhancing their reputation," whereas the latter only defend their honor upon provocation (p. 441). In the culture of the gang, considerable value is placed on acquiring a reputation (or "rep") for oneself and the gang, and younger gang members "want to match or outdo the reputation of their predecessors" (Moore 1991:60). These youths take pride in being *"loco"* (crazy) or *"muy loco"* (very crazy) and in describing themselves as violent.

William Harvey (1986) suggests that the minority experience of powerlessness, alienation, frustration, and anger has coalesced in what he describes as a **subculture of exasperation**. Unable to vent their hostility toward whites or those in power, minorities channel their aggression into exhibitions of toughness against those they interact with on a daily basis. As Nathan McCall once thought, "I can't do much to keep whites from dissin' me, but I damn sure can keep black folks from doing it" (1994:55). Occasionally, however, an opportunity to put whites in their place presented itself to McCall, who recounts a time when he and his friends attacked an innocent white youth:

> The fellas and I were hanging out on our corner . . . when [a] white boy . . . came pedaling a bicycle casually through the neighborhood. . . . We all took off after him and knocked him off the bike. . . . We stomped . . . and kicked him . . . in the head and face and watched the blood gush from his mouth. I kicked him in the stomach and nuts. . . . With each blow delivered, I . . . remembered some recent racial slight: THIS is for all the times you followed me round in stores. . . . THIS is for the times you treated me like a nigger. . . . THIS is for G.P.—General Principle—just 'cause you white. . . . We walked away, laughing, boasting, competing for bragging rights about who'd done the most damage. . . . We called it "gettin' some get-back," securing revenge for all the shit they'd heaped on blacks all these years. (pp. 3–4)

Charles Silberman (1978) adds that the depletion of positive role models in the black community has made it difficult for young African Americans to learn how to control such rage. Moreover, contemporary popular media such as gangsta rap reinforce and romanticize the value placed on rebellion and opposition to mainstream culture (Kitwana 2002; Kubrin 2005).

Alvin Poussaint (1983) sees elements of self-hatred in intraracial crime, which is the leading cause of death among African American youths (Messerschmidt 1997). According to Poussaint, some African Americans are still psychologically scarred, still bear a legacy of internalizing the negative image imposed on them by their oppressors (Williams 2007; see Chapter 1). Offenders and victims often share a low self-image and low threshold for frustration. Recall how Sanyika Shakur said he "had little respect for life when practically all my life I had seen people assaulted, maimed, and blown away . . . and no one seemed to care" (1993:102; see Chapter 1). McCall (1994) points out how this attitude pervaded his relationships with black women, which were marked by violence and sexual exploitation. Exploiting a black woman "was another way for a guy to show the other fellas how cold and hard he was. It wasn't until I became an adult that . . . I realized that we thought we loved sisters but we actually hated them. We hated them because they were black and . . . on some level much deeper than we realized, we hated . . . ourselves" (p. 50).

Finally, William Julius Wilson (1991) sees another consequence of the "cognitive landscape" of the urban poor in that, over the long term, individuals' perceptions of self-efficacy and their ability to exercise personal agency to improve their lives (see Chapter 1) are often undermined:

> People may seriously doubt that they can do or accomplish what is expected, or they may feel confident of their abilities but nonetheless give up trying because they believe that their efforts will ultimately be futile due to an environment that is unresponsive, discriminatory, or punitive. . . . Such beliefs affect the level of challenge that is pursued, the amount of effort expended in a given venture, and the degree of perseverance when confronting difficulties. (p. 11)

Nevertheless, children of color growing up poor do not face completely homogeneous life chances. In his research, Anderson (1999) found that residents distinguished between what they described as **decent families** and **street families**, two orientations that often existed simultaneously within the same extended family network. The so-called decent families are composed mainly of the working poor and "tend to be better off financially than their street-oriented neighbors" (1994:83). Parents in these families socialize their children to accept mainstream values of hard work, self-reliance, respect for authority, and self-improvement through education. They tend toward strict child-rearing practices and encourage their children to "walk a

straight moral line" and to be on guard against trouble that might come their way. On the other hand, parents from so-called street families lack effective parenting skills and socialize their children to accept the code of the street. Their lives are often disorganized and complicated by problems with drugs and alcohol or other self-destructive behaviors. Children are left to fend for themselves and "come up hard" on the street.

According to Anderson, the overwhelming majority of inner-city families "try to approximate the decent-family model" (1994:83). Children from these families, however, interact daily with children from the street and "have a chance to go either way" (p. 86). They realize they must choose a direction, and the choice they make will depend largely on how fully they have already been socialized by their parents. On the other hand, children from street families rarely absorb the values of decent families. When they do, the positive influence almost always comes from nonfamily settings—such as church, youth groups, or school—where they have the opportunity to become involved with caring adult mentors (Williams & Kornblum 1985).

But the streets can be alluring for youths of all class backgrounds. Patrice Gaines (1993) grew up in a middle-class, African American family. In her youth she was powerfully attracted to the "bad boyz" who daringly defied the law, carrying guns and earning their money through robbery, theft, and drugs:

> Their behavior was an aphrodisiac. When you're a black child who believes she has no control over her life, you create your own definition of freedom. These men exuded freedom. They controlled their lives, working when they wanted to and at what they chose to work at. . . . I wanted the power I thought they possessed, and before long, I reached for it much as . . . [they] did. . . . It was adventure—making up your own rules and knowing how to live the "street life." (pp. 5–7)

Immigration and street crime. In April 2007, an emotionally disturbed college student, Korean-born Cho Seung-Hui, went on a shooting rampage at Virginia Tech university, killing 32 people (Thomas 2007). The following June, former senator Fred Thompson, a 2008 Republican presidential candidate, told an audience at the Prescott Bush Awards Dinner in Stamford, Connecticut, that the problem of *illegal* immigration meant that "we are now living in a nation that is beset by people who are suicidal maniacs and want to kill countless men, women, and children" (quoted in NewsMax.com 2007). It seemed as if Thompson was alluding to the Virginia Tech incident, even though Cho's family had *legally* immigrated into the United States when he was eight years old. To be sure, illegal immigration is a serious issue, but there is little doubt that some politicians have been demagoging the concern to muster votes. And while many clamor for increased law enforcement aimed a curtailing illegal immigration, few call for more law

enforcement against the employers who illegally hire undocumented workers (Hagan & Phillips 2008). Moreover, the irony of linking immigration to other forms of criminality is that there is little evidence that immigration increases crime. In fact, there is evidence that immigrants actually commit less crime than similarly situated natives.

Social disorganization, anomie-strain, and culture conflict theories all predict a positive association between immigration and crime because new immigrants tend "to settle in urban neighborhoods characterized by poverty, substandard housing, poor schools, and high crime rates" (Lee et al. 2001:561; see Chapters 4 and 5). However, a growing body of research using both intercity and intracity data—most often examining Latino immigration, but not exclusively so—indicates that, all other things being equal, communities with a higher proportion of immigrants have less street crime (Butcher & Piehl 1998; Hagan & Palloni 1999; Lee et al. 2001; Martinez & Valenzuela 2006; Sampson et al. 2005).

Skeptics of the **more immigrants, less crime hypothesis** note that immigrants who come into the country illegally may be less likely to report crimes committed by other immigrants because they fear deportation if they come forward to the police (Skogan 2006). They also note that immigrants may be deterred from committing crimes because of this fear. Although most studies do not distinguish between legal and illegal immigrants, there is little evidence that the two groups vary in their rates of criminality (Hagan & Palloni 1998). Proponents of the more immigrants, less crime hypothesis, on the other hand, cite the traditional family values, higher rates of marriage, and extended family supports that construct ethnic enclaves of stability within these communities (Hagan et al. 2008; Sampson et al. 2005). They also note that immigrants with low-paying jobs may be more motivated to work longer hours and may have more hope about the future than similarly situated natives (Lee et al. 2001). At the same time, some research indicates that as subsequent generations of immigrants become acculturated to American society, their rates of crime increase (Martinez & Valenzuela 2006; Sampson et al. 2005). Moreover, the growing presence of immigrant gangs and organized crime networks in some urban centers cautions against an overly sanguine view of the immigration-crime relationship (Hayden 2004; *Wisconsin State Journal* 2007b; see Further Exploration, p. 128). Ellis Cose concludes that we need to start asking "some broader questions about assimilation, about how to ensure that people, once outsiders, don't forever remain marginalized" within our nation (2007–2008:74).

Adolescent Subcultures and Law-Violating Youth Groups

"Juvenile delinquency" is a term that is often used to describe the dimension of the crime problem associated with the behavior of young people.

Juvenile gangs have been at the forefront of this concern. But although most youthful law violations are committed in groups, not all of these groups can be considered "gangs" (Erickson & Jensen 1977; Stafford 1984).

Malcolm Klein has defined a **gang** as consisting of youths who consider themselves to be a distinct group (usually with an agreed-upon group name), who are perceived as a distinct group by others in the community, and who have "been involved in a sufficient number of delinquent incidents to call forth a consistent negative response from neighborhood residents and/or law enforcement agencies" (1971:13). The third element of Klein's definition—a consistent negative response from the community—would exclude as gangs many groups of delinquent youths who have avoided societal labeling. In his study "The Saints and Roughnecks," for instance, William Chambliss (1973) found that the lower-class Roughnecks were more likely to elicit a negative community reaction than the middle-class Saints, even though the Saints were extensively involved in illegal activities (see Chapter 1). Walter Miller (1980) suggests that **law-violating youth group** may be a more appropriate term than "gang" for most delinquent groups. Other criminologists argue that the phenomenon of juvenile law violation should be addressed in terms of a broader theory of **adolescent subcultures** (Berger & Gregory 2009; Schwendinger & Schwendinger 1985; Wooden & Blazak 2001).

Historically, the origins of modern adolescent subcultures can be traced to the rapid industrialization and urbanization experienced by capitalist societies in the late nineteenth century. After World War II, these subcultures began to take on increasingly distinct characteristics. Currently, in the age of mass media (e.g., music, television, film, Internet), these subcultures can exist as "geographically diffuse social movement[s]" of youths who do not require face-to-face interaction to maintain a common set of argot (slang), attitudes, beliefs, interests, and physical appearances (Campbell & Muncer 1989:272). Nevertheless, the most essential elements of adolescent subcultures still emerge through peer interaction in local settings (e.g., neighborhood hangouts, malls, schools).

In advanced capitalist societies such as the United States, adolescents are differentiated from adults, and for years they are more or less segregated in educational institutions. To some extent, schools have replaced neighborhoods as the primary physical sites for the formation of adolescent subcultures. Even school-age youths who do not attend classes regularly generally go to school to meet their friends and to hang out with others. The segregation of youths in schools increases the frequency and intensity of interaction among peers, who turn to one another for social approval and personal validation.

According to the Schwendingers (1985), adolescent subcultures reflect the class backgrounds of youths, yet are relatively independent of class sta-

tus. Like economic classes, networks of adolescent groups are stratified in terms of status and prestige. The higher-status groups tend to recruit from the middle and upper classes, while the lower-status groups recruit from the lower and working classes. As Gary Schwartz and Don Merten observe, the "dominant values institutionalized in the status system of the . . . high school are those held by the majority of the upper-middle-class segment of [the] youthful population" (1967:461). However, youths often disagree about the relative worth or status of different groups, and regardless of class position, personal attributes such as athletic ability, physical attractiveness, personality, and interpersonal skills may allow movement up or down the status hierarchy of peer relationships (Berger & Gregory 2009; Larkin 2007; Wooden & Blazak 2001).

The Schwendingers (1985) refer to two of the most enduring general types of adolescent subcultures as **streetcorner** and **socialite youths**. Streetcorner youths recruit from the lower strata of the adolescent population. These are the groups, like Chambliss's Roughnecks, that are more likely to be perceived and labeled as bad or delinquent kids. They are at a competitive disadvantage, economically and culturally, when they begin formal schooling, and their position relative to more privileged youths often deteriorates further as time goes on. Moreover, unlike low-achieving affluent youths, streetcorner youths do not have the family resources to provide them with the extra tutoring, counseling, cultural experiences (e.g., travel), and the like, that might help them recover from initial academic setbacks. Nor do they have the financial backing of their families that would allow them a second chance in life by financing their way through college after a mediocre educational career.

The socialite youths, on the other hand, are akin to Chambliss's Saints (1973). They are generally the elite group of adolescents who are for the most part college-bound regardless of academic achievement. These youths are better able to finance the material commodities necessary for full participation in adolescent subcultural activities (see Chapter 4). While they may be less involved than streetcorner youths in more serious crimes, they are as much (or more) involved in "vehicle violations, vandalism, drinking, gambling, petty theft, truancy, sexual promiscuity, and other garden varieties" of delinquent behavior (Schwendinger & Schwendinger 1985:56). When their law violations are discovered by authorities, they are more likely to be "treated as 'pranks,' lapses of judgment, or expressions of 'bad taste'" and are typically ignored or covered up (p. 54). Although socialite youths are less likely to get into trouble with the law, when they do they are better able than their streetcorner counterparts to finance attorney fees to help them avoid any serious consequences for their actions.

Members of youth subcultures use various names or metaphors as shorthand linguistic devices that enable them to communicate with one another

about the characteristics and relative status of different groups. The particular group names are always in flux. While some are specific to certain localities, others are shared nationwide. In earlier decades, streetcorner youths were often called *greasers, hoods,* and *eses* (slang for "hey, man"). In later eras, they have been dubbed *burnouts, dirtballs, punkers, stoners,* and *homies,* for instance, or they have been referenced by their street gang names. Socialite youths were previously called *socialites* or *socs* (pronounced "soshes") while *jocks* and *preppies* became more common later (Berger & Gregory 2009; Larkin 2007; Schwendinger & Schwendinger 1985).

Middle-Class Delinquency: Renegade Kids and Suburban Outlaws

Self-report surveys have found variables derived from social learning theory (e.g., peer influences) and social control theory (e.g., familial bonds) helpful in explaining middle-class delinquency (see Chapter 4). But few criminologists have actually taken us into the world of the white, middle-class, suburban teenager. Wayne Wooden and Randy Blazak's book *Renegade Kids, Suburban Outlaws: From Youth Culture to Delinquency* (2001), is a refreshing exception (see also Gaines 1990; Larkin 2007).

Wooden and Blazak derive the primary data for their book from interviews with youths living in the suburbs of Los Angeles in the late 1980s and first half of the 1990s. They describe **renegade kids** as alienated and bored with the tranquil mediocrity of contemporary suburbia. For these youths, crime is a form of rebellious risk-taking. They find excitement in testing the limits, in challenging authority and getting away with it. Most of what they do is generally harmless to others, but some engage in self-destructive behaviors such as cutting or burning themselves or even suicide. Some renegade kids do progress to more serious forms of thievery, property destruction, and violence against others. When they do, they become what Wooden and Blazak call **suburban outlaws**.

Punkers are a main focus of Wooden and Blazak's portrayal of renegade kids. Punkers are known for their defiant appearance. Skidd Marx, a 17-year-old male punker, sported "black hair spiked . . . with three separate 1-foot tails in back. . . . [He wore] eye makeup, a black leather jacket studded with spikes, a white T-shirt with a punk band logo, . . . black Levis rolled up high, and black Converse high tops . . . [He had] four hanging earrings in each ear and a loop pierced into his right nostril" (p. 36). When asked what "punk" meant to him, Skidd replied that it meant "doing your own thing" and getting "past what people look like on the outside." Some punkers claimed that the punk identity actually helped them move beyond previous involvement with drugs and alcohol.

Wooden and Blazak note that the suburban mall has become a common meeting place for youths, including punkers who are called "mall rats."

Mall merchants have complained about punkers who shoplift and who scare away and accost customers. Such complaints notwithstanding, most punkers probably do not engage in such activities. It is more likely that most of the serious mall crime is committed by other offenders attracted to the suitable targets that shopping centers afford.

Another group of renegade kids discussed by Wooden and Blazak was the *Spur Posse,* a group of jocks who received national media exposure in 1993. The Spur Posse consisted of 20 to 30 top high school athletes at one suburban school. These youths were preoccupied with "hooking up" (having sex) with as many girls as possible. They competed with one another to see who could "score" with the most girls, and they often took turns having sex with the same ones. The boys boasted of their conquests but considered the girls "sluts" (see Tanenbaum 2000). Eight of the Spur Posse were arrested on a variety of charges, including unlawful sexual intercourse, rape, burglary, assault, and intimidation of witnesses. All of the charges were dropped except for one against a youth who allegedly had sex with a 10-year-old girl (Smolowe 1993).

Taggers constitute one of the suburban outlaw groups studied by Wooden and Blazak. Taggers mimic the graffiti-writing "crews" that were first observed among lower-class youths (Williams & Kornblum 1985). Tagging offers its participants an exciting adrenaline rush, and some of the more extended "pieces" can be quite artistic (see Chapter 2). Nevertheless, the marking of school grounds and property as well as "overhead freeway signs, walls, . . . buses and trains, . . . traffic signs, bridges, and street poles" is perceived by most members of the community as vandalism, pure and simple, as sheer destruction of property (Wooden & Blazak 2001:120).

Wooden and Blazak attribute suburban tagging, in part, to the cultural diffusion of inner-city (especially African American) street culture: "The popularity of becoming part of the tagger scene . . . stem[s] from suburban white youths' interest in gangsta rap. . . . Enjoying hip-hop music and 'getting down' becomes, for these white 'home boys,' their form of replicating inner-city, black ghetto 'chic'" (p. 122). In addition, Wooden and Blazak suggest, suburban tagging is a response to the movement of inner-city gangs into suburbia:

> Rather than merely mimicking . . . these urban youths, suburban tagger crews are forming to compete or oppose them. In effect, the taggers have reversed the direction of gang diffusion from the inner-city outward. In other words, the tagger's movement patterns—and night runs—frequently are from suburban areas along freeways back toward the inner-city, leaving their marks or pieces . . . to indicate their presence and influence along the way. (pp. 122–123)

It is as if taggers are saying, "We will not be overlooked. We will not be trampled on." But most taggers want no trouble with inner-city gangs. As

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Symbolic Territoriality and the Jena Six

The territoriality that is implicated in tagging and inner-city gang conflict is also reflected in high school settings, where it is common for adolescent cliques to congregate in particular locations on school grounds. In racially mixed schools, these locations can be symbolically charged. During a break at a high school assembly in August 2006, a group of African American students in Jena, Louisiana, asked the vice principal if they could sit under a tree that was known to the students as the "White Tree." The vice principal said there was nothing to stop them. The next day, three ropes with nooses (in school colors) were hanging from the tree. The incident, which raised the historical specter of lynching of blacks in the South, was of course intended to intimidate the black students and "put them in their place" (Battle & Bennett 2007; Woodward 2007; see Chapter 2).

Over the next few weeks, fights between white and black students broke out in the largely white town. In December 2006, according to law enforcement authorities, six black youths ganged up on a white youth, who was taken to the hospital for treatment and released. Later that evening, he attended a school event.

The six black youths were arrested and initially charged, as *adults*, with attempted second-degree murder. (For a discussion of the procedure by which juveniles are transferred to adult court, see Further Exploration, p. 432.) The charges were subsequently reduced, but 16-year-old Mychal Bell was convicted (as an adult) of aggravated second-degree battery by an all-white jury. The case incited the national public, and in September 2007, some 15,000 people descended on Jena to protest. Rallies were held in other parts of the country as well. Although a Louisiana court overturned the conviction on the grounds that Bell should not have been tried as an adult, the scars of the Jena incident run deep. As Juan Battle and Michael Bennett observe:

> The mid–twentieth century was supposed to see the end of separate but equal as the law of the land. *Brown v. Board of Education* (1954), the *Civil Rights Act* (1964), and the *Voting Rights Act* (1965) all symbolized the intention of equality between Blacks and Whites. . . . Jena reminds us that social and spatial segregation still persists despite surface changes in education, the judicial system, and other social institutions. Though no longer legal, segregation is alive and . . . [well] in the United States. (2007:4)

one youth explained, "We are afraid of gangs. . . . All we want is to be able to write on walls. . . . However, if a crew does write over a name of a gang, they must arm themselves. This is when taggers become violent. Some gangs now require 'payoffs' for taggers to move through their areas" (p. 124).

Unlike taggers, the *skinhead* suburban outlaws studied by Wooden and Blazak tended to embrace violence and attack minority groups, including

racial/ethnic groups, immigrants, Jews, and gays. Skinheads can be recognized by their shaved or close-cropped hair, green flight jackets, suspenders, heavy jeans rolled up over industrial boots, and white-power or Nazi regalia, although not all skinheads look this way today. Racist skinheads are aligned ideologically with the adult neo-Nazi movement, even to the extent of taking orders from such groups as the White Aryan Resistance and the Aryan Brotherhood (see Chapter 7). They are critical of if not hostile toward the US government, which they believe promotes the interests of nonwhites over the interests of whites. But not all skinheads are racist, or if they are, some "try to stay clear of overt racial violence" (p. 134). These skinheads are more survivalist in nature, being concerned with their future survival in the event of a nuclear holocaust or natural disaster. There are even antiracist skinhead groups with racially mixed memberships that have been formed in reaction to the racist groups.

Stoner gangs, known for their extensive drug and alcohol abuse, are among the most violent suburban outlaw groups. They are also active in property crimes like armed robbery, burglary, and motor vehicle theft. Wooden and Blazak found that these youths are the most likely to have been physically (and sexually) abused, rather than merely neglected, by their parents. They describe these groups as cultlike, with a shared interest in heavy metal music and attire (e.g., metal-spiked wrist cuffs, collars and belts, and sacrilegious or anti-Christian items). Some stoner youths also engage in satanic rituals, including animal sacrifices. However, not all youths interested in satanism are hard-core criminals. Some merely like to have fun with friends "practicing" satanic rituals and magic, smoking marijuana, and listening to heavy metal music; some also do it to provoke or upset their parents.

Urban Street Gangs

Participation in law-violating youth groups—whether or not these groups are called "gangs"—is a common experience for young people of all class and racial/ethnic backgrounds. Nevertheless, urban street gangs have arguably drawn more media and public attention than those of the suburban variety. But like the suburban groups, inner-city gangs can be understood, in the Schwendingers' terms (1985), as streetcorner groups that are part of the broader adolescent subcultural phenomenon. As C. Ronald Huff notes, "It is important to acknowledge that it is normal and healthy for adolescents to want to be with their peers . . . and gangs represent an extreme manifestation of that age-typical emphasis on being together and belonging to something" (1993:6). In William Sanders's opinion (1994), however, it is the violence that distinguishes gangs from other adolescent groups.

Frederick Thrasher's classic study (1927) of Chicago youth gangs of an earlier era offers a useful point of departure for a consideration of contemporary urban gangs (Thrasher was part of the social disorganization school

of thought, discussed in Chapter 4). Youth gang members in the 1920s were largely the children of economically disadvantaged, white European immigrants—primarily Irish, Italians, and Poles, but also Germans, Jews, Slavs, and Swedes. Most gang members started out in thievery, which they engaged in as much for sport as for economic gain. Gangs that formed more or less spontaneously as ordinary streetcorner groups were consolidated through rivalry and strife. As Jerome Skolnick observes:

> Thrasher traced the rise of gangs to . . . the disintegration of family life, schools, and religion, . . . [the lack of] wholesome alternatives, . . . [and] the corruption and indifference of local politicians. The employment opportunities available to these [youths] usually involved monotonous jobs with low wages that could scarcely compete with the rewards of the gang or with the fun of bonding and stealing. (1992:111)

In many respects, Skolnick adds, contemporary gangs have not changed in fundamental ways. Youths still join gangs for fun and recreation, to enhance their ability to make money, for physical protection, and for a sense of belonging to a community or alternative family (Sanchez Jankowski 1991). In some Chicano barrios of Los Angeles, "children, parents, and even grandparents have belonged to the same gang [for decades]. Although the adults fear and disapprove of the violence of today's gangs, they take pride in the tradition of gang membership" and expect the younger generation to preserve and uphold the neighborhood gang name (Skolnick 1992:114). More generally, gangs (whatever their race or ethnic background) are often tolerated in their communities, because gang youths are not social outsiders among residents; they are sons and daughters, grandchildren, nieces and nephews, the neighbors' kids. The majority of their time is not spent in law-violating activities, and their behavior is appropriate in most social situations (Horowitz 1987; Shelden et al. 2004; Venkatesh 1997).

In his urban ethnography, Mercer Sullivan (1989) studied three neighborhoods in Brooklyn, New York, in the early 1980s: Projectville was a largely black community, Hamilton Park was predominately white, and La Barriada was a mixture of Hispanics and whites. Projectville had the highest rate of poverty (52 percent living under the poverty level), followed by La Barriada (43 percent), and Hamilton Park (12 percent). Projectville also had the highest overall crime rate, and Hamilton Park the lowest, while La Barriada had the highest rate of violent crime.

In all three neighborhoods, nevertheless, Sullivan found that male youths progressed through a series of life stages that influenced their involvement in and commitment to crime. During the early to mid-teen years, youths from the same neighborhood began hanging out together in loosely knit groups and participating in turf fights with youths from surrounding areas. They also stole items like radios, bicycles, and clothes, pri-

marily for use rather than for sale on the open market; and when they did sell stolen property, they had no idea of its actual market value. Importantly, however, these early-life forays into crime prepared them for more serious later-life criminality. Engaging in theft helped them revise their conception of "property rights . . . [as] no longer fixed but . . . [as] something over which [they] could exert control" (Robinson 1993:317). And from fighting they learned how to acquire and use weapons in violent crimes.

By the middle teenage years, the youths had acquired more experience in crime. They were now physically stronger and had a greater desire to consume commodities.

> [They also] learned more about the value of stolen items and about the networks for converting them to cash; they were better able to weigh the risks and benefits between types of crime, as well as between crime and legitimate employment. The motivation for crime now became economic, a means of support rather than an occasional excursion to vary the day-to-day boredom of just hanging out . . . and as a youth took on crime as his main source of income, he dropped out of street fighting. (Robinson 1993:317)

Along the way, opportunities for legitimate employment, when available, reduced the incentive to engage in crime. The Hamilton Park white youths in particular had somewhat greater access to networks of legitimate employment and were thus the most likely to opt out of crime. Overall, Sullivan (1989) found that by their late teens, most youths chose to desist from crime because escalating criminality increased their risk of apprehension. For instance, the housing projects where the Projectville black youths lived afforded limited opportunities for profitable theft. When these youths began committing robberies and purse snatchings outside of their own neighborhoods, they increased their exposure and hence their chances of getting caught. Some who became disillusioned with violent theft, however, became attracted to drug sales instead.

Felix Padilla (1992), in his ethnography of Puerto Rican gangs in Chicago, reports that youths often began their involvement in the drug trade as "runners" or "mules," but they soon realized that the distributors made most of the profits. Sullivan (1989) found that it was fairly easy for Brooklyn youths to obtain drugs on consignment until they acquired enough capital to stake themselves out. But even though a competent drug dealer could earn between $500 and $1,000 a week in the early 1980s, the life chances of these youths remained for the most part dismal. As one youth remarked, "I'm a good businessman. . . . I know how to buy and sell. But I've been ripped off, cut, and arrested. Now, I'm on probation and I won't get off so easy next time. But how am I gonna get a job now? . . . I can't go up to somebody and say, 'Listen, I know how to buy and sell. . . . I've been buying and selling for years'" (p. 175).

Gangs today include more older youths who have fewer opportunities to mature out of the gang than they did in Thrasher's day (Skolnick 1992). Hence some graduate to organized crime. Observers of the gang scene report that as early as the late 1960s and early 1970s, gangs in some large metropolitan areas, most notably in Chicago and New York, were beginning to be transformed "from territorially oriented younger members to commercially oriented older (19 plus) members" (Robinson 1993:312). Some African American and Latino groups, for example, began to muscle in on the territory previously controlled by Italian American crime organizations (see Further Exploration, p. 128). Needless to say, this transition of control has not always been peaceful.

Ironically, since the 1970s, incarceration of gang members has facilitated gang organization by bringing together a captive population of similarly situated offenders who can be easily recruited into larger, more powerful organizations (Hayden 2004; Irwin 1980; Jacobs 1977). For instance, Jeff Fort, a leader of Chicago's *Black P Stones Nation*—the *P* stands for "Peace"—formed the *El Rukns* while he was imprisoned in 1978. According to Cyril Robinson:

> Soon after his release, [Fort] met with representatives of the Italian syndicate having vice interests in El Rukn territory. Reputedly, the Italian group ordered Fort to keep hands off. After burning down the mob restaurant where the warnings were given, Fort, in turn, ordered the syndicate out of El Rukn territory. . . . By 1981, the El Rukns were investing their drug profits in real estate and other legitimate businesses and were employing pharmacists, doctors, accountants, and lawyers. Satellite clubs or alliances were [also] formed in other parts of the country. (1993:313)

William Sanders (1994) studied gangs in San Diego, California, through the 1980s. He found that African American gangs were more likely to sell drugs (but less likely to use them) than their Chicano counterparts. Sanders did not find San Diego gangs to be particularly well organized; gang cohesiveness was rooted more in "the strengths of neighborhood . . . solidarity and loyalty" than in a formally structured organization (p. 145). However, Martin Sanchez Jankowski (1991)—who studied 37 gangs in Boston, Los Angeles, and New York—argues that most gangs that are in a mature stage of development have identifiable leadership positions and established codes of conduct. Moreover, Jankowski and others have concluded that by the late 1980s, gang organizations of a variety of racial and ethnic backgrounds had become more entrepreneurial in nature, shifting away from turf-fighting toward more "systematic involvement in drug distribution" (Venkatesh 1997:84; Padilla 1992; Taylor 1990).

Research also suggests that Asian American gangs are among the most highly entrepreneurial gangs in the country. Chinese gangs in particular,

which can be found primarily in Boston, Los Angeles, New York, and San Francisco (as well as in Toronto and Vancouver), have a well-defined hierarchical structure, are well-connected with adult crime groups and fraternal organizations, and have invested in legitimate businesses (Chin 1990; Shelden et al. 2004).

In interviews conducted by Skolnick and colleagues (1993), African American gang members from Los Angeles indicated that perceived economic benefit has increasingly become the primary reason for joining gangs. Skolnick and colleagues attribute the change in Los Angeles, in part, to the expanded cocaine importation that has dramatically decreased the wholesale cost of the drug. Prospective gang members are now evaluated in terms of their ability to sell drugs. The gang provides members with access to and control of drug markets within the gang's territory, shared information about the drug market (e.g., sellers, prices, out-of-town markets), protection from competitors and the police, as well as cash, loans, and "fronting" of drugs, weapons, clothes, and cars.

While African American gangs in Los Angeles appear to have first emerged in the 1950s, the infamous supergangs or gang "nations"—the *Crips* and the *Bloods*—did not emerge until the late 1960s (Williams 2007). These gangs are said to be "deep," consisting of a large number of sets or factions. In 1991, Léon Bing reported the existence of 56 Crip sets and 43 Blood sets. In 1993, Skolnick and colleagues reported that Crip or Blood crack-cocaine operations could be found in 22 states and at least 28 cities in regions all over the country. Gang members indicated that around 1986 they began traveling extensively to expand their drug business. This expansion was motivated, in part, by pressure from police crackdowns in Los Angeles, saturation of the Los Angeles drug market, and higher prices that could be charged in out-of-town markets. Other observers, however, believe that large-scale drug operations are still generally conducted by "individuals and small groups acting on their own rather than for the gang" as a whole (Reiner 1992:72; Shelden et al. 2004).

In his San Diego study, Sanders (1994) found that African American gangs (including Crip and Blood sets) extended their activities over a broad territory, while Chicano gangs were more confined to the barrio and lacked allegiances outside their community. On the other hand, Joan Moore and colleagues characterized Los Angeles Chicano gangs as having a "widespread pattern of nonresident gang membership" and documented several ways in which such nonresident membership developed (1983:182). Sometimes gang membership was extended to relatives who lived outside the neighborhood. At times, families of gang members moved, but youths maintained affiliation with their original gang. Gangs also formed fighting alliances with gangs in other areas, or factions split apart and affiliated with other groups. Nonresident youths sometimes sought to join a gang because

of its activities or reputation. Occasionally the borders of a barrio may have been unclear, leaving some members living in disputed areas, or freeway construction may have altered the community ecology, dividing a previously contiguous neighborhood.

In the Chicago area, both African American and Latino (primarily Puerto Rican) gangs have grouped around the larger *People* and *Folks* gang nations or organizations (Bensinger 1984; Padilla 1992). These Chicago gangs can be traced to the late 1950s and early 1960s. Like the Crips and Bloods, People and Folks claim membership in multiple cities. John Hagedorn (1988), for instance, documented the emergence of People and Folks sets in Milwaukee, Wisconsin, around 1980. Hagedorn emphasized that gangs develop primarily in response to local conditions. Only 4 of the original 19 Milwaukee gangs that he studied were started by former gang youths from Chicago, although an additional four gangs did have former Chicago gang youths as founding members. These migrant youths may bring drug and gun connections to the new gang and "act as cultural carriers of the folkways, mythologies, and other trappings of more sophisticated urban gangs" (Maxson 2006:111).

Gangs now appear to be forming in smaller cities, towns, and even rural areas (Skolnick et al. 1993; Takata & Zevitz 1990). In a study of rural- and small-town gang origins in southeastern Wisconsin, Linda Stoneall (1997) offers several hypotheses for the diffusion of youth gangs. Whereas Hagedorn (1988) traced the rise of gangs in Milwaukee (a city of about 650,000) to the deindustrialization and persistent racial segregation of that city, Stoneall suggests that economic development in smaller communities increases the size and diversity of the population in ways that can facilitate gang activity. As families of gang members move, often to escape the problems of large gang cities, youths bring with them gang experience and connections. Or at times, youths with gang ties are dispersed through foster-home placements. Stoneall also suggests, like Skolnick and colleagues (1993), that gang members are reaching out to new areas to expand their drug markets. In addition, school-busing has contributed both to the diffusion of gangs and to a pattern of nonresident gang membership (Hagedorn 1988). At the same time, Stoneall argues, much of the apparent gang activity in small communities may simply be due to cultural diffusion and youth fads—the media exposes nongang youths to the broader gang subculture, and local peer groups emulate neighboring gang names, symbols, and styles. Adolescents who refer to themselves by the same gang name may not actually be in the same gang, or may not be in a gang at all; they may be a group of ordinary law-violating peers who are merely "playing" at being a gang.

The diffusion of gangs from urban to rural areas has also been noted in research on Native American youths. According to Ada Peco Melton:

> [A] 1994 Bureau of Indian Affairs (BIA) Law Enforcement Division Survey of 75 tribal and BIA law enforcement officers in 31 states . . . identified 181 gangs active on or near Indian country. . . . The largest Indian tribe, the Navajo Nation, has reported the existence of more than 28 gangs in 13 of its tribal communities. . . . The infiltration of gangs appears similar to the migration of gangs from large metropolitan cities like East Los Angeles into such cities as Albuquerque [New Mexico] and Phoenix [Arizona]. . . . It is suspected that some of the gang organizing is being initiated by Indian teenagers who have returned to the reservation, village, or pueblo after being raised in a city. (2002:166)

While criminologists continue to debate the distinction between gangs and other law-violating youth groups, it is clear that in some communities gangs have become "a recognized, albeit internally contradictory, community institution, performing a range of 'positive functions' while simultaneously engaging in behavior that has disrupted community social life" (Venkatesh 1997:107). In his ethnography of the Saints, an African American Chicago street gang, Sudhir Venkatesh (1997) reported that the gang has been channeling some of its drug profits to the resident population in order to integrate itself into the social fabric of the Blackstone housing project in which it is based (the Saints studied by Venkatesh are not the same group as the Saints studied by Chambliss). The gang has distributed groceries and clothing, lent residents money (both interest-free and at exorbitant rates), paid the bail bond for jailed residents, replaced playground equipment, encouraged younger gang members to attend school, and offered protection from other gangs and criminal predators. The residents, in turn, have provided the Saints cover, withholding information from the police and refusing "to allow police to enter their apartments without search warrants" (p. 95). As one resident, a prominent leader on a tenant council, remarked:

> [We] stopped cooperating with police a long time ago, 'cause [the police] harass us so much and they don't do a damn thing anyway. At least the gangs is giving us something, so lot of us prefers to help them 'cause we can *always* go to them and tell them to stop the shooting. Police don't do anything for us and they can't stop no shooting anyway. . . . [The Saints] is the one providing security around here. . . . We all niggers anyway when it come down to it. (p. 95)

Some residents admit that the Saints "make our lives miserable, but if we piss them off, police ain't gonna come 'round here and help us out. And, shit, I gotta tell you, that most of the time it's nice, 'cause they make sure I don't get robbed up in here, they walk through the buildings like . . . police never did that!" (p. 103). Another put it this way: "We have to listen to [the Saints], 'cause when the police leave, [Saint members] are the ones who'll let you know if shootings gonna start up again, you know, they'll tell you if

it's safe to go outside at night, or if you can go up north . . . or if you should just stay in the building" (p. 103). In the words of one Saint gang member, "We [want] to be part of the community, help our community, 'cause we're here to stay" (p. 108).

9

Gender and Crime

MARGO WAS JUST 12 YEARS OLD WHEN SHE WAS raped by her mother's lover:

> My mother and this . . . horny Dominican motherfucker . . . started to have a thing behind my stepfather's back. . . . I knew about sex and all of that, although I had never had sex. . . . One day I was upstairs doing my homework and he comes into my room and tells me he wants to talk. . . . Well the next thing I know he's taking my blouse off. . . . I don't know why I didn't scream . . . but I just sat there. (Williams & Kornblum 1985:64)

As the man began to remove Margo's panties, she remembered hearing about men who killed children they had molested, and she started to panic. The other thing she couldn't get out of her mind was "how big he was. . . . I was hurting so bad, I was so sore. I felt, my god, what did he do to me? . . . I never told my mother anything for two years. And when I did . . . she slapped me. She thought I was lying. . . . She was in love with this . . . fucker . . . [and] didn't believe her own daughter" (pp. 64–65).

This traumatic experience in Margo's life profoundly shaped her attitudes toward men and her sense of trust in human relationships more generally. Indeed, child sexual abuse is common in the background of girls and women who become involved in prostitution and other forms of crime (Belknap 2007; Chesney-Lind & Shelden 2004; Widom & Ames 1984). Abused girls often learn to associate sex with manipulation and come to view themselves as salable commodities. And in Harlem, New York, where Margo grew up, there were few opportunities or positive role models available to young African American women.

By the time she was 15 years old, Margo was engaging in casual prostitution, starting out "with offers of $100 or more for an hour or two" (p. 66). At first she declined, "but then decided to stop being such a fool" and started to accept money, gifts, and trips:

> If a guy approached me and said I was beautiful and asked how much would it cost him to have me, . . . if he looked well dressed and clean I

> would say $200, $300, $400. . . . Some liked it enough to pay high prices. . . . The sexual acts were sexual acts. But if they brought on a smile, a kiss or hug the morning after, it was worthwhile. I felt not only wanted but needed. At the same time, a lot of lonely hearts were warmed. Call it what you will, I see my actions in a benevolent light. I enjoyed the money, spending highly, indulging in things I wouldn't normally have. . . . I hate straight hours, time clocks and suspicious bosses. . . . The risk is the thrill. . . . If [what I do] bothers others, that's their problem. . . . When it comes to money you will find very few . . . to help you make it. (pp. 65–66, 68–69)

We hear the feistiness in Margo's voice as she defends the choices she has made and tries to put the best possible spin on them. Her feistiness, however, does not completely mask her sad undertone. We sense her loneliness, her neediness, her difficulty distinguishing exploitation and affection. For Margo, as for many others, the tremendous sense of powerlessness and vulnerability experienced at the hands of sexual abuse creates an immense need to feel in control, to convince herself she's in control, in spite of the danger that may be associated with **sex work**, a range of illegal and legal acts that include prostitution as well as stripping, performing sex acts on stage, and being photographed or filmed for pornographic pictures or movies (Zatz 1997).

Margo constructed a type of femininity that simultaneously confirmed and challenged conventional femininity. It was conventional in its emphasis on being attractive and seductive to men and on servicing their sexual needs; it was unconventional in its rejection of domesticity and legitimate work as the primary signifiers of identity and in its approval of extramarital, pecuniary, and impersonal sex (Messerschmidt 1997). Nevertheless, the story of most women involved in prostitution, drugs, and other crimes is a grim one indeed. It is not at all like the portrayal in the popular *Pretty Woman* film starring Julia Roberts (Dall 2006). Most prostitutes do not make the kind of money Margo said she made, and many are homeless. Not only do female offenders face the burden of gender oppression, but many share with their male counterparts the burdens of disadvantaged class and minority status, living lives of "powerlessness as members of the urban underclass" (Chesney-Lind et al. 1996:200).

In this chapter we take our sociological imagination into the world of crime as gendered action. Gender, like class and race/ethnicity, shapes the social world in which we live and enables and constrains the choices we make and the actions we take in our lives. Our emphasis here is on understanding how patterns of criminality are gendered. We examine both male and female criminality, with particular attention to female offenders. In the next chapter we focus on the problem of violence against women and girls. We recognize, however, that women and girls (like Margo) do not always fit

neatly into the categories of offender or victim/survivor, and our treatment of these topics reflects this overlap, these blurred boundaries.

Doing Gender

Traditional gender roles, as noted previously, are rooted in structural arrangements of inequality (see Chapters 1 and 5). Along with the changes that have occurred in society over the past few decades, conventional patterns persist. While schools, for example, may now be less likely to emphasize traditional feminine roles for girls, and while girls may be encouraged to engage in physical activities and to participate in organized athletics, gender differences in children's informal playground behaviors remain common. Boys are more likely to participate in team sports in the central play areas, while girls are more likely to play hopscotch or jump rope in smaller groups or simply engage in conversations with each other (Thorne 1993). Also, peer bonding among boys tends to focus on the transgression of public rules and on teasing or insults consisting of disparaging remarks about one another's clothes, appearance, mothers, and so forth (Corsaro & Eder 1990). Males who lack such verbal skills or who have "thin skins" may increasingly become targets of ridicule and even physical attack. Friendships among girls, on the other hand, are more likely to involve mutual self-disclosure and discussions about intimate relationships, although during adolescence, as noted previously, some girls can become emotionally manipulative and abusive to other girls (Giordano et al. 1986; McCarthy et al. 2004; see Chapter 4). Additionally, girls continue to use cosmetics, provocative clothing, and boyfriends to challenge parental authority; some "use sexuality as a proxy for independence, . . . ironically reinforc[ing] their status as sexual objects seeking male approval—ultimately ratifying their status as the subordinate sex" (Chesney-Lind & Shelden 2004:37; Pettiway 1997).

To some extent, however, such generalizations both minimize the variability *within* gender categories and exaggerate the differences *between* them. They also fail to acknowledge the ways in which people actively challenge or oppose conventional gender scripts to construct alternative masculinities and femininities. Gender is not a fixed or static trait but an ongoing social accomplishment that is constructed in relation to how others interpret our actions. Men and women, boys and girls, are continually **doing gender**—that is, "configur[ing] and orchestrat[ing] their actions in relation to how they might be interpreted by others in the particular social context in which they occur" (Messerschmidt 1997:4; West & Zimmerman 1987). Doing gender corroborates through social interaction one's social identification as male or female. And since the social circumstances and

social situations we encounter differ, there are different ways of doing femininity and masculinity.

Joyce Canaan (1991), for instance, discovered different ways of doing masculinity among young, white, working-class men in Great Britain. One man, Andrew, explains how fighting corroborates a male's masculinity: "Boys want to fight . . . to look good to girls. It's a manly thing. . . . The girl's there, someone's causing trouble, you ain't just gonna laugh it off. . . . [The girls] think, 'What's he doing? He's a bit of a wanker, ay he?' Whereas if you stand up and have a go . . . you try and impress them" (p. 119).

Andrew sees fighting as manly, as a way to demonstrate to young women how tough or "hard" he is. He is motivated to fight not just to show off but also because he fears that he'll be considered "soft" ("a bit of a wanker") if he doesn't. According to Canaan, the term *wanker* refers to one who masturbates. The use of this term as a put-down thus suggests that these young men consider "only those who have sex with a woman" to be "real men." Moreover, they "link hardness with heterosexuality" when they consider "those who have sex without a woman and without penetration . . . not 'real men'" (p. 119).

Another way to do masculinity is evident in Steve and Neil's response to Canaan's question: "Don't people think you're a wanker if you don't fight?"

> S: Nay.
> N: A mate'll respect you if you walk away from drunkenness.
> S: If anyone comes up to you and says, "Do you want a fight?" you say, "Fuck off." . . . You give them a chance to walk away. Say, "I [don't] want to fight, alright? I [don't] want no trouble." . . . You['re] still standing your ground, . . . saying, "[Go] away." . . . If they [don't], you just beat them up. (p. 116)

Steve and Neil suggest that a man can be hard without acting hard. He can gain respect (even when drunk) by standing his ground, fighting only when there is no way not to. "Standing his ground" does not imply walking away: "By preventing a fight he shows that he can 'manfully' control himself without flying off the handle." A man's decision to reject another's invitation to fight allows him to redefine the situation. If the other accedes to this redefinition, the man "effectively demonstrates that he is the more powerful of the two. In so doing he shows that he is not only powerful when fighting, but that he, more than others, determines when he will and will not fight" (p. 116).

Canaan's interviews demonstrate that masculinities (like femininities) are not static—not finished products—but are continually constructed and reconstructed in social situations. James Messerschmidt (1993) points out, for example, that white, middle-class boys who engage in **accommodating**

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Masculine Rage: Suburban and Rural School Shooters

In April 1999, Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold went on a shooting rampage at Columbine High School in Littleton, Colorado, killing 12 students and a teacher and then taking their own lives. This was but one of a number of mass shootings (and attempted mass shootings) that have occurred in small-town suburban and rural communities in recent years (Irvine 2006; Larken 2007; *Wisconsin State Journal* 1999a, 1999b; Wooden & Blazak 2001).

Inner-city schools generally experience more violence than schools in suburban and rural areas, but it is the latter that attract the bulk of attention (Cowley 1998; Lawrence 1998). With each new incident, similar claims of disbelief emerge from the small-town residents: "How could it happen *here*?" "This isn't the inner city!" "We're not that kind of people." The consistency of these remarks prompted Patricia Williams to wonder why young African Americans are so readily feared, while young white boys like Harris and Klebold seem

> so shrouded in presumptions of . . . innocence . . . [even] after professing their love for Hitler, declaring their hatred for . . . [minorities] on a public website, . . . downloading instructions for making bombs, accumulating ingredients, assembling them under the protectively indifferent gaze . . . of the parents and neighbors, stockpiling guns and ammunition, . . . [and] procuring hand grenades and flak jackets. (1999a:9)

Like the probation officers who were supervising Harris and Klebold after the youths had burgled a car, who described them as intelligent boys with lots of promise, classmates and teachers continued to insist that the two were "good boys."

Most of the small-town school shooters have been white adolescent males with easy access to firearms and a tendency to perceive violence as a transcending experience, one that made them feel omnipotent. Often the youths had previously been harassed, bullied, and branded as social outcasts by other students, and in their eyes they were seeking revenge, turning the tables on their enemies. As Luke Woodham—the 16-year-old who shot nine students (two fatally) and also killed his mother in Pearl, Mississippi, in 1997—said: "Murder is not weak and slow-witted, murder is gutsy and daring. . . . I killed because people like me are mistreated every day" (Cowley 1998:25). Harris and Klebold had plotted their crime over a period of eight months. Klebold had written on a website: "That's the only way to solve arguments with all you fuckheads, I just kill!" . . . I don't care if I live or die in the shoot out, all I want to do is to kill and injure as many pricks as I can" (Larkin 2007:159–160). James Gilligan attributes this attitude to "the patriarchal code of honor and shame [that] generates and obligates male violence" (cited in Steinem 1999:47). Wayne Wooden and Randy Blazak suggest that the manner in which the boys resorted to gun violence to reclaim their

continues

continued

manhood reflects "the dominant image of masculinity present in popular Arnold Schwartzeneger, Sylvester Stallone, and Bruce Willis films" (2001:111). Ralph Larkin adds: "During their rampage, [Harris and Klebold] enjoyed themselves immensely. They were thrilled with the power they exerted. . . . In the last . . . minutes of their lives, they exercised control over others. They were the ones who were meting out humiliation, making others pay, . . . send[ing] a message to America that they and others like them had had enough" (2007:174).

masculinity (relatively submissive, adaptive behaviors) during school hours may do masculinity differently after school, meeting friends to drink, carouse, or engage in vandalism. Moreover, while one's expression of masculinity or femininity is "always individual and personal," specific forms of masculinity and femininity "are available, encouraged and permitted, depending upon one's social situation, class, race, and sexual orientation" (1995:173).

Although there are different ways of doing masculinity and femininity, there also are more narrowly defined idealized forms of masculinity and femininity that are most valued in particular societies, what we call **conventional masculinity** and **conventional femininity** (R. W. Connell [1987] calls these *hegemonic masculinity* and *emphasized femininity*). Conventional masculinity in Western industrialized societies is achieved through work in the paid labor market and the subordinate treatment of women and girls; it is aggressive, controlling, and sexually driven—heterosexual and heterosexist, the latter referring to the belief in the inherent superiority of heterosexuality and its entitlement to a privileged social position vis-à-vis homosexuality and bisexuality. Conventional masculinity subordinates other masculinities, attempting to prevent them from "gaining cultural definition and recognition as alternatives [by] confining them to ghettos, to privacy, to unconsciousness" (Connell 1987:186). Conventional femininity, in turn, complements conventional masculinity; it is a femininity defined by its subordination to men and accommodation to men's interests and desires. But other types of femininity are defined more "centrally by strategies of resistance or forms of noncompliance" to conventional femininity or "by complex strategic combinations of compliance, resistance, and cooperation" (p. 183).

In this chapter we examine how crime is a resource for "doing gender" and how gender is a resource for "doing crime." We will see how gender intersects with class, race/ethnicity, and other social experiences in specific situational contexts to produce a range of criminal actions, some of which sustain and some of which reconfigure or undermine traditional notions of gender.

Gendered Patterns of Criminality: An Overview

The Gender Composition of Arrests

Gender norms and expectations are reflected in statistical patterns of crime. Table 9.1 presents *Uniform Crime Reports* data on the gender composition of arrests for both Index and non-Index crimes (Part I and Part II offenses) for 2007. With three exceptions, males constitute a clear majority of arrests

Table 9.1 Gender Composition of Arrests (2007)

	Percentage Distribution[a]	
	Male	Female
Index crimes/Part I offenses		
Homicide[b]	90	10
Forcible rape	99	1
Robbery	88	12
Aggravated assault	79	19
Burglary	86	15
Larceny-theft	60	40
Motor vehicle theft	82	18
Arson	84	16
Non-Index crimes/Part II offenses		
Other assaults	75	25
Forgery and counterfeiting	62	38
Fraud	56	44
Embezzlement	49	52
Stolen property[c]	80	20
Vandalism	83	17
Weapons[d]	92	8
Prostitution and commercialized vice	32	68
Sex offenses[e]	91	9
Drug abuse violations	81	19
Gambling	91	9
Offenses against family and children	75	25
Driving under the influence	79	21
Liquor laws	72	28
Drunkenness	84	16
Disorderly conduct	74	26
Vagrancy	79	22
All other offenses (except traffic)	77	23
Suspicion	79	21
Curfew and loitering	69	31
Runaways	44	56

Source: Federal Bureau of Investigation 2007a, tab. 42.
Notes: a. Percentages may not sum to 100 due to rounding.
b. Homicide = murder and nonnegligent manslaughter.
c. Stolen property = buying, receiving, and possessing.
d. Weapons = carrying, possessing, etc.
e. Sex offenses = all except forcible rape and prostitution.

for all crimes. Females constitute a majority of arrests only for runaways (56 percent) and prostitution and commercialized vice (68 percent), and male and female arrests are comparable for embezzlement (49 and 52 percent, respectively).

Girls are more likely than boys to experience family-related problems that lead them to run away from home. David Finkelhor and Larry Baron (1986) estimate that about 70 percent of child sexual abuse victims are girls, and that the abuse of girls starts earlier, lasts longer, and is more likely to be perpetrated by family members. In addition, research indicates that a higher percentage of female than male runaways have been sexually abused (Janus et al. 1987). While self-report studies suggest that boys are as likely as girls to run away, parents are less tolerant of their daughters' transgressions and more likely to report them to authorities (Canter 1982; Cernkovich & Giordano 1979a; Chesney-Lind & Shelden 2004). In addition, research finds that a majority of runaways who turn to street prostitution have been sexually abused as juveniles, and that child sexual abuse victims are more likely to be arrested for prostitution than nonsexually abused youths, even if the latter were physically abused or neglected (Silbert & Pines 1981; Widom & Ames 1984).

Prostitution would appear to be the quintessential female crime, given society's tendency to view women as sex objects and men's greater propensity to seek out impersonal sex. In terms of sheer numbers, however, men may have greater involvement in prostitution than women. Criminal laws in most of the United States make it a crime to be either a prostitute or a customer. Although the law is less likely to be enforced against customers, there are undoubtedly several male clients, or "johns," for every female prostitute. There is also a thriving business of male prostitution serving a primarily male clientele (Calhoun 1992; Luckenbill 1986; West & de Villiers 1993). Moreover, males dominate the ranks of pimps, those who live off the earnings of a prostitute and "act as her agent and/or companion" (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995:204). And both males and females are involved in illegal procuring (encouraging or forcing others into prostitution) and running brothels or managing premises used for prostitution.

Following running away and prostitution, the highest percentages of female arrests are for the nonviolent property crimes of larceny-theft (40 percent), forgery and counterfeiting (38 percent), fraud (44 percent), and embezzlement (52 percent). Shoplifting is the type of larceny-theft that females are most likely to commit. Although a couple of early studies found that the majority of apprehended shoplifters were female (Robin 1963; Sanders 1981), self-report research indicates that females are somewhat less likely to shoplift than males and that they shoplift fewer and less costly items (Belknap 2007; Chesney-Lind & Shelden 2004). Perhaps store own-

ers, considering females more prone to this crime, are more likely to scrutinize female shoppers.

Some criminologists see a connection between females' involvement in shoplifting and their role as consumers (Campbell 1991). Females spend more time shopping as a pastime than males do, and they seem especially vulnerable to advertising campaigns that encourage consumption of personal products such as cosmetics, jewelry, and clothes. There also is a consumer dimension in women's involvement in forgery and fraud, as in the case of passing bad checks, check forgery, and credit card fraud. And women, the primary recipients of governmental welfare, constitute the bulk of offenders in welfare fraud (Datesman & Scarpitti 1980).

Women who embezzle from their employers tend to steal smaller amounts than men do. One early study found that 70 percent of those who embezzled over $1,000 were male, while over 80 percent of those who embezzled less than $150 were female (Franklin 1979). A study of bank embezzlers found that 60 percent of convicted women were bank tellers, compared to 14 percent of convicted men (Daly 1989). These women were more likely to steal cash from the till, while men were more likely to manipulate financial documents and to work in conjunction with others. And although both male and female embezzlers have reported a variety of motives for their crimes, women have been more likely to mention family need and men more likely to note problems such as gambling losses or living beyond their means (Cressey 1953; Zietz 1981). Women also have been less likely to engage in corporate law violations not recorded in the *UCR*. One study, for instance, found that males committed 98 percent of Securities and Exchange Commission violations, 99.5 percent of antitrust violations, and 95 percent of bribery violations (Daly 1989). At the same time, recent research based on a survey conducted by the Association of Certified Fraud Examiners using 1997–2002 data found that women had achieved near parity with men in "theft or misuse of an organization's assets" (48 percent) and "wrongfully using their influence in business transactions to obtain benefits for themselves that were contrary to duties to their employer" (45 percent), although women accounted for under a third of "falsification of an organization's records or documents" (31 percent) (Holtfreter 2005:357–358).

Previously we noted that racial disparities in *UCR* arrests for drug violations were not apparent in self-report data (see Chapter 8). It thus bears examining here whether the *UCR* gender disparities in this area, where males comprise 81 percent of the arrests, are reflected in self-report data. Table 9.2 indicates that males do, in fact, use more illicit drugs than females, although the gender differences are not as marked as they appear in the *UCR*.

Table 9.2 Self-Reported Use of Illicit Drugs by Gender (2007)

Percentage Who Used	Male	Female
Over Past Month	10.4	5.8
Over Past Year	17.4	11.6
Over Lifetime	50.6	41.8

Source: US Department of Health and Human Services 2007, tab. G.11.
Note: Data are for ages 12 and older.

Has Female Criminality Increased? The Masculinity-Liberation Hypothesis

In 1975, Freda Adler advanced a provocative thesis about the contemporary female offender that predicted eventual convergence between male and female rates of criminality. In her book *Sisters in Crime: The Rise of the New Female Offender,* Adler asserted:

> The phenomenon of female criminality is but one wave in . . . [the] rising tide of female assertiveness—a wave which has not yet crested and may even be seeking its level uncomfortably close to the high-water mark set by male[s]. . . . [Females are now] robbing banks single-handedly, committing assorted armed robberies, muggings, loan-sharking operations, extortions, murders, and a wide variety of other aggressive violence-oriented crimes. (pp. 1, 14)

Adler offered a **masculinity-liberation theory** of female criminality to explain this purported trend. According to Adler, medical and technological advances had freed women from unwanted pregnancies and lightened the burden of housework, and the women's rights movement (feminism or women's liberation) had promoted an "imitative male machismo competitiveness"—that is, a masculinization of female behavior (p. 98). Gender norms for males and females had begun to converge, and females were now striving for equality in both the world of legitimate work and the world of crime.

Initial evaluations of Adler's claims questioned the accuracy of the view that female criminality had in fact increased. At the time of her study, the most significant increases in female crime had occurred for the nonviolent property offenses (larceny-theft, forgery, fraud, embezzlement) that were consistent with traditional gender patterns. These increases could be explained, critics noted, in terms of the rising divorce rate, increased number of female heads of household, general structural problems in the economy, and increased opportunities for crime afforded by the expansion of self-service retail outlets, consumer credit, and governmental welfare (Simon 1975; Steffensmeier 1978; Steffensmeier & Cobb 1981).

Data from Table 9.3 show that between 1965 and 1975, the percentage of females arrested for violent Index crimes remained essentially the same (about 10 percent), while the percentage arrested for property Index crimes increased from about 14 percent to 22 percent. Since then, however, the percentage of female arrests has increased to over 18 percent for violent crimes and 33 percent for property crimes. While these data belie Adler's expectations of gender convergence, they are increases nonetheless and need to be explained.

Some criminologists have attributed these trends to changing societal reactions and increased official labeling of female offenders. The changing position of women in society, media attention to the new "liberated" female criminal, and concern with equality and abolition of gender discrimination may have led law enforcement authorities to take females more seriously than in the past (Belknap 2007; Berger 1996; Merlo 1995). According to this view, females are now less likely to be the beneficiaries of official chivalry. To the extent that such chivalry still exists, however, it appears to exist only for suspects who display a more feminine, passive demeanor and who have committed less serious crimes. One study found that older and white female suspects were less likely to be arrested than younger, black, or hostile suspects (Visher 1983).

Other researchers have attributed changing arrest rates, in part, to legal reforms that decriminalized juvenile **status offenses** in various states. Status offenses are crimes for which juveniles (but not adults) may be charged. Historically these have included not only running away, truancy, and curfew violations, but also vague transgressions such as "incorrigibility," "habitual disobedience," and "immoral behavior" (see Further Exploration, p. 432). Decriminalization meant that juveniles could not be

Table 9.3 Gender Composition of Index Crime Arrests (1965–2007)

	Total Index Crimes		Violent Index Crimes		Property Index Crimes	
	Percentage Male	Percentage Female	Percentage Male	Percentage Female	Percentage Male	Percentage Female
1965	86.6	13.4	89.8	10.2	85.8	14.2
1975	80.2	19.8	89.5	10.5	77.9	22.1
1985	78.6	21.4	89.1	10.9	76.0	24.0
1995	76.1	23.9	85.1	14.9	72.7	27.3
2005	76.0	24.0	82.1	17.9	67.5	32.5
2007	75.8	24.2	81.8	18.2	66.6	33.4

Source: Federal Bureau of Investigation 1966, tab. 23; 1976, tab. 38; 1986, tab. 37; 1996, tab. 42; 2005, tab. 33; 2007a, tab. 42.

detained for very long or locked up for such charges. As a result, some jurisdictions began to reclassify some status offenders as criminals to enable greater control of these youths. For example, runaway girls who had broken into parents' homes to obtain food and clothing were now being charged with burglary, or youths previously charged with "uncontrollable behavior" were now being charged with violent crimes (Curran 1984; Mahoney & Fenster 1982). In addition, increased attention to domestic violence has led to more "simple assault" or "battery" charges in family fights. Meda Chesney-Lind and Randall Shelden (2004) report cases where authorities even advised parents who wanted to prevent their daughters from running away to physically stand in their way. If the girl then ran into the parent or pushed the parent aside, the parent could have the daughter arrested.

However much labeling has played a role in the changing gender arrest patterns, research has found a greater narrowing (though not a convergence) in female-male arrests for juveniles than for adults. Moreover, self-report surveys, which are not contaminated by the labeling process, indicate fewer and smaller gender differences than the arrest data. Here gender differences are most apparent for the more serious property and violent offenses, which are more frequently committed by males. A similar proportion of boys and girls commit less serious crimes, although males offend more frequently and have longer delinquent careers than females (Berger 1996; Chesney-Lind & Shelden 2004).

At the same time, research has not generally supported the proposition that female offenders have become masculinized or proponents of feminist ideology. Survey studies that have examined the relationship between self-reported delinquency and several stereotypical masculine personality or gender traits (e.g., aggressiveness, competitiveness, leadership, ambition) have yielded mixed or inconsistent results, and males have been found to be more delinquent than females regardless of gender orientation (Belknap 2007; Berger 1996; Chesney-Lind & Shelden 2004). Peggy Giordano and Stephen Cernkovich (1979) found no relationship between self-reported female delinquency and "liberated" attitudes toward family and occupational roles (e.g., whether women should have to do all the housework or stay at home and take care of the family, whether women should receive equal pay for equal work compared to men or be able to work in nontraditional occupations). Similarly, Josephine Figueria-McDonough (1984) reported that profeminist attitudes were unrelated to delinquency among female high school youths, although they were positively associated with higher grades and more ambitious career goals. Giordano and Cernkovich (1979) even found that traditional beliefs about male-female personality traits and interpersonal relationships (e.g., men are more logical than women, a guy likes a girl to look up to him, girls can't trust other girls with their boyfriends) were associated with higher rates of female delinquency. These studies are

consistent with research on adult female offenders who've been found to hold traditional beliefs about motherhood and women's dependency on men and to reject or be indifferent to the women's movement (Glick & Neto 1977; Miller 1986; Ogle et al. 1995).

At the same time, Giordano and Cernkovich (1979) did find that delinquent girls expressed nontraditional attitudes about what actions they considered appropriate, acceptable, or possible for girls. For instance, delinquent girls were more likely than nondelinquents to agree with the statements: *"I just want to get in on a piece of the action—Gotta do what I gotta do to get ahead in this world"* and *"I think sometimes, if a guy can do it, why can't I?"* They also were more likely to think they had as much right as a guy to swear and to go into a bar alone.

While delinquent girls in the study said they were most likely to get into trouble when they were with a mixed group of boys and girls, they were not involved in these groups in passive ways, as mere accomplices to males. Most girls disagreed with the statement: *"It's usually the guys' idea and I just go along for the ride."* One girl even remarked, "While dudes are generally in on it some way, the girls are as much or more into it as they are" (p. 475). In fact, many girls indicated that they were most likely to get into trouble when they were alone or with a group of other girls. Giordano and Cernkovich concluded that contemporary females face a complex, multidimensional, and often contradictory set of behavioral scripts that specify what is "likely, possible, unlikely and impossible" for them to do, and that they are capable of simultaneously identifying with both traditional and nontraditional gender norms and expectations (p. 469).

Intersections of Gender, Race/Ethnicity, Class, and Crime

The female population is not an undifferentiated group. It is important, therefore, to examine the gender-crime relationship with regard to race/ethnicity and class. The *UCR* do not include data on class (see Chapter 2). Neither do they cross-classify gender and race/ethnicity. However, Darrell Steffensmeier and Emilie Andersen Allen were able to collect black and white gender-specific arrest data from Pennsylvania, which they described as "a diversified and demographically heterogeneous state" (1988:56). They found that within the same racial group, female rates were consistently lower than male rates. But female rates were often higher than male rates for different subgroups of the population. For example, the black female rate was higher than the white male rate for crimes against persons, the urban female rate approximated or exceeded the rural male rate for minor property offenses, and the younger female rate was higher than the older male rate for both serious and minor property crimes.

In addition, self-report delinquency research found that black girls were

more likely than white girls to commit aggravated assault, robbery, auto theft, and thefts of $50 or more, although their rates for burglary were virtually the same (Hindelang et al. 1981). Black girls were also as likely as white boys to commit aggravated assault and robbery. Other self-report research found that nonwhite girls were more likely than white girls to commit crimes against persons (e.g., attacking someone with fists, using a weapon to attack someone, participating in a gang fight), but white girls were more likely to hit their parents and be involved in using and selling drugs, illegal drinking, and status offenses (Cernkovich & Giordano 1979a). Moreover, rates of self-reported offenses among black and white females tended to converge as the girls grew older (Ageton 1983). Data from the *National Crime Victimization Survey* on the perceived gender of the offender also indicated that black males had the highest rate, followed by white males, black females, and white females. Among juvenile offenders, however, the *NCVS* found that the black female rate was comparable to the male rate for some crimes (Hindelang 1981; Laub & McDermott 1985).

Research also found that gendered patterns of crime varied with class background. For instance, lower-class urban females self-reported more violent crime than their female counterparts in other groups or settings (Ageton 1983; Hill & Crawford 1990). In a study of female homicides in six large cities (Atlanta, Baltimore, Chicago, Houston, Los Angeles, New York), Coramae Richey Mann (1996) found that over three-fourths of the women arrested for murder were African American. These women also tended to be unemployed mothers who had not completed high school. Thus Sally Simpson argued that "race and class combine to produce uniquely situated populations of females (e.g., underclass black females) who . . . appear to have unique patterns of criminality . . . when compared with their gender and racial counterparts" (1991:115).

Girls in Urban Gangs

In her research on girls in gangs, Anne Campbell (1987, 1991) interviewed lower-class minority youths in New York City. One cannot listen to these young women's accounts without questioning the adequacy of conventional gender explanations that emphasize the differences between females and males. The conventional assumption that males are more violent than females does not necessarily hold among these youths (Messerschmidt 1997; Simpson 1991). As one girl explained: "Round here you have to know how to fight. I'm glad I got a reputation. That way nobody will start with me. . . . They're going to come out losing. Like all of us. . . . We're crazy. Nobody wants to fight us. . . . They say, 'No, man. That girl might stab me or cut my face'" (Campbell 1987:462–463).

Chesney-Lind and Shelden (2004) suggest that the moderate increases in female violence may be attributed, in part, to increased involvement of

girls in gang-related offenses, even though females generally remain less involved in gangs than males. Overall, the self-reported delinquency of female gang members is lower than that of male gang members but higher than that of nongang males (Esbensen & Huizinga 1993; Esbensen & Winfree 1998; Fagan 1990; Miller & Brunson 2000). In a study of gang membership among eighth-grade students in 11 cities, Dana Peterson and colleagues (2001) found that 10 percent of gang members were involved in *all-male* gangs and 37 percent of gang members were involved in *majority-male* gangs, while only 3 percent of gang members were involved in *all-female* gangs and 2 percent in *majority-female* gangs (*majority-male* and *majority-female* gangs were defined as those having memberships of at least two-thirds males and females, respectively). Nearly half of gang members were involved in *gender-balanced* gangs. Peterson and colleagues also found that gender patterns of gang offending varied according to the gender composition of the gangs, with boys in majority-male gangs having the highest rates of delinquency and girls in all-female and majority-female gangs having the lowest rates of delinquency.

James Messerschmidt (1997) views the gang milieu as an environment in which girls experiment with and reconfigure the boundaries of femininity. Conventional femininity is the culturally dominant ideal that is associated primarily with middle-class, white, heterosexual women and that is organized around "the display of sociability rather than technical competence, fragility in mating scenes, compliance with men's desire for titillation and ego-stroking . . . [and] acceptance of marriage and child care" (Connell 1987:187). According to Messerschmidt, when gang girls act tough and are violent, they are not "doing masculinity" but are constructing an **oppositional femininity** that challenges the notion of femininity as a trait entirely distinct from masculinity.

Giordano and Cernkovich (1979) observe that gang girls are capable of identifying with and participating in aspects of both traditional and nontraditional gender roles. Elements of traditionalism still permeate the gang milieu. Girls, for example, are most often involved in gangs as girlfriends of male gang members or as "little sister" subgroups or female auxiliaries that take their names from the male gangs (e.g., Latin Kings and Queens) (Shelden et al. 2004). One New York City gang girl told Campbell (1991) that when the boys were not around, they could do what they wanted. When the guys were there, however, they were "not allowed" to do as they pleased (p. 244). Similarly, a Los Angeles Chicana told John Quicker: "If it wasn't for [the boys] we wouldn't be around 'cause the guys started [the gang]. . . . The girls never start the gang; the guys do. And the girls that like them or back them up started it with their permission" (1983:101).

In her study of Chicano gangs in Los Angeles, Joan Moore (1991) found that the boys often treated the girls as possessions, "like a piece of

ass." As one boy remarked: "It's just there . . . when you want a *chapete* (fuck). . . . The guys treat them like shit. . . . Just to have a partner for the time. . . . And then when they want something you know, get it—wham bam. . . . We used to . . . throw a *linea* (lining up to have sex with a girl), you know what I mean" (pp. 54–55). Similarly, in her study of African American gangs in Fort Wayne, Indiana, Deborah Burris-Kitchen (1995) found that girls had difficulty getting the respect they felt they deserved. As one young woman said: "Guys around here don't respect women much. I think it is because of all the rap music bashin' women. I listen to some of this music calling women bitches and ho's and it upsets me. I think the guys around here think sex is all we're good for" (p. 104).

Other females noted a double standard: "Most women get respect if they sellin' drugs, but not if they using. It's ok for guys to use, but not us" (Burris-Kitchen 1995:104). And although gang males express pride over female members' willingness to fight, they are sometimes uncomfortable with or ambivalent about female aggression. One of Quicker's respondents explained: "I've asked my boyfriend and they all come up with the same answer. 'I don't think a girl should be in . . . the fights.' . . . They say it's right for a guy, but it's not right for girls. . . . That's what they all say, yet they are happy to have their own girls. They're proud. They say our girls do this, our girls are bad. . . . [So] I don't know what they're talking about" (1983:12).

Gang girls—largely lower-class, minority youths—have few opportunities to make it in mainstream society. They come from families in which they often have experienced physical and sexual abuse, from families that are frequently "held together by their mothers who are subsisting on welfare. Most have dropped out of school and have no marketable skills" (Joe & Chesney-Lind 1995:413). The gang represents an alternative family, a social support system that buffers the dismal future that awaits them. But gang girls also recognize that they must negotiate a gender-stratified street environment dominated by males. As one said: "Females who are soft won't make it. . . . Someone think you weak, they goin' take from ya'. Even if you female you got to be willing to shoot" (Burris-Kitchen 1995:93). Campbell (1993) notes that gang girls know what it is like to be victimized:

> They know that, to survive, force must be met with more than unspoken anger or frustrated tears. Less physically strong and more sexually vulnerable than boys, they find that the best line of defense is not attack but the threat of attack. The key to this is the development of a reputation for violence, which will ward off opponents. There is nothing so effective as being in a street gang to keep the message blaring out: "Don't mess with me—I'm a crazy woman." (p. 133)

Females who are unwilling or unable to fight are thus viewed disparagingly. As one girl said: "Tramps. All they think about is screwing. . . . They don't

fight. They don't go to rumbles with their guys. . . . They're a bunch of punks" (Campbell 1987:463). Another girl remarked: "You can belong as long as you can back up your shit and don't rat on your homegirls or back away [from a fight. You have to be] able to hold up the hood" (Harris 1988:109).

Although not equal in power, auxiliary female gangs are not mere appendages of male gangs. Girls in gangs have their own leaders and make most of their routine decisions without the boys (Bowker & Klein 1983; Giordano 1978). They take pride in their claims of autonomy and reject "any suggestion that they could be duped or conned by males" (Campbell 1987:460). In a study of San Francisco gangs, David Lauderback and colleagues (1992) found that African American females were less likely than Latinas to be affiliated with male groups. One African American gang, the Potrero Hill Posse, started out as a mixed-gender group, with girls selling drugs for their boyfriends. Eventually, however, the females disaffiliated themselves from the males and formed a gang of their own, requiring members to be adept at either selling drugs (crack) or shoplifting.

Moore (1991) found that female gangs were not as closely bound to the barrio as male gangs and that girls often partied with boys from other gangs. Boys, however, were more likely to date girls who were not in gangs, expressing preference for those girls they perceived as more likely to fulfill traditional gender roles in the future. As one boy said: "You know that they are going to be good. You know they going to take care of business and . . . be a good housewife" (p. 75).

Some girls clearly rejected the traditionalism of male constructions of gender. "Not *me,*" said one of Moore's informants, "they didn't treat me like that. They think we're possessions, but we're not. No way, I pick my own boyfriends. . . . You don't tell *me* who to be with" (p. 55). Similarly, some members of the Vice Queens, an African American gang in Chicago, constructed a nontraditional oppositional femininity by unabashedly placing themselves at the boys' disposal, openly encouraging them to fondle them and have sex with them. Although the boys viewed the girls as mere sex objects, the girls gained status among their female peers by "being able to keep four or five boys 'on the string' without any boys knowing of the others, but at the same time, avoiding sexual relationships with too many boys at one time" (Fishman 1988:21). Peggy Orenstein suggests, however, that such girls have simply learned to derive whatever pleasure they can from their subordinate and exploitative position vis-à-vis boys and have "recast mistreatment as excitement" (1994:209).

Gini Sikes (1997) interviewed Latina gang girls in San Antonio, Texas. She learned that "trains" (sex with a number of gang males in succession) were an option to "jump ins" (physical beatings by gang members) in gang initiation rituals (trains were not an option for male initiates). The girls did

not view the trains as rape but considered them "the coward's way in—after all, gang logic goes, all the girl does is lie down and spread her legs" (p. 110). Sikes found that most girls chose the "jump in" option.

Nevertheless, Campbell (1987) observes that serial monogamy, not promiscuity, is the norm for most gang girls, and that girls who have sex outside of a steady relationship are often condemned. Gang girls may even avoid associating with "'loose' girls whose reputation might contaminate them by association" (p. 452). But once a girl becomes involved in a relationship, her boyfriend often attempts to exert control over her public appearance and behavior, not allowing her to wear shorts or low-cut blouses, to get "high," or to flirt with other guys. Males, on the other hand, reserve their prerogative to have other relationships. Masculinity norms make it difficult for boys to turn down an opportunity for sex, as this would be considered tantamount to an admission of homosexuality. Girls also accept this view of masculinity and blame other girls for "putting it in his face." In this way, romantic disputes between girls and boys are settled between girls. Nevertheless, the girls' main objective is not so much to "hold on to their man" as to gain other girls' respect (Campbell 1991; Sikes 1997).

Occasionally, gang girls fight to defend territorial turf and gain recognition for their group. However, much of their fighting occurs in response to competition over boyfriends, assessments of beauty (who is "the cutest"), and negative gossip regarding one's reputation or that of a family member—their mother especially. Fighting among girls is generally less lethal than among boys, since it usually involves fists or knives rather than guns, but gun use among females does seem to have increased (Anderson 1994; Campbell 1993; Harris 1988).

Gang girls who fight or who are willing to use violence are not rejecting femininity but are constructing an alternative femininity that combines traditional and nontraditional gender traits. Although participation in a street fight involves physical aggression against rival gang members, it is also defined as an act of *caring* for one's gang and the "hood." Thus, "what is usually considered atypical feminine behavior outside this situation is, in fact, *normalized* within the social context of interneighborhood conflict; girl-gang violence in this situation is . . . permitted and . . . encouraged . . . by *both* boys and girls as appropriate feminine behavior" (Messerschmidt 1997:82). Hence, doing femininity—"bad girl" femininity—can mean doing violence. Yet girls also play many of the more conventional feminine roles within the gang: childcare, cooking, and preparing food and drink for parties. In addition, gang girls are very fussy about their physical appearance—their hair, makeup, wearing the right brand-name clothing—and they are disparaging of their peers who look drab or slovenly. Outside of the gang milieu they are unambiguously feminine. Campbell says that gang girls' concern "with their appearance [and] their pride in their ability to attract

men . . . left me in no doubt that they enjoyed being women. They didn't want to be like men and, indeed, would have been outraged at such a suggestion" (1993:113).

At the same time, gang girls are often uninformed or misinformed about birth control, and rarely do they or their partners use it. Instead, they view pregnancy as an occupational hazard of sorts. Many of them get pregnant within a year after becoming sexually active, which may begin at or even before puberty. Becoming a mother does not require leaving the gang, and it offers girls an alternative source of status. Motherhood is valued, provided that the mother accepts responsibility for her child's welfare. The ability to care for children, however, often depends on parental or grandparental support and on the (diminishing) availability of governmental welfare. Abortion is generally condemned for the first pregnancy but is increasingly accepted after that. Wholehearted support for abortion, which might jeopardize their reputations as mothers, is uncommon (Campbell 1987; Moore & Hagedorn 1996; Williams & Kornblum 1985).

In their research in Milwaukee, Wisconsin, Joan Moore and John Hagedorn (1996) found that Latina girls had higher hopes of getting married than their African American counterparts. Forty-three percent of Latina gang members and 75 percent of African Americans agreed with the statement, *"I'd rather raise my kids by myself,"* and 29 percent of the Latinas but none of the African Americans agreed that *"All a woman needs to straighten out her life is to find a good man"* (pp. 216–217). Male gang members, however, rarely marry the mothers of their children or contribute financially to their support, although they do take pride in their ability to father children, considering it a public demonstration of their masculinity. As one Potrero Hill female gang member explained, speaking of her child's father, "They just get you pregnant and . . . go on about their business with somebody else" (Lauderback et al. 1992:69). Moore and Hagedorn (1996) note that Latinas have been subjected to more traditional gender expectations than African American women, who for generations have been forced to assume independent economic and familial roles. Yet Philippe Bourgois, in his study of a Puerto Rican neighborhood in New York, says that one of the problems facing inner-city communities is the increasing number of mothers who are following "the paths of fathers in seeking independent lives in the underground economy or in substance abuse . . . [leaving no one] to cushion the fragmentation of the family unit" (1995:276).

Gender and Street Robbery

Crime data indicate that robbery is among the most gender-differentiated crimes, one of the quintessential male offenses (Miller 1998). Robbery, like other forms of male violence, provides a resource for accomplishing or doing masculinity when alternative means are unavailable. Messerschmidt

(1993) argues that the dominant form of masculinity in society is defined not only in terms of men's power and social privilege vis-à-vis women, but also through men's ability to exercise authority and control over other men in the paid-labor market. Thus owners and managers have more power than workers, while workers have more power than the unemployed. Men who are without resources to construct a "breadwinner/good provider" form of masculinity may use crime as a suitable substitute.

In Chapter 8 we described the culture of respect and personal honor that lies at the heart of the "code of the street" and how males often respond vehemently to "dissing" in order to avoid any aspersions on their masculinity. Similarly, men who commit robbery are attempting to project a particular image of masculinity to other men. Robbery is not only a means of acquiring money or property. It is also a means of establishing a position of dominance, of gaining "*an angle of moral superiority* over the intended victim" (J. Katz 1988:169). Jody Miller notes that "men accomplish street robberies in a strikingly uniform [way] . . . using physical violence and/or a gun placed on or at close proximity to the victim in a confrontational manner" (1998:47). As one robber explained, when you "have the gun to his head, can't do nothing but respect that." Another said, "I don't even have to say nothing half the time. When they see that pistol, they know what time it is." While men sometimes rob women, these are deviations from the norm: "Male robbers . . . clearly view the act of robbery as a masculine accomplishment in which men compete with other men for money and status." Masculinity is not accomplished by robbing women, as women "are not viewed as real players . . . [on] the streets" (pp. 48, 50).

About half of all robberies are committed in groups, and males often feel compelled to commit robberies in order to impress other males (Miethe & McKorkle 1998). As one youth recalled: "My stepbrother had gave me a .22 automatic. He told me to walk over behind [this dude] and put the gun to his head and tell him to give me all his stuff. That's what I did" (Miller 1998:47). Another noted: "Someone pushed me to take up the challenge. He told me I wasn't capable of doing armed robbery. I said give me the gun. I'm going to do it" (Gabor et al. 1987:63).

Robbery also represents an **oppositional masculinity** insofar as it provides one with "fast money," allowing one to reject legitimate work in favor of a life of leisure, which becomes the defining feature of one's identity (Messerschmidt 1997; Shover & Honaker 1992). And the conspicuous display of the fruits of this labor (e.g., fashionable clothes and jewelry, plenty of drugs and alcohol) projects an image not just of someone who possesses valued commodities but also of someone who possesses "things that may require defending" (Anderson 1994:88).

Miller (1998) notes that women and men of similar racial and class backgrounds do robbery differently. She interviewed 37 active street rob-

Crime is one way for men to assert their masculinity by demonstrating their power over others.

bers—14 women and 23 men, nearly all African American—from an underclass neighborhood in St. Louis, Missouri. She found that women most commonly robbed other women, because they were easier targets than men, and that women robbers were far less likely to use guns when robbing women. Although women-on-women robberies were most often committed with female accomplices, they were sometimes committed alone. Women rarely had male accomplices when robbing other women. Occasionally, female victims would defy the stereotype and resist the robbery. For example, one woman recalled an incident in which she and a female accomplice confronted a woman following a basketball game:

> She was walking to her car. I was, shit . . . let's get her motherfucking purse. . . . So I walked up to her and I pulled out the knife. I said "up that purse." And she looked at me. I said, "shit, do you think I'm playing?" . . . She was like "shit, you ain't getting my purse. Do what you got to do." I was like "shit, you must be thinking I'm playing." So I took the knife, stabbed her a couple of times on the shoulder, stabbed her on the arm and snatched the purse. . . . She just ran, "help, help." (p. 52)

Although women's robbery of men almost always involved guns, and often (but not always) involved male accomplices, Miller found that women

sometimes capitalized on their sexuality to catch male victims off guard. In these cases they presented themselves as sexually available to the male targets, at times even drinking and partying first, making sure to consume less alcohol and drugs than the men. Ironically, it was men's assumption that they could take advantage of women that made them vulnerable. A woman robber recounted the time she went with a man to a hotel room:

> He was . . . drunk. . . . [and] didn't have on no clothes. . . . He was like, "shit, . . . ain't you gonna get undressed?" I was like "shit, yeah, hold up" and I went in my purse and I pulled out the gun. He was like "damn, what's up with you gal?" I was like, "shit, I want your jewelry and all the money you got." He was like . . . "bitch you crazy. I ain't giving you my shit." I said, "do you think I'm playing nigger? You don't think I'll shoot your motherfucking ass?" He was like . . . "you ain't gonna shoot me." So then I . . . fired the thing but I didn't fire at him. . . . I snatched his shit . . . [and] ran out the door. (p. 56)

Miller found that some women involved in prostitution also robbed their clients in a practice known as "viccing." One woman said she preferred to rob white men, because "they be so paranoid they just want to get away. . . . [And] if you are sucking a man's dick and you pull a knife on them, they not gonna too much argue with you" (p. 55). Los Angeles gang girls interviewed by Gini Sikes (1997) had a similar modus operandi. They would stake out card clubs, racetracks, and casinos looking for men to rob. "The one thing you look for when you choose the man," said one homegirl, "is a wedding ring—a big one. You want to know that he got money and you definitely want someone who's married. Married man's not gonna press charges." One girl would get the man to invite her back to his motel room. When the lights went out, homegirl-accomplices would burst in with guns. "If a man's half-naked with three girls and a gun on him, he's gonna give it up" (p. 84).

Gender and the Drug Trade

Conventional gender arrangements continue to be apparent in the world of adult organized crime. Men in criminal organizations prefer to "work, associate, and do business with other men" (Steffensmeier 1983:1013). They do not want to take orders from women; they believe that women should take orders from men. Some researchers, however, have noted a change in women's roles in US urban drug markets, with women playing a greater role in the crack-cocaine markets of the late 1980s and early 1990s than in the heroin markets of the 1960s and 1970s (Bourgois 1989; Merlo 1995; Mieczkowski 1994). In a study of New York City, Jeffrey Fagan concluded that "the size and seemingly frantic activity of the . . . [cocaine economy] has made possible for women new ways to participate in street networks.

Their involvement in drug selling at high income levels defies the gendered norms and roles of the past, where drug dealing was an incidental income source often mediated by domestic partnerships" (1994:210).

Lisa Maher and Kathleen Daly, in their New York City ethnography of drug users between 1989 and 1992, note that the crack-cocaine business was once characterized as an "unregulated market of freelancers engaged in individual entrepreneurial activity," but that as soon as the demand for crack was established, freelancing was "superseded by a more structured system of distribution" (1996:471). Their research revealed a hierarchical distribution system of drug business owners who employed several crew bosses, lieutenants, or managers, who in turn were responsible for organizing and delivering supplies, collecting revenues, and hiring, firing, and paying lower-level street dealers and those who acted as enforcers, lookouts, runners, holders, steerers, and "touts" (persistent solicitors).

In the course of their fieldwork, Maher and Daly (1996) found evidence that women's subordinate role in the drug trade had persisted. In their interviews with over 200 women drug users, they found not one who had filled the role of business owner and only one who had worked in a managerial capacity. They also conducted more extensive interviews with a subgroup of 45 women (20 Latinas, 16 blacks, and 9 whites), all of whom were regular users of smokable cocaine or crack, and over two-thirds of whom had used heroin at one time. Over 90 percent of these women were homeless, and 80 percent were mothers, although few of their children were living with them during the three-year study period. Over 40 percent had tested positive or believed they were positive for HIV. Compared to Fagan's sample (1994), a greater proportion of these women were Latina (rather than African American), homeless, and lacking both completed high school education and legitimate work experience.

Maher and Daly found that these women most commonly performed the role of steerer or tout (42 percent). At times, some would be given jobs as street-level dealers, but this was largely to fill temporary (though recurring) labor shortages caused by police arrest of male dealers. During the study period, however, only 27 percent of the women were involved in selling or distributing drugs. Only three of them ran "shooting galleries" (places where people gathered to use drugs), and even these galleries were under the control of or operated by a man or group of men.

About a third of the women in Maher and Daly's study "copped" drugs for others, typically white men. As one said, "They'd be . . . people very important, white people like lawyer[s], doctors that come and get off, you'd be surprised" (p. 480). Male dealers liked this arrangement because it protected them from undercover police officers. But few men were attracted to this role because it was considered a low-status activity. Male customers from outside the neighborhood were more likely to trust women (particular-

ly white women) than men to purchase drugs for them. This trust, however, was often misplaced: "The combination of naive, inexperienced 'white boyz' and experienced 'street smart' women produced opportunities for additional income by, for instance, simply taking the 'cop' money" and returning to the client claiming that she had been 'ripped off'" (p. 481). Sometimes the women did not steal the money outright, but simply charged more than the drug cost. Sometimes they took some of the drug for themselves or adulterated it with cheaper ingredients.

A few of the women sold drug paraphernalia such as crack pipes, stems, or "works" (syringes). Men who sold "sealed" (new) works were more likely to have suppliers, most often contacts at local hospitals. Women were more likely to sell "used works," which they usually procured from diabetic family members or friends. Others would collect used works strewn around the neighborhood and exchange them for new ones through a needle-exchange program. Sometimes men from outside the area, reluctant to carry drug paraphernalia, would give the women a "hit" of crack in exchange for use of their stem. Women who rented their stems in this way savored the accumulated residue, which they periodically scraped out and smoked.

Maher and Daly argue that the drug market is not an "equal opportunity employer" and that prostitution remains the only consistent option open to women surviving on the streets. During the course of their research, Maher and Richard Curtis (1992) spent a day hanging out with Bay, a 26-year-old African American woman, as she "hustled" for cash and crack. Bay was having trouble getting sex work because she was seven months pregnant. As Maher and Curtis note: "Watching her panhandle change whenever she could, con a junkie out of a stolen bedspread for $1 and re-sell it for $2, get free condoms from health workers and sell them to girls on the stroll, and, finally, try for over an hour to pick up a date, we were left with the indelible impression that, in the absence of sex work, it was difficult, if not impossible, for women to 'get paid' in this neighbourhood" (p. 223).

Some studies have found that women involved in prostitution prior to crack use "tended to engage in prostitution substantially more frequently after becoming involved with crack" (Fagan 1994; Johnson et al. 1995:281). However, researchers have also observed that the spread of crack use has flooded the market with *novice* sex workers needing money for drugs. This has caused a shift in the nature of prostitution from intercourse to fellatio and from indoors to outdoors (cars, alleys, parks, vacant lots), thus deflating the going rate for sexual transactions (Maher & Curtis 1992). One woman described this shift in the situation this way: "Women who do crack . . . [will] do anything for five dollars, and it hurts the girls that are out there. . . . [A] guy will come to me and say, 'I'll give you five dollars for a blow job.' . . . Or, 'Do you accept food stamps?' or 'Can I pay you later?'" (Pettiway 1997:90). Some women have even been exchanging sex directly

for drugs. As one woman admitted: "I've exchanged sex for drugs. . . . This guy that I know, he's a dealer and he wanted some head. So he gave me an eight-ball [3.5 grams of coke] . . . and I gave him a blow job. Other times, guys done gave me like four bags, three bags, and I done gave them a blow job. . . . That's what I mainly do is give blow jobs. . . . I don't really fuck a lot" (p. 16).

The heightened competition for "dates" (customers) has intensified hostility among sex workers and increased the social isolation they experience. Candy, who has worked the streets for 17 years, says: "These girls out here are just for the drug and theirself—no friendship, everyone's out to cut everyone's throat. . . . [Before] we were friends and we'd help one another out. . . . We'd stick together, . . . do a favour, call somebody up, go get a bag of dope. . . . These people don't know how to be ho's" (Maher & Curtis 1992:233–234). As cash and drugs become harder to get, sometimes the "ho's" even "vic" (rob) each other as well as their dates. And when they "be thirsty (needing drugs), . . . they ain't got no time to judge" the character of a date and increasingly end up with "rougher and nastier" men who vic them or beat them up (pp. 240, 243). Hence the streets have become more violent places to work. Clearly, Maher and Curtis conclude, "the advent of crack cocaine can in no way be seen as 'emancipatory' for women drug users" (p. 249).

Nevertheless, Maher and Daly (1996) do think there are racial/ethnic differences in the gender stratification of drug markets, with Latinas playing more marginal roles than African American women. Recall that Fagan's sample (1994), consisting of more African American women, uncovered more highly placed female drug dealers. Other studies show that Latinas are less likely than their African American counterparts to be involved in dealing, particularly in ways that allow them independence from men (Lauderback et al. 1992; Moore & Mata 1981; Taylor 1993). It appears that women who deviate from conventional gender norms are less tolerated among Latinos than among African Americans.

Women in Prostitution

Prostitution, which is illegal in most parts of the United States, can be defined as the provision of "nonmarital sexual services for material gain" (Goldstein 1979:33). As noted previously, it is part of the broader phenomenon of sex work, which includes both illegal and legal activities. The concept of sex work is useful in that it helps us to recognize certain commonalities in the experiences of different kinds of sex workers. Here we focus on females who provide sexual services to male customers, although service providers as well as customers can be female or male.

Women become involved in prostitution for a variety of reasons. Some are escaping unsavory domestic environments and get caught up in a strug-

gle for survival on the streets. Some are from backgrounds that afforded them few legitimate opportunities. Some are drawn to the adventure and lure of what they think will be "easy money." A few simply "enjoy sex and have no qualms about enjoying sex as work" (Alexander 1987:16). Some women prostitute occasionally or sporadically, some consistently for short periods, some for many years (Potterat et al. 1990). But some are cajoled, deceived, and even physically coerced by pimps and other sex traffickers who keep them mired in what amounts to a life of sexual slavery (Barry 1979, 1995).

In Leon Pettiway's study (1997) of drug-addicted, inner-city hustlers, he describes the lives of women who prostitute, sell drugs, shoplift, and perform various kinds of theft and fraud. Some of these women had left home to escape abusive and cruel treatment. For others "the seduction of the fast life, inducements from friends, and environments ridden with drugs and crime were in large measure responsible for their entry into the world" of street hustling (pp. xxvii–xxviii). Margaret, who started turning tricks "for survival," said that prostitution wasn't foreign to her before she got into it (p. 15):

> I knew my sisters was doing it. . . . Men always was hitting on me and it just came natural. . . . Wasn't nothing that . . . a woman don't already know. Except for when you call yourself a professional. Then you have to learn how to suck . . . real good and stuff like that. How to make them hurry up and reach a climax. . . . How to encourage them . . . [with] all that . . . talking. . . . "Fuck me" or . . . "All this big dick." . . . I never did like that. Moaning and groaning and all. . . . I picked up these rules by just being around. . . . I learnt . . . how to put the rubber on without them knowing, how to go in their pocket [for their money] without them feeling. (pp. 10, 16, 40–41)

For Margaret and others like her, prostitution is not really about pleasing customers but about acquiring money and drugs. Another one of Pettiway's subjects, Charlie (Charlene), told him that there's no sexual attraction when she is tricking; it's "purely business." She lights a cigarette and tells the customer, "When the cigarette is burnt down, your time's up. If you want more time, that's more money. If you want to touch me, that's even more money" (p. 81). And Margaret, recognizing the drop in the going rate for oral sex, is equally blunt: "When I turn tricks . . . I'm gonna give you two or three minutes and if you can't get it in that . . . time, sorry. . . . Before, I was aiming to please . . . 'cause the money was [better]. But now . . . it don't make me no difference whether they come or not. . . . I ain't making love" (p. 44).

For Tracy, turning tricks in the projects where she was living seemed easier and safer than going downtown to shoplift. However, she did not believe that one could "earn an honest living and do drugs too" (p. 192). Likewise, Charlie said: "I wish I hadn't prostituted. . . . It's degrading. . . .

It's something I don't want to do, but it's something that my addictions make me do" (p. 95). Drug-addicted women who prostitute have a more difficult time than nonaddicted women maintaining their own standards about whom they will or will not service. If a guy "don't want to use no rubber," Margaret lamented, "it be hard . . . to walk away [when he's] got ten . . . or five dollars in his pocket. . . . You want that money so bad" (p. 18).

Women, in addition to working the streets, often work in massage parlors and brothels as well as in bars and hotels. Those who prostitute in bars often double as waitresses, barmaids, or strippers. **Call girls**, considered the elite of the business, work for hotels or escort services or out of their own homes or apartments, servicing for the most part a higher class of clientele. According to Debra Satz (1995), call girls can earn as much as $100,000 a year. This, the most lucrative type of prostitution, allows women "an unusual degree of independence, far greater than most other forms of work," and greater control over when and with whom they have sex (p. 68). Call girls are often paid not just for sexual services but for companionship as well. They may be taken to dinner, to the theater, even on trips. Sunny Carter (1987) worked for five years as a call girl to pay medical expenses and provide the best life she could for a gravely ill son given only a few years to live. She screened her clients, refused to deal with men who held her in low regard, and met many clients whose company she enjoyed and who enriched her life and pocketbook. "Peggy Morgan" (1987) uses a pseudonym when she describes her work as a stripper who also hustles drinks in the bar and gives men hand jobs for "tips" between dance sets. The customers Morgan serves "run the gamut":

> The best of them come in . . . knowing what they want—to get off—and what we want—money—and can pull the transaction off smoothly, making pleasant conversation and treating us with respect. . . . They get a willing ear to listen to them, or in the case of hand jobs, a witness to the potency of their pricks, a reassurance that they are still powerful, real men. But the macho, insecure types need more. . . . Not only do we have to work at getting them off and making them feel good, but we have to put up with their clumsy, grubby hands pawing our bodies—*and* pretend to enjoy it. It's not that these customers really want to please a woman. . . . [They see her as] . . . someone beneath them [and] . . . want to feel power over [her]. (p. 22)

Although Morgan had to get accustomed to giving hand jobs (she threw up the first time) and does not like being fondled, neither does she feel as though she is being violated, because "it's not sexual, it's *work*" (p. 25). When she compares it to her alternatives—minimum-wage jobs or assembly-line drudgery—"putting up with the groping hands of a few drunk men looks pretty good" (p. 24). Besides, Morgan has experienced condescension and sexual harassment on "square jobs." At least here she makes a livable wage. As she says: "Nobody . . . enjoys being pawed, poked, [and] prodded

. . . by men we wouldn't [normally] give the time of day. . . . [But] the bottom line in this business is money" (pp. 24–25).

Like the place Morgan works, most strip clubs are darker and dingier than the high-end ones featured in popular movies. These clubs have sticky floors and crowds that place "crude demands" on the workers. A woman unwilling to provide "hands-on treatment" will not earn much money. Lap dances and "private" performances can earn her much more, but if she just wants to do stage dancing, the stage fee *she* pays the owner and the tips *she* is expected to leave for deejays, bartenders, and managers can leave her in debt for the evening. Moreover, as the off-stage dancing has become less stigmatized, men increasingly want, as one sex worker observed, "more body, more tongue, more tit, and especially more pussy" (Frey 2002:28). Clearly the line between prostitution and other kinds of sex work is blurring.

Kathleen Barry (1995) notes that women employ a variety of protective strategies in order to cope, to distance and disengage themselves from sex work. For example, they often adopt a new name and don't tell their family and friends what they are doing; they might even cut off contact altogether. They might avoid making friendships with coworkers and tell themselves they are superior to their customers, whom one sex worker described as "poor jerks" (Helfand 1987:100).

Sex workers also try to switch off their feelings, to dissociate themselves from the act of prostitution. As Judy Edelstein, who works in a massage parlor providing sexual services as well as massages, explained, "When they touch my breasts, I tell myself they're not really touching me" (1987:63). And when Charlie was repulsed at the thought of turning her first trick, a friend told her to just "get high" before she went out (Pettiway 1997). In addition, women try to establish limits for their customers, "limits to the ways their bodies, their very selves, can be used" (Barry 1995:32). They may refuse to use their own bed, kiss, or have sexual intercourse, for instance. They may insist on condoms, not just to protect themselves from disease, but also to construct a barrier that demarcates the self. But how does one wall off the self, keep the barriers in place? Elisabeth Eaves (2002) thinks that, for some sex workers, "honest decisions about boundaries and sexuality were impossible because they . . . both [became] subservient to cash" (quoted in Frey 2002:30). Edelstein tried to forget about her work when she went home, but the images intruded—images of guys' hands all over her, strangers sucking on her breasts. "Sometimes I wonder," she said, "how I can let the men do that. I wonder what there is left for me" (1987:63). She couldn't even make love with her partner without visualizing a customer's face.

What makes matters worse is that even while a prostitute is trying to disengage, customers expect her to act as if she *is* engaged, emotionally and sexually. Recall Margaret, who resented having to "moan and groan," having to pretend to be excited. Being engaged may require pretending to make

love to the customer or pretending to get into his fantasy, no matter how bizarre or degrading. But if trying to disengage while simultaneously putting on an act becomes routine, how does a woman prevent her self-protective response from spilling over into her *real* love life? At times she cannot disengage *enough* to protect her sense of self during the prostitution sex. At times she can't *stop* disengaging or performing when she wants to, when she is with her real partner. Her sense of feeling anchored or grounded is disrupted. Thus Barry (1995) believes that prostitution is an assault on the self: "Sex is an integral dimension of the human being. . . . When it is treated as a thing to be taken, the [self] is rendered into a thing, an objectification" (pp. 33–34). Human dignity is undermined; the self is violated.

Barry's portrait of prostitution and its adverse impact on women is compassionate, but her analysis has caused some sex workers to bristle. As Debi Sundahl, who works as a stripper, remarks: "Like many oppressed minorities, we [sex workers] have suffered under the assumption that we must be protected from ourselves. We know better than anyone what is . . . and what is not healthy about our work" (1987:179–180). For Debi, it is the struggle to resist internalizing society's negative stereotypes of sex workers that is so stressful and disheartening. And Judy Helfand, a topless dancer who by her own account "chose to pursue the highest paying, least demanding job" she knew of, asserts: "It makes me angry when [some] feminists lump all sex . . . workers into a pile of poor, exploited . . . victims without minds of their own. . . . Having a presence and physical body which men found sexually attractive was important to my self-esteem. Having men pay to get turned on by me was an affirmation of my sexual power." Helfand does admit, however, that "what I never saw was that in basing my sense of worth on men's desire, I was far from developing a true sense of worth based on self love" (1987:101).

Than-Dam Truong (1990) believes that "sexual labor," as she calls it, should be destigmatized and considered comparable to other kinds of bodily labor. She notes that in different historical and social contexts, sexual labor has taken a number of forms (e.g., wet nursing, sperm donation, surrogate childbearing, commercial sex) in pursuit of the sustenance of life, procreation, and bodily pleasure. Similarly, Lillian Robinson (1996) suggests that the now common, neutral term "sex work" has made it easier to talk about prostitution, stripping, and the like without moralizing. Being a prostitute or a porn film actress, for example, can now "stand in opposition not to being a 'good girl,' but rather to being a chambermaid [or] grocery bagger," with the focus centering on issues such as working conditions and wages. Nevertheless, Robinson says, "It's a far cry from acknowledging that sex work is often the only work or the best work a woman can get to concluding that it is not a form of exploitation" (p. 184).

Although prostitution is sometimes portrayed as a victimless crime,

prostitutes are often victimized themselves. Research indicates that a large majority are physically and sexually assaulted by customers and forced into sexual acts not agreed to. A large majority also report being beaten regularly by their pimps, who often "discipline" them for not bringing home enough money, for not obeying them, for trying to leave, or to just let them know who is boss. Unfortunately, prostitutes who are abused, whether by pimps, customers, or even police, find it virtually impossible to get help, because they typically lack the resources to do so and because they are vulnerable to arrest (Barry 1995; Council for Prostitution Alternatives 1994; Miller et al. 1993; Silbert 1982).

Bernard Cohen (1980) distinguishes between a **pimp** and a "**man**." Both live off the earnings of a prostitute, but a prostitute works *for* a pimp and *with* a man. The "man" is usually a husband or lover who watches over and protects "his woman" and supervises her work. The "pimp" is an agent or companion of several women. He tends to act more as a general manager of the women, since he is not generally on the scene. In her Milwaukee study, Eleanor Miller (1986) found a continuum of managerial types rather than a clear-cut man-pimp dichotomy, with most men falling in the intermediate range:

Women in prostitution are often beaten by their customers and pimps.

> [Yet] women . . . rarely referred to a current manager as "my pimp." He was always . . . "my man." For the female at least, the personal side of the relationship far outweighed the business side in importance. . . . In fact, one of the most common reasons for a "woman" to leave a "man" was when some occurrence made it obvious that the relationship, from his point of view, was entirely for business purposes. On such occasions, women would say, "He wasn't nothin' but a pimp." (p. 39)

Barry (1995) describes how pimps looking to recruit a girl or woman target those who appear lonely, naive, or rebellious. If they are fleeing abusive homes or marriages, chances are they have little money and few job skills: "Suddenly he appears, he is friendly, . . . offers to buy her a meal, and . . . gives her a place to spend the night. She hears compliments for the first time in ages, as well as promises that he will buy her new clothes, . . . have her hair done, . . . make [her his] 'foxy lady'" (pp. 204–205). If she seems to be the daring and rebellious type, the pimp may come right out and offer her a proposal. He tells her that he is a "businessman" and they could be "partners," that she'll be his "woman." He'll give her "some schooling" and her pockets will be "filled with money." If she seems scared or prudish, he will make "his play for her as a lover," make her feel important, establish a sexual relationship. Then he'll insist that she prove her love for him by prostituting herself. He tells her they need money and "if you love me, you'll do anything for me" (p. 206). If that doesn't work, he'll demonstrate his power and reduce her defenses with a beating or sexual assault. This is what she'll get if she doesn't do what he tells her to.

Once a woman has started tricking, pimps often undermine her self-esteem through verbal abuse: "You're nothing but a goddamn whore, . . . you're worthless, . . . you're trash" (pp. 200, 207). Melinda, a former prostitute who eventually got free of her pimp, said that through verbal abuse and beatings her pimp put so much fear in her that she was "afraid to leave him. Yet by that time I was so much in love with him it really didn't matter. . . . When he put his arms around me . . . , when he told me he loved me I believed everything would work out all right" (p. 200).

Unfortunately, law enforcement does not help women escape from prostitution. Rather, as Eleanor Miller and colleagues observe, law enforcement tends "to strain, if not sever, [the woman's] social connection to her children and the other kin who might be militating against a life of prostitution, and to heighten her feelings of low self-esteem, depression, and hopelessness" (1993:314). Moreover, if she is "dependent on alcohol or other drugs and is not incarcerated for any length of time (which is usually the case), her arrest and the possible . . . consequences (e.g., loss of custody . . .) may motivate her to retreat even further into alcohol and drug use and to 'turn tricks'" to support her habit. Arrest may also strengthen the

woman's dependence on her pimp, as he may be the only one available to make arrangements for childcare, bail, or legal representation.

Because penalizing prostitutes represents a costly and ineffective revolving-door approach that ostracizes women and makes it unlikely they will voluntarily seek rehabilitation or report the abusiveness of pimps, some have argued for the decriminalization or legalization of prostitution. COYOTE (Call Off Your Old Tired Ethics), an organization that advocates on behalf of prostitutes, believes that prostitution is legitimate service work and that all aspects of *voluntary adult prostitution*—"including relationships between prostitutes and third-party managers"—should therefore be legal (1987:290). Nickie Roberts also favors the elimination of laws against prostitution, because criminalization turns "the government into the . . . biggest pimp through fines . . . women have to go out and earn." Criminalization also institutionalizes and reinforces "the whore stigma, which encourages rape and violence against prostitutes and . . . other women thought to behave like hustlers, . . . [and makes] it illegal for women to work together for safety's sake (two or more women constitute a brothel), effectively forcing women into the streets, where they must work alone and at great personal risk" (1994:44–45).

Others favor a legalization approach similar to the one already in place in many counties in Nevada as well as in some cities and countries around the world. Here, government regulations attempt to confine and control prostitution by mandating the number, size, and location of brothels permitted as well as the number of hours they can operate and the number of prostitutes they can employ. Prostitutes in Nevada brothels must have weekly medical exams and are usually fingerprinted and required to carry identification cards. Customers and brothel owners clearly benefit from this type of system, as do the city, county, and state governments that profit from the taxes levied and the licensing fees collected. Moreover, pimps are not eliminated but are provided with legal cover, and children are less protected from adult exploitation and the distorted sense of self that results from a culture that treats women as sex objects (Davis 1993; Miller et al. 1993).

Another approach would decriminalize prostitution for both prostitutes and customers, but "prohibit pimping, procuring, and trafficking . . . [as well as] third-party involvement in brothels and prostitution hotels" (Barry 1995:236). Proponents of this strategy favor vigorous efforts to prosecute pimps who force females into prostitution or prevent them from leaving it. At the same time, this approach would prevent governments from legitimizing prostitution by regulating it (Miller et al. 1993).

Barry (1995) prefers an approach that would decriminalize prostitution for prostitutes but maintain its illegality for customers, pimps, and procurers. She argues that, as long as the law allows men to buy women's bodies, prostitution will not be eliminated; and that, because prostitution is harmful

for women, the law should be aimed at its elimination, without simultaneously turning prostitutes into criminals. Barry believes that most women would leave prostitution if they could, and what would enable them to do so is a comprehensive program of social services coupled with law enforcement against those who profit from the sale of women's bodies. Ideally such a program would include economic aid, job retraining, housing and employment assistance, counseling, medical assistance, and support and protection for leaving pimps.

While efforts to help women leave prostitution are important, Leah Platt (2001) believes that the so-called oldest profession will probably always exist and that public policy should focus on reducing the exploitative conditions under which prostitutes work. The "often mundane reality of illicit prostitution," Platt argues, is that it is "a job without overtime pay, health insurance, or sick leave—and usually without the recourse against the abuses of one's employer, which can include being required to have sex without a condom and being forced to turn tricks . . . to work off crushing debts" to sex traffickers (see Further Exploration, p. 352). These conditions should not be accepted as "hazards of the trade" or circumstances that women "bring upon themselves." Platt's approach "supports a woman's right to control over her own body, as well as a prostitute's volition as an economic actor, without valorizing sex work as . . . liberating" (pp. 11–12).

Women as "Fetal Abusers"

The image of a tiny African American baby lying "in a hospital incubator, some dozen tubes protruding from his nostrils, head, and limbs," is blazoned across the billboard. "'He couldn't take the hit,' the accompanying caption warns. 'If you're pregnant, don't take drugs'" (Gomez 1997:1). In the latter half of the 1980s, heart-wrenching pictures of pitiful drug-exposed infants began to peer out at us from magazines, television screens, and billboards, beseeching us to "just say no" to drugs. The media coined the phrase "crack mothers" to refer to women who used crack or cocaine during pregnancy, presumably dooming their offspring, their "crack babies," to a lifetime of suffering and inferiority. While these claims, it turns out, were not necessarily substantiated by scientific research (Lutiger et al. 1991), the media's images of crack mothers were suffused with "the hyperbole associated with crack, addiction, race and its ties to the underclass, inner-city poverty, and welfare" (Humphries 1998:57). Demonized by the media, crack mothers became "threatening symbols of everything that was wrong with America" (p. 45).

In response, a wave of legislators, health professionals, social workers, police, reporters, and religious leaders "rushed forward to 'do something' to stem the tide" of drug-exposed babies (Gomez 1997:4). Fourteen separate hearings were held by eight different congressional committees between

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Prostitution in International Context

All over the world, females' entrance into prostitution is marked by deceit, coercion, and the pressures of "dire economic circumstances that make true consent impossible" (Monto 1998:507). In poverty-stricken rural areas of underdeveloped countries, some girls are even sold into prostitution by their parents or tricked into leaving their families with false promises of employment or marriage. Some are then recruited or coerced into serving specialized markets for soldiers, sailors, businessmen, or immigrant laborers. In times of war, rape survivors, who are often considered disgraced by their families and communities, are especially vulnerable to networks of pimps and criminal organizations, as are refugees and other socially displaced females (Barry 1979, 1995).

Moreover, fraudulent employment agencies and dance companies now advertise for what appear to be exciting jobs overseas. Vulnerable women who respond to these solicitations often find that when they arrive at their destination, the anticipated jobs are not available and they have to pay the organization for expenses incurred. The work they are offered to help them out of "debt" sometimes includes jobs in bars with duties that they soon learn "extend far beyond being a hostess and serving drinks" (Barry 1979:90). Some of the women who answer these ads know they will be engaging in sex work but do not anticipate the slavery-like conditions in which they eventually find themselves. Mail-order-bride businesses also engage in a disguised form of sex trafficking, as would-be brides who do not meet with customers' satisfaction are turned over to prostitution. And in some cases, women and girls are outright kidnapped, beaten, involuntarily addicted to drugs, and forced into prostitution against their will (Barry 1995; US Department of State 2006).

In recent years, global economic development has been accompanied by what Kathleen Barry calls the "industrialization" and "global diffusion of prostitution," as prostitution, pornography, and other sex services are growing commodities in a number of countries (1995:52). **Sex tourism**—the traveling to a foreign country for the expressed purpose of engaging in sexual activity (including sex with children)—has become all too common, even "an official, planned source of national income" (Kirschenbaum 1991:13; Oppermann 1999; Wonders & Michalowski 2001). One sex tourism website, the Sly Traveler, advertises its offerings this way: "Welcome to . . . the world's sexiest travel guide. . . . Are you curious to learn more about the selection of red light districts, . . . massage parlors, escorts, brothels, live sex shows . . . and other top sex attractions? . . . You are just a click away from discovering the naughty secrets of Amsterdam, Bangkok, Rio de Janeiro, Hong Kong . . . and other destinations of sex tourism" (www.sex.tourism).

1987 and 1991 alone to confront the problem of prenatal drug exposure. Some public hospitals initiated policies of universal drug testing for women giving birth; some began testing newborns. The Medical University of South Carolina went so far as to test some pregnant women without their

consent and then turned those who tested positive over to police for criminal prosecution, a practice that was later overturned as unconstitutional by the US Supreme Court in 2001 (Asseo 2001; Harris & Paltrow 2003).

Due to the concern about "crack babies," women's custody rights have been curbed and terminated throughout the country (Farr 1995; Gomez 1997). When prenatal drug exposure is suspected, social workers have removed infants from the custody of their mothers, creating a population of "boarder babies" left to languish in hospitals for up to six months awaiting foster-home placements. In some cases, "a single blood test on a pregnant woman or a newborn . . . [has been] sufficient to label [the] woman a drug abuser," even though frequency of drug use or substantive information about a mother's circumstance or a child's impairment cannot be determined by one test alone (Hubbard 1995:134). Pregnant women who use alcohol have also come under fire, and some have been "placed under court orders not to drink" (Pollitt 1998:279).

Additionally, pregnant women who use illegal drugs have been criminally prosecuted for delivering a controlled substance to a child (via the umbilical cord) and for child abuse, neglect, or endangerment (Farr 1995). An Illinois woman was even charged with involuntary manslaughter when her newborn daughter, who was found to have cocaine in her urine, died two days after birth. Prosecutions of pregnant drug users for fetal harm, however, have had difficulty passing the scrutiny of appellate courts, which have ruled that women cannot be prosecuted for fetal harm in "the absence of laws specifically identifying such behavior as a crime" (Farr 1995:236). Additionally, some courts have ruled that laws intended to protect *children* from abuse, neglect, or endangerment are inapplicable when fetal harm is alleged if state laws do not explicitly recognize the personhood of a fetus (Sink 1998). In South Carolina, however, the state that has gone the furthest to enforce "fetal rights," the state supreme court has ruled that a "viable fetus"—that is, a fetus that is able to survive outside of the womb—is a "child" under the law, and that a drug-using pregnant woman can be criminally prosecuted and, if convicted, incarcerated for up to 10 years in prison. In Minnesota, South Dakota, and Wisconsin, pregnant women who abuse drugs or alcohol are not criminally prosecuted, but they may be civilly committed (against their will) to hospitals or drug treatment centers in order to protect fetuses from further drug exposure (Beiser 2000; Harris & Paltrow 2003; Steinkraus 2005).

Legal efforts to define drug and alcohol use during pregnancy as "fetal abuse" have been controversial, and public opinion has been divided over this issue. Some argue that since the government has a legal obligation to protect children from parents who abuse, neglect, or endanger them, it should have a similar obligation to protect fetuses even if parents object. After all, drug-exposed infants may suffer from impaired physical or mental abilities. They may require special treatment or hospitalization or

become wards of the state, costing healthcare facilities and taxpayers huge sums of money.

On the other hand, others argue that criminalization of a mother's behavior during pregnancy is not the best means to this important end of protecting future generations. The threat of arrest, prosecution, and incarceration deters pregnant women from seeking prenatal care, which is especially important because drug-addicted women who receive prenatal care have healthier pregnancies than those who do not receive such care. In addition, forcing women to withdraw from drugs risks severe shock to their bodies and can be even more harmful to the fetus than continued drug use. Moreover, drugs such as methadone, which are often given to treat drug addiction, are equally if not more harmful to the fetus than the illegal drug. And it is heavy alcohol use, not illegal drug use, that causes the most harm to fetuses (Farr 1995; Pollitt 1998; Weitz 1996).

Katha Pollitt (1998) thinks that many women continue using drugs during pregnancy because they are unable to gain access to treatment programs due to long waiting periods or restrictions that prevent enrollment during pregnancy. Entering a treatment program often means leaving one's other children uncared for or turning them over to relatives, friends, or foster care. The potential risks associated with these options are unacceptable to some mothers and seem greater than the risks associated with fetal exposure to drugs. The possible, perhaps likely, stigmatization of one's children is another issue mothers consider.

Women who use illegal drugs during pregnancy—especially those likely to be tested for drugs or identified as addicts—are also likely to suffer from a host of other problems, and it is difficult to sort out the effects of these problems from the effects of prenatal drug exposure. These women have more nutritional deficiencies and poverty-related health concerns, receive less prenatal care, "bear and rear their kids in conditions of more profound deprivation, and are more persistently exposed to violence than other women" (Greider 1995:54–55). Attributing negative outcomes to children of drug-using mothers based solely or primarily on prenatal drug exposure ignores the impact of these many factors.

Clearly some mothers (some drug-using, some not) will be found to be unfit parents. However, Pollitt believes that a determination of unfitness should be made on the basis of a careful evaluation of the totality of circumstances and not "on the presumption that even a single use of drugs during pregnancy renders a mother ipso facto . . . unfit." She notes that concern about crack babies has *not* developed as part of a comprehensive national campaign "to help women have wanted, healthy pregnancies and healthy babies." Judges send "pregnant addicts to jail, but they don't order drug treatment programs to accept them, or [order] Medicaid, which pays for heroin treatment, to cover crack addiction—let alone order . . . obstetricians

to take uninsured women as patients, or the federal government to fund fully the Women, Infants, and Children supplemental feeding program" (1998:279–280). Ruth Hubbard adds that if the government wants to protect developing fetuses, the best "way to do that is to make it possible for pregnant women—and women in general—to have access to proper housing, food, jobs, a decent living environment, and good prenatal care" (1995:133). And we cannot just assume that a better home can be found for these children. People willing and able to adopt drug-exposed infants are in short supply. One study of boarder babies in New York City hospitals, for instance, found that most were eventually sent home to their birth families. And of those who remained wards of the state, nearly a third "still didn't have a permanent home by the time they were three years old" (Greider 1995:56).

Women Who Kill

According to criminological research, men's and women's patterns of homicide differ. To begin with, males are more likely than females to both murder and be murdered. Males constitute about 90 percent of those arrested for murder and nearly 80 percent of murder victims. Most male-perpetrated homicides are *intragender,* committed against other males, while most female-perpetrated homicides are *intergender.* Thus both sexes are more likely to kill males than females, although males murder about twice as many females as females murder males (Benekos 1995).

A higher proportion of the homicides committed by women involves the murder of family members and intimate partners (Browne 1997; Browne & Williams 1993). For example, mothers are more likely than fathers to be the perpetrators of **filicide**, the killing of one's children. Researchers attribute this to the mother's traditional role as the primary caregiver and to the greater burdens children impose on the mother than on the father (Benekos 1995; Gelles 1987; Ogle et al. 1995). Single mothers, in particular, often feel socially isolated and experience severe financial strains. In one study, single women who had delivered only 12 percent of the babies in the sample were responsible for over half of the maternal filicides (Daly & Wilson 1988). In another study, states with proportionately more female-headed single-parent families and higher levels of gender inequality were found to have higher filicide rates for children under five years of age (Baron 1993).

After the US Supreme Court's 1972 decision in *Roe v. Wade* that legalized abortion in the United States, **neonaticide**, the killing of newborns within hours of birth, declined (Lester 1992). Accurate data on neonaticide are hard to come by, however, since it is likely that many discarded neonates are never discovered (Crittenden & Craig 1990). Most neonaticides are committed by women who are young and single and in complete denial of their pregnancies. They think: Maybe I'm just getting fat. Maybe

my period is late. Maybe I'll miscarry or my boyfriend will come back. Maybe he'll want us to get married. This state of denial was made painfully clear in 1996 when the dead newborn son of upper-middle-class college students Amy Grossberg and Brian Peterson was found discarded in a Dumpster. Grossberg had contemplated abortion, but like so many other young women, she "took her time—she wasn't sure, couldn't decide, was too ashamed, thought it would go away" (Hoffman 1997:5). According to Phillip Resnick, who coined the term "neonaticide," such a desperate denial of pregnancy mentally protects the woman from bonding with the fetus. The fetus isn't a baby to her; it's "a foreign body, . . . an object to get rid of" (cited in Hoffman 1997:4). When the woman finds herself giving birth in some motel or restroom, squatting over a toilet or in a tub, the baby's cries shatter her defenses and a frantic effort to conceal the evidence follows.

Maternal killing of infants is sometimes chalked up to postpartum depression or hormonal imbalances (see Chapter 3). But according to physician Donna Stewart, women who commit such acts "run a wide spectrum, from those in denial, who were concealing their pregnancy and . . . its consequence, to highly impulsive women who, in a fit of rage, shake their baby to death, to manic-depressive women, to those who are suffering from classical depression who wind up killing their babies and themselves" (cited in Pearson 1997:79; Robinson & Stewart 1986). Patricia Pearson (1997) believes that **exhaustion psychosis** due to sleep deprivation is one of the most likely causes of filicide. Exhaustion psychosis is a condition that can affect anyone who goes without sleep for lengthy periods of time. The state of extreme fatigue can leave one highly emotional, edgy, disoriented, even delusional. As Pearson observes, "When sleep deprivation combines with the constant demands of a baby, a lack of support, and insecurity or resentment about parenting, a normally well-balanced person can come perilously close to violence" (p. 81). And it is not only biological mothers who sometimes feel they are losing their grip on reality. Fathers and adoptive mothers experience postpartum exhaustion psychosis as well.

It also is worth noting that pregnancy and transition to motherhood can be stressful for *all* women as they come to terms with changes in body image, their responsibilities and relationships with their partners and parents, as well society's perception of their role as mothers. The **myth of motherhood**, the idealized view that mothers are always content and that children are "nothing but joy" inevitably comes head to head with reality. Most mothers are taken aback by "the hard, selfless, exhausting and isolating work involved in looking after a child" (Morris & Wilczynski 1994:209). Moreover, the traditional assumption that mothers instinctively know how to care for children can lead to a sense of failure when mothers experience difficulty doing what is supposed to come naturally. Jealousy, fear of losing one's identity, and even hostility toward the new baby are common in the course of adjustment (Oakley 1986; Robinson & Stewart 1986).

An analysis of data on 474 filicides in Great Britain from 1982 to 1989 led Allison Morris and Ania Wilczynski to conclude that "the unpalatable truth [is] that 'normal' women can kill their children when they are confronted by social and economic circumstances which are severe enough." They warn that the widespread tendency to define maternal "filicide as pathological diverts attention from the social conditions which are conducive to its occurrence: poverty, inordinate childcare responsibilities, social isolation, lack of support, the myths surrounding motherhood and cultural standards of 'good' (i.e., perfect) mothers" (1994:215).

Nevertheless, when women kill, the person they are most likely to kill is not a child but an intimate partner: a spouse, cohabitant, or lover. In Coramae Richey Mann's six-city study (1996), for instance, "domestic relationship" homicides constituted nearly 50 percent of the female-perpetrated homicides, while filicides constituted just over 10 percent. Overall, women perpetrate nearly 40 percent of all partner homicides but less than 10 percent of nonpartner incidents (Browne 1997; Browne & Williams 1989).

While male partners are more likely to kill females after long periods of *inflicting* physical, sexual, and emotional abuse, female partners are more likely to kill males after *enduring* long periods of such abuse and after exhausting other alternatives that might extricate them from the relationship (Browne 1987; Dobash et al. 1992). Thus one study found that states that had fewer resources for battered women (e.g., shelters and other services) had higher rates of female-perpetrated homicides against male partners compared to states that had more resources (Browne & Williams 1989). And contrary to "the common assumption that women kill partners while they are sleeping or otherwise incapacitated," most of these domestic homicides occurred *during* an assault perpetrated by the man when the woman believed that she or her child might be seriously harmed or killed (Browne 1997:64; Jurik & Winn 1990; Maguigan 1991).

Angela Browne (1987) compared two groups of women who had both been involved in abusive domestic relationships: one group consisted of women who had murdered their partners and one group consisted of women who had not. She found that the women who killed their partners had been assaulted more often and had sustained more frequent and more severe injuries. These women also had been forced to endure more rape and other forced sexual activities. In addition, the men they killed were more likely to have abused alcohol or drugs and to have threatened to kill them.

Russell Dobash and colleagues (1992) observe that men and women who murder their partners tend not to have similar motives and intentions. Whereas women are much more likely to kill their partner in self-defense, men are more likely to kill in response to their partner's infidelity, to hunt down and kill a partner who has left them, to kill a partner as part of a planned murder-suicide, and to stage a **familicidal massacre**, killing the children as well as the partner.

Although women who kill are also less likely than their male counterparts to have a prior record of offending, Mann (1996) found that over half of the women in her study had prior arrest records and that more than a third had prior arrests for violent crimes (see also Faith 1993; Maguigan 1991). Even among those who killed domestic partners, 30 percent had a prior arrest for violent crime. Mann notes that these findings run counter to the image of women as passive victims of domestic violence. The women in her study, however, were most likely to be unemployed African American mothers with less than a high school education. According to Robin Ogle and colleagues, chronic stress experienced by the underclass can lead to "unfocused explosions of angry aggression" against the most visible targets in one's social milieu (1995:175). And as we noted previously, females with these backgrounds often defy gender stereotypes. Growing up in communities where so many women head households and so many experience abuse from the men in their lives, girls learn that there is "no feminine currency in being frail" (Pearson 1997:28). In Mann's sample, in fact, nearly 60 percent of women who killed domestic partners defined their motive as self-defense.

When it comes to serial murderers, most people think of male offenders such as Jack the Ripper, Ted Bundy, or Jeffrey Dahmer. In Eric Hickey's study (1991) of over 200 serial murderers (those who killed at least three people over a period of time), less than a fifth were women. Nevertheless, gender differences in serial murder occur more in modus operandi than in motive—that is, more in the *how* than in the *why* of the crimes (Pearson 1997). Serial murders by women rarely involve sexual assault, and they tend to be less visibly violent. On the other hand, the motive of both males and females for serial murder is similar: "a need for a sense of self as actor; a need for power that has generally arisen out of a formative history in which the individual as a child experienced him- or herself as powerless" (Skrapec 1994:244). Such experiences can "lead to a simmering yet pervasive rage" that, if left unresolved, can erupt into violence. Men predominate as serial killers because they are more likely to express their rage outwardly. Outward expression of rage has traditionally been less socially acceptable for women, who tend to turn their anger inward and become depressed or self-destructive.

Female serial murderers have often been stereotyped as "black widows" who kill a series of husbands, children, or other relatives, or as "angels of death" who kill patients in their care (Skrapec 1994). Although there are proportionately more "black widows" among female serial murderers than "black widowers" among male serial murderers, women's crimes are more diverse than these stereotypes suggest. Belea Keeney and Kathleen Heide (1994) studied 14 female serial murderers known to have killed a total of 62 people (and suspected to have killed at least 88). Most of their victims were relatives, and 20 percent were acquaintances or strangers.

Forty-three percent of the victims were in the offender's custodial care, and 57 percent were poisoned, 29 percent smothered, and 11 percent shot. Half of the murderers had "affective goals" (i.e., their motivation was exclusively interior or emotional) and half had "instrumental goals" (i.e., they killed for monetary or other gain).

Male serial killers are often given sinister nicknames such as *Jack the Ripper, The Night Stalker,* or *The Boston Strangler,* while their female counterparts are dubbed *Old Shoe Box Annie, Giggling Grandma, Beautiful Blonde Killer,* and the like, nicknames that tend to make light of their crimes in comical, patronizing, or sexually suggestive ways (Fox & Levin 1993; Hickey 1991). The names for the females dovetail with cultural stereotypes about women as the "gentle sex," sparking amusement or curiosity about female murderers rather than apprehension or dread. Women also tend to be "place-specific killers . . . [who] don't prowl," often confining their action to one home, one boardinghouse, or one hospital, selecting victims who enter their "comfort zone" by design or chance (Pearson 1997:153; Rossmo 1994). Because they are usually "trappers" and not "stalkers," female serial killers don't arouse the anxiety we feel about the shadowy unknown. Nicknames like *Giggling Grandma* mask the horror of being preyed upon by people you know, trust, perhaps even love. And it is not just suffering or terminally ill patients who are killed by "angels of death," but also infants and adults who are "in little immediate health risk or discomfort" (Skrapec 1994:253).

To be sure, females represent only a small proportion of known serial murderers, who in turn represent only a small proportion of murderers in general. However, Candice Skrapec believes that society has been too complacent about female killers and that many homicides "remain unsolved, without viable suspects, because the offender was falsely assumed to be male" (1994:265). In Hickey's study (1991), the female murderers went undiscovered for longer periods of time and ended up averaging a larger number of victims than their male counterparts. Deaths that eventually get attributed to females often don't initially trigger suspicion of foul play. They occur right under our noses, seem ordinary, unexceptional—an old lady dies at home in her sleep, an intensive-care patient has cardiac arrest, an indigent man disappears from a boarding house, and so forth.

Take the case of Marybeth Thinning, for example, where it was not until the death of the ninth child in the Tinning household that the police got involved. Although Marybeth's first child succumbed to illness, all the rest died in ways consistent with suffocation. Marybeth was initially praised as a model mother as she whisked one child after another to the hospital for emergency care. Sometimes the rescue was successful. The child would be saved and sent home—for a time. The pattern became oddly familiar: the inevitable relapse, another frantic attempt at resuscitation. Eventually Marybeth, lav-

ished with sympathy, would return from the hospital with yet another little body to bury. But as the death count rose, so did the suspicion. The grieving mother was unmasked and ultimately convicted (Skrapec 1994).

It is now believed that Marybeth Tinning had a condition known as **Munchausen syndrome by proxy** (MSP), whereby a person deliberately inflicts injuries on a child in a desperate bid for attention from doctors, family, and community (Pearson 1997). (Baron Munchausen was an eighteenth-century literary figure known for telling "tall tales" about the exploits of his true-to-life counterpart.) Persons with MSP usually "only go so far" with each injury, and the child is snatched from the jaws of death again and again. Ten to thirty percent of MSP victims eventually receive a fatal injury, however. And although accurate tallies elude us, some experts believe that MSP is "far from rare and . . . frequently missed," with perhaps as many as 500 new cases each year in the United States (Schreier & Libow 1993:38). MSP is thought to affect mostly women who find themselves in maternal or nurturing roles: biological or adoptive mothers, babysitters, caretakers, nurses, doctor's wives. "They have an expert grasp of medicine and a keen sense of medicine's power," which allows them to elicit symptoms, stage rescues, and toss the unsuspecting "with stunning cruelty into constant states of peril" (Pearson 1997:94).

The death certificates of several of the Tinning children listed **sudden infant death syndrome** (SIDS) as the cause of death. This label was coined to describe those cases where a child was found unexpectedly dead but was believed to have died from an unknown natural cause. SIDS has become somewhat of a catchall explanation, however, one that is at times applied indiscriminately. And because natural death is very hard to distinguish from death due to suffocation, many infant murders go undetected. One study of crib deaths in Chicago found that over 20 percent "were related to suspected child abuse and neglect" (Christoffel et al. 1985:880). Of the 6,000 to 8,000 cases of SIDS reported annually in the United States, 10 to 20 percent are thought to involve accidental or deliberate suffocation (Emery & Newlands 1991; Reece 1993). As one Texas coroner said, "The only way you can prove [smothering] is to show a pattern of behavior" (quoted in Pearson 1997:109).

Clearly, when one looks at the arrest data for violent crimes, one is compelled to conclude that the extent to which women do violence (and get caught at it) is proportionately small. For men, doing violence can be a way to "do masculinity." But Patricia Pearson reminds us that although men are more likely to "flamboyantly display force to promote and defend status in the public realm," women, too, are capable of using "their own aggressive strategies to defend, maintain, and control their intimate relations" (1997:20).

10

Sexual Violence

IN *PORNOGRAPHY: MEN POSSESSING WOMEN,* feminist writer Andrea Dworkin relates this true account:

> She was 13 . . . [and] at a Girl Scout camp in northern Wisconsin. She went for a long walk in the woods alone during the day. She had long blond hair. She saw three hunters reading magazines, talking, joking. One looked up and said: "There's a live one." She thought they meant a deer. She ducked and started to run away. They meant her. They chased her, caught her, dragged her back to where they were camped. The magazines were pornography of women she physically resembled: blond, childlike. They called her names from the pornography: Little Godiva, Golden Girl, also bitch and slut. They threatened to kill her. They made her undress. It was November and cold. One held a rifle to her head; another beat her breasts with his rifle. All three raped her—penile penetration into the vagina. The third one couldn't get hard at first so he demanded a blow job. She didn't know what that was. The third man forced his penis into her mouth; one of the others cocked the trigger on his rifle. She was told she had better do it right. She tried. When they were done with her they kicked her: they kicked her naked body and they kicked leaves and pine needles on her. . . . "They told me that if I wanted more, that I could come back the next day." (1989:xviii–xix)

This story is but one of many that were told at public hearings of the Minneapolis City Council in 1983, testimonies of harm from sexual violence that implicate pornography in that harm. Indeed, by that time, many feminists like Dworkin had concluded that the problem of violence against women and children required a more direct confrontation with the cultural images that promote a climate that fosters and sustains sexual exploitation and abuse. This observation is not meant to criticize anyone who has ever read a pornographic magazine, watched a pornographic film, or viewed pornography on the Internet; and there is of course a wide variety of sexual imagery—some harmful, some not harmful—that is pervasive throughout the media. It is just that, as Laura Lederer explains: "We noted the inconsistency in allowing (and even encouraging) women and young girls to be set up as sexual objects and willing victims in all forms of mass media, while at

the same time protesting the victimization of females in real life. We began to make the connections between media violence to women and real-life violence" (1980:16–17).

In this chapter we use our sociological imagination to explore the problem of sexual violence against women and children. We begin with a discussion of the sexual violence continuum and the common character of experiences that range from nonviolent sexual intimidation to acts of severe brutality. We then take a critical look at the role of pornography in our society, followed by a detailed examination of the problems of rape and sexual assault, child sexual abuse, and women battering.

The Problem of Sexual Violence

The Sexual Violence Continuum

Liz Kelly (1987) advanced the concept of the **sexual violence continuum** to help us understand that all sexual violations—from flashing or obscene phone calls to the more extreme forms of rape, battery, or even sexual murder—have a common character in that all entail use of abuse, coercion, or force to control and instill fear in women. Deborah Cameron and Elizabeth Frazer add that too many men seem to "need and feel entitled to . . . unrestricted sexual access to women, even—sometimes especially—against women's will," and that sexual violations "collectively function as a threat to women's autonomy" by limiting their freedom of action and undermining their self-esteem (1987:164). As Susan Brownmiller writes about rape: "A world without rapists would be a world in which women moved freely without fear of men. That *some* men rape provides sufficient threat to keep all women in a state of intimidation, forever conscious of the knowledge that the biological tool . . . may turn to weapon with a swiftness borne of harmful intent" (1975:209). Furthermore, since men's sexuality is often presumed to be naturally aggressive, women's fear of sexual violence seems inevitable. And to make matters worse, society then places responsibility on *women* to monitor their behavior so they won't be violated. If they are, they may be blamed for their victimization or find that their suffering is "trivialized, questioned, or ignored" (Cameron & Frazer 1987:164).

Cameron and Frazer help us see the *functional* similarity of violations ranging from nonviolent sexual intimidation to violent acts. They argue that both flashing and rape, for example, are acts that men do "to reassure themselves of their power and potency; both include, as a crucial factor in that reassurance, the fear and humiliation of the female victims" (p. 164). Acts of nonviolent sexual intimidation—the common, everyday verbal, visual, and physical intrusions—"serve to remind women and girls that they are at

risk and vulnerable to male aggression just because they are female" (Sheffield 1989:483–484).

Suzanne Berne (1991) had a familiar experience that illustrates this notion. She was walking in her neighborhood one winter afternoon and someone called out to her. She turned to see a man with his pants open, exposing himself. She describes her reaction:

> I [wasn't] afraid, not exactly. But I [was] alone. Sometimes for a woman, this amounts to the same thing. . . . It could have been much worse. I wasn't raped, after all, as someone pointed out later. Only slightly violated. All I got was a small reminder that the world isn't as pleasant and safe as it sometimes appears to be. . . . [That man] is now part of my life; he is my reminder. He lives on that street every time I walk by. . . . He "flashed" me. . . . It [was] a flash, a sudden exposure—of weakness, of aloneness. A woman remembers these moments because the exposure is hers. Ask any woman, and she will tell you exactly where she was . . . when it happened to her. Because it has happened to her. (pp. 10–11)

Berne points out that a particularly insidious aspect of these sorts of intrusions—the "indecent exposure, . . . the construction worker's whistle, the obscene caller's mumbled requests"—is that the man's pleasure depends on the woman's witness. He needs her reaction for his thrill. "What happened to me," notes Berne, does not generally "happen to men. Men are not forced into this sort of collusion."

In a study designed to document the prevalence of sexual violence, Melanie Randall and Lori Haskell (1995) interviewed a random sample of 420 women living in Toronto, Canada. The interviews, which typically took about two hours to complete, were conducted face-to-face in private settings of the respondents' own choosing—mostly their own homes. The inquiries about violence were part of a larger discussion of women's safety. The findings document "the devastating 'normalcy' and pervasive presence of sexual violence in women's lives" (pp. 26–27).

Nearly all of the women (98 percent) in the Randall-Haskell study reported personally experiencing some form of sexual violation at some time in their lives—"sexually threatening, intrusive, or assaultive . . . experiences [that] ranged from being followed or chased on the street to receiving an obscene phone call, to being sexually harassed at work, to being sexually assaulted and/or raped in childhood or adulthood, to being physically and/or sexually assaulted in an intimate relationship" (p. 14). Over 40 percent of the women "reported at least one experience of incestuous and/or extrafamilial sexual abuse" before age 16, two-thirds reported at least one instance of sexual assault (from unwanted sexual touching of breasts or genitals, to forced sexual intercourse) when they were 16 years or older, and 40 percent reported completed rape in the 16-plus age range.

Randall and Haskell argue that it is not "an exaggeration to say that part of the experience of being female . . . typically involves directly experiencing some form of sexual intrusion or violence and/or living with the . . . threat of it" (p. 9). In fact, Kelly (1987) found in her research that many women experienced sexual interaction not as an "either/or" phenomena—that is, as *either* consensual *or* forced—but on a continuum moving from choice to pressure to coercion to force. Similarly, Jennifer Dunn's interviews with college sorority women led her to conclude that forcible interaction might be best characterized "as falling along an interpretive continuum ranging from perceptions of violation as relatively nonviolent and unobtrusive to more explicitly threatening and dangerous definitions. . . . What connects meaning conferral along this continuum is the *undesired* character of the interaction from the perspective of the unwilling actor" (1999:441–442). We will explore this notion further later in this chapter.

Victimization surveys conducted in the United States also document the common experience of sexual violence. Studies have found, for instance, that anywhere from 18 to 44 percent of women have experienced attempted or completed rape at some time in their lives, and 12 to 24 percent have experienced completed rape (Belknap 2007; Koss 1988; Russell 1984; Tjaden & Thoennes 1998a). These surveys have varied in their methodology: some have involved in-depth, face-to-face interviews using empathic interviewers, while others have relied on impersonal telephone calls that asked a few sexually explicit "yes/no" questions to identify victims. Studies using the latter method tend to find lower rates of victimization.

One advantage of the Randall and Haskell (1995) study, besides its in-depth interview methodology, is that it provides us with data on a variety of violations that constitute the sexual violence continuum. It also recognizes that we can't truly "understand the role that sexual violence plays in women's lives [if we focus] only on its specific manifestations, independent of one another" (pp. 16–17). The study documented the patterns of victimization and revictimization that many women experience as "ongoing dimensions" of their lives, finding that over a quarter of the respondents reported sexual abuse or sexual assault in *both* childhood and adulthood, and about one in ten reported not only childhood sexual abuse *and* adult sexual assault *but also* physical assault in their intimate relationships.

The Gendered Politics of Sexual Murder

Sexual murder, the most extreme form of sexual violence, is the killing of another that provides an erotic thrill for the assailant. The **gendered politics of sexual murder** entails the terrorization of women who are not directly its victims but who live in fear of becoming victims. According to Jane Caputi (1989), the effect of the threat of sexual murder on women is analogous to

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Stalking

Generally speaking, **stalking** refers to "the willful, repeated, and malicious following, harassing, or threatening of another person" (Melton 2000:248). Although stalking is not a new phenomenon, it was not conceptualized as a social problem until 1989, when an obsessed fan shot and killed Rebecca Shaeffer, a television actress he had repeatedly tried to contact. Prior to this event, what came to be termed "stalking" was referred to as "obsession," "sexual harassment," or "psychological rape," and it was portrayed as uncomfortable and annoying rather than as dangerous and violent. The Shaeffer murder, however, became linked to other events, such as the repeated following of Jodie Foster by John Hinckley (see Chapter 3) and the following and stabbing of actress Theresa Saldana, generating a public concern about "celebrity stalking." This concern played a major role in the passage of an anti-stalking law in California in 1990. Other states quickly followed suit, and the National Institute of Justice (NIJ) developed a model anti-stalking code for the states to use when drafting statutes (Emerson et al. 1998; Lowney & Best 1995).

When advocates for battered women made connections between stalking and the harassment and violence women often experience when they attempt to leave abusive partners, "the link between domestic violence and stalking was quickly recognized" (Melton 2000:248). Stalking became identified as a more serious social problem and was reframed from a *celebrity* issue to a *women's* issue (Lowney & Best 1995).

Research indicates that those who are stalked are most often "the current or former spouses or intimate partners of their stalkers" (Melton 2000:248). In these circumstances, stalking arises "out of efforts to maintain or to recreate a close relationship that has been terminated or that one party sought to terminate" (Emerson et al. 1998:295). Here the parties are or have been "intimately linked" (often "exes") or are acquaintances who have been dating. In other circumstances, stalking involves "one-sided attempts to create close, usually romantic relationships" where none existed before. Included here are (1) *unacquainted stalking,* where the victim is pursued by a stranger initially encountered in a semipublic or public place, (2) *pseudoacquainted* stalking, where the victim is a celebrity or public figure whom the pursuer has come to feel connected or emotionally attached to, and (3) *semiacquainted* stalking, where the victim is pursued by someone with whom he or she had contact in the past or by someone with whom he or she has minimal present contact (e.g., a coworker in a large firm).

Robert Emerson and colleagues term all of the above circumstances *relational stalking,* since they all "entail unilateral pursuit linked to some admiring or romantic interest in, or implied or specific assertions of rights to, a continuing, close or intimate relationship with another" (1998:295–996). Relational stalking can be distinguished from *revenge stalking,* where there are "no romantic or relational claims" but where the stalker seems to believe that he or she has been maltreated and is "focused on intimidating the victim and

continues

continued

perhaps on extracting . . . payback." Psychiatrists, plastic surgeons, judges, and instructors are particularly likely to be targeted by revenge stalkers.

Although all 50 states and the District of Columbia have passed anti-stalking laws, the legal definitions of stalking differ considerably from place to place. Most statutes require that stalking not be an isolated event, while some specify a minimum number of acts (usually two) that must take place. Some statutes specify particular acts such as surveillance, laying-in-waiting, vandalism, nonconsensual communication, and telephone harassment. Some also consider threats against the victims' immediate family as stalking (Tjaden & Thoennes 1998b).

Using a definition of stalking that closely resembles the NIJ model code, the *National Violence Against Women Survey* defined stalking as "a course of conduct directed at a specific person that involves repeated [i.e., on two or more occasions] visual or physical proximity, nonconsensual communication, or verbal, written or implied threats, or a combination thereof, that would cause a reasonable person [a high level of] fear." The survey found that 8 percent of women and 2 percent of men in the United States had been stalked at some time in their life, the majority by people the victim already knew. The survey also found "a strong link between stalking and other forms of violence [assault and rape] in intimate relationships" (Tjaden & Thoennes 1998b:2–3).

the historical effect of the threat of lynching on blacks—it functions to keep women "in their place."

Sex murderers (also called lust killers) are almost exclusively male, and their victims are usually female. Although sexual murder is sometimes narrowly defined as murder following rape or sexual assault, this definition is flawed, as some offenders are not rapists but **necrophiliacs**—those who have an erotic interest in corpses—and some are sexually aroused by the mutilation of victim's genitals or by the killing itself. Cameron and Frazer argue that "rape and sexual assault are neither necessary nor sufficient to make a murder 'sexual.' What is important is the eroticization of the act of killing in and for itself." Hence they define sexual murder as "all cases where the killer was motivated by sadistic sexual impulses—'the lust to kill'" (1987:18).

Caputi (1989) characterizes sexual murder as a form of "patriarchal terrorism." Like other types of violence against women, sexual murder "expresses not purely individual anger and frustration but a collective, culturally sanctioned **misogyny**"—the hatred or disdain of women—that is important to the maintenance of men's collective power (p. 438). Sexual murder, note Cameron and Frazer, is "male violence taken to its logical extreme. . . . Death is the ultimate negation of autonomy," and the mutilation of breasts and genitals common in sexual murder "is the ultimate violation of the female sex and body" (1987:164–165).

Between 1975 and 1980, Peter Sutcliffe, dubbed the Yorkshire Ripper, roamed northern England. He killed 13 women (mostly prostitutes) before he was caught. Several more survived attempts on their lives. While the Ripper was loose, the atmosphere was heavy with fear and rumors circulated wildly about "what the killer did" (Cameron & Frazer 1987:x) as well as about the identity of this shadowy figure "who slipped into murder as gently and gradually as a child slips into a swimming pool at the shallow end, . . . this quiet man . . . who stole up behind women in the dark, smashed in their skulls with blows from a ball-headed hammer, then pulled up their skirts and blouses and carefully inflicted dozens of wounds with a specially sharpened hammer" (Wilson 1984:19). After he was caught, Sutcliffe explained that he was "just cleaning up [the] streets" (Cameron & Frazer 1987:123). As to why he mutilated his victims' breasts and genitals: "It's just something that comes over me," he said (p. 1).

When Cameron and Frazer describe the Yorkshire Ripper's "reign of terror," we understand the meaning of sexual terrorism:

> Any man could have been the killer. . . . The whole weight of the culture colluded in the terror that affected women's existence in the North of England: the police who insisted we stay off streets, the commentators who so callously devalued the lives of prostitutes, the football crowds who chanted [e.g., "Ripper 11, police 0"] and made jokes about the Ripper, those men, who under cover of protecting frightened women found a golden opportunity to threaten and assault us. (1987:165)

It is easy to fathom women's fear of a killer on the loose. It is disturbing, however, to contemplate how this fear is heightened by the chanting and the jokes, by the tendency to mythologize gruesome killers. The nickname "Yorkshire Ripper" was no coincidence. It resurrected the collective memory of panic surrounding the reign of nineteenth-century London's knife-wielding Jack the Ripper, a killer/mutilator who to this day has not been identified, nor forgotten. In fact, the 1988 centennial anniversary of Jack's crimes "was celebrated by multiple retellings of the Ripper legend" (Caputi 1989:445). Ripper paraphernalia appeared: buttons, T-shirts, a computer game, even cocktails. *Jack the Ripper* (a made-for-television movie), *Jack's Back* (an exploitation thriller), and "scores of new books on the master killer" were released.

Ted Bundy, another mythologized sex murderer, was convicted in the United States in 1979 of killing three women, although he was suspected of killing as many as 50. When he escaped from jail while awaiting trial for murder in Aspen, Colorado, he quickly became a folk hero there (Larson 1980). T-shirts emblazoned "Ted Bundy Is a One Night Stand" appeared. A radio station featured a Ted Bundy request hour, offering songs like "Ain't No Way to Treat a Lady." A restaurant hawked a "Bundyburger," which was

actually nothing but a plain roll: "Open it and see the meat has fled," the sign explained (Caputi 1989:446). Are these simply examples of comic relief? Inventive ways to make a buck? Or do they reflect something more insidious? It is tempting to dismiss them as lighthearted, but what does this ease with which we trivialize and eroticize a serial sex murderer say about our culture?

Caputi (1987) observes that Bundy's victims, who were all young white women, were portrayed in the mainstream press as respectable and attractive. But when serial murder victims are not perceived as respectable (e.g., when they are prostitutes, runaways, drug addicts, street women) or they are women of color, the media as well as public officials tend to discount the seriousness of the crime. As the prosecutor said at the trial of the Yorkshire Ripper, "Some of the victims were prostitutes, but perhaps the saddest part of this case is that some were not" (quoted in Holloway 1981:39). Moreover, when the victims are devalued, the police are more likely to delay notifying the public that a serial murderer is on the loose.

Shortly before his execution, Bundy claimed that he had been obsessed with pornography since his youth and that it had "inspired him to act out his torture and murder fantasies" (Caputi 1989:447). Although that was not the first time he had acknowledged his "thrill of reading about the abuse of female images," Bundy's claim was both ridiculed and scorned in the mainstream press, written off as a convenient excuse for his actions and a last-minute bid for absolution (Michaud & Aynesworth 1983:117). Some commentators seemed even "more angry at [Bundy's] aspersions on pornography than at his crimes" (Caputi 1989:448). However, what got lost in the clatter of these vehement dismissals was the fact that the truth was not necessarily either/or, that Bundy could be both attempting to neutralize or diminish his responsibility for his compulsions and also speaking honestly about influences that fueled his spiraling loss of self-control.

The Hillside Strangler, responsible for a series of sex murders in Los Angeles in 1977 and 1978, actually turned out to be co-murderers Kenneth Bianchi and Angelo Buono, who are both now serving life sentences. One of Bianchi's victims was Cindy Lee Hudspeth. *Hustler* magazine presented a semiregular feature titled "Ads We'd Like to See," which parodied advertising. The hypothetical ad in the August 1980 issue, modeled after the well-known format for Dewers Scotch, was for "Doer's Lite Label." It starred none other than Kenneth Bianchi:

> *Kenneth Bianchi*
> Occupation: Hillside Strangler
> Latest Accomplishment: Cindy Lee Hudspeth, 20
> Quote: "You gotta treat 'em rough."
> After knocking off a couple of bimbos, the Hillside Strangler likes to kick back and relax with Doer's Lite Label. (cited in Caputi 1987:53)

In this ad, violence is trivialized—it's good for a chuckle or two. A sex killer is presented as "a doer," a man of accomplishment. In an *it's just a joke so you can't really criticize kind-of-way,* the magazine affirmed its "collusion with sexual torture and murder" (p. 54).

But *Hustler* was not done milking the Hillside stranglings. In its March 1984 issue, the magazine offered "Free Beaver Hunt Caps" to all those who submitted nude photographs of themselves. Illustrations accompanying the offer showed both of the Hillside Stranglers wearing the caps. Underneath Bianchi's picture was the caption: "Ken Bianchi says, 'I was a real eager Beaver Hunter, but with this cap I could have caught some more.'" The caption under Buono's picture read: "Angelo Buono says, 'These caps are neat! I bet if I wore one, the girls would be dying to meet me'" (p. 54).

Note that this was from a magazine considered tame enough to be on display at your corner convenience store. The less accessible the fare (although the Internet has increased accessibility overall), the less likely the misogyny will have a humorous gloss, be in cartoon form, be passed off as art. Images that eroticize *real* sexual violence, even murder, will stare you in the face. For those who think, "But that's not sex, that's violence," remember that *everything* in pornography is sex to someone (Dworkin & MacKinnon 1988). It is someone's fantasy, someone's turn-on, perhaps someone's *only* way to get turned on. Some become progressively desensitized, finding that over time they need the images to be more explicit, more extreme, more violent, more *real* to get aroused. For some, images cease to be enough. They feel compelled to act the fantasies out—in real life, on real people. Sometimes, like when Bianchi and Buono took photographs of the women they had tortured and killed, "the pornographic imperative comes full circle" (Caputi 1987:164).

The Problem of Pornography

We recognize that the kinds of sexual imagery people have in mind when they use the term "pornography" vary considerably. We find it useful, therefore, to distinguish between **erotica** and **pornography**. According to Gloria Steinem, erotica involves images or depictions of "mutually pleasurable sexual expression" between consenting subjects "who have enough power to be there by positive choice" (1980:37). Pornography, on the other hand, treats the body as an object to be controlled or dominated. It is "material that combines sex and/or the exposure of genitals with abuse or degradation in a manner that appears to endorse, condone, or encourage" the abuse or degradation. Sexual behavior that is *abusive* "ranges from [the] derogatory, demeaning, contemptuous, or damaging to [the] brutal, cruel, exploitative, painful, or violent. *Degrading* sexual behavior refers to sexual conduct that is humiliating, insulting, [or] disrespectful" (Russell 1993a:2–3).

Some researchers argue that pornography is a *symptom* not a *cause* of

attitudes that promote sexual violence (Baron & Straus 1989; Schwartz & DeKeseredy 1997). To be sure, pornography does not cause violence "in the way a virus causes disease, gravity causes objects to fall or a bell caused Pavlov's famous dogs to salivate" (Cameron & Frazer 1993:371). Individuals who engage in sexual violence are neither "impelled by instinct . . . [nor] responding unthinkingly or involuntarily" to pornographic stimuli. Rather, they interpret and "impose meaning on the stimuli" and then act in accordance with this meaning (pp. 368, 370).

Nevertheless, pornography can play an important role in shaping some forms of sexual desire and not others. As such, Catharine MacKinnon (1986) is among those who consider it central to the "cycle of abuse" of women and children. She believes that "as long as pornography exists as it does now, women and children will be used and abused to make it, as they are now. And it will be used to abuse them, as it is now" (p. 47). Although many people assume that all women in pornographic pictures or films are willing participants who make good money, this, as with women who prostitute, is not necessarily the case. Many women and children are pressured or coerced by boyfriends, husbands, fathers, or pimps to pose or perform for pornography. They are told to smile, to act like they like what is happening. Even when explicit force is not involved, "the compulsion of poverty, of drugs, of the street, of foreclosed alternatives, of fear of retribution for noncooperation can be enforcement enough" (p. 42).

Another common assumption is that images of harm or abuse that are portrayed in some pornography are produced by convincing makeup, trick photography, or actors who are "just acting." But photographs and videos are also made of *real* rapes, child molestations and beatings, even torture. And since a child is not considered legally capable of consenting to sex, each and every example of pornography involving adult-child sexual interaction is "a document of the sexual abuse of the child who was required for its production" (Kelly 1993:116; MacKinnon 1986).

Take Linda "Lovelace," for instance, star of *Deep Throat,* the 1972 "porn movie that made porn movies chic" (Steinem 1993:23). Linda was taught by her husband, Chuck Traynor, to relax her throat muscles like a sword swallower so that she could receive the plunge of a man's fully erect penis without choking. Traynor held Linda captive and forced her to service men sexually, to endure public humiliation at parties as men lined up to experience her "deep throat." He coerced her to make porn films—even a sex film with a dog—and successfully hunted her down after the first three of her four escape attempts.

The women and children in pornography, however, are only its initial victims, for pornography is also used to force others to act it out. Many women, for example, were taken to see *Deep Throat* by boyfriends, husbands, or pimps to learn "what a woman could do to please a man if she

really wanted to" (Steinem 1993:24). (After the movie's release, some hospitals even reported an increase in the number of women brought in dead from suffocation due to rape of the throat.) Recall also the fair-haired 13-year-old whose story opens this chapter, who was forced by the hunters to perform like Little Godiva and the Golden Girl. Then there's Katherine Brady, whose father began to molest her when she was eight years old, using pornography as a teaching tool, as a way to instruct her about sex, about what he wanted her to do for him. "When he showed me the pictures," Brady said, "he would describe the acts in detail: 'This is fellatio,' 'this is [how] you do . . . intercourse,' and so forth" (Russell 1993b:43).

Or take the case of "Ms. M," whose husband read her excerpts from pornography about bondage, anal intercourse, group sex, and wife swapping, and who pressured her to act them out. Sometimes he even invited friends to come to bed with them after she was already asleep. They had heated arguments. She wanted to be a good wife, but she was repulsed by these things. He told her that if she loved him, she would do them. In order to prevent the group sex, which she found especially humiliating, she agreed to act out the bondage and other scenarios in private. He read the pornography "like a textbook"—how to tie the knots, how to bind her so she could not escape (Russell 1993b:55). She had to dress up like the women in the magazine, to act out the scenes precisely.

Of course, many women who perform for pornography and many who read or watch it are not coerced to do so. Indeed, some feminists accuse their antipornography counterparts of overemphasizing the extent to which women are victimized by pornography. They insist that women can be autonomous agents of their own sexuality and that they can negotiate the risks and dangers of this power-laden terrain for their own purposes (Burstyn 1985; Snitow et al. 1983; Vance 1984). But antipornography feminists do not deny women's agency or their right to be assertive sexual actors. They don't suggest that pornography turns all men into rapists, nor do they condemn those who have found themselves enjoying it. However, MacKinnon argues that the "fact that some people like pornography [or willingly get involved with it] does not mean that it does not hurt other[s]" (1986:49). In fact, there is considerable research from a wide range of sources—testimonials, interviews, media experiments, and surveys—that provides grounds for concern.

Much of the experimental research on the effects of pornography on men has emphasized the study of *sexually violent* or *aggressive* pornography (not erotica) in laboratory settings, and these studies have found differences among men in the way they respond to experimental exposure. The research on sexual arousal to pornography, attitudes about women, and laboratory aggression (e.g., administering an electronic shock) indicates that men who are already *predisposed* to sexual aggression—those who report

The cultural values promoted by pornography have been implicated in the problem of violence against women and children.

they would be likely to rape if they thought they would not be caught or punished, those who are more sexually aroused by depictions of rape than by depictions of consensual sex, or those who harbor relatively high levels of anger toward women—are more greatly influenced by experimental exposure than are men who are not so predisposed. Furthermore, most experimental male subjects are less aroused by rape scenes when female victims are portrayed as abhorring sexual assault, compared to scenes in which female victims are portrayed as becoming involuntarily aroused. In general, experimental exposure to the latter type of pornography increases men's aggression against women in laboratory settings, their belief in rape myths that justify sexual violence, their rape fantasies, their insensitivity to rape victims and the trauma of rape, and their self-reported possibility of committing rape. These findings are not surprising, given that in sexually violent pornography it is common for women who are depicted as initially

resistant if not terrified of rape to become "sexually aroused to the point of cooperation" and eventually to become physically gratified in spite of their embarrassment or shame (Scully & Marolla 1985:253). Be that as it may, even the viewing of *nonviolent* pornography is associated with less sympathy toward rape victims and more trivialization of rape. Neil Malamuth, one of the leading researchers in the field, concluded that the experimental evidence strongly supports the view that at least some pornography contributes "to a cultural climate that is more accepting of aggression against women" (1985:405; see also Allen et al. 1995; Donnerstein et al. 1987; Malamuth & Donnerstein 1984).

Although some analysts discount laboratory experiments because of their artificiality (Durham 1986), others note the evidence of harm that is contained in the testimony of victims and in the pictures of abuse themselves (MacKinnon 1986). In addition, survey research documents that many women have had negative experiences with pornography. In several studies, for example, women were asked, *"Have you ever been upset by anyone trying to get you to do what they had seen in pornographic pictures, movies, or books?"* About one-tenth to one-quarter said they had been (Harmon & Check 1989; Russell 1982; Senn 1993; Stock 1995). Robert Jensen summarizes the results of survey research with men, which shows that pornography can: "(a) be an important factor in shaping a male-dominant view of sexuality, (b) contribute to a user's difficulty in separating sexual fantasy and reality, (c) be used to initiate victims and break down their resistance to sexual activity, and (d) provide a training manual for abusers" (1995:33). This research finds that pornography is often "an important factor in . . . what men come to see as acceptable, exciting, or necessary sex" (p. 51). By no means does Jensen think that all men who use pornography engage in abusive behavior. However, he does conclude that the research suggests that "for some sex abusers, pornography is an integral part of their abuse" (p. 35).

Clinical evidence provided by professional therapists and law enforcement authorities who work with victims or with self-reported and convicted sex offenders also implicates pornography. Cheryl Champion, for instance, estimates that about 40 percent of clinical sex offender cases involve perpetrators who use pornography, typically in a very compulsive and obsessive manner, "for masturbation, fantasy contemplation, and actual acting out of their scenarios" (1986:24). Ray Wyre, who has worked with a wide range of sex offenders over the course of his career as a therapist, notes that sex offenders often use pornography "to justify and legitimate what they do" (1992:236). According to Wyre, pornography can create and reinforce rape and child abuse fantasies that "push men further along [a] continuum of sexual mistreatment of women and children," from inappropriate sexual gestures and conduct to horrendous crimes (p. 246).

Wyre is among a growing number of practitioners and scholars who encourage us to take concerns about pornography seriously. Many people are reluctant to do so, however, as they falsely assume that one who is critical of pornography must be prudish, anti-sex, or anti-male. Of course, most users of pornography don't go down the slippery slope Wyre observed, and pornographic imagery was clearly not the only factor in the downward slide of the sex offenders he worked with. But we are all shaped by our culture. We can all be drawn in, be affected by the media's messages about sex and gender. And it is not just women who bear the consequences of all this; it is men as well, for male socialization sets men up to be manipulated by pornography.

Peter Baker observes that boys are more likely than girls to be conditioned to think that success in life "can only be achieved through competition and struggle" (1992:127). Encouraged to always be in control, boys learn to repress their emotions and may become uncomfortable with emotional intimacy. This likely explains why men, as they grow older, "attach such disproportionate importance to the sexual act," which is often their only means of feeling close to another human being (p. 128). Thus some may find pornography so attractive, because with it they "can retreat into a simple world where they are effortlessly in command," where there's no pressure to be romantic or expressive of feelings, no worries about one's desirability or manliness, no fear of criticism or rejection (p. 133).

David Steinberg characterizes pornography as a vehicle that helps men "fantasize sexual situations that soothe [their emotional] wounds." Its cornerstone is:

> Images of women who are openly desirous of sex, who look out at us from the page with all the yearning we know so well yet so rarely receive. . . . Images of women hungry for sex with us, possessed by desire for us. . . . Receptive women who greet our sexual desire not with fear or loathing but with appreciation, even gratitude. And glamorous women whose mere bestowal of sexual attention mythically proves our sexual worth. (1990:56)

In the end, however, looking to pornography to satisfy emotional needs inevitably leaves users feeling disappointed, frustrated, and badly about themselves. Moreover, as Harry Brod notes:

> The necessary corollary to pornography's myth of female perpetual availability is its myth of male perpetual readiness. Just as the former fuels male [anger] when real-life women fail to perform to pornographic standards, so do men's failures to similarly perform fuel male insecurities. Furthermore, . . . relating to one's body as a performance machine produces a split consciousness wherein part of one's attention is watching the machine, looking for flaws in its performance, even while one is suppos-

> edly immersed in . . . sensual pleasure. This produces a self-distancing self-consciousness which mechanizes sex and reduces pleasure. (1995:395–396)

Michael Kimmel adds that pornography can also impoverish men's "sexual imaginations even in the guise of expanding our repertoires" (1990:318). Some men become dependent on it for arousal. Some become so desensitized that they need more and more explicit or degrading or violent imagery for the same turn-on. Some, as Wyre (1992) discovered, come to find that the fantasies and images are no longer enough. They feel compelled to act them out, and "the more bizarre the fantasies are, the less likely they will have a consenting partner to comply with what they want to do" (p. 243).

So what is to be done, if anything, about the problem with pornography? There are good reasons to oppose governmental censorship of *adult* pornography, which the US Supreme Court has ruled is protected by the First Amendment. On the other hand, the Court has ruled that it is legal to ban *child* pornography, and this is an appropriate policy to uphold. Moreover, it is important to keep children from being exposed to pornography and to prevent people (children and adults) from being criminally violated in its making. Educational interventions that teach people to recognize and critically evaluate material that endorses sexual violence are warranted as well (Berger et al. 1991; Lederer & Delgado 1995).

It is not just pornography, however, but also the mainstream media that trivialize or eroticize violence against women and children. The "Battered Chic" advertisement trend introduced in the 1980s, for instance, featured models who looked roughed up and bruised, wearing torn or tattered clothing. Fashion layouts continue to exhibit female models with frightened expressions, models looking over their shoulders at shadowy figures or running from danger. And these are not ads for locks or security devices. They are ads for glamour enhancers like lipstick and hair color. A pantyhose ad presents a woman buried in the sand from the waist *up,* her rear end exposed and her legs provocatively displayed in silky hose and high heels while an ominous crustacean inches its way toward her incapacitated body. A jeans ad provides what appears to be before-and-after shots of rape—a young woman slung over a man's shoulder being carried off to a garage, then hanging out of a car, disheveled, her blouse open. With images like these permeating the culture, it is perhaps understandable why violence can seem downright sexy.

Pornography, advertisements, and the media in general are also implicated in the sexual exploitation of children. As Ellen Bass observes, we are continually bombarded with cultural images that blur "the distinction between woman and girl-child" and that desensitize us to, or even encourage, the sexual use of girls (1983:38). Young girls are often made up to look

years older with cosmetics, provocative outfits, and sophisticated hairdos, while adult women are posed seductively sporting pigtails and skimpy girlish clothes, sucking lollipops or holding teddy bears. These images, says Bass, "confuse adult women with children . . . [and] vulnerability with sexual invitation" (p. 42).

Rape and Sexual Assault

Most people tend to view rape as the deviant act of a sick individual. Feminists, on the other hand, have advanced an alternative perspective that views rape as "an extension or exaggeration of conventional sexual relations" and power differentials between women and men, as neither "an aberration nor a particularly unusual occurrence" (Jackson 1978:27, 29). According to this view, rape is not a biological inevitability but a form of socially conditioned sexual aggression that stems from traditional gender socialization and sexual learning (Berger et al. 1986). Support for this position is provided by cross-cultural studies that find some societies "rape prone" and some relatively "rape free." The societies with higher rates of rape are those characterized by greater male dominance, gender-role rigidity, and glorification of warfare (McConahay & McConahay 1977; Sanday 1981).

Sexual Scripts and Rape Myths

James Messerschmidt observes that while sexuality has become "a domain of extensive exploration and pleasure for women, . . . it remains simultaneously a site where gendered oppression may occur" (1993:76; see Chapter 1). Stevi Jackson (1978) argues that traditional **sexual scripts** have been a major source of the problem. In American society, sexual interactions have traditionally been scripted for an active, aggressive male, the one who seduces, and a passive female, the one who is seduced. The male's role has been to initiate and direct the sexual encounter, the female's role to acquiesce or refuse. She has been socialized to be modest and cautious, to assess the man's desire for a meaningful relationship. Since he knows that she may not want to jeopardize his respect by seeming too eager, however, he often ignores her resistance, presuming it is not indicative of her true feelings and desires. Besides, he may consider failure "to establish dominance over the woman, to make her please him," a threat to his masculinity (p. 31).

Women are raped in all kinds of situations and by all types of assailants—in their home and on the street, by strangers and by nonstrangers. But with sexual scripts like these, it is easier to understand why **acquaintance rape**—rape involving an assailant whom the victim knows or is familiar with—is far more common than stranger rape. Indeed, several studies have found that over 80 percent of rape victims previously knew their assailants (Koss et al. 1987; Randall & Haskell 1995; Tjaden &

Thoennes 1998a). It is also easier to see how misunderstanding and conflict can occur in potentially sexual interactions as each party attempts to negotiate the definition of the situation.

Recall that symbolic interactionism is the sociological perspective that is concerned with the meaning of social action to individuals (see Chapter 4). Symbolic interactionists point out that the very same experience can mean different things to different people. Thus, in sexual interactions, men may be surprised when women interpret their advances as overly aggressive, inappropriate, even exploitative, "as foreplay to rape rather than as affection" (Weis & Borges 1973:89). Absence of consent can only be communicated clearly when the woman resists "beyond what is normally expected of women who want intercourse but wish to maintain a 'moral' appearance"—or who at least want to avoid being labeled a "slut" (p. 92). But how can the woman know the amount of resistance that would normally be expected? Might that not vary from man to man or peer group to peer group? And what if she's sexually inexperienced?

All this has become even trickier to negotiate nowadays, with young women rejecting the traditional double standard and claiming their right to sexual desire, and "Girls Gone Wild" or the latest female celebrity icons mainstreaming the "hot babe" image. Moreover, in some sense, the traditional sexual scripts can seem rather quaint when "**hooking up**," rather than romantic/emotional relationships, becomes more normative. In her exposé of high school and university students in the Washington, D.C., area, Laura Sessions Stepp (2007) interviewed a number of young women who assumed that having sex, drinking, and taking drugs were just part of the everyday experience of growing up. Young women considered hooking up to be a more affirmative characterization of what used to be called "one-night stands" or "sleeping around," and they now felt empowered by being able to "play guys" just like guys have always "played girls." But Sessions Stepp also found that these encounters sometimes led to acquaintance rape, what the women called "the grey area" between sex and rape, where a female gets drunk with a guy, goes back to a dorm room or apartment with him, and finds that it is he, not she, who is really in control and that she has no choice but to acquiesce to his forceful advances.

The scenarios we've been describing are complicated by the culturally available **rape myths** that contain techniques of neutralization or rationalizations that justify rape (see Chapter 4). There is the common presumption, for instance, that a man has urgent sexual needs that prevent him from controlling his behavior and leave him "totally at the mercy of his desires . . . [once his] sexual response has been set in motion" (Jackson 1978:31). This myth places responsibility for limiting sexual activity in the woman's hands. It allows the man to rationalize ignoring her protests, to deny responsibility for forging ahead. She must be careful not to get him too aroused for

she may be unable "to control the powerful forces she has unleashed" (p. 31). One convicted rapist likened a man's body to "a coke bottle—shake it up, put your thumb over the opening and feel the tension" (Scully & Marolla 1984:535).

Other rape myths (e.g., women secretly want to be raped, women eventually relax and enjoy rape) allow a man to deny that he injured the woman: "I didn't hurt her. I just gave her a good screw." There are even rape myths (e.g., women are tempting seductresses who invite sexual encounters) that allow the man to deny that the woman is a victim at all. Here the man acknowledges that he did rape but justifies his actions on the grounds that the woman deserved what she got. (Sexually assertive women who deviate from traditional scripts are especially likely to be viewed as responsible for provoking the man to rape.) Sometimes it's not even what a man considers to be a woman's provocation that leads him to define her as a legitimate victim. Sometimes it's her perceived aloofness. "Women are damned both ways—they seem to be looking for it or they are too good for it, they are touchable or they are untouchable. Either way they are candidates for rape" (Medea & Thompson 1974:5).

Jackson (1978) points out that rapists do not invent these myths that diminish their responsibility or present their behavior as normal or acceptable. They adopt them from the larger culture, from the same scripts that structure the sexual interactions of the average couple on a date. Not only are these rationalizations used to justify conduct *after the fact,* but they also can motivate behavior *prior* to the act by mitigating any sense of guilt. Believing that one's masculinity is culturally validated by sexual conquests encourages the rapist as well.

So how can a woman get the man to take her resistance seriously—to recognize that "no" means "no," not "maybe" or "in a little while"? She's been socialized to be nurturing and self-sacrificing, to protect others' feelings, to bolster the male ego, to please and be pleasing. She's supposed to control the pace of the proceedings and to do so gently. Mild protestations may be effective with some, but probably not with a determined man with a shaken "coke bottle." Moreover, it's not only men who have been socialized to ignore and deny the validity of women's feelings, for women have also been taught to question their own feelings and perceptions. Thus, once a woman has allowed an intimate encounter to advance beyond a preliminary stage, not only may the man assume she has committed to going "all the way," but so too may a woman believe she has relinquished her right to withdraw consent (Foa 1977).

As the man persists, the woman may be too confused and embarrassed to know what to do next. Because her efforts to assert herself have been ineffective, she may simply stop resisting. Acquiescence may indeed seem preferable to the risk of bodily injury or the "humiliation of a lost fight"

(MacKinnon 1983:650). Perhaps she'll resign herself to what's going to happen, tell herself it'll be over soon, try to put her mind elsewhere. Perhaps she'll attempt to convince herself that he isn't using her, that he's just swept away by her charm. Perhaps she'll try to redefine his aggression as romantic or as "hot sex," for eroticizing male dominance sure seems better than feeling forced or violated. In the end, the man may misread her acquiescence as consent, assume his seduction techniques were effective after all. Perhaps "his conviction that women will consent if only he tries hard enough" will be reinforced, and it will be even more difficult for the next woman who tries to tell him "no" (Jackson 1978:32).

MacKinnon (1983) suggests that the whole notion of "consent" becomes problematic when male initiative and dominance comprise the normative pattern of sexual interaction and when men are socialized not to be too concerned about what women want. As we have seen, under these conditions it is difficult for women to assess how much resistance is necessary to convince men that they haven't granted consent or that they've withdrawn it. A woman may consider it rape, or she may be confused by the fact that she stopped resisting and then *not* define the encounter as rape, even though she experienced it as unwanted and nonconsensual.

That many women have experienced coercive sexual encounters that they did not define as rape was documented by Mary Koss (1988) in an in-depth survey of over 6,100 college students across the United States. Koss found that "only 27 percent of the women whose experience met legal definitions of rape actually labeled themselves as rape victims," and 88 percent of the men who reported engaging in actions "that met legal definitions of rape . . . [insisted] that their behavior was definitely not rape" (pp. 16, 19).

Research also indicates that there are racial/ethnic differences in women's definitions of rape. Linda Williams and Karen Holmes (1981), for example, found that white women, in comparison to Latinas and African Americans, had a broader definition of what constitutes rape. White women were more likely to define rape as sexual intercourse without the woman's consent (rather than as sexual intercourse that was physically forced) and less likely to consider the woman's behavior or reputation, or her relationship with the offender, as relevant to whether a "real rape" had occurred. Monica Williams, director of a Los Angeles rape crisis program, suggests why African American women may have a narrower view of rape:

> I think our image has always been of [being] strong and persevering and [of presenting the image that] you can take it all, and it doesn't make a difference. . . . I started to notice that most of the [African American] women who were assaulted, that it wasn't a priority for them, that they couldn't see that they were hurting. . . . Usually their first concern was their children, or their home or their husband, or how'm I going to make ends meet. (quoted in Matthews 1989:525–526)

The legacy of racism also impacts African American women's response to rape. According to Angela Davis, "This country's history of ubiquitous racism in law enforcement," including its use of "the myth of the black rapist" to justify lynchings, has made many black women understandably reluctant to become involved in antirape activism, as they fear it "might well lead to further repressive assaults on their families and communities" (1990:43–44). Marcia Ann Gillespie adds that African American women have, "for the good of the race . . . routinely been expected to put our men first, no matter what. . . . When a woman steps forward and dares to . . . speak about and hold black men accountable for . . . rape, . . . [she] risks becoming a pariah." Gillespie urges black women to "redefine what is good for the race" by insisting that women's lives matter too (1993:80–81).

Rape Law and Its Reform

The common rape scenario described here is often written off as a "he said/she said" situation. But in a culture where sex has traditionally been scripted for an active male and a passive female, and where it is expected that men may have to be pushy to get what they want, it can be hard to tell the difference between sex and sexual assault. So when a man believes a woman has fabricated charges of rape "after the fact," it may be that her declaration of nonconsent contradicts his experience of the interaction. Moreover, since the law defines the criminality of the act in terms of the *accused's* criminal intent, it becomes difficult to define the act legally as a crime if the man believed that the woman's resistance was not all that genuine (MacKinnon 1983).

According to MacKinnon, the way the law does distinguish between sex and sexual assault is "by adjudicating the level of acceptable force starting just above the level set by what is seen as normal male sexual behavior . . . [not] at the victim's . . . point of violation" (1983:649). Thus the law, argues MacKinnon, adopts the male's perspective:

> [While] many women are raped by men who know the meaning of their acts to women and proceed anyway, . . . women are also violated . . . by men who have no idea of the meaning of their acts to women. To them, it is sex. Therefore, to the law it is sex. . . . The distance between most sexual violations . . . and the legally perfect rape measures the imposition of someone else's definition upon women's experiences. Rape, from women's point of view, is not prohibited, it is regulated. (pp. 651–653)

Feminists like MacKinnon have worked to reform the legal system to make it more responsive to and supportive of women, and feminists have been the driving force behind rape reform legislation. In the past, rape law contained special corroboration rules (not required for other violent crimes) that mandated that prosecutors produce evidence to verify a victim's testi-

mony, for it was assumed that women would deliberately lie about rape in order "to explain premarital intercourse, infidelity, pregnancy, or disease, or to retaliate against an ex-lover or some other man" (Spohn & Horney 1992:24). Prosecutors were also required to demonstrate that a woman had tried to resist her assailant to a degree beyond what was expected of other violent crime victims. Judges gave jurors special cautionary instructions to warn them that rape was a charge that was easily made but difficult for the defendant to disprove, even if he was innocent. Evidence of a woman's prior sexual history was admissible to impeach her testimony or to show that she had consented to intercourse, for it was assumed that "chastity was a character trait" and that women with premarital or extramarital sexual experiences were more likely to have agreed to sexual relations with the accused (p. 25). And spouses were granted immunity from prosecution on the assumption that when a woman married, she implicitly and irrevocably consented to the sexual advances of her husband (Berger et al. 1988).

Since the mid-1970s, however, states have generally reformed their rape laws to eliminate or modify some or all of these practices. One reform redefined the crime of rape as sexual assault, sexual battery, and the like, in order to emphasize the idea that rape is a violent crime and not a crime of uncontrollable sexual passion. Such semantic changes were intended to divert attention from questions about consent, for assault is, "by definition, something to which the victim does not consent" (Bienen 1980:192). Redefining rape as sexual assault also broadened the definition of the crime beyond vaginal-penile intercourse to include oral and anal penetration, sexual penetration with objects, and in some statutes, touching of intimate body parts. Other reforms redefined the crime in gender-neutral terms to protect victims from female offenders and to protect male victims, and some removed or modified the spousal exemption (Berger et al. 1988; Spohn & Horney 1992).

Another set of reforms attempted to eliminate evidentiary rules that made it more difficult to convict offenders. Special corroboration and proof-of-resistance requirements, as well as cautionary jury instructions, were abolished. Reform statutes also introduced **rape shield laws** that limit admissibility of evidence regarding the complainant's prior sexual history. Less restrictive rape shield laws allow admission of evidence of prior sexual conduct after judicial determination of its relevance; more restrictive laws create a general prohibition of such information but allow specific exceptions—for instance, evidence of previous sexual contact between the complainant and defendant. The more restrictive statutes have been criticized for not sufficiently accommodating the defendant's right to present relevant evidence, the less restrictive for providing inadequate protection of the complainant's right to privacy (Berger et al. 1988; Spohn & Horney 1992).

Studies of the impact of rape law reform indicate that many criminal

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Marital Rape

Marital rape, the sexual assault of a woman by her husband, is estimated to occur in 9 to 14 percent of marriages in the United States (Bergen 1996; Russell 1982). David Finkelhor and Kersti Yllo argue that although many people consider forced sex in marriage to be a petty conflict, "unpleasant, but not particularly serious," this stereotype masks how abusive and traumatizing marital rape really is (1985:13–14).

Finkelhor and Yllo conducted in-depth interviews with women who had experienced forced sex with current or previous partners (marital or cohabiting). The assaults described were frightening and sometimes "brutal events that usually occurred in the context of an exploitative and destructive relationship." The sexual abuse was often "only peripherally about sex. More often it was about humiliation, degradation, anger, and resentment" (p. 18). The incidents left the women psychologically traumatized, sometimes even physically disabled. For most of the women, rape was "a chronic and constant threat, not an isolated problem" (p. 23). Oftentimes the sex that was forced was not vaginal intercourse but oral or anal sex, rape with objects, or other sexual humiliations: being forced to have sex with the husband's friends or in front of others, to submit to gang rape, or to be photographed while tied up or with objects in their vaginas. Some assaults even involved sadistic acts aimed at injuring the genitals: biting or burning them, or in one instance, ripping a woman's vagina in an attempt to pull it out.

About half of the women Finkelhor and Yllo interviewed were also battered by their partners. For these women, "entrapment and terror [were] part and parcel of their lives . . . [and] the sexual abuse was [often] a continuation of the beatings" (pp. 22–23). Marital rape, however, is emotionally devastating even when it does not involve additional violence. When the person who assaults you is someone you love and trust, the pain, humiliation, and betrayal are especially intense. If women are able to leave these abusive relationships, the passage of time helps the vividness of their anger wane, but for most women the emotional impact endures for years—even decades. An "inability to trust men, an aversion to intimacy and sex, and a lingering, acute fear of being assaulted again" is often the legacy they are left struggling to overcome (p. 18).

justice officials continue to operate on the basis of traditional assumptions about rape and fail to consistently comply with the statutes. Decisions regarding rape and sexual assault are still subject to much discretion, and the reforms do not necessarily affect the informal operations of the criminal justice system. For example, evidentiary reforms involving the victim's prior sexual history have been aimed at trial procedures, although most cases are handled informally through pretrial plea bargaining (if they go

that far). At trial, requirements for closed hearings to determine relevancy of the complainant's prior sexual history are often not held, and this information is often admitted as evidence. Indices of closeness (e.g., dating, cohabiting, marriage) or of prior social interaction (e.g., the woman was acquainted with the accused or had agreed to interact socially with him) are still used by defendants to persuade judges and juries that they believed the woman had consented (Berger et al. 1994; Spohn & Horney 1992).

Personal Resistance Strategies

In addition to law reform, the feminist movement has spawned a number of victim service and prevention efforts, including rape crisis centers, hot lines, improved public lighting, nighttime safety transit systems, and rape avoidance and self-defense training. Self-defense training has been particularly controversial because it has challenged the conventional advice given to women, which encouraged them not to resist if attacked but to submit to rape in order to avoid further harm (Hazelwood & Harpold 1986; Storaska 1975). At most, this advice recommended pleading or reasoning with the assailant. Feminists, on the other hand, have generally encouraged women to fight back (Bart & O'Brien 1985; Delacoste & Newman 1981; Searles & Berger 1995).

Many studies now indicate that immediate active resistance (e.g., yelling, fighting, running away), and especially the use of multiple resistance strategies, reduce the likelihood that an attempted rape will be completed. Pleading and arguing seem to be less effective unless used in combination with other verbal strategies such as yelling and calling for help (Searles & Berger 1995).

The research is less clear regarding the question of whether resistance increases the likelihood of additional injury (i.e., injury beyond the rape itself). Joan McDermott (1979) found that resisters received greater additional injury than nonresisters, although most of these injuries were of a relatively unserious nature (e.g., bruises, cuts, scratches). Moreover, women who resisted were much less likely to suffer completed rape. Other data indicate that the connection between resistance and additional injury may be related to the type of resistance employed. William Sanders (1980) reported that those who "struggled" (e.g., attempted to push the attacker away) were more likely than those who fought (e.g., hit, bit, kicked), or those who ran away, to incur additional serious injury. Gary Kleck and Susan Sayles (1990) found that weaponless forceful resistance was associated with increased injury, but that this resistance was more likely to *follow* rather than *precede* the injury. They note that some advice-givers counsel nonresistance because a small proportion of "rapists are indeed incited to further violence by victim resistance." However, they conclude:

> The flaw in this reasoning is that it depends on an unstated, but false, premise that nonresistance does not entail any risks of its own. . . . Advice to not resist depends on the belief that the nonresisting rape victim trades off an increased likelihood of rape completion for a reduced likelihood of injury. Such a trade-off makes sense only if one assumes the additional injury is in some sense a more serious harm . . . than the completion of the rape itself. (p. 160)

We think it is unwise to give blanket advice to women about what they *should* do if attacked, as if all attack situations are the same, or to criticize what a woman *did* or *did not* do in a stressful and frightening situation. Nevertheless, teaching women and girls psychological and physical self-defense skills, and nurturing in them a strong sense of self-worth, both broadens the range of options they will have and increases the likelihood they will possess the self-confidence and presence of mind to evaluate their options and act in a way that is in their best interests. Regrettably, as Patricia Rozee and colleagues observe, remedies to sexual violence that are "aimed primarily at behavioral change among women place an unwarranted responsibility on individual women for their own safety. To live a life free of the fear of sexual assault ought to be a right afforded to us by the society in which we live" (1991:351).

Sexual Abuse of Children

According to Ellen Bass, whenever a child is used sexually by an adult, whether or not there is physical force or even the threat of it, coercion is involved: "There can be no equality of power, understanding, or freedom in sex between adults and children. Children are dependent upon adults—first for their survival, then for affection, attention, and an understanding of what the world in which they live is all about" (1983:26–27). Because a child is not capable of giving informed consent to sex, sexual interaction with a child is by definition abuse, an illegal act everywhere in the United States. (We will discuss the issue of *adolescents* as sexual subjects later.)

Issues of legality aside, a child's lack of resistance should not be assumed to indicate willing participation. A child may submit without resistance for many reasons. She (or he) may not want to hurt the perpetrator's feelings. She's been taught to be kind and polite, to obey adults. This may be someone she loves, someone she believes loves her, someone she has learned to trust. She needs and wants attention and affection, and this seems to be the only form in which it is presented. She fears that if she resists, she will be punished or hurt—or someone else will be. She fears that if she resists, the person will say it was her idea or that she liked it and she'll get into trouble. She doesn't know what sex is, doesn't understand that this kind of touch is inappropriate. The perpetrator tells her it's okay,

that everyone does this, shows her pictures of other children engaging in these acts—children who are smiling, children who look happy. The perpetrator says he (or she) knows what's best, tells her he's teaching her. "She is taken by surprise and has no idea what to do; . . . she thinks she has no choice" (p. 27).

The Frequency and Experience of Abuse

Child sexual abuse is distressingly common. Studies provide varying estimates of its prevalence, however, due to divergent research samples and definitions of abuse. Underreporting is also a serious problem. David Knudsen reviewed numerous studies and estimated that "at least 30 percent of girls and 20 percent of boys experience some form of sexual abuse" (1992:112). As we have seen, Randall and Haskell (1995) found even higher percentages of child sexual abuse among the women they interviewed, and over a quarter of the women who reported such abuse said they were abused before age eight. A national US sample of both genders found that 98 percent of girls and 83 percent of boys who are victimized are abused by men (Finkelhor et al. 1990).

Child sexual abuse varies widely, from fleeting encounters to intense incestuous relations. Overall, girls are more likely than boys to be abused by family members, and they tend to experience their first abuse at a younger age (Nelson & Oliver 1998). The duration of abuse also tends to be longer for girls than for boys. Although girls and boys appear equally likely to experience sibling incest, girls are much more likely to experience incestuous abuse by parents. Andrea Nelson and Pamela Oliver (1998) describe incestuous abuse of boys as relatively rare yet traumatic, and usually at the hands of men. Boys' contacts are most commonly with unrelated adults with whom they are acquainted. Nevertheless, some clinicians consider mother-son incest to be very underreported as opposed to very rare (Lawson 1993).

The abuse of children by members of the Catholic clergy and other religious officials has been known for some time, but the scandal did not generate much media attention until recently (Lavoie 2003; Zoll 2004a, 2004b). A study conducted by the John Jay College of Criminal Justice in conjunction with the US Roman Catholic church found that over 10,000 abuse claims involving 4 percent of the US clergy have been made since 1950. Researchers were able to substantiate about 63 percent of these claims, although about 30 percent could not be investigated because the clergymen had died. As much as $1 billion has been paid out by US Catholic churches to settle these abuse claims. In 2003 the Boston Archdiocese alone agreed to pay $85 million to over 500 people who claimed they had been sexually abused by priests, and at least 325 priests were removed from their positions or forced to resign. Since most of the allegations made public have involved priests and teenage boys, a leading Vatican official asserted that

gay men should not be ordained as priests and that those already ordained should be removed from the clergy. This comment led the president of a national gay Catholic group to retort: "This is nothing more than a vicious, transparent attempt to shift the blame in an effort to deny institutional culpability in the scandal. . . . This [abuse] is about violence against children and abuse of power. It has nothing to do with sexual orientation" (quoted in Freiberg 2002:29). In fact, the Catholic Church has for centuries turned "a blind eye to the sexual exploits of priests regardless of their sexual orientation" (Dahir 2002:32). A. W. Richard Sipe, a psychotherapist and former monk who has studied clergy sexuality for over four decades, concludes that "gay priests respect their vows of celibacy in the same proportion as straight priests" (quoted in Feiberg 2002:29). Moreover, as Sipe observes, sexual orientation is hard to categorize, since many priests are psychosexually immature and "haven't really sorted out their sexuality" (p. 30).

The most common form of child sexual abuse overall involves the abuse of a girl by an older male. Bass describes how the experience can shape a child's view of herself and her world:

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Rape and Sexual Harassment in the US Military

In addition to the Catholic Church, the US military has also been in the news for sexual misconduct. The first public reports of this problem occurred during a Tailhook Association convention in Las Vegas, Nevada, in 1991. The Tailhook Association is a nonprofit organization that supports the interests of sea-based aviation such as aircraft carriers. Eighty-three women and seven men who attended the convention reported that they had been sexually assaulted or harassed by their fellow attendees (Spahr Nelson 2002). A subsequent 1995 Defense Department study found that nearly half of women and a third of men in the military reported experiencing "unwanted sexual attention" from military personnel; and 4 percent of women in the Air Force and Coast Guard, 6 percent in the Navy, 8 percent in the Army, and 9 percent in the Marines reported being victims of rape or attempted rape in the previous year alone. A 2003 Defense Department study also found that nearly a third of female veterans seeking health assistance from the Department of Veterans Affairs indicated they had experienced rape or attempted rape while serving in the armed forces; and an Associated Press investigation uncovered more than 80 military recruiters who had been disciplined in 2005 for sexual misconduct (including rape) with potential recruits (Herbert 2008; Mendoza 2006). Additionally, in Iraq, US military personnel and private mercenaries hired by the Pentagon have raped Iraqi women and children and even circulated pornographic photographs of their crimes (Cienfuegos 2004; CNN 2006). Most recently, 37 women serving in Iraq and Kuwait reported being sexually assaulted by fellow troops or superiors (*USA Today* 2008).

> When a man sexually uses a child, he is giving that child a strong message about her world: He is telling her that she is important because of her sexuality, that [sex is what] men want . . . from girls, . . . that relationships are insufficient without sex. He is telling her that she can use her sexuality as a way to get the attention and affection she genuinely needs, that sex is a tool. When he tells her not to tell, she learns there is something about sex that is shameful and bad; and that she, because she is a part of it, is shameful and bad. . . . She learns that the world is . . . not to be trusted, that even those entrusted with her care will betray her; that she will betray herself. (1983:27)

The sense of betrayal is especially intense when the abuser is a family member. In the most commonly reported type of incest, *father-daughter* incest (including incest between stepfathers and stepdaughters), "the father, in effect, forces the daughter to pay with her body for affection and care that should be freely given" (Herman 1981:4). This gross misuse of power shatters the protective bond that should exist between parent and child.

A child who must live with her abuser is a child trapped in an unbearable situation. She must, as Judith Herman observes, "find a way to preserve a sense of trust in people who are untrustworthy, safety in a situation that is unsafe, control in a situation that is terrifyingly unpredictable, [and] power in a situation of helplessness" (1992:96). This is quite a formidable task for anyone, let alone for a child with an undeveloped system of psychological defenses. Adaptation to such a climate requires constant alertness. Abused children tend to become "minutely attuned" to the abuser's state of mind, often developing "extraordinary abilities to scan for warning signs of attack" (pp. 99–100). When they perceive a threat, they almost reflexively try to protect themselves by avoiding the abuser—becoming as inconspicuous as possible, hiding, even running away—or by placating the abuser with demonstrations of obedience, by "trying to be good."

These desperate efforts are never completely successful, however, and the child must live with the knowledge that the most powerful adult in her intimate life is a threat to her and that other adults who should be protecting her, such as her mother, are not. The child experiences this lack of protection as a sign of indifference at best, as complicit betrayal at worst: "From the child's point of view, the parent disarmed by secrecy should have known; if she cared enough, she would have found out. The parent disarmed by intimidation should have intervened; if she cared enough, she would have fought. The child feels that she has been abandoned to her fate, and this abandonment is often resented more keenly than the abuse itself" (p. 100).

To avoid utter despair, the abused child desperately seeks to preserve faith in her parents and a sense of attachment to them. She resorts to a variety of psychological defenses as she struggles to construct an account of her fate that will absolve one or both parents of responsibility and blame. Sometimes she "tries to keep the abuse a secret from herself." She uses

denial, suppression of thoughts, and dissociative states to wall the abuse off "from conscious awareness and memory," so she can believe that "it did not really happen." Or else she "minimize[s], rationalize[s], and excuse[s], so that whatever did happen was not really abuse." In either case, Herman notes, when the child cannot alter or escape "the unbearable reality in fact," she resorts to altering it "in her mind." Although these alterations of consciousness are sometimes deliberate, they often become habitual. When the abuse is prolonged as well as early and severe, some children even "form separated personality fragments [or alter egos] with their own names, psychological functions, and sequestered memories." These alter egos, sometimes called multiple personalities, enable the child "to cope resourcefully with the abuse while keeping both the abuse and the coping strategies outside of ordinary awareness" (pp. 102–103).

Reality, however, cannot always be avoided by dissociation. So at times the child attempts to make sense of the abuse by blaming herself. This not only serves to justify the abuse but also enables the child "to preserve a sense of meaning, hope, and power. If she is bad, then her parents are good. If she is bad, then she can try to be good." If she tries hard enough, maybe her parents will forgive her and start treating her with kindness and concern. Unfortunately, her belief in her innate badness is likely to be reinforced by parental blame, by her own understandable rage or aggressive response to mistreatment, by her "participation in forbidden sexual activity," and by any "enforced complicity in crimes against others"—for instance, if she was silent about another child being abused (pp. 103–104).

The abuse of boys. Most studies of adult-child sex ask respondents about "unwanted" or "abusive" experiences. However, Nelson and Oliver (1998) maintain that adolescents can sometimes be "sexual subjects" with adults, not just sexual objects or victims. Conceptualizing consent/coercion as a continuum rather than as an either/or phenomenon, Nelson and Oliver chose to avoid "abuse language" when they asked over 900 Wisconsin undergraduates the following screening question: *"When you were 15 years or younger, did you experience sexual contact with an adult?"* (Adults were defined as 18 years or older.)

Among the cases where there was at least a four-year gap between the child and adult, Nelson and Oliver found that 98 percent of girls' contacts were with men and 69 percent of boys' contacts were with women (this percentage of woman-boy contacts is higher than is usually found in studies that use abuse language). Adult-girl contacts were more common than adult-boy contacts, and girls' experiences were much more likely than boys' to be repeated and incestuous. Although *both boys and girls* usually defined their contacts with *men* as coercive and harmful, *boys* often defined their contacts with *women* as consensual and not harmful. What was crucial for

most respondents was "whether the adult 'asked' or persuaded the child into sexual activity rather than 'taking,' unilaterally initiating sexual activity without trying to gain the child's cooperation" (p. 568). Generally speaking, women were more likely to "ask," men to "take." But even when manipulated and dominated by a woman, boys over age 10 tended to report feeling that "their sense of masculine potency had been enhanced in the encounter" (p. 573). In spite of the fact that US laws increasingly define sexual abuse in gender-neutral terms, Nelson and Oliver conclude:

> The constructions of masculine and feminine are so strong as to make it impossible for sexual contact between women and boys to have the same social meaning . . . as contact between men and girls. Dominance in woman-boy contacts is less straightforward than in man-girl contacts. [And] the sexual exploitation of a boy by a woman may not be experienced by the boy or seen by others as status-reducing victimization, but rather as status-enhancing "sex with a woman." (p. 560)

Although it is important to note that most of the woman-boy contacts reported in this study involved *adolescent* males and relatively *young* women (under 22 years), some of the males who had defined their woman-boy contacts as not harmful did reveal some confusion and tension as they attempted to evaluate whether they had been *less* masculine because they had been subordinate and dominated, or *more* masculine because they had exhibited virility at an early age. Some of the respondents may have been attempting to put the best possible face on incidents experienced as ambivalent if not outright distressful.

Mike Lew (1990) argues that woman-boy sexual activity is rarely treated as abusive and that boys who attempt to talk about their pain or confusion often find that their experience is ignored, denied, trivialized, or even romanticized, written off as initiation into manhood or "scoring." Males, after all, are expected to be sexual aggressors, to be "strong enough to protect themselves against unwanted attention from . . . the 'weaker sex'" (p. 58). Hence they may try to redefine their experiences so that they better fit the perceptions of others, even to the extent of joking or bragging about them. A society that confuses sexual abuse with sex places the boy "in a powerful double bind. If he enjoyed the experience, then it wasn't abusive. If he didn't, he must be homosexual." Moreover, since it's shameful for a male "to admit not having enjoyed any form of sex with a woman," the victim is expected to enjoy his victimization. And if the perpetrator is male, the boy is often presumed likely to become gay, if not thought likely to be so already. So in addition to dealing with the experience of exploitation, survivors often find themselves confronting societal homophobia (see Chapter 5). If they define themselves as heterosexual (or haven't yet thought much about sexual orientation), they may wonder, "Does this *mean* I'm gay?" If

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Rape of Adult Men

Because rape is most often a crime against women, it is common for people to presume that men are rarely raped. The *National Violence Against Women Survey,* however, indicates that about 92,700 adult men are raped each year in the United States, primarily by other men, and that about 3 percent of men have experienced attempted or completed rape at some point in their life (Tjaden & Thoennes 1998a). Just as fear of homophobic response silences boys who have been sexually abused, it also silences men who have been raped, regardless of sexual orientation. Knowing that heterosexual victims might not want to be presumed gay and that gay victims might not want to be outed, offenders often try to get their victims to ejaculate in order to discourage them from reporting the crime. That strategy is often effective, for although one can have an involuntary sexual response during a coerced encounter, ejaculation often confuses the victim and makes him feel complicitous. Responses of others frequently compound the problem. Police often ask, "Did you come?" and friends want to know how the victim could "let something like this happen" (Pelka 1995:251).

Another misperception about rape is the assumption that a man who rapes another man must be gay or bisexual. But rape is often a way to exert control, to confirm one's "own power by disempowering others" (Pelka 1995:251). Overcoming another man—rather than a woman or a child—and perhaps forcing an undesired sexual response, can make a man, regardless of his sexual orientation, feel especially powerful. Likewise, being victimized, being taken and used, can make a man feel like a traitor to his gender, since he no longer fits our culture's "definition of masculinity, as one empowered, one always in control." Rape survivor Fred Pelka encourages other male survivors to challenge this "specious definition" by breaking their silence (1995:256).

they define themselves as gay, they may wonder, "Is this *why* I'm gay?" or "Did this happen to me *because* I'm gay?" (p. 55). Girls exploited by women may struggle with these questions as well.

Women and abuse. Various studies indicate that about 80 to 95 percent of reported child abuse *cases* are committed by males, and about 10 percent of *abusers* are female. Although some females participate in abuse that has been initiated by someone else, usually a male partner whom they want to please or are afraid to displease, many act alone. Compared to male offenders, it appears that the duration of abuse is less for female offenders and the number of victims per offender is lower. Female offenders are also more likely to know their victims and less likely to use violence during the abuse (Jennings 1994).

Unfortunately, our recognition of female abusers has been seriously

impeded by stereotypic gender assumptions—women are the gentle sex, women aren't sexually aggressive, mothers are naturally nurturing, and so forth. But women's traditional role as caregivers provides them with not only considerable opportunity to abuse but also considerable ability to hide their crimes, since many childcare activities are performed in private. In addition, mothers more frequently engage in the kinds of sexual activities that are less likely to be reported, such as fondling or caressing children sexually, or keeping their children tied to them emotionally with implied promises of sexual gratification. A mother's sleeping with a child is also more common and less likely to raise eyebrows than a father's (Justice & Justice 1979).

Sometimes an adult female survivor of child abuse ends up in a relationship where her daughter is being abused by the mother's partner. Although this occurrence may be "simply a function of the greater numbers of women and children who are victims of sexual abuse," it is not uncommon for this mother to be blamed for the inappropriate behavior of her mate (Conte 1986:117). She is assumed to be unconsciously replicating the abusive pattern through her choice of a partner and her dysfunctional relationship with her daughter. Her lack of awareness of her daughter's abuse is said "to serve the denial she maintains about her own painful childhood experiences" (Green 1996:326). Judith Herman acknowledges that some survivors (like some parents without abusive pasts) fail to protect their children, but she also notes that survivors "are often able to mobilize caring and protective capacities [for the sake of their children] that they have never been able to extend to themselves" (1992:114). In any event, the mother's past history cannot be considered a cause of her partner's present abuse.

The restigmatization of mothers who are survivors goes hand-in-hand with the misdirection of blame toward all mothers who live in families where father-daughter incest occurs. Mothers deemed "incapable of intimacy" have been said to produce "rejected, emotionally needy daughter[s]" who are "vulnerable target[s] for the advances of sexually needy father[s]" (Green 1996:326). Mothers judged to have "immature dependency needs" have been criticized for "unconsciously delegating" their sexual responsibilities to their daughters. In addition, mothers have been described as harboring a "masochistic need to be . . . martyr[ed]" or as "unconsciously sanction[ing] . . . incest behavior to promote [their] own sense of superiority" (pp. 324–325). One way or another, father-daughter incest has often been passed off "as a family problem that is the result of the selfish and irresponsible behavior of a dysfunctional mother" (Jacobs 1990:502).

We are not suggesting that mothers never miss clues of abuse, never dismiss suspicions by telling themselves that "he'd never do something like that" or "I'm just being paranoid." We must remember, however, that mothers are not the perpetrators of father-daughter incest. As Ellen Bass and

Laura Davis observe, "Regardless of how inadequate a mother may have been, no behavior on her part is license for any man to sexually abuse a child" (1988:125).

Adult Survivors of Abuse

Herman (1992) notes that the sense of inner badness felt by survivors of child sexual abuse is hard to shed even as an adult, although it's frequently camouflaged by a woman's persistent efforts to be good at whatever task she undertakes. She will likely have difficulty fully crediting herself for her achievements, since she often perceives her "performing self" as false and inauthentic and nurses the belief that those who praise her don't know her "secret and true self" (p. 106).

Many survivors are also dogged by chronic anxiety and depression that initially developed during childhood in response to the repeated traumas. Some find that their dissociative defenses occasionally go too far, producing not the desired feeling of detachment (which helps to brunt some of the pain), but "a sense of complete disconnection from others and disintegration of the self." Many learn as children that they can most effectively end this disconnected state by "a major jolt to the body," by deliberately inflicting physical injury on themselves (e.g., burning or cutting). The physical pain, which is often not felt at first, seems "preferable to the emotional pain it replaces," and the self-abuse continues "until it produces a powerful feeling of calm and relief." This behavior may well continue in adulthood and is sometimes mistaken for attempted suicide. Many who practice it, however, "consider it a form of self-preservation," since it relieves "unbearable emotional pain." Other self-destructive "soothing mechanisms" used by survivors include "purging and vomiting, compulsive sexual behavior, compulsive risk-taking or exposure to danger, and the use of psychoactive drugs" (pp. 108–109).

Herman also found that survivors frequently fall into a pattern of intimate relationships that are intense yet unstable. They hunger for love and nurturance but are fearful of exploitation or abandonment, of the "vulnerability that is inherent in sustained intimacy" (Briere 1992:67). Survivors often have unrealistic expectations of a partner, and their "old tapes" of abuse and betrayal make it easy for them to overreact, become enraged, or become anxious or depressed in response to what are inevitable and ordinary interpersonal conflicts.

In addition, childhood sexual abuse survivors are at substantial risk of further victimization as adults. In fact, the risk of rape, sexual harassment, or battering is approximately doubled for survivors (Russell 1986). Many factors make it difficult for a survivor to protect herself in intimate relationships. Since her capacity for empathy has developed in a context where the feelings of the abuser have taken precedence, she is highly attuned to the

wishes of others and highly practiced in more or less automatic conformity to them. Her diminished self-esteem undercuts her faith in her own judgment, her reliance on dissociative defenses leads her "to ignore or minimize social cues that would ordinarily alert [one] to danger," and her longing to be cared about and cared for make it hard for her to set appropriate boundaries with others (Herman 1992:112). As "R.C." acknowledged, "I approached each man from a place of need. I gave my 'self' in return for love" (Bass & Thornton 1983:103). In fact, observes Bass, sexual abuse teaches children "that they have no rights to their bodies" (1983:45).

Sometimes a survivor may feel compelled "to relive the dangerous situation [in hopes of making] it come out right," of understanding or getting beyond the abuse (Herman 1992:111). "Lara," for example, who was repeatedly sodomized by her grandfather when she was a child, learned to switch off her feelings during the abuse. Now as an adult, Lara can't *feel* the love she has for people she is close to and she resents her grandfather "for taking away [her] capacity for emotion" (quoted in Russell 1995:90–91). She explained why she sometimes initiates sodomy with a lover in spite of the fact that she finds it painful: "In replaying my past . . . I think I'm trying to get back to the feelings I had when I was little so that I can somehow reclaim something that I lost because of the abuse." Lara described herself as sexually promiscuous and said that "the only time I feel at all is when I'm making love."

Although some survivors, like Lara, have trouble feeling emotion, others can't experience sexual pleasure, as they feel numb during sex or are unable to "stay in" their bodies (Bass & Davis 1988). For some, sexual interactions produce a general sense of terror or trigger flashbacks to the abuse. Thus it is not uncommon for survivors to become either "sexually withdrawn" or "indiscriminately sexually active" (Klein & Chao 1995:72). But what seem to be opposite poles aren't necessarily so. As Lara said, "Being promiscuous doesn't mean you're loving sex to bits" (Russell 1995:90).

When sexual abuse has been paired with affection, a survivor often comes to see sex as the means to attention and love. Lara's grandfather would stroke her hair, cuddle and kiss her, give her the kind of physical affection her parents never did. He was always telling her how special she was, and when he raped and sodomized her, he'd say, "I'm only doing this because I love you so much." This cruel exploitation of a child's need for approval was a highly effective means of control. As Lara explained, "I came to feel I was so special to him because he abused me." Although Lara now understands intellectually that her grandfather was the perpetrator, she acknowledges, like so many survivors, that "the real me inside thinks it was my fault. . . . I have a feeling of guilt, of being naughty. It must have been something about me . . . that made my grandfather rape and abuse me." The legacy of the abuse for

Lara is her feeling that she deserves to be hurt and her inability to shake some very self-destructive habits (Russell 1995:80, 92).

Dworkin and MacKinnon (1988) estimate that 65 to 75 percent of women in prostitution are survivors of child sexual abuse. Other researchers suggest that being "used sexually at an early age in a way that produces guilt, shame, and loss of self-esteem . . . [is] likely to lessen one's resistance to viewing oneself as a salable commodity" (James & Meyerding 1977:41). Lara, who has had several extramarital affairs, considers herself a "whore" and admits she probably would have worked as a prostitute had she not gotten married. "Being good in bed has always been my identity," she said, "because that's what I've known for longer than I've known anything else. . . . I've been trained to be a whore." Not only did Lara's grandfather instruct her from the age of four in sexual acts, but he also made her sit with her legs spread and pose seductively like the women in the pornography he showed her. Posing provocatively is automatic for her now: "It's like being a circus animal. If you train them hard enough, they'll remember what they have to do" (Russell 1995:87).

After Lara's grandfather abused her, he would give her sweets or presents. Over time she realized she had something he wanted and that she could manipulate to get more from him in return. Being able to manipulate him made her feel proud and gave her a sense of power in a very powerless situation. But this sense of power had a price. When she thinks about it today, she feels as if her grandfather *bought* her, and she feels very cheap indeed. Nevertheless, Lara continues to expect men to give her gifts as payment for sex, although she acknowledges that this shows that she still feels used when she has sex. And the sense of power she gets from "trying to be the best lay in town," from making men obsess over her, can't begin to compensate for feeling used, for feeling like "absolute shit" (pp. 95–96).

Many practicing prostitutes describe a similar sense of "power." According to Diana Russell, however, "Such transient emotional 'power' does not . . . enable them to redress the exploitative imbalance of actual power relations in prostitution" (1995:96). A prostitute with an abusive past "may place her need for affection above the abuse" her pimp dishes out (Barry 1979:102). Physical contact with another human being is, after all, a form of needed recognition, one that "breaks the agonizing loneliness." It's not that she desires or seeks out abuse, but, like the tricks he makes her turn, it is the price she pays for his attention and affection. It's not that she finds prostitution sexually liberating. It's that for so long she's been treated like a throwaway, someone to be used and abused, so that's the only perception of herself and her body she has.

Finally, although it is widely believed that one generation's sexually victimized children become the next generation's victimizers, Douglas Pryor (1996) thinks that the relationship between being the victim of child

sexual abuse and subsequent involvement in child molestation or rape is far from conclusive. Studies of identified sex offenders do find such an association, and **pedophiles** who sexually abuse boys are especially likely to have a history of childhood sexual trauma (Herman 1988). Pedophiles are "individuals whose maturation has not developed to enable effective adult relationships" and who thus have strong sexual preferences for children (Knudsen 1992:116). Nevertheless, the majority of child abuse victims do not become perpetrators. As Herman observes, "Survivors of childhood abuse are far more likely to be victimized or to harm themselves than to victimize other people" (1992:113).

Battering of Women

Research has found that about one in four women has been physically assaulted by an intimate partner at some time in her life (Randall & Haskell 1995; Tjaden & Thoennes 1998a). Confronting this violence, undermining it, is an uphill battle in a culture that normalizes, even eroticizes, violence. A *Hustler* magazine photo titled "Battered Wives" illustrates this eroticization of violence: A man in a chef's hat and apron has just pulled a naked woman out of a large mixing bowl. There he stands, holding the woman by the neck with a pair of tongs, her body dripping with gooey batter. The caption reads:

> This photo shows why it's no wonder that wife-beating has become one of society's stickiest problems! But today's liberated women should have expected this kind of response when they decided that men should do more of the domestic chores like cooking. Still, there's absolutely no excuse for doing something this bad. Now he's going to have to beat her just to smooth out all those lumps. (cited in Russell 1993a:41)

The eroticization of violence permeates not only pornography but also advertising, song lyrics, music videos, movies, comic books, video games, and the like—virtually all forms of entertainment. Even Alex Comfort, a physician no less, tells us in his best-selling book *The New Joy of Sex: The Gourmet Guide to Lovemaking for the Nineties* that while "normal resentments" often build up between two people who live together, violent sex "tends to discharge them" (1991:98–99).

When sexual aggression is normalized, it is common to write off abuse or even murder as a "crime of passion." In 1989, a New York City Police Department officer, Felix Key, dragged Jean Singleton into the street, riddled her body with bullets, and then killed himself as well. Singleton had been attempting to end their relationship because Key was extremely overprotective and jealous. Although the NYPD had previously disciplined Key for holding another woman at gunpoint and threatening her, the department's official spokesperson refrained from using the word "murder,"

instead describing "the killings as 'a lover's quarrel between the two of them'" (Jones 1994:125). And the front-page headline of the *New York Post* read: "Tragedy of a Love Sick Cop"—language that trivializes the murder and practically invites us to sympathize with the killer.

The Experience of Battering

According to Ann Jones, the fusion of violence with love and sex gives an aggressive man "an excuse for assault: 'I did it because I love you so much'" (1994:121–122). And it gives a victimized woman an explanation that can snare her into being compassionate and forgiving about her own abuse, keeping her stuck in the relationship, hoping against hope that things will work out. Although Lisa Bianco had divorced her battering husband, Al Matheney, that didn't stop him from breaking into her house to beat and rape her. Matheney explained to Bianco that he was doing it because he loved her. Bianco wanted him prosecuted, because, as she said, "If I don't do something, it's just going to happen again" (quoted in Jones 1994:43). Matheney was convicted of assault, although the rape charge was dropped after a probation consultant told the court that the two "very possibly could have been having a wonderful social affair with sex involved" (p. 119). At the sentencing hearing, Matheney's attorney explained to the judge: "Mr. Matheney . . . could never let go of this woman. . . . Just to call it love would be wrong. Although I'm sure that's what Al perceives it as. I perceive it as an obsession. A love obsession." Two years later, Al Matheney, released on furlough, clubbed Lisa Bianco 20 times with a stolen shotgun, busting "the gun into three pieces and smashing [her] head to bits" (p. 44). Why did he do it? "Because he still loved her" (p. 119).

If abuse or even murder can be "love gone wrong," characterizing an assault as sexually motivated opens the door to dismissing it as "rough sex" that somehow got out of hand. Even when force is clearly involved, it is sometimes said that "*they* got 'carried away' with sex" (Jones 1994:115). If the victim can't be discredited on the witness stand, can't be convincingly portrayed as "that kind of woman," perhaps the jury can be made to feel sorry for the poor sex-obsessed fellow. As Dworkin reports:

> On the same day the police who beat Rodney King were acquitted in Simi Valley, a white husband who had raped, beaten, and tortured his wife, also white, was acquitted for marital rape in South Carolina. He had kept her tied to a bed for hours, her mouth gagged with adhesive tape. He videotaped a half hour of her ordeal, during which he cut her breasts with a knife. The jur[ors] . . . saw the videotape. Asked why they acquitted, they said he needed help. . . . There were no riots afterward. (1997:49)

Abuse is disguised not only by the "language of love" but also by the label "domestic violence," a euphemism that keeps us dispassionately dis-

tant from the "repugnant spectacle" of human suffering (Jones 1994:81, 106). Advocates for battered women seeking funding for their services originally used this term to avoid offending men who controlled the distribution of funds. So effective was the label at hiding the reality of woman battering that when congressional legislation titled the "Domestic Violence Act" was proposed in 1978 to fund services for battered women, it was mistaken by many to be legislation aimed at combating political terrorism.

We prefer the term **battering**, which David Adams defines as "controlling behavior that serves to create and maintain an imbalance of power" between the batterer and the person being battered (1988:191–192). Adams argues that a violent act is "any act that causes the victim to do something she does not want to do, prevents her from doing something she wants to do, or causes her to be afraid." Adams believes that violence does not have to entail "physical contact with the victim," since the intimidation of such things as "punching walls, verbal threats, and psychological abuse" can have the same effect. Psychological abuse, "behavior that directly undermines the self-determination or self-esteem" of the victim, is especially powerful when paired with physical violence, because "covert controls" are reminders of the potential for additional violence. Swearing, shouting, sulking, or spewing accusations are particularly frightening and effective when "'reinforced' by periodic or even occasional violence." Jones adds that "battering is not a series of isolated blow-ups. It is a *process of deliberate intimidation intended to coerce the victim to do the will of the victimizer.* . . . The batterer is not just losing his temper, not just suffering from stress, not just manifesting "insecurity" or a spontaneous reaction "provoked" by something the victim did. . . . These are excuses for violence" that are effective at convincing the woman to give him another chance (1994:88–89). He's not a bad man, she tells herself. He didn't mean it. He wasn't himself. But of course he *was* himself. He wasn't out of control. He was "exercising control."

Although battering husbands are often traditionalists who believe in male superiority and men's right to head the family (Pagelow 1984), Linda Gordon's historical research on four decades of family violence in Boston found that batterers were "not ideologues defending the dominance of their sex. . . . [They were men who] were using violence to increase their control over particular women, defending real material benefits" (1988:286–287). The "sense of entitlement" these men had "was so strong it was experienced as a need." Then, as now, disappointment of their expectations—a hot meal, a cold beer, a tidy house, an ironed shirt, well-behaved kids, sex *now*—meant punishment, lessons the little lady had better learn *once and for all.*

But even the apologies the batterer may make when he thinks his punishment "got out of hand" or "went too far" are designed to control. He pleads:

Physical and emotional abuse of women by intimate partners is an all-too-common occurrence in contemporary society.

> I'm sorry. I didn't mean to hit you so hard. You just get me so mad. I'm sorry. I didn't mean those things I said—it was just the booze talking. You know I love you. I'm sorry. I just had such a bad day. I didn't mean to hurt you. Why did you make me do that? Don't you know I'm *trying* to control my temper. I'm sorry. I just can't take it when you dress like that and men look you up and down. You're *my* woman after all. Who do they think they are? Who do *you* think you are? I'm sorry. You know I love you. Why can't you just do what I say? I'm sorry. I'll try not to get so angry. You know I can't live without you.

Although the apologies are often intermingled with blame or denial, the professed remorse and promise of reform can be seductive indeed. Dubbed by psychologists as the **honeymoon phase**, these periods of supposed repentance can lull women into letting their guard down (Walker 1979). Although women often mistake these periods for love, they "are not respites from battering, as they appear, but part of the coercive process, pressuring women to forgive and forget, to minimize and deny, to *submit,* and thus to appear complicitous" (Jones 1994:93).

Many women who are in abusive relationships, however, do not consider themselves to be "battered women." The notion of a battered woman conjures up images of helpless victims beaten down by more or less constant physical assaults. Women who have endured abuse appreciate the incredible vigilance, courage, and self-discipline it takes to survive day after day, and they often see themselves as strong women who somehow manage to cope. Living in an atmosphere of persistent threat, with violence both capricious

and inevitable, a woman hems herself in. She "may give up bits and pieces of herself: her preferences, her opinions, her voice, her friends, her job, her freedom of movement, her sexual autonomy. She may learn to lie, or at least to keep the truth to herself. She may learn to say that sex was good when it wasn't, or that she's sorry when she's not. Unable ever to give the 'right' answer, she may retreat into silence" (Jones 1994:94). Her apparent passivity is often mistaken for submission, even masochism, but she doesn't give in. She lies low—at first while she attempts to make some sense of what's happening, then while she tries one thing after another to get him to change. Finally, when she realizes that nothing she does to appease him will stop the abuse, she lies low while she contemplates leaving, checks out her options, perhaps—with tremendous determination and at enormous risk—squirrels away a dollar here, a dollar there for that "ticket to freedom."

A woman's gradual decision to leave an abusive relationship is significantly affected by her economic resources and access to social support networks and services (Choice & Lamke 1997; Goetting 1999; Kirkwood 1993). When she finally does try to leave, she will likely face an escalation of the violence, sometimes with lethal consequences (Stanko 1997). The batterer will often think, "If I can't have her, no one will." In fact, Dworkin notes that "more battered women are killed after they leave than before" (1997:43). So if guilt, shame, love, pity, poverty, tattered self-esteem, sense of duty, family pressure, religious obligation, the specter of homelessness, the questions that ring in her ears—What will the *kids* do without a dad? What will *he* do without me?—don't keep her stuck, fear often will.

In 1989, Nicole Brown Simpson asked the police to arrest her husband, O.J. Simpson. It was the *ninth* time the police had been called, but the first time he was arrested. One wonders how many beatings women have to endure before the violence is taken seriously. Nicole's divorce was finalized in 1992. But although she had escaped her marriage, she had not escaped the task of negotiating her safety, as O.J. continued to intimidate, threaten, stalk, and assault her. What O.J. called his "desire for reconciliation" was for Nicole pure hell. This is commonly part of the torment of "escape" for a battered woman: "Freedom is near but [the abuser] will not let [her] have it" (Dworkin 1997:43–44).

A few months before Nicole was murdered, she told her mother, "I'm scared. . . . I go to the gas station, he's there. I go to the Payless Shoe Store, . . . he's there. I'm driving, and he's behind me" (quoted in Dworkin 1997:45). Nicole told her sister Denise, among others, that she expected O.J. to kill her and get away with it. Much of the evidence of her fear and despair, however, was called "hearsay" and excluded from her ex-husband's criminal trial. Nicole did what many abused women do: she tried to leave a trail. She kept a diary in which she carefully recorded descriptions of numerous physical assaults. And five days before that June 1994 night,

when Nicole and her friend Ronald Goldman were brutally and repeatedly stabbed—Nicole's throat was slashed so deeply that she was almost decapitated—she phoned a shelter for battered women, terrified that O.J. was going to kill her. The jury was never informed of this call nor allowed to hear excerpts from her diary. Why? Because Nicole could not be cross-examined. All told, most of the evidence of stalking and beating—from 1977 to May 1994—was excluded from the trial.

What else could Nicole have done? Killed O.J.? Since most battered women who kill their abusers go to prison, that is a risky proposition for any woman, let alone for one who takes a celebrity-hero's life (Jones 1994). Besides, Nicole had two young children she would have wanted to see grow up. The average sentence for a woman who kills her mate is 15 to 20 years (for a man it's 2 to 6) (Gibbs 1993). Couldn't Nicole have taken her children and gone into hiding? Even if she was willing to leave her home, her family and friends, all that was familiar, could she possibly have prevailed? Dworkin (1997) thinks not. With O.J.'s wealth and power, he would have hired investigators to hunt her down and "a dream team of lawyers . . . [to take] her children from her." Knowing that "she couldn't prevail . . . [Nicole] did what the therapists said: be firm, draw a line. . . . He could come to the recital but not sit with her or go to dinner with her family. . . . She did what most battered women do: kept up the appearance of normality" and waited for him to make his next move (p. 49).

About a year after Nicole and Ron were killed, a housekeeper at the home of another football celebrity dialed 911 in Missouri City, Texas. Felicia Moon had fled in a car "in fear of her life," and her husband, Warren Moon, had taken off after her in hot pursuit (Hill 1997:172). When Felicia returned to the house, she explained to the police that Warren "had strangled her to the point where she 'saw black.'" Felicia allowed the police "to take pictures of her scratches and . . . bruises," but she said that she "did not want to press charges . . . at that time." Moon was arrested nevertheless. At his trial, Felicia testified that she had initiated "the violence by throwing a candleholder" and that the housekeeper had mistaken Warren's efforts "to calm her for aggression" (p. 174). The photographed scratches, she explained, could have been from her own fingernails. Moon was found not guilty.

As a black woman married to a famous black man, Felicia was confronted with a special dilemma, a dilemma that invariably influenced her decision to cast herself as the aggressor. Felicia had to save her husband's reputation "not only for himself but for the entire African American community" (p. 178). Warren Moon was a positive role model for African Americans, and Felicia "ultimately decided that the loss of her reputation would be less damaging to her standing in the community than would be her disloyalty to a black male hero." Black men have had a long history of suffering from white people's injustice, and her acknowledgment of intraracial

battery would win Felicia no points from African Americans. As Joyce King, a black woman who directs a shelter for battered women in Boston, said: "Those of us who want to have a dialogue about [battery] are frozen out. When I try to talk to black women about the problem, they tell me that we have to be careful what we say and how we say it . . . because of how black men are treated in society. . . . Race is more important than gender" (quoted in Hill 1997:183). Thus, after the Moon trial, one juror commented that Felicia's "injuries were typical of those found in any marriage," a sad commentary on Felicia's sacrifice and on the public's ease at trivializing abuse (p. 186).

Partner Abuse in Gay and Lesbian Relationships

It is not just partners in heterosexual relationships who experience the problem of battering. Research indicates that the rate of violence in gay and lesbian relationships is comparable to the rate in heterosexual ones. And as in heterosexual relationships, once violence occurs, it tends to recur and to escalate in severity over time (Brand & Kidd 1986; Island & Letellier 1991; Renzetti 1992).

In addition to the kinds of physical, psychological, and sexual abuse that are part and parcel of battery, Barbara Hart (1986) maintains that there is an additional kind of coercion that is available to gay and lesbian batterers: **homophobic control**. Homophobic control of partners is possible because our society is homophobic and because gays and lesbians sometimes internalize the antigay prejudice they grow up with. Examples of homophobic control include threatening to tell the victim's family, friends, or employer that he or she is gay or lesbian; informing the partner that he or she "has no options because the homophobic world will not help" them; insisting that they deserve to be abused because of their sexual orientation; and telling a lesbian partner that no one will believe she has been battered because lesbians just aren't violent (p. 189).

One common but false assumption that many people make is that it is relatively easy for gays and lesbians to break up, since they are not legally married. However, the deep emotional attachments and strong personal commitments that gays and lesbians develop make it difficult for them to leave abusive partners. They may also share a home and jointly own property that they stand to lose, and their financial loss may not be recoverable through legal action. Turning to relatives for financial or emotional support is often difficult or impossible if they are uncomfortable "coming out" to them or if they already have strained or severed relationships due to conflicts over their sexual orientation. They may not feel welcome at shelters or services designed for heterosexual women, and they may not reside in an area where the relatively few programs created specifically for gays or lesbians exist. The gay or lesbian community where they live might also be

quite limited, and they may know few if any others who are "out." Thus they may consider their current partner their only source of support or their only possible lover. And if a gay man's battering partner has AIDS, he may feel incredibly guilty leaving him. If *he* is the one with AIDS, he may be highly dependent on his abuser for physical assistance and financial support (Hammond 1986; Letellier 1996; Renzetti 1996).

Pam Elliott (1996) argues that partner abuse is a power issue. Some people, she believes, will abuse their partners if "given the opportunity to get away with [it] . . . because they hunger for control over some part of their lives." Just as "some heterosexual men abuse their partners because they can get away with it in our sexist society, . . . some lesbians and gay men abuse their partners because they can get away with it in our homophobic society" (pp. 3–4).

Unfortunately, the power dynamic in gay and lesbian partner abuse is not always recognized. When survivors of abuse seek help, counselors, shelter volunteers, and police officers often wrongly assume that since both persons are the same sex, the situation is one of *mutual* battering. According to Connie Burk, the executive director of the Seattle-based Advocates for Abused and Battered Lesbians, when officers can't figure out who the abuser is, it's not uncommon for the abused partner to be arrested if "they're bigger or more butch" (quoted in Friess 1999:294). And it's not just ignorance or homophobic attitudes that impede justice. In some states, laws against battering do not even cover same-sex intimate cohabitants (Wallace 1999). Given these additional hurdles, it is not surprising that gays and lesbians are generally less likely than heterosexuals to report partner abuse to the police.

Dealing with Battering

Previously we noted the controversy and inconclusive findings surrounding the policy of mandatory arrest of women batterers: whether the policy effectively sends a message that abuse won't be tolerated, or whether it makes matters worse by making some offenders more angry and hostile toward their accusers (see Chapter 2). Nonintervention is clearly no solution, however, for the batterer will not stop on his (or her) own. Law enforcement needs to be part of the remedy, for some abusers who are determined to hurt their partners may be "deterred by nothing except confinement" (Stanko 1997:634).

Nevertheless, even with laws against battering on the books in every state, getting them applied when a man attacks his wife rather than his employer or neighbor—his fellow man—has been an uphill battle. Police officers, reluctant to look behind the curtain of privacy that has traditionally shielded family matters from public scrutiny, have hesitated to arrest when men continue to claim their ancient privilege to "chastise" their wives; and

prosecutors and judges, afraid of breaking up families, have sat on their hands (see Chapter 1). Often, as Ann Jones points out,

> each branch of the criminal justice system . . . evades its duty by blaming another branch. Police say there's no point in making arrests when prosecutors won't prosecute, and prosecutors in turn say they can't prosecute when (a) police don't arrest, or (b) judges won't sentence anyway. Judges say that women waste the court's time. Blaming the victim allows everyone . . . to pass the buck; and buckpassing conveniently enables individuals within the system to acknowledge a problem without doing anything about it. They'd like to help, but . . . what can they do? . . . Why doesn't she just leave? (1994:145)

It bears underscoring the fact that it is not the woman but the battering partner who is the problem. Research is showing that "batterers vary in their ability to desist, in their techniques of control, in their patterns of dangerousness, and ultimately, in their lethality" (Ellis & DeKeseredy 1997:597). If paired with legal sanctions, **batterer intervention programs** (especially if begun early) may be effective in interrupting some abusers' battering. Those most likely to respond to batterer intervention programs are **sporadic batterers**—that is, those "who are in the first or initial stages of violence progression and who are neither generally violent nor serious alcohol or drug abusers with a lengthy record of criminal and deviant conduct" (p. 597).

The most widely used batterer intervention curriculum is known as the feminist-oriented **Duluth Model**, which was developed by the nonprofit Minnesota Program Development agency in Duluth, Minnesota, in 1981. The goal of the Duluth Model is to transform batterers

> into nonthreatening listeners who are emphatic, honest, accountable, and egalitarian in their parenting, housework, and familial decision making . . . [and] thus to change men from patriarchal authoritarians bent on controlling women into pro-feminist men. . . . Many programs relying on the Duluth Model also incorporate anger-management and skill-building approaches, focusing on improved communication, assertiveness training, and conflict management. (Schrock & Padavic 2007:626)

Regrettably, evaluations of these types of intervention programs have not shown them to be particularly successful in reducing battering. They also give women a false sense of security that the batterers are being reformed, "thereby encouraging them to stay in dangerous relationships" (Schrock & Padavic 2007:627; Austin & Dankwort 1999; Fisher & Gondolf 1988; Holtzworth-Munroe et al. 1995).

In one recent study of an intervention program, Douglas Schrock and Irene Padavic (2007) found that program facilitators were fairly successful in getting batterers to agree to admit responsibility for their actions, use

egalitarian language, and adopt cognitive strategies to control their anger. But the men were resistant to attempts to get them to express emotions and to give up their expectation that "as hardworking men they were entitled to a patriarchal dividend." Moreover, "graduates of the program were as likely as dropouts to continue their violence" (pp. 625–626).

David Adams notes that some facilitators of such intervention programs "collude with batterers by not making their violence the primary issue" or by downplaying the central power dimensions of battering (1988:177). He also suggests that intervention programs that focus on reducing the batterer's stress or improving his anger management and coping skills tend to gloss over the fact that a man who is abusive at home is often quite capable of behaving appropriately if he thinks it's in his interests to do so—with police officers, neighbors, his boss and coworkers, and so forth. That the man is "selectively abusive" indicates that he already has "an established set of control skills" (p. 191). When he is at home, however, he is "at work on his own agenda, which is to train 'his' woman to be what he wants her to be, and only what he wants her to be, all the time" (Jones 1994:89).

Adams favors intervention programs that initially focus on the protection of the batterer's partner, where the man is expected to make "safety plans" in which he commits to "respecting the woman's fears and stated limits about the relationship, fully complying with restraining and vacate orders, eliminating drug or alcohol use if it has accompanied violent behavior, and ceasing any pressure or intimidation tactics intended to change his partner's plans or to deny her contact with others" (1988:192–193). Adams also recommends that batterer intervention programs—or a local program for battered women, if one exists—contact the batterer's partner to inform her of legal protection options and emergency shelter, support, and advocacy services.

While such programs are to be encouraged, they are clearly insufficient. It continues to be important to encourage criminal justice officials to take the problem of battery more seriously. Improved and expanded social, medical, and legal services for battered women and their children are also needed, including childcare and shelters that welcome all comers regardless of sexual orientation (Jones 1994). More generally, social and economic changes that strengthen women's position in society in general and in the family in particular would lessen women's vulnerability and bolster their ability to protect themselves and their children.

PART 3

Criminal Justice and the Search for Solutions

11

The Police and the Courts

IN 1934, MISSISSIPPI SHERIFFS ARRESTED THREE African Americans they suspected of murder. When one of the men denied the charges, the sheriffs hung him by a rope from the limb of a tree. The suspect continued to deny the charges after he was let down, so the sheriffs hung him from the tree again. When he still refused to confess, the sheriffs whipped him severely and told him they would continue to whip him until he confessed. He finally complied, as did the other two suspects, who were also whipped and pummeled. The three men were convicted and sentenced to death solely on the basis of their confessions. When they appealed their cases, the Mississippi Supreme Court upheld their convictions. The US Supreme Court ruled in *Brown v. Mississippi* (1936), however, that confessions elicited by such obvious methods of brutality were inadmissible in court, and the defendants were cleared. Although *Brown v. Mississippi* was a landmark case, it was an easy one by any reasonable standard of justice (Skolnick & Fyfe 1993).

Nearly three decades later, Ernesto Miranda confessed to charges of kidnapping and rape after being interrogated and tricked by Arizona police, who told him he had been identified in a police lineup when in fact he had not been. Miranda, who had a history of psychological problems, had not been allowed to consult an attorney. It was this case that raised the issue of confessions extracted not through physical coercion but through psychological intimidation, when the accused is questioned in a police-dominated atmosphere, often for a long period of time without rest and without legal representation.

In *Miranda v. Arizona* (1966), the US Supreme Court reversed Miranda's conviction, arguing that his Fifth Amendment right against self-incrimination and Sixth Amendment right to an attorney had been violated. The decision ushered in the now famous **Miranda warning** that must be given to a suspect once he or she is taken into police custody. The warning requires that, before questioning suspects, police must inform them that they have the right to remain silent and that any statement they make can and will be used against them in court. Police must also notify suspects that

they have a right to an attorney prior to and during questioning, and that if they are unable to afford an attorney, they have the right to have one appointed by the court. Finally, police must tell suspects that they may stop answering questions at any time.

The Miranda decision, together with related US Supreme Court rulings, has drawn complaints from law-and-order advocates who believe that criminals are being granted so many rights that they are in effect being allowed to go free. Studies indicate, however, that few defendants have had their convictions reversed on the basis of a Miranda appeal. (Miranda himself was retried, without use of his confession, and convicted.) Moreover, the warning is required only for suspects "interrogated" after being taken into custody, not for individuals who are being "interviewed" during an investigation of a crime. And suspects are allowed to waive their Fifth and Sixth Amendment rights, as they often do (Guy & Huckabee 1988; Reid 2006; Skolnick & Fyfe 1993).

The legal decisions that constitute the law of criminal procedure in the United States are complex and many. Rather than review them here, we want to draw your attention to the competing objectives of law enforcement in a democratic society, to the tension between what Herbert Packer (1964) called the **crime control** and **due process models** of criminal justice. Under the crime control model, the repression of criminal conduct is the primary goal. Under the due process model, legal barriers are erected that make it more difficult to move the accused through the criminal justice system, thereby protecting individuals from arbitrary and abusive governmental authority. That due process protections sometimes work to the advantage of criminals is one price we pay for preserving our liberties. Many people feel that such liberties mean little if their safety is jeopardized. But consider the alternative if constitutional guarantees were abandoned. Few of us would want to live in a society that placed no limitations on governmental authority.

The criminal justice system consists of three broad areas: the police, courts, and corrections. This chapter will focus on the police and courts; Chapters 12 and 13 will focus on prisons and community corrections, respectively. In these chapters we will use our sociological imagination to examine the organizational processes that constitute the practice of criminal justice in the United States. We will consider how criminal justice personnel "do justice" through decisions and actions that are constrained—but not entirely dictated—by the formal properties of the legal system that defines their official mandate.

The Modern Police Force

In the United States, the modern police force is a highly decentralized and fragmented system that consists of about 17,700 departments, mostly at the

local level. Policing is primarily a civilian (i.e., nonmilitary) activity that is separated from the legislative and judicial branches of government. There is no national police force with general jurisdiction, although federal agencies like the Federal Bureau of Investigation have jurisdiction over specifically identified federal crimes and over interstate crimes (Gaines & Kappeler 2005).

Historical Background

The modern police force in the United States evolved from the English system imported by the early American colonists. In medieval England during the eleventh century, local police functions were first carried out through an informal system of unpaid citizen volunteers and political appointees. Early English constables were responsible not only for ensuring law and order, but also for services such as garbage collection. The constables were assisted by night watchmen who patrolled the city ringing bells and assuring everyone that "all was well." By the nineteenth century, however, this informal system of policing could not keep pace with the growing problems of crime, social disorder (e.g., public drunkenness and riots), and poverty (e.g., vagrancy and beggary) that accompanied increasing industrialization and urbanization. In 1829 the first full-time, paid, centrally administered police force was established in London (Critchley 1972; Gaines & Kappeler 2005; Lundman 1980).

In colonial America, the **constable-watch system** resembled the informal English model. All males were expected to serve as members of the watch, which carried out both daytime and nighttime patrols. As nineteenth-century US cities began to experience the problems of their English counterparts, a more formal police system emerged. Economic elites supported an expanded police apparatus to quell worker rebellions and clashes between immigrant ethnic groups. According to Sidney Harring (1993), the local police in northern cities were a major antistrike institution employed on behalf of capitalist owners of industry. At the earliest indication of a strike, police would patrol the area and try to prevent workers from "assembling and maintaining an effective picket line" (Harring & McMullin 1975:13). Similarly, in the southern United States the modern police evolved out of a system of citizen slave patrols that were responsible for preventing slave revolts and for retrieving runaway slaves. In 1837 the hundred-member slave patrol in Charleston, South Carolina, was perhaps the largest police force in the entire country (Gaines & Kappeler 2005; Reichel 1999; Shelden 2001; Walker 1992).

Although the official capacity and legitimate authority to use force is central to the police role, firearms did not become standard equipment until late in the nineteenth century. Moreover, the early police did not command much respect from the public. As Samuel Walker observes, "Juvenile gangs made a sport of throwing rocks at the police or taunting them . . . [and peo-

ple] who were arrested often fought back. . . . Officers responded by beating hostile citizens into submission . . . and excessive use of force [was] commonplace" (1992:9). In addition, police corruption was endemic to nineteenth-century policing. Failure to enforce laws allowed gambling, prostitution, drunkenness, and other vices to flourish. Pickpockets and other professional thieves were tolerated in return for goods or information. Payoffs to officers on the beat were shared with supervisors, and promotions within the department were bought by bribing superiors. In large cities the police were an integral part of the political machine that governed the city, and positions in the police department were often influenced by political connections.

Policing was an occupation that primarily attracted working-class men, with most officers, ironically, drawn from the very working-class populations they were expected to control. Hence conflicting loyalties made them unreliable enforcers of capitalist rule during times of labor unrest. The potential for working-class solidarity was often neutralized, however, by recruitment of officers from a different immigrant ethnic group. And since police were paid at least twice the rate of ordinary workers, they were able to move into more comfortable neighborhoods, "fostering a class identification with the urban elites" (Institute for the Study of Labor and Economic Crisis 1982:27). Police uniforms and a military-style organization and discipline also served to distance the police from the public (Shelden 2001).

In the early twentieth century, the nature of policing underwent further reform. August Vollmer, a nationally recognized police chief, sought to professionalize police departments by recruiting officers of higher educational background, implementing standardized entrance exams, improving officer training, and using scientific technology in crime investigations (e.g., crime laboratories). Nevertheless, in 1931 the US National Commission on Law Observance and Enforcement—the **Wickersham Commission**—found police forces around the country deficient in these areas. The commission also criticized police departments for their frequent use of the "third degree"—that is, the use of physical coercion to gain information from suspects (Adler et al. 2000; Gaines & Kappeler 2005).

The Wickersham Commission provided further impetus to police reform, as did the image of the dedicated, morally irreproachable FBI agent that was fostered by longtime FBI director J. Edgar Hoover. By the 1960s, "the professional model of the well-trained, highly disciplined, crime-fighting police force had taken hold across the nation" (Adler et al. 2000:110). In big-city police departments, recruits were required to have a high school diploma and undergo psychological testing and background checks. Officer training was also improved, and the traditional foot patrol was replaced by patrol cars equipped with two-way radios, enabling a more rapid response to calls for assistance and allowing supervisors to remain in touch with

those on the beat. But as departments began to implement more aggressive stop-and-search patrols, relations between police and their communities became increasingly strained. African Americans in particular felt unduly targeted by the stop-and-search tactic, as well as unjustly victimized by police brutality. Confrontations between police and citizens precipitated several race riots in the 1960s. Advocates of police reform called for remedial measures, including even higher educational requirements and better training for officers, the hiring of minority officers, greater attention to police-community relations, and more civilian (i.e., nonpolice) oversight over police misconduct.

Organizational Styles of Policing

The work of police officers is subject to a great deal of discretion. **Police discretion** may be defined as "the latitude or flexibility the officer has in deciding how an incident should be handled" (Fuller 1998:85). Discretion, however, is not entirely an individual matter, for it is significantly influenced by a department's **organizational style of policing**—that is, the philosophy and methods that govern its operation. In his book *Varieties of Police Behavior,* James Q. Wilson (1968) identified three different organizational styles: watchman, legalistic, and service.

The **watchman style** emphasizes the order-maintenance function of policing. Order maintenance focuses on the informal handling of disputes and measures an officer's success by his or her ability to keep the peace on the beat rather than by the number of arrests made. Minor infractions are often ignored as long as order is maintained, and disorderly citizens are advised to leave the area or go home in order to avoid arrest. Officers are provided with little direct supervision and are encouraged to exercise their own judgment regarding when to enforce the law. Such leeway can be abused, however, if discretionary decisions are based on bribery or discrimination.

In contrast, the **legalistic style** emphasizes a by-the-book approach, whereby officers are expected to enforce the law against all violators. Officers are rewarded for the number of calls they handle and the number of arrests they make, and they are expected to be professional, impersonal, and hard-nosed. According to former Philadelphia and Los Angeles police chief Willie Williams (1996), this approach is often equated with a **military style** of policing. Individuals with a military penchant for following orders are recruited and trained to respond quickly to solve immediate problems. Their ability to envision how policing can be improved or performed differently is neither expected nor encouraged (Skolnick & Fyfe 1993).

Finally, the **service style** is common in communities with little serious crime, where officers have time to focus on other community needs, such as accident and drug prevention, youth mentoring, and recreational programming. Like watchman departments, service departments emphasize noncus-

todial methods of intervention: issuing warnings, mediating disputes, counseling, and making referrals to nonpolice agencies. Officers are encouraged to develop positive relationships with the community and to relate to citizens in a personal rather than aloof manner.

Wilson's observations (1968) serve as a useful point of departure for considering two highly significant trends in policing: the increasing militarization of the police and the growing concern with community relations.

Paramilitary policing. Peter Kraska and Victor Kappeler (1997) have documented the growth of what they call **paramilitary police units** (PPUs) in police departments throughout the United States. PPUs are notable for their use of advanced military equipment and technology such as submachine guns, semiautomatic and automatic shotguns, laser sights, nonlethal grenades (e.g., tear gas), battering rams, hydraulic door-jamb spreaders, explosives, and fortified tactical vehicles (e.g., tactical cruisers, military armored personnel carriers). PPU officers "wear black or urban camouflage 'battle dress' uniforms, lace-up combat boots, full body armor, Kelmar helmets, and sometimes goggles with 'ninja' style hoods" (p. 4).

Police administrators and personnel view PPUs as an elite officer core. Most of these units were first formed in the late 1960s and early 1970s "to respond to civil riots, terrorism, barricaded suspects, and hostage situations." Sometimes known as SWAT (special weapons and tactics) teams, PPUs today are involved in a range of high-risk activities that require "a squad of officers trained to be use-force-specialists" who have "an intensified operational focus on either the threatened or the actual use of collective force" (p. 4).

According to Kraska and Kappeler, contemporary PPUs do not merely react to preexisting emergencies but also proactively seek out dangerous confrontations and at times even provoke an escalation of violence. For example, one PPU officer described how SWAT teams are used to saturate crime "hot spots" with officers who have, in his words, "bigger guns": "We send out two, two-to-four-men cars . . . [and] look for minor violations and do jump-outs, either on people on the street or automobiles. After we jump-out the second car provides periphery cover with an *ostentatious display of weaponry.* We're sending a clear message: if the shootings don't stop, we'll shoot someone" (p. 10).

PPUs are also being used to serve search warrants and arrest warrants, especially those requiring "no-knock" entries. Some drug raids even take place without warrants, which is apparently legal "if the police have reason to believe that waiting for a warrant would endanger lives or lead to the destruction of evidence" (p. 8). One former PPU member described a drug raid this way: "We did a crack-raid and got in a massive shoot-out in an

apartment building. Shots were fired and we riddled a wall with bullets. An MP5 round will go through walls. When we went into the next apartment where the bullets were penetrating, we found a baby crib full of holes; thank god those people weren't home" (p. 9).

Nowadays PPUs are employed not just in the inner-city or large urban areas but in many smaller communities as well. In a national survey, Kraska and Kappeler found that nearly 80 percent of departments with at least 100 officers serving a jurisdiction of at least 50,000 people had PPUs; Kraska and Louis Cubellis (1997) found that 65 percent of departments serving jurisdictions between 25,000 and 50,000 had PPUs. PPUs are also used as the testing ground for military-style equipment that is being introduced into mainstream policing (see also Hickman & Reaves 2003).

Kraska and Kappeler (1997) note that the growth of PPUs coincided with the popularization of the "war" metaphor of crime control in the 1980s (e.g., the war on drugs). If crime, as we are told, is a war, then police may be envisioned as an army that must gain control and maintain occupancy of an area by force. As one police chief explained, "It's going to come to the point that the only people that are going to be able to deal with . . . [the problem of crime] are highly trained tactical teams with proper equipment to go into a neighborhood and clear . . . and hold it" (p. 13).

Community policing. A seemingly contradictory approach to paramilitary policing is known as **community policing**, which has its origins in the late 1960s and early 1970s. Previously we described such policing as generally comprising law enforcement strategies that put police in closer touch with the community (see Chapter 1). Community policing aims to promote trust between citizens and the police and to discourage the "us versus them" mentality that is especially prevalent among officers working in minority neighborhoods, where at times police seem unable to distinguish "between law-abiding residents and criminal suspects of the same color" (Williams 1996:224). Andrew Hacker observes that when most "white people hear the cry, 'the police are coming!' . . . it almost always means, 'help is on the way'" (1992:46). But African Americans experience the police quite differently:

> If you have been the victim of a crime, you cannot presume that the police will actually show up; or, if they do, that they will take much note of your losses or suffering. . . . If you are a teenager simply socializing with some friends, the police may order you to disperse and get off the streets. They may turn on a searchlight, order you against a wall. Then comes the command to spread your legs and empty out your pockets, and stand splayed there while they call in your identity over the radio. You may be a college student and sing in a church choir, but that will not overcome the police presumption that you have probably done something they can arrest you for. (p. 51)

Williams argues that community policing means "changing the prevailing kick-butt-and-take-no-names policy of too many departments" and assigning officers to work *with* rather than *against* the community (1996:219). In community policing, officials meet regularly with residents, citizen advisory boards, and other community groups to seek input and to learn what the people want from *their* police. There is less reliance on patrol cars and greater use of foot patrols to provide opportunities for positive encounters, and officers are assigned to the same neighborhood for longer periods of time to enable relationships to develop with residents. As one community police officer in Chicago remarked: "Every day you go out there and you see people washing their cars or mowing their lawns or playing with the kids. If they see you and know you, they trust you." Before community policing, one resident said, police "only saw the bad guys, not any of the good guys." Now, however, he sees "a big difference" (Eig 1996:64).

Community policing replaces an incident-by-incident response to crime with one that seeks comprehensive solutions to community problems. It incorporates a watchman-style emphasis on the informal handling of disputes and a service-style emphasis on prevention and youth programming. Police are considered responsible not only for handling serious crime but also for quality-of-life issues such as noise complaints, graffiti, vagrancy, trash-filled alleys, and abandoned vehicles and buildings. Police, often the first public officials to encounter these problems, can refer them to other government agencies for remedial action. Previously we referred to this as the broken windows strategy of policing, an approach that encourages police to focus on the little things that conventional law enforcement often ignores (see Chapter 2).

According to Gary Cordner, the evidence regarding the overall success of community policing is mixed, though "a slight majority of the studies have detected crime decreases, providing reason for optimism" (1999:147). Effective community policing, however, is contingent on a number of factors, including the adequacy of nonpolice follow-up to police referrals, the extent of community participation, the socioeconomic conditions of the community, and the particular type of community policing that is being deployed (MacDonald 2002). Robert Taylor and colleagues note that "the police *cannot* be all things to all people. . . . [They] cannot be an isolated group . . . trying to address major social problems without the combined commitment and resources of the entire city" (1998:3).

Moreover, officers are often resistant to community policing, viewing it as an abrogation of their role as crime fighters. Police agencies remain for the most part "cloistered and inflexible. . . . [They] hire the same type of individuals . . . [and] train them the same way" they did before community policing became fashionable (Taylor et al. 1998:3). Police are often reluctant to relinquish their role as experts who possess a monopoly on the skills

and knowledge necessary to deal with crime. At times they view community policing as a public relations ploy, as a way to enhance their image rather than as a genuine attempt to respond to community concerns (Balkan et al. 1980; Boostrom & Henderson 1983). And even where community policing exists, residents may remain unaware or unconvinced that the department has undertaken a serious change in orientation. As Jonathan Eig maintains, for community policing to really work, "law-abiding residents must feel that there is a social movement afoot, that it's catching on, and that if they join it they might actually improve their neighborhoods. Criminals, in turn, have got to notice that police become much more effective when they have the eyes and ears of neighbors working for them" (1996:68).

Critics of community policing believe it is naive to think that more police contact with residents will necessarily improve relationships. What it may do is increase opportunities for hostile interactions. When you give officers license to exercise discretion on their beats, you may be inviting them "to use force against people who threaten the tranquility of that neighborhood" (Anderson 1999:51). According to Kraska and Kappeler (1997), community policing and paramilitary policing are not alternative but *complementary* strategies. In fact, a majority of the police commanders they interviewed believe that it will become increasingly necessary for paramilitary units to secure neighborhoods and clear them of their unruly elements before community policing will even have a chance to work.

Police Culture and Doing Police Work

Despite the community policing movement, the occupational culture of most police departments has remained fairly stable. According to Jerome Skolnick and James Fyfe (1993), two principal features of police work—danger and authority—combine to produce a distinctive outlook or **working personality** that guides the values, understandings, and behavior of officers, sometimes leading to admirable valor but sometimes leading to brutality or excessive use of force. As James Ahern notes: "The day the new recruit walks through the doors of the police academy he leaves society behind to enter a profession that does more than give him a job, it defines who he is. For all the years he remains . . . he will be a cop" (1972:3).

Although the job-related death rate for police officers is well below that of several other occupations (e.g., farming, construction, mining), police are constantly aware of the potential dangers they face (Bayley & Bittner 1999). Police role calls regularly conclude with the admonition "stay safe out there." As one officer said: "Most of the time this job is boring. . . . You just sit behind the wheel and go where they tell you. . . . But . . . you never forget that the next call you get or car you stop might be your last. . . . You know there's one hell of a lotta people out there who'd love to [knock] off a

cop" (quoted in Van Maanen 1995:228–229). While officers are weary of colleagues who are hotheads or **hardchargers**—those who seek out and are overzealous in their willingness to rush into dangerous situations—most agree that police work requires courage and a willingness to take risks, that it is not for the fainthearted (Herbert 1998).

In addition, officers believe that both their safety and the effective performance of their job require that citizens respect their authority, for to some extent every stop, frisk, search, arrest, and handcuffing "involves an imposition of force on an essentially unwilling person, no matter how compliant" (Skolnick & Fyfe 1993:94). Suspects are not always compliant, however. Although shootings of officers are rare, police continually deal with "people who are willing to fight, struggle, hit, stab, spit, bite, tear, hurl, hide, and run. . . . All except the rawest rookie can show scars on their bodies from continual encounters with low-level violence" (Bayley & Bittner 1999:229). Hence police may at times decide to use force preemptively to establish control of a situation *before* it gets out of hand. In fact, one study found that nearly half of all incidents of police use of excessive force occurred in response to mere verbal defiance by a suspect (Reiss 1968).

Those who resist police demands for compliance can expect to receive some "payback." As the Los Angeles Police Department (LAPD) dispatcher who radioed for an ambulance following the infamous 1991 police beating of Rodney King said: "They should know better than to run, they are going to pay a price when they do that" (quoted in Herbert 1998:359). King had taken police on a high-speed car chase after refusing to submit to a police stop. He was finally forced to the side of the road and ordered out of his vehicle. Four officers, two wielding metal nightsticks, administered dozens of blows while about 10 other officers looked on. In another incident, one involving the injury of an LAPD officer, police intensified their surveillance of the community for several weeks, "looking for any pretense to make arrests . . . [in order] to reestablish a sense of police control over an unruly space" (p. 360).

The nature of police work also encourages officers to be suspicious, to be on guard for behavior that seems out of the ordinary. For instance, a person wearing a coat on a warm day may be hiding a sawed-off shotgun or stolen goods; a dirty car with clean license plates (or vice versa) may indicate a stolen vehicle; or a white person in a black neighborhood may be attempting to buy drugs. Boundaries of neighborhoods are often heavily patrolled to prevent anyone from straying out of place, especially when it is lower-class or minority youths who are crossing over into higher-class or white areas. People out of place, police think, must be up to no good (Skolnick & Fyfe 1993; Werthman & Piliavin 1967).

Police suspiciousness often leads to the development of stereotypes that identify certain types of people as **symbolic assailants**—that is, "as persons

whose gestures, language, or attire" trigger suspicion (Skolnick & Fyfe 1993:97). Unfortunately, as we have noted, minority racial status can mark one as a symbolic assailant (see Chapter 8). In 1995, for example, Earl Graves, Jr., an African American business executive, was exiting a commuter train in Manhattan, New York, when he was grabbed and frisked by two police officers. The officers were looking for a 5-foot 10-inch tall African American male suspect with a mustache. Graves, however, stood 6-feet 4-inches and had no mustache (Stout 1995).

In Los Angeles, Christopher Darden (1996), the African American prosecutor in the O.J. Simpson murder trial, learned of the racism in the LAPD when he went to work for the Special Investigation Division of the district attorney's office in 1988:

> Like any black person in L.A., I could feel the antagonism between African Americans and the police, but I didn't think a lot about it until it was my job to investigate and prosecute the police. . . . Most black men knew what it was like to be driving lawfully down some street when you caught the eye of a police officer, who spun around and pulled you over . . . looking for the pile of rock cocaine and the semiautomatic rifle that every black man obviously carries wherever he goes. . . . You knew what the real crime was: suspicion of being black. And there were other stories too: stories of people beaten, kicked, and knocked around by LAPD officers; stories of a police officer who planted so much evidence his colleagues called him Farmer; stories of cops who flat-out lied on the stand to get a conviction. There were even stories of racist cops, guys who collected Nazi paraphernalia and tossed around various racial epithets like gossip at a barbershop. (pp. 96–97)

No wonder it was not difficult for many (including the Simpson jurors) to believe that LAPD officer Mark Fuhrman might have planted the bloody glove that linked Simpson to the murder of Nicole Brown Simpson and Ronald Goldman (see Chapter 1). Fuhrman's racist attitudes and propensity to use excessive force were well known. Willie Williams, who served as LAPD police chief from 1992 to 1997, estimates that there were about 200 to 300 officers like Fuhrman on the LAPD at the time, "a small but significant number" (1996:262). He believes, however, that since then more has been "done in L.A. than ever before to screen out and evaluate police candidates, and to identify and deal with rogue cops. . . . I suspect they are less inclined to say certain things on the street or commit certain acts than the Mark Fuhrmans of the department were a decade or two ago" (p. 266).

Racial Profiling

The experience of African Americans described by Darden has continued to receive media attention and has become known as "driving while black," or in Earl Graves's case, "walking while black" (Meeks 2000; Russell 2003).

Also known as **racial profiling**, this practice entails police targeting of particular groups for more intrusive law enforcement because of their race, ethnicity, or national origin. Racial profiling has its roots in the more general practice of criminal profiling, in which police officers use demographic traits of *known* offenders to identify *potential* offenders. Individuals who possess these traits then come under closer scrutiny because they fit the profile of someone who *might* commit a crime.

The 1992 case of Robert Wilkins, an African American attorney from Maryland, was significant in bringing the problem of racial profiling to the forefront of public attention. Wilkins was returning home from a family funeral in Chicago with his aunt, uncle, and cousin. The latter, Norman El-Amin, was at the wheel of their rented Cadillac when they were stopped by a white state trooper for speeding on Interstate 68 in western Maryland. After El-Amin, with Wilkins's encouragement, refused the officer's request to search the car for contraband, the trooper called for a drug-sniffing police dog. Wilkins and his relatives were forced to stand on the side of the road in the rain while the dog searched for the nonexistent drugs. After no drugs were found, El-Amin was issued a $105 traffic ticket for speeding (Cole 1999b; Meeks 2000).

With the assistance of the American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU) of Maryland, Wilkins and his family sued the state of Maryland and in 1995 received a $95,600 settlement (which included legal costs). As part of the settlement, the Maryland State Police agreed to conduct a comprehensive investigation of driver stops on Interstates 68 and 95. The completed study disclosed that African American motorists were, in fact, being disproportionately singled out for police stops and searches. Over 70 percent of the drivers stopped and searched by the MSP between 1995 and 1997 were black, even though blacks constituted just 17 percent of the motorists in the state, and even though blacks were no more likely than whites to have violated a traffic code or have illegal substances found in their vehicles (American Civil Liberties Union 1995; Lynch & Schuck 2003; Russell 2003).

By 2001, 16 states had mandated the collection of race and ethnicity data on the drivers who were stopped by the state highway patrol, and 23 other states required such collection under specific circumstances (e.g., in cases where the driver was arrested or an officer used force to subdue the suspect). Some police officers, however, have tried to circumvent this requirement. In New Jersey, for instance, 164 officers were cited by the New Jersey Attorney General's Office for regularly falsifying or concealing data so as to continue the practice of racial profiling without being reprimanded for it (Russell 2003).

Be that as it may, research suggests that nonwhite motorists are more likely to be stopped than whites. In a study of the New Jersey Turnpike, black drivers accounted for 35 percent of the stops, even though they con-

stituted just 14 percent of all drivers and 15 percent of those who were speeding; and black and Hispanic drivers accounted for about 80 percent of the vehicles that were searched (Kocieniewski & Hanley 2000; Robinson 2000). In a survey of over a thousand stops on Interstate 95 in Florida conducted by the *Orlando Sentinel,* it was found that about 70 percent of those who were stopped were black or Hispanic, even though nonwhites constituted only about 5 percent of the motorists (Brazil & Berry 1992; Curtis 1992).

Nor, as we suggested previously, is racial profiling confined to drivers. An investigation of "stop and frisk" practices in New York City in 1998 and 1999 found that over half of pedestrians stopped by police were black, a rate that was double the proportion of African Americans in the city. Moreover, nearly two-thirds of pedestrians stopped by the special Street Crime Unit of the New York City Police Department (NYPD) were black. And in precincts where blacks and Hispanics each constituted less than a tenth of the population, they were stopped 30 percent and 23 percent of the time, respectively (Spitzer 1999).

Proponents of racial profiling contend that the practice is necessary for effective law enforcement, yet research questions the efficacy of this procedure. Of importance here is whether or not the stop leads to the discovery of contraband or a crime, the so-called **hit rate**. According to David Harris: "All the studies . . . [that] allow for the calculation of hit rates . . . show higher hit rates *not for blacks and Latinos, but for whites.* In other words, officers 'hit' less often when they use race or ethnic appearance to decide which persons seem suspicious enough to merit stops and searches than they do when they use suspicious behavior and not race as their way of selecting suspects" (2003:82, emphasis added).

Minorities in Policing

In 1805, New Orleans became the first US city to hire African Americans as police officers. "Free men of color," who were required to be supervised by white officers, were used to apprehend runaway slaves and to control the New Orleans slave population (Dulaney 1996). As late as the 1930s and 1940s, however, African Americans represented less than 1 percent of all officers in the country. It was not until the racial turmoil of the 1960s that sufficient political pressure was mounted to integrate police departments in the United States. The Equal Opportunity Act of 1972 made the Civil Rights Act of 1964 applicable to local police departments that had previously excluded people of color (and women) from patrol work and promotions in rank. By 2000, African Americans constituted about 12 percent of all full-time police officers, and racial and ethnic minorities overall constituted about 25 percent (Free 1996; Gaines & Kappeler 2005; Hickman & Reaves 2003).

Nevertheless, the majority of African American officers work in large-city departments and in the South, where the percentage of the population

that is black is higher than the national average. Hence in these departments African Americans remain underrepresented relative to the proportion of the local labor pool they constitute. Data on other minority groups indicate that they, too, are underrepresented in policing.

Although one study of the NYPD found that over half of black officers felt they were treated equally compared to whites (Leinen 1984), other research uncovered much discontent. For example, African American officers reported being more closely supervised and more frequently sanctioned for their mistakes. Common complaints include undeserved negative performance evaluations, fewer preferable assignments, less support from colleagues, and assignment only to minority neighborhoods (Fletcher 1995; Free 1996; Johnson 1989). Studies have also found that people of color (and women) were often segregated during roll calls and were unlikely to socialize with white officers when off duty (Haarr 1997; Williams 1988). In the LAPD, racial slurs during roll calls and patrol-car radio transmissions were at one time commonplace, as were racist cartoons posted on locker-room bulletin boards (Independent Commission on the Los Angeles Police Department 1991; Larsen 1991).

Furthermore, some research indicates that black *male* officers are more likely than female officers (white or black) to be viewed as competent professionals by white male police. It seems that black men do not threaten the masculine mystique of policing in the way that women police do. Black women, however, who constitute over a third of female officers, are viewed more negatively than white female officers by both white and black male police. Black male officers sometimes appear even more hostile than white male officers to black female police, in part because they compete with black women for scarce affirmative action slots (Dulaney 1996; Fletcher 1995; Martin 1994; Texeira 2002).

Many people have hoped that the quality of police, especially in minority neighborhoods, would be improved if people of color were to achieve greater representation in the policing profession. Minority officers are less likely than white officers to be viewed by minority residents as intruders, and hence they may legitimate the presence of law enforcement in the community. Minority police also serve as role models for minority youths, reminding them that legitimate employment opportunities are available to them; and they help dispel the societal stereotype of criminals as people of color, making it more difficult for prejudiced white officers to persist in making this stereotype an integral part of police culture. In addition, minority officers have been active in revising departmental policies aimed at minimizing police use of excessive force (Free 1996; Taylor Greene 1994).

Still, there are limits to the impact that minorities can have on policing, and numerous factors affect their influence. In places "where black officers are disliked by their (black) peers and shunned by racist colleagues, they

have a minimal impact." In places "where they are respected and appreciated, they may make a difference. . . . [But] good rapport between black officers and citizens may not be able to overcome [the] socioeconomic factors that contribute" to crime (Taylor Green 2003:207–208). And minority police are not, of course, confined to minority communities. Overall, there is little evidence that people of color actually do policing differently than whites. Black and white officers, for instance, are about as likely to fire their weapons, use excessive force, and make arrests. It appears that the organizational style of a department is more important than race in accounting for officers' behavior (Black 1980; Fyfe 1981; Walker et al. 2004).

Doing Gender in Policing

Historically, women's involvement in policing overlapped with the job of social worker, so historians are uncertain about who was actually the first woman to be sworn in as an officer in the United States. Some credit Alice Stebbin Wells, who was sworn into the ranks of the LAPD in 1910, but others cite Lola Baldwin, who worked for the police department in Portland, Oregon, in 1905. In either case, for several decades thereafter, there were very few women in policing, and those who were on the force tended to be assigned cases involving children and other women. Not until 1968, in the city of Indianapolis, was a woman assigned patrol duties (*History of Women in Policing* 2003; Martin & Jurik 1996).

In the 1970s, women benefited from the same civil rights and employment opportunity legislation as people of color, and federal legislation passed in 1973 "required police departments with 50 or more employees that received $25,000 or more in federal grants to implement equal employment programs for women or face withdrawal of funds" (Martin & Jurik 1996:53). Height and weight requirements for officers were lowered, and physical tests that emphasized upper-body strength were replaced by tests that assessed health and fitness. Still, in the early 2000s, women accounted for only about 11 percent of all full-time officers in the United States, considerably less than the 47 percent of women in the labor force as a whole (Gaines & Kappeler 2005; Hickman & Reaves 2003; National Center for Women and Policing 2002).

Susan Martin and Nancy Jurik observe that "few occupations . . . have resisted integration of women as vigorously as policing" (1996:63). Male officers believe that female officers undermine their "public image, citizen respect, social status, and group solidarity" (Gold 2000:160). Traditionally, policing has been an occupation that men could use as a resource for demonstrating or "doing masculinity," for differentiating maleness from femaleness (see Chapter 9). Women's participation challenges male officers' belief that "real policing" is work that only "real men" can do. Thus women have often been assigned to desk duties and community relations

Women comprise little more than 10 percent of all full-time police officers in the United States.

and to cases involving rape and domestic violence. Women have also been more likely than men to be assigned to work the first shift, where writing speeding tickets, handling missing-persons calls, and other light-duty work are common; and they've been more likely to be assigned to one-person patrol cars that minimize their contact with other officers. Veteran officers have been reluctant to work with women on patrol, have refused to teach them the skills they routinely impart to men, and have not responded quickly when women needed backup. Supervisors have often assigned female officers to work dangerous foot beats alone (while assigning men in pairs), evaluated female officers' performance more negatively compared to that of their male counterparts, and ignored sexual harassment and mistreatment of female officers by male colleagues. In addition, the "locker room" culture of police departments has traditionally been filled with crude talk about sex and women's bodies that female officers often find demeaning (Fletcher 1995; Haarr 1997; Morash & Haarr 1995; Texeira 2002).

In an extensive survey of female police officers in Texas, 77 percent of the respondents reported that they received "fair treatment" from other female officers, while only 57 percent reported that they received fair treatment from male officers (Taylor Greene & del Carmen 2002). Other research, however, indicated that negative attitudes toward female officers were strongest among older men who had entered policing in an earlier era of more traditional gender norms (Hayes 1998).

Most criminologists have concluded that female police officers are as capable as male officers. Some researchers found that women were less proficient than men in the use of firearms and that they made fewer arrests. But

women received fewer citizen complaints and appeared more effective than men in using interpersonal skills to deescalate conflict situations without having to use force or make an arrest (Hale & Wyland 1999; Martin & Jurik 1996).

Women have adapted to the male-dominated environment of policing in different ways. Martin (1980) distinguishes between the strategies of ***police*women** compared to those of **police*women***. *Police*women try to gain acceptance from their male colleagues by acting like them, by adopting an aggressive or hard-nosed style. This strategy entails the risk of being rejected as unfeminine or of being labeled a "dyke" or "bitch." Police*women,* on the other hand, employ a more traditional feminine style, by being reluctant to assert their authority or use force and by deferring to male partners when on patrol. This strategy encourages male officers to adopt a paternalistic or protective stance that reinforces their view that women are not cut out for real police work.

Increasingly, female officers have struck a balance between traditional femininity and masculinity by projecting an image of themselves as both team players and skilled professionals (Martin & Jurik 1996). They use humor to develop camaraderie with male colleagues and thwart unwelcome sexual advances and harassment. At the same time, female officers undermine the (often sexist) bonding rituals of all-male departments, and since the presence of women increases the frequency of heterosexual intimacy between officers, female officers intensify the sexual competition between men.

Police Corruption and Other Malfeasance

When Frank Serpico joined the NYPD in 1959, he had every intention of becoming a dedicated and loyal police officer. He soon learned, however, that the formal departmental regulations prohibiting corruption and bribery were in conflict with the informal norms of the NYPD culture. When he refused to accept his part of the "take," he was ostracized by his corrupt colleagues and forced to work alone. He was eventually shot and seriously injured during a drug raid, after his fellow officers failed to provide him with timely backup (Maas 1973).

Serpico became the most famous police whistle-blower in US history, and his story led to the most well-known official inquiry into police corruption, undertaken by the **Knapp Commission** in 1972. Headed by Judge Whitman Knapp, the commission revealed extensive, routine payoffs among NYPD plainclothes officers involved in gambling and narcotics enforcement. Corruption among uniformed patrol officers was less lucrative but included payoffs from retail businessmen and construction-site operators in exchange for nonenforcement of city ordinances. Patrol officers also received money from traffic violators and prostitutes hoping to avoid legal sanction, from tow-truck operators seeking tips on vehicle accidents, and

from defendants trying to get their cases fixed. The commission found that higher-ranking officers and police officials were on the take as well (see Chambliss 1988).

The Knapp Commission distinguished between two general categories of corrupt officers: **grass-eaters** and **meat-eaters**. The more numerous grass-eaters were less aggressive and accepted the smaller gratuities that happened to come their way. The meat-eaters, on the other hand, aggressively sought out ever-increasing opportunities for corrupt financial gain. Though fewer in number, their biweekly or monthly take yielded thousands of dollars.

In 1994, the **Mollen Commission**, headed by Judge Milton Mollen, also uncovered numerous instances of NYPD police offering protection to drug dealers, stealing drugs from dealers, and selling and using drugs. Much of this corruption was collaborative group activity, called "crew corruption" by the commission. The commission also identified a corrupt practice known as **testilying**, whereby officers give false testimony in court to cover up violations of due process law during the collection of evidence (see Further Exploration). One officer "who was working undercover for the . . . Commission said he feared that if he did not lie, the other cops would immediately suspect that he was working [for the commission] . . . because *real cops do lie*" (Dershowitz 1996:57). Similarly, an FBI investigation of New York state troopers between 1984 and 1992 found routine faking of fingerprint evidence, whereby police take a suspect's fingerprints from a police-station booking card or an object the suspect has touched, and then claim the fingerprints were found at the crime scene. Such practices are justified by even "honest" officers when they believe that the defendant really is guilty (see Barker & Carter 1999; Hunt & Manning 1991).

In the late 1990s, the LAPD's antigang unit CRASH (Community Resources Against Street Hoodlums) thrust the police force into the news again. In the name of fighting a "war on gangs" in Los Angeles's Rampart area, CRASH officers routinely planted evidence and perjured themselves to obtain convictions. They also stole and sold drugs, stole money, and engaged in unjustified beatings and even shootings of suspects. Nearly 30 officers were implicated in these actions and criminal charges were filed against some of them. The most well-known case involved officer Rafael Perez, who pled guilty to eight felony counts and cooperated in the investigation of others in exchange for a sentence reduction to five years in prison. Over a hundred convictions stemming from the Rampart unit's arrests have been overturned and scores of lawsuits have been filed against the city of Los Angeles that will cost taxpayers millions of dollars (Gupta 2003; Rampart Independent Review Panel 2002).

Nationwide, according to former FBI director Louis Freeh, the FBI has "arrested police officers for corruption in every region of the nation, in large, medium-sized and small cities, towns, and villages; from the inner

FURTHER EXPLORATION

The Exclusionary Rule

The Fourth Amendment to the US Constitution reads: "The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and effects, against unreasonable searches and seizures, shall not be violated, and no warrants shall issue, but upon probable cause, supported by oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched, and the persons or things to be seized." In *Weeks v. United States* (1914), the US Supreme Court ruled that evidence obtained by police in violation of this amendment can be excluded from court. Hence the **exclusionary rule** came into being. However, the *Weeks* decision applied only to federal cases, and it was not until *Mapp v. Ohio* (1961) that the Court decided that the rule applied to the states as well.

Some law-and-order advocates have criticized the exclusionary rule for allowing guilty suspects to be freed on the basis of a legal technicality. But research indicates that only about 1 to 2 percent of felony arrests are dismissed because of the rule, and these are primarily cases involving drugs, not violent crimes (Davies 1983; Walker 2001). In fact, the rule has led some police departments to improve officer training regarding "what they may and may not do in the area of search and seizure" (Reid 2006:461; Sachs 1982).

The exclusionary rule is a constantly evolving doctrine, however, and the Supreme Court has articulated several exceptions to it. For example, a warrantless search is permissible when the seized object is in *plain view;* and under the *public safety* exception, a search may be conducted if police believe the public is in jeopardy. Under the *inevitable discovery* doctrine, illegally seized evidence is admissible in court as long as the "police would have found it later by legal methods"; and under the *good faith* exception, such evidence is admissible if the officer who secured the evidence reasonably believed he or she was "acting in accordance with the law" (Reid 2006:461).

Police have also been given considerable latitude to search motor vehicles without a warrant. In a 1996 case, for instance, the Supreme Court unanimously upheld a stop-and-search in the District of Columbia in which two plainclothes officers in an unmarked vehicle had followed two African American men who were driving a new Nissan Pathfinder in a "high drug area." Although the D.C. police department prohibits plainclothes officers in unmarked vehicles from enforcing traffic ordinances unless the violation threatens public safety, the officers apparently stopped the Pathfinder for remaining too long at a stop sign. After searching the vehicle, drugs were found. The Court ruled that the seized evidence was admissible even in the absence of probable cause or reasonable suspicion (Cole 1999a).

Police may also conduct a search if the person consents to the search, and officers are not obligated to inform them that "they have the right to say no" (Cole 1999c:23). Wendy Kaminer reports that in Maryland, police have stopped African American motorists and asked them, "with varying degrees of belligerency, to 'consent' to thorough searches of their cars. If [the motorists] decline, they are not free to leave; they are forced to wait on the side of the road for the arrival of drug dogs, who sniff and paw through their belongings and sometimes urinate in their cars" (1999:38). In addition, police may conduct sweeps of buses and trains to "exploit the fact that the traveler has nowhere to go," making it difficult to withhold cooperation (Cole 1999c:22). A recent study of police searches in a mid-sized US city found that nearly one-third were in violation of Fourth Amendment guidelines (Gould & Mastrofski 2004).

city precincts to rural sheriff's departments" (US Department of Justice 1998). Between 1994 and 1997 alone, over 500 police officers were convicted of corruption. Most of these convictions involved illegal drugs.

These types of corrupt practices, though perpetrated by a minority of officers, persist because of the informal **code of silence** that the majority of police observe. Officers are understandably reluctant to inform on one another. As Jerome Skolnick and James Fyfe note: "It is not easy in any group to be identified as the rat, the squealer, the busybody, the one person who cannot be trusted. . . . Any member of any group who considers becoming a whistle-blower must know that however laudable one's motives, doing so will forever change one's own life and status in the group" (1993:111). The most practical path to follow is the one of least resistance: "stay out of trouble" and "don't make waves." Nobody's perfect, and drawing attention to another may expose one's own derelictions. Indeed, much of the "silent majority" is itself implicated in the kind of petty corruption that is commonplace among police. As former LAPD officer Joseph Wambaugh writes of one officer in his novel *The Choirboys:* He "had accepted a thousand packs of cigarettes and as many free meals in his time. And though he had bought enough clothing at wholesale prices to dress a dozen movie stars, he had never even considered taking a five dollar bill nor was one ever offered except once when he stopped a Chicago grocer in Los Angeles on vacation" (1975:65).

Moreover, there is always some outraged citizen who is going to file a complaint against you, or some reform-minded administrator who will "come down on you for breaking some rules" (Van Maanen 1995:235). The most important thing is not to lose the support of one's colleagues, for an officer's very life depends on others' willingness to provide immediate and unquestioned backup. As one officer said: "I'll put up with a hell of a lot from guys working this sector. I don't care if they're on the take, mean or just don't do any more than they have to. . . . But if some sonofabitch isn't around on a help-the-officer call or shows up after everybody else in the city has already been there, I don't want him working around me" (p. 233).

Police sexual misconduct. Although police are a politically conservative lot, they do not necessarily uphold traditional "family" values. Studies indicate, for example, that at least half of married male police officers have had adulterous sexual relationships and about a third of officers have engaged in sexual activity while on duty (Baker 1985; Barker 1986). Moreover, there are many instances where officers have engaged in **police sexual misconduct**—that is, abusing their authority to seek sexual gratification.

Based on interviews with police officers and supervisors in five states, Allen Sapp (1986) identified several types of police sexual misconduct. *Sexually motivated, nonsexual* contacts, for instance, involve male officers

who use their position of power to meet potential sexual partners (e.g., by making unwarranted traffic stops of female motorists or by making unnecessary "callbacks" to female crime victims). *Sexually voyeuristic* contacts involve attempts by male officers to view females in various stages of nudity (e.g., by patrolling areas where women are known to leave their drapes or blinds open while disrobing, or by seeking out parked cars in areas known to be frequented by lovers). In one New York City case in 1996, a male officer tore a woman's T-shirt, exposing her breasts, in the course of arresting her for disorderly conduct. At the police station she was handcuffed to a holding cage for three hours, her breasts still exposed, while officers were permitted to observe and comment on her nudity and a male prisoner masturbated (Sontag & Barry 1997).

Police sexual misconduct also occurs when male officers make unnecessary body searches of female suspects and when they have sex with female offenders (including adolescent runaways, truants, and delinquents) in exchange for nonenforcement of the law. Sometimes male undercover officers have sex with prostitutes before making an arrest. As one officer said, "If the whore claims otherwise, no one believes her anyway since they think she is just trying to get her case tossed out." Finally, there are citizen-initiated contacts by police groupies who are "sexually attracted to the uniform, weapons, or power of the police officer" (Sapp 1986:91–92).

Kraska and Kappeler (1995) warn against dismissing the problem of police sexual misconduct as one of women trading sexual favors or male officers passively confronting sexual opportunities they cannot resist, for much such misconduct entails the coercive abuse of power and outright force. In a study of police sexual misconduct based on articles that appeared in *USA Today* and in records from Federal District Court, Kraska and Kappeler found that over half of sexual misconduct cases involved unnecessary strip searches of female suspects and nearly a third involved rape or sexual assault.

Police brutality and use of deadly force. Previously we noted that dramatic drops in New York City's violent crime rate in the 1990s were attributed to the NYPD's use of computerized mapping to identify crime "hot spots" and to zero-tolerance policing that emphasized aggressive stop-and-search tactics and the arrest of minor law violators (see Chapter 2). At the same time, civilian complaints of harassment and brutality by NYPD officers rose dramatically. In one of the most notorious cases, Abner Louima, a Haitian immigrant, was arrested for disorderly conduct in 1997. At the police station Louima was beaten and sodomized by NYPD officers with a toilet plunger, tearing a hole through his lower intestine and bruising his bladder (CNN 2002).

Some use of physical force by police is necessary and inevitable. About

17 percent of adult arrests involve such force (beyond application of handcuffs), and these cases are most likely to occur when the suspect is resisting (Garner & Maxwell 1999). The most common injuries incurred by suspects are bruises, abrasions, and lacerations. "Officers are trained to use force progressively along a continuum," and official policy requires them to apply "the least amount of force necessary to accomplish their goals" (Adams 1999:5 Gaines & Kappeler 2005). **Police brutality** occurs when officers intentionally exceed their legal authority to use force. Research suggests that a minority of officers are responsible for the bulk of the brutality, although the code of silence often protects the offenders, allowing them to persist in their wrongdoing (Independent Commission on the Los Angeles Police Department 1991).

In a landmark study conducted in 1966, a team of researchers under the direction of Albert Reiss (1980) spent seven weeks observing patrol officers' encounters with citizens (crime victims, witnesses, and suspects) in Boston, Chicago, and Washington, D.C. The observers found that just 1 percent of these encounters involved instances of excessive force. (Most likely the percentage would have been higher had the police not known they were being watched.) Excluding encounters with victims and witnesses, about 3 percent of encounters with *suspects* involved excessive force. Although these percentages appear low, they add up to a significant number of cases, making police brutality, according to Reiss, far from rare.

Police shootings of citizens constitute another dimension of police use of force. Fyfe (1982) distinguishes between **elective** and **nonelective shootings**. Elective shootings involve situations in which the officer shoots when the suspect poses little or no risk to the officer or others. Nonelective shootings involve situations where "the officer has little real choice but to shoot or to risk death or serious injury to himself or others" (p. 710). According to Fyfe (1988), nonelective shootings are more likely than elective shootings to be influenced by factors *external* to the police, such as the type and amount of crime in a community and the characteristics of the criminal population in that area. Elective shootings, on the other hand, are more likely to be influenced by *internal* factors, such as a department's formal policies and informal culture, the tactical training given to officers, and the nonlethal technologies that are available to subdue resisting suspects (e.g., electronic stun guns).

Shooting incidents, however, rarely fall clearly into one category or the other. As Hugh Barlow (1996) observes, an officer may in hindsight regard an encounter as closer to an elective shooting than he or she actually did at the time of the shooting itself. Moreover, "persons who later hear the 'facts' may interpret a situation differently from either the officer involved or any witness. . . . [This makes it] difficult . . . to construct a picture of an encounter that does justice to both the subjective interpretations of partici-

pants and the objective characteristics of the event" (1996:338). Fyfe, who was formerly an NYPD lieutenant, notes that in his experience the more ambiguous shooting situations occurred when officers had been encouraged by supervisors and peers "to take charge of threatening situations quickly with as little assistance (and as little inconvenience to colleagues) as possible." In contrast, ambiguous shootings were less likely when officers were encouraged "to use caution, to take cover, and to search for nonlethal means of resolving potential violence" (1988:185).

Fyfe examined police shooting data from New York City (1971–1975), Philadelphia (1971–1975), and Chicago (1974–1978). In Philadelphia and Chicago, 21 and 25 percent of shooting incidents, respectively, involved citizens who were unarmed and made no threat or attempt to attack the police or other person. In New York, only 8.5 percent of shootings involved unarmed individuals. Fyfe observes that in New York the NYPD operated under a "defense of life only" policy that limited the use of deadly force. In Philadelphia and Chicago, on the other hand, "police were given relatively more freedom to use their guns in elective situations" (p. 186; see also White 2001).

In its *Tennessee v. Garner* decision in 1985, the US Supreme Court restricted the type of police shootings that were constitutionally permissible. The case involved a Memphis police officer who had shot and killed Edward Garner, an unarmed, 15-year-old African American youth who had been fleeing from the police after breaking into an unoccupied residence. The shooting was consistent with the Memphis department's policy on the shooting of fleeing felons.

Data on Memphis police shootings showed that Memphis police officers were much more likely to shoot unarmed black suspects than unarmed white suspects (Fyfe 1988). The US Supreme Court ruled, however, that Garner's rights had been violated not because of discrimination but because the shooting had violated his Fourth Amendment right against unreasonable seizure (see Further Exploration, p. 425). According to the court, police use of deadly force should be restricted to cases where "the officer has probable cause to believe that the suspect poses a significant threat of death or serious physical injury to the officer or others" (cited in Walker 1996:144). The Garner decision invalidated the police shooting guidelines of some departments in 34 states, although most large-city departments had already adopted the more restrictive policy on their own.

The issue of race remains one of the most salient issues concerning police shooting of suspects, as African Americans are disproportionately targeted in these incidents (Fyfe 1988). It is not white officers, however, but black officers who are *proportionately* more likely to be involved in both the on-duty and off-duty shootings of blacks. (Since there are more white officers, they account for more such shootings overall.) Fyfe attributes this

pattern to the fact that black officers are more likely to work and live in neighborhoods where "their chances of encountering [dangerous] situations leading to shooting, justifiable or otherwise, [are] far greater" (1988:196). Fyfe also notes that in high-crime areas, police officers regardless of race are more likely to shoot preemptively at suspects who turn out to be unarmed. These officers, he observes, have greater reason to fear that any furtive movement by the suspect is life-threatening. Thus, Fyfe says, it is no surprise that internal departmental reviews give the benefit of the doubt to police who shoot suspects in neighborhoods perceived as dangerous.

At the same time, research has found higher rates of police shootings of suspects in cities with greater economic and racial inequality and higher percentages of black residents, regardless of the level of crime (Jacobs & O'Brien 1998; Sorensen et al. 1993). Criminologists have interpreted such findings in terms of minority group-threat theory (see Chapter 8). Although some criminologists believe that the problem of police brutality and shootings has diminished over the years (Sherman 1986; Skolnick & Fyfe 1993), others point to the more than 2,000 civilian deaths in the 1990s that are indicative of an ongoing pattern of official abuse (Gupta 2004). The Rodney King beating, captured on videotape, led even President George H. W. Bush to remark, "How can I explain this to my grandchildren?" (quoted in Skolnick & Fyfe 1993:12). The King beating did not occur in Mississippi in 1934 but in Los Angeles in 1991. The Abner Louima beating occurred in New York in 1997. And in 1999, Amadou Diallo, an unarmed, African-immigrant street vendor, was killed by four NYPD officers who fired 41 shots, hitting Diallo 19 times. The officers, who were looking for a rape suspect, said they thought Diallo had a gun (De La Cruz 1999).

Police officers involved in brutality and use-of-deadly-force cases are rarely prosecuted, and if prosecuted they are rarely convicted. One study in San Diego, California, for example, found that not a single officer was prosecuted for any of the 190 civilian shootings that occurred from 1985 to 1990 (Petrillo 1990). In the King case, four officers were indicted but found not guilty of unlawful assault, although in a subsequent federal trial two were found guilty of violating King's civil rights and sentenced to 30 months in prison (Gibbs 1996). King also won a $3.8 million civil lawsuit against the city of Los Angeles. In the Louima case, one officer was convicted and sentenced to a lengthy prison term (CNN 2002). Three other officers had their convictions overturned on appeal, although Louima did receive an $8.7 million settlement from the city of New York. The four officers in the Diallo case were indicted but acquitted of all criminal charges, and the Diallo family was awarded $3 million (Feuer 2004; George 2000).

In recent years, police have increased their use of alternative technologies such as chemical sprays, stun guns, and impact munitions (e.g., rubber or wooden bullets) with the hope of mitigating the need to use severe and

deadly force. There is evidence that the introduction of these technologies has in fact had that effect. However, studies also indicate that police are more likely to use nonlethal force when they have these technologies at their disposal (Gaines & Kappeler 2005; Hubbs & Klinger 2004; Lumb & Friday 1997).

Prosecuting and Defending the Accused

After a suspect is arrested and taken into custody, the criminal justice process moves from the police to the criminal courts, where prosecutors, defense attorneys, judges, and jurors replace police officers as the leading players in a series of formal and informal deliberations that determine a defendant's fate. The criminal court system in the United States is a complex, multitiered set of institutions that operate under state and federal law. The state system was adopted from the English system by the American colonists, and the federal system was established by the US Congress (Adler et al. 2000). Courts in different jurisdictions function independently, and the precise processes vary from one place to another (see Further Exploration for a discussion of the juvenile justice system). However, there are a series of core stages or decision points that are roughly comparable throughout the United States.

Initial Screening

The prosecutor or district attorney is the primary gatekeeper of the court system, for he or she is assigned the task of determining the formal charge (if any) that will be filed against a defendant. The prosecutor usually makes this decision in consultation with the police but can decide independently to release a defendant. In a study of the 75 largest urban counties in the country, Gerard Rainville and Brian Reaves (2003) found that about a fourth of all felony arrests were dismissed at this stage in the process.

Technically, the prosecutor is supposed to file charges only when the case meets the standard of **probable cause**—that is, when there is a reasonable basis to believe that the defendant committed the crime. Many cases fail to meet this standard due to insufficient evidence or unreliable witnesses. Informally, the prosecutor also considers whether the case is serious enough to warrant utilization of scarce criminal justice resources, whether the defendant truly intended to commit the crime, and whether the defendant deserves to be held accountable for his or her actions. In addition, the prosecutor may take into account the defendant's prior offense record, age and health, and social standing in the community (Boland et al. 1992; Daudistel et al. 1979; Myers 2000).

Some research suggests that gender and racial/ethnic status influence prosecutors' charging decisions. In a study of Los Angeles, for instance,

FURTHER EXPLORATION

The Juvenile Justice System

In 1899, Illinois became the first state to establish a juvenile justice system that was independent from its adult criminal justice system. Today every state has separate court procedures and correctional facilities for handling juveniles (those who are under 17 or 18 years of age, usually). Typically, these juvenile systems have legal jurisdiction over three categories of youths. **Delinquents** are juveniles who violate criminal laws for which adults could also be charged. **Status offenders** include those who commit acts for which adults could not be charged—for example, running away, truancy, curfew violations, and even vague transgressions such as "incorrigibility," "habitual disobedience," and "immoral behavior." Finally, **dependent children** are those who have been so neglected or abused that they need to become wards of the court.

The juvenile system is based on the premise that young people, due to immaturity, are less responsible and blameworthy for their conduct and hence should be granted consideration that might not be given to adults. Thus the juvenile system's official mission has been one of rehabilitation through the delivery of psychological and social services that are supposed to be in the "best interest" of the child. Originally the legal formalities of the adult system were viewed as undesirable. When a youth came before a juvenile-court judge, the focus was not on the juvenile's guilt or innocence but rather on how the judge could make an informed assessment of the youth's life circumstances and formulate a course of treatment tailored to his or her particular needs. Hence testimony of any sort, regardless of its legal relevancy, was deemed germane, and attorneys were viewed as a hindrance to the process (Platt 1974; Ryerson 1978).

The absence of due process, however, led to much abuse. In 1964, for example, 15-year-old Gerald Gault was arrested in Gila County, Arizona, for allegedly making an obscene phone call. Gault was already on probation for being in the company of another boy who had stolen a wallet. A juvenile-court judge sentenced Gault to a juvenile correctional facility for up to six years, without allowing Gault to be represented by an attorney, to confront and cross-examine his accuser, or to be informed of his privilege against self-incrimination. The maximum penalty for an adult committing a similar offense in Arizona at the time was a fine of $50 or a jail term of not more than two months. Gault and his parents appealed the case all the way to the US Supreme Court, which in 1967 ruled that Gault's right to due process of law had been violated. The Court said that juveniles subject to institutional confinement were entitled to most (though not all) of the due process rights enjoyed by adults, including the right to counsel, the right to confront and cross-examine witnesses, and the privilege against self-incrimination. But in a 1971 case, the Court ruled that juveniles did not have a constitutional right to a trial by jury, arguing that a jury was not necessary for a fair hearing or to fulfill the fact-finding function of the juvenile court (Binder et al. 1988).

The juvenile system has also been marred by some of the same discrimi-

continues

continued

natory practices present in the adult system. Although the evidence is not entirely consistent, the tendency has been for minority and lower-class youths to be treated more severely than higher-status youths, and for females to be treated more leniently than males for serious crimes but more severely for status offenses. Overall, disparities in treatment between nonwhite/lower-class and white/higher-class offenders and between female and male offenders are more apparent at the early stages of juvenile-court processing than at the later stages (Bilchik 1999; Chesney-Lind & Shelden 2004; Engen et al. 2002; Rodriguez 2007a).

In recent years, disillusionment with the rehabilitative ideal and the specter of serious juvenile offenders have led some states to lower the age at which the adult criminal court assumes jurisdiction for teenage defendants, or to use a **waiver** procedure to transfer jurisdiction from the juvenile to the adult system. Most state legislatures specify an age at which youths can be transferred for particular crimes, though sometimes that decision is left to the discretion of the prosecutor. A study of the nation's 75 largest counties found that about two-thirds of transferred juveniles were charged with violent crimes, about two-thirds of those transferred were convicted, and about two-thirds of those convicted received prison or jail terms (Strom et al. 1998). However, in some states or counties a majority of transferred juveniles were nonviolent offenders—offenders who often received lighter penalties than they might have received had they remained in the juvenile system, because in the adult system they were considered "lightweight" (Bishop et al. 1989; Howell 1996; Osbun & Rode 1984).

Cassia Spohn and colleagues found that prosecutors' decisions to drop or reduce charges revealed "a pattern of discrimination in favor of female defendants and against black and Hispanic defendants" (1987:183). In a study of a Midwestern city, Gary LaFree (1980) discovered that blacks accused of raping white women were given more serious charges than either blacks accused of raping black women or whites accused of raping white women. Similarly, Michael Radelet (1981) found that Florida defendants who murdered whites were more likely to be charged with first-degree murder than those who murdered blacks. In another Florida study, Radelet and Glenn Pierce (1985) examined cases of discrepancy between police and prosecutorial assessments of murders as either **felony** or **nonfelony homicides**. Felony homicides, or homicides that occur in the course of another felony crime (e.g., robbery), carry heavier penalties than nonfelony homicides. Radelet and Pierce found that a murder was most likely to be upgraded (from the initial police assessment) to a felony homicide, and least likely to be downgraded to a nonfelony homicide, when the defendant was black and the victim was white. And in an extensive review of the literature,

Marvin Free (2002) concluded that prosecutors were consistently more likely to seek the death penalty in homicides involving white victims than in homicides involving black victims.

In the US system of justice, the defendant is entitled to an **initial appearance** before a judge without unnecessary delay, usually within 24 hours following arrest. In minor cases (e.g., public drunkenness, loitering) the judge may in one condensed proceeding conduct a **summary trial** and issue a sentence. If the defendant cannot afford an attorney, the judge will assign a state-appointed attorney or public defender to the case. Only about a third of federal felony defendants and less than a fifth of state felony defendants are able to hire their own private counsel (DeFrances and Marika 2000; Harlow 2000).

In serious misdemeanor and felony cases, the judge also decides whether to keep the defendant confined in jail for pretrial detention or to release him or her on **bail** (judges usually follow prosecutors' bail recommendations). The bail decision is of paramount importance, for defendants who are denied or unable to make bail are also more likely to be convicted and to receive prison terms (Reaves 1991; Williams 2003a). Most defendants granted bail cannot afford it and have to pay a bail bondsperson or agency a 10–20 percent fee to front the entire amount. States that prohibit private bonding services may allow defendants to obtain bail by putting up a percentage or some noncash asset (e.g., real estate). Rainville and Reaves (2003) found that only about half of felony defendants who were required to post bail to secure release were able to do so. In addition, other research found that nonwhite defendants tended to be assigned higher levels of bail than white defendants, regardless of their prior record or the type of offense they committed. These different levels of bail were most heavily pronounced for drug offenses. And while nonwhite men and women were assigned similar bail amounts, white men were assigned higher bail than white women (Albonetti et al. 1989; Free 2004; Patterson & Lynch 1991; Schlesinger 2005).

Following the initial appearance, a judicial determination regarding probable cause may be made at a **preliminary hearing**, or "information" proceeding. This hearing "is not an inquiry aimed at determining the defendant's guilt or innocence . . . [but] at establishing . . . whether there is sufficient evidence for any reasonable and prudent person to believe a crime has been committed, and . . . [that] the defendant committed it" (Daudistel et al. 1979:178). It gives the prosecution and the defense attorney the opportunity to learn about each other's cases and to preserve the testimony of witnesses, who may later change their story. In some jurisdictions a **grand jury** may be used instead of a preliminary hearing. In grand jury proceedings the prosecutor presents evidence to a group of 12 to 23 citizens, who rarely reject the recommendation to indict because defendants "may not even be

allowed to present their version of the facts, much less to confront and cross-examine witnesses" (Myers 2000:450). After the preliminary hearing or grand jury decision, the defendant appears before the court for **arraignment** and is asked to plead guilty, not guilty, or no contest (a no contest plea is comparable to a guilty plea except that it cannot be used as an admission of guilt in a subsequent civil proceeding).

Negotiating Justice in an Adversary System

Courts in the United States utilize an **adversary system** of criminal justice that puts prosecutors and defense attorneys in an oppositional relationship, with each side dedicated to presenting its best possible case. The trial court is the arena in which the adversary model operates in its purest form. However, in many jurisdictions over 90 percent of convictions are attained through informal negotiations known as **plea bargaining**, making the trial the exception rather than the rule (Largen & Brown 1997; Pastore & Maguire 2002). In plea bargaining, the defendant agrees to plead guilty, waiving his or her Fifth Amendment right against self-incrimination. Since the prosecutor is handed a conviction on "a silver platter," he or she must offer something in return. The prosecutor may agree to reduce the seriousness of the charge and consequently the sentence. Or in cases where multiple charges have been brought against the defendant, the prosecutor may agree to drop some of charges or recommend to the judge that the sentences be served concurrently rather than consecutively.

Plea bargaining is a common practice because both the prosecuting and defense attorneys tend to assume they are better off with it than without it. Prosecutors are most likely to plea bargain when they have relatively weak cases that may not be provable "beyond a reasonable doubt" if the case goes to trial (Daudistel et al. 1979; Myers 2000). Certainty of conviction through plea bargaining often seems preferable to expending considerable time and resources in pursuit of an uncertain outcome. As one defense lawyer observed: "When a prosecutor has a dead-bang case he is likely to come up with an impossible offer like 30 to 50 years. When the case has a hole in it, however, the prosecutor may scale the offer all the way down to probation" (Heumann 1978:508).

Defendants plea bargain for similar reasons. They may want to avoid the risk of losing at trial and receiving a harsher sentence, as prosecutors forced to go to trial generally ask for the maximum possible penalty in the event of conviction. Defendants also may want to get the ordeal over as soon as possible and avoid the publicity and higher attorney fees associated with a trial. Thus one of the defense attorney's most important functions is to get the best possible deal for his or her client when likelihood of acquittal is slim. And since defense attorneys typically believe that their clients are guilty of some charge, if not the current one, they will often induce them to

cop a plea as a matter of course (Blumberg 1967; McIntyre 1987). They try to persuade their clients that the fee they are paying for legal representation will buy them a better deal, even though they may in fact get the same deal on their own. Defendants who benefit the most from plea bargaining (i.e., those who actually receive lesser sentences than they would have had they gone to trial) are those who have committed less serious crimes and have a cleaner prior offense record (Myers 2000; Samaha 2000; Smith 1986).

Overloaded court dockets are another reason that plea bargaining is common. As one New York City prosecutor observed: "Our office keeps . . . [the] courtrooms busy trying five percent of the cases. If even 10 percent . . . end in a trial, the system would break down" (Zimring & Frase 1980:506–507). In *Santobello v. New York* (1971), the US Supreme Court explicitly acknowledged that plea bargaining is essential to the management of overloaded courts and that, when "properly administered . . . [it] is to be encouraged" (cited in Reid 2006:485). The Court also held that prosecutors are obligated to keep the promises they make once an agreement is reached, so that defendants' pleas are made voluntarily and with full knowledge of the consequences.

To some extent, plea bargaining takes place in a legal marketplace of "going rates," where similarly situated people are routinely treated in a comparable fashion. Since both prosecutors and defense attorneys are interested in reducing the uncertainty and maximizing the efficiency of their work, they develop a common outlook regarding the disposition that is appropriate for particular kinds of cases (Daudistel et al. 1979; Heumann 1978; Myers 2000). Judges generally approve plea-bargaining agreements because they too have a stake in the smooth operation of the system. Nowadays it is not unusual for judges to order a continuance (postponement) on the first day of trial to encourage the attorneys to work out a deal. Some judges participate even more actively by supervising negotiations and by making bargaining recommendations themselves (Dawson 1992; Samaha 2000).

The Trial

Although few choose to exercise it, the Sixth Amendment gives defendants the right to a "speedy and public trial." Technically speaking, defendants are presumed innocent until proven guilty in a court of law, and prosecutors have the burden to prove their guilt beyond a reasonable doubt. Thus defendants do not need to prove their innocence; they only need to cast reasonable doubt on their guilt. These formal rules of the game serve to balance the informal presumption of guilt that is implicit in a prosecutor's decision to bring a case to trial in the first place.

The trial in an adversary system is less "a rational 'fact-finding' process aimed at discovering the 'truth'" and more an **impression management**

process aimed at constructing a desired account of the alleged criminal event (Daudistel et al. 1979:236). Hence the prosecution and defense present (or ignore) the facts of a case in ways that support the conclusion they have already reached. For example, they will call witnesses whose testimony is favorable to their point of view and will coach them regarding "what to say and what not to say in response to formal questioning" (p. 239). Each side attempts to undermine or damage the credibility of opposing witnesses, whether or not these witnesses are actually telling the truth. Each side makes objections to evidence or lines of questioning they consider damaging to their case, even if they expect the judge to overrule them. Judges play a key role in arbitrating the debate by ruling on objections and motions made by the attorneys, by deciding what evidence can and cannot be introduced, and by instructing the jury about the law governing the case.

Although few defense attorneys harbor illusions about the factual innocence of their clients, they believe it is their job to keep prosecutors honest—that is, to hold prosecutors to their legal obligation to prove guilt beyond a reasonable doubt (McIntyre 1987). As one defense attorney admits: "What I knew actually happened was not important. . . . What did matter was whether a version of the 'facts' could be presented that would . . . [cast] doubt . . . [on my] client's guilt" (quoted in Subin 1993:31). But, critics say, it is one thing for a defense attorney to attack the prosecutor's case by pointing out its weaknesses; it is quite another thing to attack the case by advancing utter falsehoods. One defense attorney, for instance, recalls how he humiliated a rape victim on the witness stand, making "her seem to be little more than a prostitute" (quoted in McIntyre 1987:141).

A trial can be an emotionally difficult experience for crime victims who testify before the court.

This type of questioning is significantly different "from challenging *inaccurate* testimony," whether or not the client is innocent (Subin 1993:36).

Defense attorneys, however, believe that prosecutors are also known to behave disreputably. In fact, a study by the *Chicago Tribune* uncovered 381 defendants across the country who have "had their homicide convictions thrown out because prosecutors concealed evidence suggesting innocence or presented evidence they knew to be false" (Armstrong & Possley 1999:A3). Two-thirds of these defendants had been sentenced to death. Similarly, a two-year investigation by the *Pittsburg Post-Gazette* uncovered numerous instances of federal prosecutors "lying, hiding evidence, distorting the facts, engaging in cover-ups, paying for perjury and setting up innocent people in order to win indictments, guilty pleas and convictions" (cited in *Wisconsin State Journal* 1998:A2). According to both newspapers, prosecutors were rarely punished for their misconduct. As one former prosecutor remarked: "It's a result-oriented process. . . . Whatever works is what's right" (*Wisconsin State Journal* 1998:A2). Additionally, a study by the Center for Public Integrity found that since 1970, appellate judges "dismissed criminal charges, reversed convictions or reduced sentences" in more than 2,000 cases due to prosecutors who had "stretched, bent or broke rules" (cited in Sniffen 2003:A3). Judges cited 233 prosecutors for two or more cases of misconduct, although only two prosecutors have been disbarred for mishandling criminal cases.

Trial by jury. The Sixth Amendment provides defendants with the right to "an impartial jury," although the US Supreme Court has ruled that this right need not apply to juveniles being processed in the juvenile justice system or to adults if their conviction would result in a sentence of less than six months of incarceration. Moreover, according to the court, the right to a jury requires neither a jury of 12 members (6-person juries are allowed in all but capital punishment cases) nor a unanimous jury verdict in noncapital cases (11–1, 10–2, and 9–3 verdicts have been upheld). Nevertheless, most jurisdictions maintain the tradition of 12-member juries and unanimous verdicts for criminal trials (Neubauer 2001).

Defendants may choose either a bench trial (where the judge decides guilt or innocence) or a jury trial. One landmark study found that judges and juries reach similar conclusions in about three-quarters of cases, but that when there is disagreement, juries are more likely to acquit (Kalven & Zeisel 1971). Judges do not have the authority to reverse a jury's verdict of acquittal, but they can reverse a verdict of guilty.

Potential jurors are randomly selected from various sources (e.g., telephone directories, voter and driver license registries, property tax lists). Some of these methods result in underrepresentation of low-income and minority residents, who are less likely to register to vote or own real estate.

And since these groups are also more residentially mobile and less likely to have permanent addresses, they are less likely to receive jury summonses sent through the mail. Moreover, those with lower incomes are more likely to be excused from jury duty for reasons of economic hardship. Women are often granted exemptions for childcare and family responsibilities (Benokraitis 1982; Fukurai et al. 1993; Grossman 1994; O'Reilly 1979).

The **voir dire** ("to speak the truth") is the next stage in the jury selection process. Here prospective jurors are questioned by the prosecutor and defense attorney under the supervision of the presiding judge. While the Sixth Amendment requires an impartial jury, the prosecutor and defense both prefer jurors who are predisposed to their side of the case. Sometimes they will even hire jury consultants to help them identify the demographic characteristics and attitudes of people who are more likely to convict or acquit. During the voir dire, each side is allowed a limited number of **peremptory challenges**, enabling them to dismiss some jurors without explanation. Each side is also given an unlimited number of **challenges for cause** if they can demonstrate to the judge's satisfaction that a juror will be prejudicial in some way—for example, if the juror knows the defendant, has been the victim of a crime that is similar to the one the defendant is accused of, or has already formulated an opinion on the case due to exposure to pretrial publicity (Samaha 2000).

Through the mid-1980s, prosecutors in some Southern states disproportionately used their peremptory challenges to exclude African Americans (Jost 1995). However, in 1986 the US Supreme Court ruled that it was unconstitutional to exclude a prospective juror on the basis race; and in 1994 it ruled that it was unconstitutional to exclude a prospective juror on the basis of gender. On the other hand, in 1995 the Court upheld a prosecutorial exclusion of an African American because "he had . . . shoulder length, curly, unkempt hair . . . [and] a mustache and . . . goatee-type beard" (cited in Reid 1997:434). The Court accepted the prosecution's argument that the exclusion based on physical appearance was "not a characteristic of a particular race." Moreover, in another case that had been decided in 1986, the Court ruled that jurors who oppose the death penalty can be excluded from juries in capital punishment cases, a decision that has disproportionately affected blacks and women because they are more likely than whites and men to oppose the death penalty (Bohm 1991; Currie & Pillick 1996; Reid 2006).

Research on the effects of gender and race on jurors' decisions is somewhat mixed. In a review of studies of juror voting and gender, Cameron Currie and Aleta Pillick (1996) found that few gender differences exist. Rape cases are the exception, with women more likely to convict. But in a review of studies of juror voting and race, Nancy King (1993) found that blacks are more likely than whites to acquit, although both blacks and

whites are more likely to acquit defendants of their own race than defendants of another race.

In his final summation in the O.J. Simpson criminal trial, defense attorney Johnnie Cochran beseeched the jury to acquit Simpson, arguing that he had been framed by the LAPD. Cochran told the jurors, nine of whom were African American: "There's something in your background . . . that helps you understand that this is wrong" (quoted in Darden 1996:369). The Simpson jury agreed, returning a unanimous verdict for acquittal. Although two white jurors and one Hispanic juror concurred in the decision, much of the white public viewed the verdict as biased by race (see Further Exploration, p. 6).

Jury voting along racial lines is nothing new, although throughout most of US history it has been predominantly white jurors who have refused to convict whites for committing crimes against blacks. The most striking trend in jury verdicts, however, has not been the number of race-based acquittals but the number of **hung juries** (Rosen 1997). Hung juries occur when unanimity is required but one or more jurors refuse to vote with the majority. The judge then declares a mistrial, and the prosecution must decide whether to seek a new trial. In recent years, hung juries have occurred most often in cities with large minority populations during trials of black men. In these cases, hung juries usually involve a single holdout (most often a black woman) who refuses to convict, despite the strenuous objections of fellow jurors, both black and white, for reasons that include mistrust of the police, concern about sending yet another black man to prison, or simply having difficulty "sitting in judgment of someone else" (p. 58). These holdouts see the defendants "as their nephews, their sons, . . . their brothers" (p. 62).

Former prosecutor Paul Butler (1997), who is African American, believes that black jurors should refuse to convict black defendants convicted of some nonviolent crimes. As he writes: "Black jurors ought to be thoughtful about who they send to prison. Murderers, rapists, robbers: absolutely yes, for the safety of the community. But when black people are prosecuted for drug offenses and other victimless crimes, I recommend . . . that jurors consider nullification—their legal power to ignore the written-down law in favor of a broader notion of justice" (p. 12).

Jury nullification enjoys a long history in the United States. It was used by the American colonists in their disputes with the British government, by Northern juries to nullify fugitive slave laws, and by civil rights and antiwar activists during the political turmoil of the 1960s. US courts have upheld jurors' right to disregard the facts of the case or the judge's instructions in order to vote their conscience. But the courts have not upheld jurors' right to be informed of the nullification doctrine (Bonsignore et al. 1994; Dershowitz 1996; Reid 2006).

The factors that result in nullifications in political cases are nevertheless quite different from those that result in mistrials in contemporary criminal cases. According to Judge Eric Holder, an African American who served on the Superior Court of the District of Columbia and as Attorney General in the Barack Obama administration, "There are some folks who have been so seared by racism, who are so affected by what has happened to them because they are black, that, even if you're the most credible, upfront black man or woman in law enforcement, you're never going to be able to reach them" (quoted in Rosen 1997:60). On the other hand, Jeffrey Rosen concludes that most jurors are "able to transcend their racially fraught experiences and . . . cast their votes on the basis of a scrupulous evaluation" of the evidence (1997:55). And research finds that about three-quarters of all felony trials result in a conviction (Maguire & Pastore 2001).

The problem of wrongful convictions. We have already discussed instances in which cases have been dismissed and convictions overturned due to police and prosecutorial misconduct. According to Joel Samaha, **wrongful convictions** arise in two ways: first, when "convictions [are] obtained by illegal means, such as by forced confessions or unreasonable searches and seizures"; and second, when "innocent people are convicted" (2000:358).

One case that came to light recently involved five young men (14 to 16 years old) who were convicted of brutally raping and beating a woman who was jogging in New York City's Central Park in 1989. At the time, this case was quite racially charged, since the victim was white and the defendants were black. The heinousness of the crime led to a moral panic of sorts about so-called wilding youths roaming the city, preying on innocent passersby (Maull 2002). In 2002, after the young men had completed prison terms of six to eleven and a half years, the convictions were overturned due to the confession and corroborative DNA testing of the real assailant, who was already serving a life sentence for the rape of three women and the rape and murder of a fourth. Authorities now believe that the confessions of the young men, upon which the convictions were based, were coerced by police. In such cases, suspects—especially frightened youths who are easily intimidated by aggressive law enforcement authorities—may think, "Even though I didn't do it, they're not going to believe me . . . [so] I may as well make a deal, make it easier on myself" (James Fox, quoted in Tanner 2002:A4).

Another source of wrongful convictions is eyewitness error. Various factors can influence a witness's perceptions of the crime and criminal: the amount of time the witness was exposed to the event, the distance between the observer and what was being observed, the amount of lighting around the crime scene, and postevent occurrences such as whether the witness was given leading information by the police. Racial stereotypes may also come

into play and influence what witnesses of different racial groups "see" (e.g., all blacks look alike), especially when police lineups include only one person who resembles the alleged perpetrator. Police may also coach witnesses at lineups, and in cases that rely on informants, outright lying may occur (Huff et al. 1996).

Community pressure for arrest and conviction may also influence a "rush to judgment," and some law enforcement agencies may place too much emphasis on closing cases expeditiously and winning at all costs. Take, for instance, the Dallas County District Attorney's Office, known for its high rate of wrongful convictions over the years. At one time it was common for prosecutors in this office to think: "Anyone can convict a guilty man; it takes a real prosecutor to convict an innocent one" (cited in Huff et al. 1996:43). Other problems include investigators who fail to follow alternative leads, the suppression of "exculpatory evidence even after [defense] motions for discovery have been made," and police who plant evidence and perjure themselves in court (p. 72).

The problem of wrongful convictions is particularly distressing in cases involving the death penalty, an issue we will explore in more detail in the next chapter. Researchers estimate that even if only 0.5 percent of convictions for Index crimes were to involve wrongful convictions, this would amount to nearly 10,000 persons a year (Huff et al. 1996). Moreover, racial disparities are apparent in both capital and noncapital cases, with African Americans constituting from 40 to 57 percent of the wrongfully convicted (Bedau & Radelet 1987; Scheck et al. 2000; Westervelt & Humphrey 2001). In a study of gender patterns of wrongful convictions, Mitch Ruesink and Marvin Free (2005) found that women were proportionately less likely than men to be wrongfully convicted for murder, but more likely to be wrongfully convicted for child abuse and drug offenses. They also found that black women were more likely than white women to be wrongfully convicted for murder and drug offenses, but less likely to be wrongfully convicted for child abuse.

Sentencing the Convicted

Sentencing of convicted offenders is a separate stage in the criminal justice process. In most jurisdictions the sentencing decision is the responsibility of the trial judge, although in some states the trial jury is allowed to determine or recommend sentences. Usually a separate sentencing hearing is held, during which the prosecution and defense attorney argue for or against a particular sentence. At the hearing a probation officer also reports on the results of a **presentence investigation** he or she has conducted. These results includes information about the offender's background and prior criminal offenses. The probation officer is then usually asked to make a sentencing

recommendation, which is generally accepted by the judge. Some states also utilize **victim impact statements**, often incorporating them into the presentence investigation report. Impact statements provide victims the opportunity to describe both the harm they have suffered and their views on the appropriate punishment (Adler et al. 2000; Rottman et al. 1995).

Types of Sentences

Outside of death penalty cases, the most basic sentencing decision involves the distinction between *probation* in the community and *incarceration* in a correctional facility (see Chapters 12 and 13). Overall, about 60 percent of adults under correctional supervision are on probation, and about half of those on probation have been convicted of felonies (Glaze & Bonczar 2003; US Department of Justice 2007c). Offenders may also serve part of their sentence incarcerated and then part on community *parole.*

The length of the sentence offenders must serve is also decided at the sentencing hearing. For much of the twentieth century, most jurisdictions used some form of **indeterminate sentence**. Indeterminate sentences entail no specific time period or only a maximum (or a minimum and maximum) term. Offenders are periodically reviewed by correctional authorities (e.g., members of a parole board), who evaluate their behavior and readiness for release. The guiding correctional principle is **rehabilitation**, and the sentence is deemed completed only when the offender can demonstrate that he or she is sufficiently reformed—that is, when he or she is judged capable of becoming a law-abiding and productive member of society (Adler et al. 2000; Reid 2006; Samaha 2000).

During the 1970s, critics from both sides of the political spectrum took issue with indeterminate sentencing. The rehabilitation model, everyone agreed, was not working well, as the correctional system had been unable to deliver effective rehabilitative services and criminal justice officials had been unable to determine who was truly reformed (Lipton et al. 1975). Liberals argued that indeterminate sentencing fostered discriminatory treatment based on class and racial/ethnic status, and that uncertain release dates constituted a "cruel injustice to prisoners, suspending them in a nether world of uncertainty . . . [and] arbitrary decisions" (Adler et al. 2000:315; Greenberg & Humphries 1980). Conservatives, in turn, complained about dangerous offenders being released too early, and called for sentencing reforms that would confine criminals for longer periods of time. They argued that **retribution**, not rehabilitation, should be the guiding philosophy of punishment. Also known as "just deserts," retribution entails sentences that are proportionate to the seriousness of the crime, not to the rehabilitative status of the criminal (von Hirsch 1976; Wilson 1975).

A **determinate sentence** refers to a term of punishment that is fixed at the outset and not dependent upon the behavior of offenders under correc-

tional supervision. Increasingly, state legislatures have been limiting judicial discretion by establishing systems of proportional punishments based on a retributive philosophy. Even where judges retain discretionary authority, they may be required to sentence the offender to a definite period of time. Many states have instituted a form of determinate sentencing known as the **presumptive sentence**. Under this approach, legislatures establish the penalty offenders are expected to receive for particular crimes, but judges are allowed to shorten or lengthen these sentences if certain *mitigating* or *aggravating* conditions are present. For example, a judge may shorten the sentence if the offender has shown remorse or offered the prosecution assistance in solving other crimes or apprehending other criminals. Conversely, a judge may lengthen the sentence if the offender has a prior criminal record, used a gun during the crime, or seriously injured the victim. Often legislatures will specify the mitigating and aggravating criteria that judges are permitted to consider (Reid 2006; Samaha 2000).

A **mandatory sentence** is more restrictive than a presumptive sentence because it allows for no judicial discretion whatsoever. Nearly all state legislatures have established mandatory sentences for some crimes, such as murder, crimes involving guns, and some drug offenses. These provisions usually require the offender to serve a minimum period of incarceration, eliminating the possibility of probation (Reid 2006; Samaha 2000).

In the federal system, the **Sentencing Reform Act** of 1984 authorized the US Sentencing Commission to develop sentencing guidelines for federal crimes that were supposed to be "neutral as to race, sex, national origin, creed, and socioeconomic status" (cited in Heaney 1991:203). The commission established a formula whereby a score is given for a particular offense, and additional points are deleted or added for mitigating and aggravating factors: "Once the . . . score is computed, judges determine the sentence by consulting a sentencing table that converts scores into months to be served" (Senna & Siegel 1996:538). Some states have adopted similar schemes, which can be so complicated that they require a computer program to assist in the calculations (Adler et al. 2000).

Since the mid-1990s the federal government and over half the states have adopted mandatory "**three strikes and you're out**" sentences that require prison terms of 25 years to life for anyone convicted of a third felony (or in some states a second or fourth felony). Although touted by politicians as a way to protect the public from serious criminals, most of the three-strikes offenders have been sentenced for nonviolent crimes. A notorious case in point is Jerry Dewayne Williams, a 27-year-old California man who was sentenced to 25 years to life for a third offense of *stealing a pizza* from a kid at a pizza parlor (Reid 2006; Shichor & Sechrest 1996).

Critics note that three-strikes policies have clogged already overcrowded courts, since defendants facing harsh sentences have little to lose by

demanding a trial. Moreover, three-strikes penalties focus on the wrong age group of offenders: older offenders whose criminality is already declining, especially as they grow into their thirties, middle age, and elderly years. Hence, most of the three-strikes offenders remain in prison long after they have stopped posing a threat to the public.

In California, judges have complained that the three-strikes mandate "basically castrates a judge." One judge refused to sentence 43-year-old Thomas Kiel Brown to life for stealing a $22 baseball cap from a store in a shopping mall. As he said: "No judge I know wants to let dangerous criminals loose. . . . But I'm sure the taxpayer doesn't want to spend more than $500,000 to put a petty thief in jail for stealing a cap" (Reid 1997:525). In 1996 the California Supreme Court dealt the state's statute a severe blow when it upheld a judge's decision not to impose a life sentence on Jesus Romero, a 34-year-old who was convicted of possessing 13 grams of cocaine (Romero's prior convictions were for burglary and attempted burglary). California law has traditionally given judges the power to disregard prior convictions when doing so seemed reasonable. As Sue Titus Reid observes, "The California Supreme Court ruled that the state statute did not remove that traditional judicial power, and if it had done so, it would have violated the state constitution" (1997:525). Thus a California judge who believes that a mandatory sentence is not "in the furtherance of justice" is not required to impose it.

In 2003, however, the US Supreme Court rejected two defendants' claim that California's three-strikes provision violated the Eighth Amendment's prohibition against "cruel and unusual punishment." Gary Ewing and Leandro Andrade had received sentences of 25 years to life and 50 years, respectively (Mears 2003). Ewing's third offense involved stealing three $399 golf clubs from a Los Angeles country club, and Andrade's involved theft of $153 worth of videotapes from two Kmart stores. In a five-to-four decision, the court ruled that the three-strikes law represented a "rational legislative judgement, entitled to deference," and that it would "not sit as a 'superlegislature' to second-guess these policy choices" (cited in Will 2003:74). At the same time, as mentioned in Chapter 8, in 2007 the US Supreme Court, noting the harsh sentences in federal guidelines for crack cocaine as opposed to powder cocaine, ruled that judges had the discretion to reduce the proscribed penalties. Graham Boyd, director of the ACLU's Drug Law Reform Project, described the decision as possibly "the first sentencing decision since the mid-1980s that actually talks about justice" (quoted in Cose 2007:53).

Discrimination in Sentencing

Arguably one of the most persistent controversies in sentencing involves concerns about the discriminatory treatment of racial and ethnic minorities.

Criminological research has shown that people of color often receive harsher criminal sentences than whites. Joan Petersilia and Susan Turner (1988), however, distinguish between **disparities** and **discrimination**. Disparities occur when legally relevant factors are applied but "have different results for different groups" (p. 92). Discrimination occurs when decisions are based on social status rather than on legitimate standards.

Most research has found that legally appropriate criteria such as offense seriousness and prior record account for the sentencing disparities that exist between people of color and whites (Barkan 2006; Myers 2000). However, offense seriousness and prior record may themselves be consequences of earlier discriminatory decisions made at the arrest and initial screening stages, and they may be consequences of previous sentencing decisions. Hence there may be little distinction between disparities and discrimination after all (Free 1997).

Furthermore, some evidence suggests that judges place more emphasis on offense seriousness and prior record when dealing with minority offenders (Miethe & Moore 1986; Nelson 1994; Welch et al. 1984). Other research suggests that in murder and rape or sexual assault cases, offenders who victimize whites are given more severe sentences than those who victimize blacks, and black offenders who victimize whites are given the harshest penalties of all (LaFree 1989; Paternoster 1991; Spohn & Spears 1996; Walsh 1987). Moreover, in death penalty cases, "the race of the victim is often more significant than the race of the offender, and may reflect not only the devalued status of black victims" but also the greater societal outrage at the victimization of members of the majority white group (Myers 2000:460).

Research has uncovered stronger evidence of discrimination against minorities convicted of less serious offenses than against minorities convicted of more serious ones (Spohn & Cederblom 1991; Unnever & Hembroff 1988). Cases of serious criminality call for more severe penalties for all offenders, regardless of minority status, leaving judges little room to exercise discretion based on legally suspect criteria. Similarly, research has shown greater discrimination in the *probation versus incarceration* decision—referred to as the **in/out decision**—than in the decision regarding sentence length for those incarcerated. Apparently, incarcerated offenders constitute a more homogeneous group of serious offenders who receive comparable treatment (Kramer & Steffensmeier 1993; Nelson 1994).

In addition, research suggests that discrimination is conditional—that is, dependent on other factors. For instance, people of color are more likely to be incarcerated in the South and in areas with higher proportions of minority residents and higher unemployment rates (Bridges & Crutchfield 1988; Bridges et al. 1987; Chiricos & Crawford 1995). In these places, researchers argue, minorities are perceived by criminal justice officials to

be a more volatile, socially disruptive, and potentially rebellious population.

The effect of race on sentencing is also contingent on gender and age. In an important study, Darrell Steffensmeier and colleagues (1998) examined the effects of race, gender, and age (controlling for offense severity and prior record) on the in/out and length-of-incarceration decision using data from nearly 139,000 cases in the state of Pennsylvania from 1989 to 1992. They found that males received more severe sentences than females, and that those aged 21 to 29 years received harsher penalties than those aged 18 to 20 and those aged 30 and older (as well, those aged 18 to 20 received harsher penalties than those aged 30 and older). Significantly, blacks received more severe sentences than their white counterparts in each of their respective gender/age groups. Moreover, the sentencing inequities were the most pronounced for black males aged 21 to 29. The one exception to this pattern was for white males aged 50 and older, who received somewhat harsher sentences, perhaps due to the sentencing of older drug offenders involved in large-scale or upper-level drug trafficking.

Steffensmeier and colleagues argue that race (i.e., young black male) has become a perceptual shorthand used by judges to make sentencing decisions that involve a high degree of uncertainty about "who is dangerous and who is not" (p. 767). Judges make assessments of offenders' past and future behavior that are consistent with societal stereotypes about various social groups. Judges view young black men, compared to other demographic groups, as more committed to street life, more dangerous, and less amenable to reform. They often assume that women are less blameworthy: they see them as playing minor roles in crime, as having more mental problems, or as victims of domestic abuse (see Bickle & Peterson 1991; Daly 1994; Daly & Bordt 1995). Judges assume that both women and older men are more likely to have stable employment histories and responsibility for the care of dependents. Since judges view young black men, on the other hand, as lacking the social bonds that might insulate them from future criminality, they find less reason to give them a break. Judges also assume that incarcerating women (who might be pregnant) and older men poses greater child welfare and healthcare costs to the corrections and social services systems. And they view young black men as better able than whites to "do time" and avoid being victimized in state prisons that are dominated by blacks (see Chapter 12). At the same time, Steffensmeier and colleagues attribute the relatively lighter sentences given to those aged 18 to 20 (as compared to those aged 21 to 29) to judges' view of juveniles "as more impressionable and promising prospects for reform, and as more likely to experience victimization at the hands of [older] predatory inmates" (p. 779).

In a study of over 89,000 defendants convicted under federal sentencing guidelines between 1993 and 1996, Steffensmeier and Stephen Demuth (2000) also found that Hispanics received the most severe sentences, fol-

lowed by blacks and then whites, but that this disparity was most apparent in **downward departure cases** involving drug sentences—that is, cases where presumptive sentencing guidelines allow "judges to depart from prescribed sentencing ranges" and give a defendant a reduced sentence (p. 705). Federal guidelines allow for a sentencing reduction when a defendant cooperates with prosecutors and provides **substantial assistance** that facilitates the prosecution of other offenders. Thirty percent of the sentencing cases were substantial assistance cases. Steffensmeier and Demuth reiterate the point we made earlier about criminal justice officials' use of racial/ethnic status as a perceptual shorthand to make decisions about defendants.

Many observers have hoped that greater minority representation on the judiciary would minimize discriminatory sentencing practices. Susan Welch and colleagues (1988) found that white judges in "Metro City" (an unidentified Northeastern city) issued more severe sentences to black offenders than to white offenders, while black judges issued comparable sentences to blacks and whites. Similarly, Malcolm Holmes and colleagues (1993) found that white judges in El Paso County, Texas, issued harsher penalties to Hispanic offenders than to white offenders, while Hispanic judges issued comparable penalties to these offenders.

On the other hand, Cassia Spohn (1990b) found that both black and white judges in Detroit sentenced black offenders more severely than white offenders. She suggests that most judges share common attitudes and that both black and white judges perceive black offenders as a greater threat. Since judges are selected from the "establishment center" of the legal profession and are socialized to the informal norms of the system, they tend to issue sentences that fall within the range of typical penalties for particular kinds of offenders (Holmes et al. 1993; Uhlman 1978:893). As one African American judge observes, "No matter how 'liberal' black judges may believe themselves to be, the law remains essentially a conservative doctrine, and those who practice it conform" (Wright 1973:22–23).

In another Detroit study, Spohn (1990a) found that in sexual assault cases, black female judges issued longer sentences than black male judges. However, research has not found consistent differences overall in the sentencing practices of female and male judges, providing further evidence of homogeneity within the judiciary (Gruhl et al. 1981; Kritzer & Uhlman 1977).

Without a doubt, sentencing is a difficult decision that relies on a complex configuration of factors. Judges often make wise and warranted decisions that are based on legally appropriate criteria and reasonable evaluation of the offender's likelihood of reform. But all other things being equal, some offenders do appear to be treated more inequitably than others.

12

Punishment and Prisons

THE "FRIDAY CIRCUS" WAS ABOUT TO BEGIN. IT HAD become weekly fare for the "entertainment-starved males" of the capital city of Kabul, Afghanistan (Goodwin 1998:26). Thirty thousand men and boys came to the Olympic sports stadium to gawk and revel as a young woman named Sohaila received 100 lashes with a leather strap and two thieves had their right hands cut off. Sohaila, convicted of adultery for walking with a man who was not her relative, was lucky. She was single, so she was only flogged. "Had she been married, she would have been . . . stoned to death." The crowd cheered wildly as Sohaila was beaten but fell silent when the thieves were brought in. The air was crisp with tension as physicians wielding surgical scalpels severed the thieves' hands. The official overseeing the spectacle then triumphantly raised the amputated hands by their index fingers and warned onlookers that this was "the punishment for any of you caught stealing." The crowd came to its feet in celebration as the thieves were driven around the arena in a jeep. The year was 1998.

Such practices are, of course, prohibited in the United States. It is not unusual, however, to hear people make cavalier remarks about the need to resurrect such punishments here. Surely then, some argue, offenders would be deterred from crime. Thus when Michael Fay, an 18-year-old American living in Singapore, was sentenced in 1993 to six lashes with a rattan cane, four months in jail, and $2,200 in fines for vandalism ("egging" and spray-painting cars), many people considered his punishment well deserved. But caning is no mere slap on the wrist. Administered with full force by a martial arts expert, it causes severe pain, bleeding, and permanent scarring (Witt 1994).

Survey research indicates that a strong majority of the US public believes that criminal punishments are not sufficiently severe, although this sentiment is stronger among men, whites, political conservatives, and religious fundamentalists (Barkan 2006; US Department of Justice 2007a). Over the past quarter century, however, Americans have not been weak-kneed in their resolve to punish criminals. Use of the death penalty has risen, sentences have lengthened, and the number of people under correc-

tional supervision has skyrocketed. In fact, the number of adults under correctional supervision increased from 1,842,121 in 1980 to 7,294,208 in 2006, a rise of over 295 percent (see Table 12.1). The number of those who are incarcerated in jails or prisons exceeds 2.2 million, an increase of nearly 450 percent since 1980. The US incarceration rate of over 750 per 100,000 population is the highest in the world, with the state of California alone incarcerating more people than France, Germany, Great Britain, Japan, the Netherlands, and Singapore combined (Lazare 2007; Sabol et al. 2007; Schlosser 1998).

The correctional system in the United States is a complex apparatus consisting of city and county jails, state and federal prisons, and community-based programs. **Jails** house individuals awaiting trial and those convicted of minor offenses who are generally serving not more than a year. State facilities contain about 90 percent of the prison population, but the bulk of offenders overall are on probation or parole (US Department of Justice 2006). **Probation** entails a period of community supervision in lieu of incarceration, while **parole** involves community supervision after release from confinement. **Community corrections** include a growing array of alternatives to incarceration that are drawing the attention of criminologists and criminal justice practitioners and policymakers.

In this chapter we will use our sociological imagination to critically examine the system of punishment and incarceration in the United States, and in the next chapter we will look at community alternatives to prison. We will question whether current strategies for dealing with crime are charting the most effective course. In doing so, perhaps we will learn something about ourselves, for as Émile Durkheim observed, during times of public anxiety and uneasiness about the world, the collective urge to punish reinforces social solidarity by drawing us together in a "common posture of . . . [moral] indignation" (quoted in Erikson 1966:4; see Chapter 4). But, we must ask, is moral indignation the most appropriate sentiment upon which to build a system of punishment and corrections? Don't we have the responsibility to demand more of our political leaders who wage war against crim-

Table 12.1 Number of Adults Under Correctional Supervision (1980 and 2006)

	1980	2006
Total population	1,842,121	7,294,208
Jail	183,988	766,010
Prison	319,598	1,492,973
Parole	220,438	798,202
Probation	1,118,097	4,237,023

Source: US Department of Justice 2006b.

inals, the nonviolent and violent alike, given the inequities and injustices that this war has wrought (Cose 1999)? We begin with a discussion of the death penalty, followed by a consideration of prisons.

The Death Penalty

Throughout most of US history, the death penalty, or capital punishment, was considered "an appropriate and justifiable response to crime" (Smith 2000:621). Survey research indicates that over two-thirds of the US public continue to favor the death penalty for the crime of murder, although this proportion drops to less than half if respondents are given the option of choosing "life without the possibility of parole" (US Department of Justice 2007a). Yet in spite of the public's support, the death penalty remains a controversial punishment.

Legal Lethality

In the 1972 case of *Furman v. Georgia,* the US Supreme Court ruled that the death penalty had been implemented arbitrarily and unfairly, and hence violated the Eighth Amendment prohibition against "cruel and unusual punishment." The penalty, the Court observed, had been administered disproportionately in the South and against the poor and people of color. Nevertheless, the Court stopped short of declaring capital punishment unconstitutional in principle; the problem, it held, was the manner in which it had been applied.

Use of the death penalty had already been on the decline since the 1930s, and in the years following *Furman* a temporary moratorium on capital punishment was imposed as cases worked their way through the courts. In decisions in 1976 and 1977, the US Supreme Court clarified the conditions under which capital punishment may be imposed. States that wished to use the penalty needed to develop guidelines specifying *aggravating condition*s under which it applied—for example, homicides committed in the course of another felony, homicides resulting in the death of more than one person, homicides against public officials, homicides involving especially brutal or heinous acts, homicides by an offender with a prior record of violence, and homicides for pecuniary gain. Moreover, the Court held that capital punishment could not be mandatory, even if such aggravating circumstances were found. Judges and jurors had to be given the opportunity to consider *mitigating conditions* under which the offender's life could be spared. The Court also said that the penalty could not be imposed for rape, as had been done in the pre-*Furman* era (Bowers & Pierce 1980). In 2008, the Court reaffirmed this decision in ruling that a man convicted of child rape could not be executed (Mears 2008).

In 1977, Gary Gilmore of Utah became the first offender to be executed

in the post-*Furman* period. The annual number of executions after that rose to a high of 98 in 1999, but then declined to 42 in 2007 (Amnesty International USA 2008). Southern states have accounted for nearly 90 percent of the post-*Furman* executions, with Texas alone accounting for 38 percent. Currently, 35 states, the US government, and the US military have death penalty statutes, and the number of inmates awaiting executions exceeds 3,300 (Death Penalty Information Center 2008a, 2009). Because of postconviction appeals, the average time between the imposition of a death sentence and the actual execution has been over 10 years for those executed in the post-*Furman* period (Bonczar & Snell 2003). Moreover, it costs at least $2 million to process a capital punishment case from trial to execution, which is more than it costs to process a noncapital first-degree murder case and keep an offender in prison for the rest of his or her life. As Mark Costanzo observes, "Capital trials are more complex and time-consuming than other criminal trials at every stage in the legal process" (1997:62–63). The postconviction appeal stage is generally the most expensive part of all, and approximately 20 to 30 percent of appeals result in reversal of the conviction or sentence, a rate that is many times higher than that for noncapital cases (Bohm 1998).

Death penalty cases are appealed on grounds of either due process violations or compelling new evidence of innocence. In one case involving the 1980 death of a 16-year-old white girl in Texas, the investigating police officer had told two janitors—one black and one white—that one of them would "hang" for the crime. The officer then turned to the black man, Clarence Lee Brandley, and said, "Since you're the nigger, you're elected" (Radelet et al. 1992:121). Brandley was indicted by an all-white grand jury and initially tried by an all-white trial jury. The first trial resulted in a hung jury, but a second trial resulted in conviction in 1981. Following the trial, misconduct by the police and prosecutor came to light when hair samples and photographs turned up missing. Although Brandley's first appeal was rejected in 1985, subsequent information from an informant and recanted testimony from a trial witness (the other janitor) shed further light on Brandley's innocence. He was granted a new trial in 1989, and nine months later the charges were dropped. All told, Brandley spent nine years on death row for a crime he did not commit. No law enforcement officials were ever reprimanded for mishandling the case (Parker et al. 2001).

In another case, in Florida, Sonia Jacobs was released from death row after an appellate court concluded in 1990 that the prosecution had suppressed exculpatory evidence and that a prosecution witness (who turned out to be the real killer) had lied. Two years earlier, Jacobs's husband and codefendant, Jesse Tafero, had been executed after being "convicted and sentenced to death on exactly the same evidence" as had Jacobs (Radelet & Bedau 1998:231).

Samuel Gross (1996) argues that mistaken convictions may be more common in capital murder cases than in other cases because police and prosecutors are under greater public pressure to apprehend the perpetrator as quickly as possible. This pressure may lead them to make hasty judgments, to use informants of questionable reliability, and to coerce suspects into confessions. The greater publicity given to such cases also provides jurors with information damaging to the defendant that might not be admissible in court. And since defendants in capital cases are most often poor, they do not have the resources to challenge a determined prosecutor successfully. Judges typically assign capital cases to inexperienced or mediocre defense attorneys. One study of Kentucky, for instance, found that a quarter of those on death row were represented by attorneys who were subsequently disbarred, suspended, or incarcerated (Kroll 1991). One trial in Alabama had to be postponed when the defense attorney arrived at court drunk; when the case resumed the next day, the defendant was quickly sentenced to death. In four trials in Georgia, the attorneys representing African American defendants used the term "nigger" to refer to their clients, all of whom were sentenced to death. And in Texas, a defense attorney simply told the jury at the sentencing hearing: "You are an extremely intelligent jury. You've got that man's life in your hands. You can take it or not. That's all I have to say" (McCormick 1998:64). His client was executed.

Michael Radelet and colleagues (1992) found that 416 death penalty defendants in the twentieth century were wrongfully convicted, 23 of whom were executed. The Death Penalty Information Center (2008b) reported that since 1973, 130 people have been released from death row due to posttrial findings of innocence. In 2000, Illinois governor George Ryan was so concerned about his state's record of wrongful convictions that he called for a moratorium on further executions and the establishment of a special panel to examine the death penalty. Upon leaving office in 2003, Ryan commuted the death sentences of 167 prisoners in Illinois and granted an unconditional pardon to four others.

In spite of this history of wrongful convictions, state and federal officials continue to look for ways to limit the appeal process—for example, by narrowing the time a defendant has to file an appeal and by restricting a defendant's ability to file additional appeals that raise claims not included in the original appeal. Limiting the process, however, will likely result in more wrongful executions (Bohm 1998).

In the *Furman* case a majority of justices on the US Supreme Court were persuaded that the death penalty had been applied in a discriminatory manner. Fifteen years later, in *McCleskey v. Kemp* (1987), a more conservative group of justices had the opportunity to revisit the issue. Warren McCleskey had been sentenced to death in Georgia for the murder of a white police officer. McCleskey appealed his case on the basis of statistical

evidence indicating that black offenders who murdered white victims had a higher probability of receiving a death sentence than defendants in cases with other racial patterns of offenders and victims. But a majority of justices were not persuaded that *statistical* evidence of racial disparity constituted a sufficient basis upon which to overturn McCleskey's sentence. The decision virtually "eliminated the federal courts as a forum for the consideration of statistically based claims of racial discrimination in capital sentencing" (Baldus & Woodworth 1998:409). Currently, over 40 percent of persons on death row are African American (US Department of Justice 2006).

Many people believe that if capital punishment is to be used, **lethal injection** constitutes the most humane method of inducing death. Most states now use lethal injection as the sole means of execution or allow the condemned person a choice between lethal injection and another method (i.e., electrocution, gas, hanging, or firing squad). Typically the lethal injection procedure entails strapping the person to a gurney and injecting him or her with a nonlethal chemical (sodium pentothal) to induce sleep and unconsciousness. The person is then administrated pancuronium bromide, a muscle relaxant, and finally, potassium chloride, which induces cardiac arrest and permanently stops the heart. Complications can arise, however, if the sodium pentothal is insufficient, the chemicals are administered out of sequence, or the executioners have difficulty locating a usable vein for the insertion of the catheter (Denno 1998). When Stanley Tooky Williams was executed by lethal injection in California in 2005, it took 35 minutes for him to die. One eye witness described the last 10 minutes of his ordeal as "slow, ugly, and torturous. . . . The midsection of Stan's body did not stay still. It began to contort, caving in to the point of distortion—his stomach appeared to have been sucked dry of all internal organs, as it sunk so low it nearly touched his spine" (Barbara Becnel, quoted in Williams 2007:346–347). Nevertheless, in 2008 the US Supreme Court upheld the constitutionality of lethal injection as a method of capital punishment (Gramlich 2008).

Women and the Death Penalty

Less than 2 percent of prisoners on death row are women (US Department of Justice 2006). The paucity of women receiving capital punishment reflects both their low representation among those convicted of murder and the fact that their homicides are more likely than men's to be domestic crimes and to lack premeditation (see Chapter 9). Women also tend to be seen as less blameworthy for their crimes and more deserving of consideration (see Chapter 11), and society is less willing to subject women to severe punishments: "When the ship is sinking, we put women in lifeboats first. When women enter the armed forces, they are kept away from the firing line. . . . We are uncomfortable with subjecting women to death or even danger" (Streib 1998:220).

The widely publicized execution by lethal injection of Karla Faye Tucker in Texas in 1998 brought media attention to the issue of women and the death penalty. Prior to the Tucker case, only one woman had been executed in the post-*Furman* era, and Texas had not executed a woman since 1863. In spite of Tucker's conviction for the pickaxe murder of two people in a 1983 robbery, she emerged as an appealing and sympathetic media figure, one who sparked "a worldwide debate over redemption and retribution" (O'Shea 1999:343). A born-again Christian who found God on death row, Tucker counseled fellow prisoners and even married a prison minister. The Rutherford Institute, which usually limits its advocacy to cases of religious freedom and human rights, petitioned President Bill Clinton to prevent the execution. Television evangelist Pat Robertson and even Pope John Paul II spoke on Tucker's behalf. While these supporters emphasized Tucker's religious conversion, they had never before made a plea on behalf of any of the condemned men who had converted to Christianity. Nevertheless, Tucker acknowledged that there had been people who had appealed their case before "who were just as committed to Christ as I am" but who were executed anyway. The "people" she referred to were men. "If you believe in the death penalty for one," she said, "you believe in it for everyone" (quoted in Pearson 1998:A19).

Tucker's appeal for clemency was denied. When asked about the "gender factor" in the case, a spokesperson for then-governor George W. Bush replied, "The gender of the murderer did not make any difference to the victim" (cited in Gillespie 2000:98). Neither did it make a difference to protesters carrying signs outside the prison while Tucker was strapped to the gurney, signs that read "Forget injection. Use a pickaxe" and "Axe and you shall receive" (pp. 98–99).

The fact that Tucker was a white woman is also significant, for society's reluctance to execute women varies by the race of the offender. Nearly 40 percent of women executed from 1930 to 1967, for instance, were African American (Collins 1997). A study of women on death row in 1993 found African American and Latina offenders to be "overrepresented in the kinds of murders that . . . are at low risk of resulting in the death penalty" (Farr 1997:273). And of the women who were on death row at the time of Tucker's execution, over 40 percent were women of color (O'Shea 1999).

Like Tucker, Guinevere Garcia, an Illinois death-row inmate, was critical of the system's chivalry. In 1996, Garcia asked that her execution proceed as scheduled, but against her wishes, death penalty opponents lodged a petition to commute her sentence on the grounds that she had been a battered woman and an abused child (O'Shea 1999). Garcia had been sentenced to death for killing her ex-husband, a crime she had committed four months after being released from a 10-year stint in prison for smothering her 11-month-old daughter. "I killed George Garcia, and only I know why,"

she told the review board. "Do not generically label, package, and attempt to justify my actions as that of an abused woman." According to Patricia Pearson, "Garcia was contemplating her life in the face of her death and seeking some measure of redemption. By depicting her as a 'pitiable creature,' her supporters stole from her an elemental gesture of grace" (1997:60). Although Governor Jim Edgar had refused to stay the execution of the six men who had requested clemency since he had taken office, he ignored Garcia's plea to be allowed to die and commuted her sentence to life in prison. In 1997, Garcia slashed her wrist with a broken lightbulb from her prison cell—an apparent, though unsuccessful, attempt to take her own life.

Juveniles and the Death Penalty

In 1642 a teenager named Thomas Graunger was executed for bestiality in Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts. This began the history of executing persons in the American colonies and later the United States for crimes committed while under 18 years of age. Since the execution of Graunger, an estimated 365 individuals have been executed for crimes committed while they were juveniles. This constitutes less than 2 percent of all executions in the country since the beginning of the seventeenth century. In the post-*Furman* era, half of the 22 juveniles who have been put to death have been African American (Cothern 2000; Death Penalty Information Center 2004a, 2004b).

Even those who favor the death penalty for adults may not consider it an appropriate punishment for juveniles (Moon et al. 2000). A case in point is the 2004 decision of Virginia jurors who rejected a death sentence for teenage sniper Lee Malvo, who was involved in a series of shootings in the Washington, D.C., area that killed 10 people in 2002. In contrast, the jury that convicted John Muhammed, Malvo's 42-year-old accomplice, recommended the death sentence for him (Greenhouse 2004).

The relative sympathy some people feel toward juvenile offenders stems in part from the perception that mitigating circumstances—immaturity and psychological disturbance—may be factors in their crimes. In a study of 91 juveniles who had received a death sentence, for example, Dinah Robinson and Otis Stephens (1992) found that nearly a third suffered from psychological disturbances (e.g., depression, paranoia, self-mutilation), almost half came from dysfunctional families, and almost a third had low or borderline IQs. In 2002 the US Supreme Court ruled that execution of persons with mental retardation was unconstitutional, and in 2005 it ruled that execution of persons who committed their crimes while they were under 18 years of age was unconstitutional as well (Death Penalty Information Center 2004c; Gramlich 2008).

The Modern Penitentiary

Historical Background

In colonial America, over 160 offenses, from murder to disrespecting one's parents, were punishable by death. Corporal punishment, fines, and compensation to the victim or victim's family were the preferred penal responses, however. Wealthy offenders were more likely to be fined, while the poor were flogged. **Flogging** with a blunt instrument or whip was a public spectacle that directly involved the citizenry in the collective ritual of punishment, in the mobilization of moral sentiments that reinforce social solidarity. Although the practice of flogging waned over the years, it remained in use in the United States through the twentieth century and was not declared unconstitutional by a federal court until 1968 (Inciardi 1996; Rothman 1971; Shover & Inverarity 1995).

The collective ritual of the **pillory** was also used for corporal punishment in colonial times. Here the offender's head, hands, and feet were secured by a wooden frame. The violator was kept in public view and repeatedly whipped or pelted with rocks and eggs by passersby. It was not unusual for the offender's ears to be nailed to the pillory as well. Another device, the **brank**, was used to punish gossips, perjurers, liars, blasphemers, drunkards, and husbands who battered their wives. The brank, also called the "gossip's helm" or "dame's bridle," consisted of a cage that was secured around the head, with "a spike plate or flat dish of iron that was placed in the mouth over the tongue," causing severe pain if the offender tried to speak (Inciardi 1996:492).

Other colonial punishments included branding and use of dunking stools, duncecaps, and signs (e.g., "I am a fornicator"). The *scarlet letter,* for instance, "made famous by Nathaniel Hawthorne's novel of the same name, was used for a variety of offenses. The adulterous wife wore an *A,* cut from scarlet cloth and sewn to her upper garments. The blasphemer wore a *B,* the pauper a *P,* the thief a *T,* and the drunkard a *D*" (Inciardi 1996:492). In the 1990s this approach enjoyed renewed interest, as when persons convicted of drunk driving in Sarasota County, Florida, were required to put red stickers on the rear bumpers of their vehicles that read CONVICTED DUI (driving under the influence).

In the late eighteenth century, the Quakers in Pennsylvania pioneered the use of prisons, an innovation that removed the public from direct participation in the collective ritual of punishment. Previously, jails had been used primarily to hold persons who were awaiting court action or who could not pay their debts. Now a separate wing of Philadelphia's Walnut Street Jail, the "penitentiary house," was used to confine convicted offenders, who were kept in solitary confinement. The Quakers viewed the penitentiary as a

humane alternative to the cruelty and degradation of existing methods. Locked in isolation, inmates could "be made to contemplate the evil of their ways . . . [and] immerse themselves in self-reflection and penitence" (Barlow 1996:399; Clear et al. 2006; Shover & Inverarity 1995).

In the early nineteenth century, New York constructed the Auburn Prison, the first institution to use an architectural design that arranged cells in multiple tiers, with the entire facility surrounded by a fortresslike stone wall. Prisoners were confined in separate cells at night but allowed to eat and work together in small groups during the day. Solitary confinement was reserved for breaches of prison rules, but all inmates were required to maintain complete silence at all times. Hard work and a regimented life were to be the means to one's salvation. Whereas some earlier forms of punishment attempted to discipline the "body" through physical pain, these new methods sought to discipline the "mind" (Barlow 1996; Foucault 1979).

The Auburn approach eventually prevailed as the model for the modern penitentiary. Though considered more humane than earlier punishments, conditions in these institutions were deplorable. They were overcrowded, dirty and dilapidated, physically harsh, and notorious for failing to reform their captives. Through the first half of the twentieth century, prisons in the United States were colloquially referred to as **Big Houses**. Institutions like Alcatraz in California, Sing Sing in New York, and Stateville in Illinois became legendary as human warehouses. Guards ruled the Big Houses through the threat and use of force, and boredom terrorized the prisoners' souls (Irwin 1980; Johnson 2002; Rothman 1980).

After the 1870s, however, prison reformers often advocated a more rehabilitative penal philosophy. The National Prison Association proclaimed that the reformation of criminals required their moral regeneration, "not the infliction of vindictive suffering" (cited in Clear & Cole 1994:57). In 1876 the Elmira Reformatory in New York, under the leadership of Zebulon Brockway, promoted education as the key to successful rehabilitation. Elmira was designed for 16- to 30-year-old, first-time offenders, who were placed in a school-like atmosphere and required to take courses in a variety of academic, vocational, and moral subjects. This approach was incorporated into the philosophy of juvenile "reform schools" as the juvenile justice system developed (see Further Exploration, p. 432).

In the nineteenth century, few women were incarcerated, but those who were incarcerated were treated similarly to men. Initially, separate women's quarters were created in men's institutions. Then, in the early 1870s, the first prison operated for and by women was established in Indianapolis. Reformers considered the fortresslike atmosphere that was characteristic of men's prisons to be inappropriate for women's institutions. These, they believed, should be organized instead around groups of cottages that housed 20 to 50 women in a homelike atmosphere. And inmates, they maintained, should be allowed private rooms rather than cells, be given the opportunity

to decorate their quarters, and be taught domestic skills thought suitable to their feminine nature (e.g., ironing, laundry work, cooking) (Belknap 2007; Clear et al. 2006; Pollock-Byrne 1990).

After World War I, psychological theories of criminality increasingly influenced modern conceptions of rehabilitation (see Chapter 3). In 1929, "rehabilitation as the primary purpose of incarceration became national policy" (Clear & Cole 1994:65–66). Diagnostic classification systems were developed to differentiate those who were likely to benefit from rehabilitation from those who were not, and to guide programs of individualized treatment. By the 1940s the modern "correctional" institution, employing primarily group but also individual counseling along with vocational and educational training, became the model penitentiary. Prison discipline was less intrusive, and prisoners were allowed more personal amenities as well as recreational, visitation, and mail privileges. But despite all the well-intentioned rhetoric about rehabilitation, prison officials could not deliver on their promises, as genuine reform was overwhelmed by lack of know-how and by administrative and fiscal constraints. At best, inmates were left on their own to undergo personal reform, a difficult task in institutions that were still quite grim and punitive (Johnson 2002).

From the early 1950s to the early 1970s, prisons in the United States experienced political turmoil that reflected the civil rights movement of the larger society. Prisoners frustrated with punitive prison practices protested nonviolently and rioted to pressure for reform. The most well-known riot of that era occurred in New York's Attica prison in 1971. Over 2,000 prisoners took over the facility and held guards as hostages, demanding, among other things, improved diet and medical care, religious freedom (especially for black Muslims), education and rehabilitative programming, legal assistance, procedures for handling complaints, and access to the courts. Governor Nelson Rockefeller ordered state troopers to reclaim the institution by force, which resulted in the killing of about 40 people, both prisoners and guards (Adler et al. 2000; Balkan et al. 1980).

Attica and other prison protests and riots drew attention to the need for reform and ushered in a wave of civil rights lawsuits by prisoners. As a result, judicial scrutiny of prison conditions and of the behavior of correctional personnel was increased. At the same time, however, the 1970s witnessed the abandonment of the rehabilitative mandate of prisons in favor of a retributive philosophy (see Chapter 11). The penitentiary has primarily become a custodial institution where prisoners are expected to "do their time" in proportion to the seriousness of their offenses.

The Incarceration Boom

Between 1980 and 2006, the state and federal prison population in the United States increased by nearly 300 percent, about twice the percentage increase that occurred in the five decades between 1930 and 1980 (Sarabi

2000; see Table 12.1). This incarceration boom has created serious problems of prison overcrowding, with many prisons operating well above capacity (Austin et al. 2001; Shichor 1997).

Criminological research shows that crime rates alone do not account for fluctuations in the size of the prison population over time. Several studies have found that prison admissions increase during times of higher unemployment, as incarceration is used to absorb and control the surplus supply of laborers, who constitute a potentially rebellious population (Chiricos & Delone 1992; Hochstetler & Shover 1997). Raymond Michalowski and Susan Carlson attributed rising state and federal prison admissions between 1980 and 1992 to the "growth of an urban underclass with declining access to income-replacing social welfare and public-job provision that began in the 1970s and accelerated throughout the 1980s" (1999:228).

Political factors also affect prison expansion. David Jacobs and Ronald Helms (1996) analyzed state and federal prison admission rates between 1948 and 1989 and found that they were positively associated with the strength of the Republican Party (as measured by the percentage of people who identified themselves as Republican in any given year), independent of the level of crime. They noted that the Republican Party, in comparison to the Democratic Party, has more consistently advanced a law-and-order agenda (see Chapter 1). Jacobs and Helms also found that admission rates increased in the year following presidential elections. They argued that competition for votes caused incumbents from either party to enact severe penal policies during campaign years in order to appeal to the public's desire to crack down on crime.

David Greenberg and Valerie West's analysis (2001) of state imprisonment rates between 1971 and 1991 yielded results that support and extend previous research. They found that higher rates of imprisonment were associated with higher unemployment, a larger proportion of the population that was black, a conservative political culture, lower spending on welfare, and higher per capita state revenues. And in a study of state imprisonment between 1977 and 1996, Thomas Stucky and colleagues (2005) found that Republican control of state legislatures was more likely to increase incarceration rates when competition for electoral votes was high.

Greenberg and West's (2001) research also highlighted the role of increased drug arrests on rising incarceration rates, as discussed elsewhere in this book (see Chapters 1, 5, and 8). Currently, about 20 percent of prisoners in state institutions, and 53 percent of prisoners in federal institutions, are serving time for drug offenses (see Table 12.2). At the same time, as the proportion of prisoners incarcerated for drug offenses has increased, the opportunities to receive drug treatment in prison have declined (Austin et al. 2001; DiMascio 1997; Lazare 2007; Lock et al. 2002).

African Americans have been especially impacted by punitive correc-

tional policies. African Americans, just 13 percent of the US population, constitute about 38 percent of the prisoner population (see Table 12.3). And although males are much more likely than females to be incarcerated, both black males and black females are disproportionately more likely to be imprisoned than their white counterparts. These policies have had the unfortunate effect of further destabilizing some minority communities by weakening family and community ties that might otherwise foster informal social controls among youths and by exacerbating the intergenerational transmission of social disadvantage (Foster & Hagan 2007; Rose & Clear 1998).

Moreover, the incarceration boom has been extraordinarily expensive. It costs an average of $80,000 per prisoner to construct a new maximum-security prison. And with financing costs (borrowed money) factored in, the total expenditure is two to three times the original investment. The nation's correctional system now costs taxpayers about $44 billion a year, and this figure does not include the hidden costs of expenses transferred to corrections departments from education, health, and other agencies. Money spent on prisons also diverts resources that might otherwise be devoted to crime prevention and general societal needs. Some states are now spending more money on corrections than on higher education (Austin et al. 2001; DiMascio 1997; Liptak 2008; Stephan 2004).

The irony of all this, as Franklin Zimring and Gordon Hawkins (1997)

Table 12.2 Number of Prisoners by Type of Offense (2004/2006)

	State (2004)		Federal (2006)	
Drug offenses	249,400	(20.0%)	93,751	(53.2%)
Violent offenses	633,700	(50.9%)	16,507	(9.4%)
Property offenses	265,600	(21.3%)	10,015	(5.7%)
Other offenses	95,800	(7.7%)	55,995	(31.8%)
Total	1,244,500	(100.0%)	176,268	(100.0%)

Sources: US Department of Justice 2004, tab. 6.0001; Sabol et al. 2007, tab. 12.

Table 12.3 Number of Prisoners by Race/Ethnicity and Gender (2007)

	White	Black	Hispanic	Other
Male	755,500	814,700	410,900	109,700
Female	96,600	67,600	32,100	12,000
Total	852,100	882,300	443,000	121,700
	(37.1%)	(38.4%)	(19.3%)	(5.3%)

Source: Sabol & Couture 2008, tab. 9.
Note: Data are for mid-2007 and include both prison and jail inmates.

observe, is that expanded prison admissions have the greatest impact on less serious offenses, those offenses at the margin between meriting incarceration and meriting more lenient penal sanctions. In California, for example, the state with the largest prison population, "only 27 percent of the additional prison space added between 1980 and 1990 was used to increase the number of prisoners who had been convicted of violent offenses" (p. 18). Nationwide, the *proportion* of prisoners convicted of violent crimes has declined. Zimring and Hawkins are concerned that such correctional policies, which narrow sentencing disparities between life-threatening and non-life-threatening offenses, diminish the deterrent effect of the law, because offenders have less to lose by crossing the threshold of violence. Thus the incarceration boom, in their view, represents a misguided political response to the public's genuine concern about crime. Prison expansion provides little "bang for the buck" in protecting the public against the crimes that it fears most—crimes of violence.

Privatization of Prisons

In his January 1961 farewell address, President Dwight Eisenhower warned the American public to "guard against the acquisition of unwarranted influence, whether sought or unsought, by the military-industrial complex." Today, Eric Schlosser argues, the United States has "developed a **prison-industrial complex**—a set of bureaucratic, political, and economic interests that encourage increased spending on imprisonment, regardless of the actual need" (1998:54). Architectural and construction firms, investment bankers, and companies selling everything from security cameras to padded cells view this spending not as a burden on taxpayers but as an opportunity to profit.

One of the latest trends in corrections, the **privatization** of prisons, is a development that bears close scrutiny. Private companies, which serve over 30 states and the federal system, contract with the government to build and manage prisons. About 7 percent of the adult prison population is housed in private prisons, but in some states such as New Mexico this proportion is as high as 40 percent (Abramsky 2004; US Department of Justice 2006).

Privatization is touted as a way to save money, but research indicates that private prisons are not less costly to administer than public institutions. Moreover, private prisons are more likely to cut corners by reducing labor costs, which constitute 60 to 80 percent of prison operating budgets. Prison guards and correctional officers who work for private companies are paid less, receive fewer fringe benefits and less training, and have fewer opportunities for promotion than those who work for the government. On the other hand, top officials of private companies receive lucrative six-figure salaries, in addition to money earned from stock holdings in their firms (Abramsky 2004; Pratt & Maahs 1999; Schlosser 1998; Shichor 1997). Moreover, the recidivism rates for prisoners released from private facilities

are greater than the rates for prisoners released from public facilities (Spivak & Sharp 2008).

Private prisons usually charge their customers, the taxpayers, a daily rate for each inmate. Like hotels, the companies have an incentive to keep their beds filled. Hence prisoners in private prisons are more likely than those in government institutions to lose credits for "good time" that would lead to earlier release. In addition, "bed brokers" earn commissions for arranging to locate and transport prisoners from one state to another; county governments charge companies per-inmate licensing fees; and county sheriffs cut deals with companies that agree to build and operate new jails and share the profits with them (Bates 1998; Schlosser 1998).

The private shipping of prisoners from one state to another also poses considerable security risks, especially when untrained personnel are making the pickups and deliveries. It is not unusual for prisoners to spend a month on the road as transport vehicles visit dozens of states before arriving at their destination. This practice is even less regulated by the government than the interstate shipping of cattle (Schlosser 1998).

There is also less accountability in the operation of private prisons than in the operation of government prisons. A training video from a correctional facility in Texas, operated by Capital Correctional Resources Incorporated, revealed correctional officers mistreating prisoners originally from Missouri—cursing, kicking, dragging, and zapping them with an electronic stun gun while they were lying on the floor. One of the officers had previously served prison time for beating a prisoner when he was employed at a Texas state prison. In a Kentucky correctional facility operated by the US Corrections Corporation, the company exploited unpaid prison labor for construction and renovation work not only on the prison but on several churches, a game-room business, a country club, and a private school as well. Company officials had business or personal interests in all of these projects (Schlosser 1998).

In the world of privatization, falling crime rates, shorter prison terms, and community alternatives to prison are all bad for business. Hence private companies lobby state governments for policies that expand prison construction. One executive from the Corrections Corporation of America, the nation's largest private prison firm, likened profiting from prison to "selling cars, or real estate, or hamburgers." Another executive remarked, in reference to a plan to build prisons in California "on spec" (i.e., without a contract to fill them), "If you build it in the right place, the prisoners will come" (quoted in Schlosser 1998:76).

Living and Working in Prison

Prisons are typically classified as maximum-, medium-, or minimum-security facilities, according to the amount of physical security that is available

both within and on the perimeter of the institution. Prisoners are distributed into these institutions on the basis of the seriousness of their offense record and the perceived danger they pose to society. In all prisons, power is divided between the correctional staff and inmates. The staff maintain some semblance "of order as prisoners go through the formal routine of meals, counts, work, recreation, and [whatever] correctional programs" the prison may offer. However, "outside the formal schedule, on cell block tiers, in recreation areas, [and] on the yard," the prisoners are afforded a degree of self-rule that governs the institution as much as the official rules do (Johnson 2002:127).

The Society of Captives

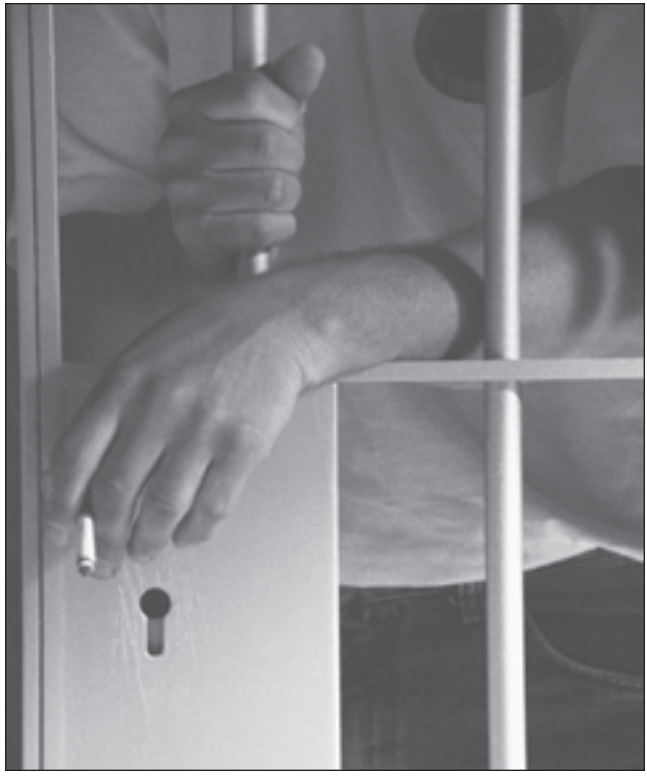
In his classic book *The Society of Captives,* Gresham Sykes (1958) described prison life as a response to five types of deprivation or **pains of imprisonment**. According to Sykes, the most basic deprivation is the loss of liberty itself, which consists both of "confinement to the institution" and "confinement within the institution" (p. 65). Although this deprivation, like many others, induces more psychological than physical pain, it produces an intense boredom and loneliness that is more than most of us could bear. Second, prisoners are deprived of most goods and services enjoyed by citizens in the free society. While the public may at times complain about "country-club prisons," most inmates lead a rather Spartan life, the food to eat and roof over their heads notwithstanding.

Deprivation of heterosexual contact is a third pain of imprisonment. Heterosexual deprivation leads some prisoners to become involved in homosexual acts they otherwise might not have engaged in, causes some to question their sexual orientation and gender identity, and exacerbates the problem of male-on-male rape. Fourth, prisoners suffer a loss of autonomy as they are subjected "to a vast body of rules and commands which are designed to control [their] behavior in minute detail," from when to eat to when to take a shower (Sykes 1958:73). The fifth deprivation, the loss of physical security, is perhaps the greatest deprivation of all. Today, threats to one's security occur less at the hands of prison guards than at the hands of other inmates. The contemporary prison, at least the maximum-security institution, is indeed a violent place. It bears no resemblance whatsoever to the therapeutic atmosphere envisioned by prison reformers of an earlier era (Brook 2004; Johnson 2002; Ross & Richards 2002).

Prisoners adapt to these pains of imprisonment, both individually and collectively, in a variety of ways. One adaptation entails the development of an **informal prison economy**, whereby prisoners barter for commodities such as extra and better food, clothing and personal grooming products, immersion coils for heating water and food, cigarettes, and illegal drugs and alcohol (including prison "home brew"). Some items may be purchased

from the prison canteen or commissary with coupons earned from prison work or drawn on personal accounts. They may also be stolen from other inmates or prison facilities (e.g., kitchen, canteen, hospital), mailed by relatives and friends, or smuggled into the institution from the outside. There is also an informal economy of services, including sex, protection, and legal assistance. Typically, cigarettes are the medium of exchange. They have "a stable and well-known value, and come in 'denominations' of singles, packs, and cartons" (Clear et al. 2006:277–278). The demand for cigarettes remains high among prisoners, and even those who don't smoke keep cigarettes for bartering purposes. Besides, smoking cigarettes is part of the "tough guy" demeanor that helps minimize the chances of being victimized by others (Ross & Richards 2002).

In addition, the prison experience requires adaptation to a **convict code** that governs relationships among prisoners and between prisoners and cor-



Prisoners spend a lot of idle time behind bars.

rectional staff. This code advises prisoners to "do your own time" and "mind your own business"—to keep their distance from staff and above all to not squeal or inform on other prisoners. The code also encourages them to respond in kind to threats or assaults from other prisoners or risk becoming perennial targets for further victimization, including rape. As Jack Abbott, a convict who gained notoriety for his book *In the Belly of the Beast,* wrote: "When you walk across the yard or down the tier to your cell, you stand out like a sore thumb if you do not appear either callously unconcerned or cold and ready to kill. Many times you have to 'prey' on someone, or you will be 'preyed' on yourself" (1981:155; see also Bowker 1980; Ross & Richards 2002; Sykes 1958).

Convicts with a demonstrated capacity for violence often dominate today's prisons, especially state prisons. Most prisoners, however, try to carve out their own private niches, insulating themselves from the violence. They spend as little time as possible in the mess hall, recreational areas, and prison yard; and they stay away from the informal economy. They stick to a few friends, if they can find them, and log long hours alone in their cells. In a survey of 300 prisoners at a maximum-security institution in Tennessee, Richard McCorkle (1992) found that 40 percent said they avoided public areas and nearly 80 percent said they lived as loners. Vulnerable inmates rarely turn to staff for protection, for the convict code inevitably marks those who "snitch" as objects of derision and abuse. For some, voluntary segregation in protective custody is the only safe alternative. Prisoners opting for protective custody remain "confined to their cells for all but a small part of the day," even though such isolated living is difficult and often damaging to their psychological well-being (Lockwood 1977:206).

Many prisoners find that they have more time than they have ever had before to read, which is one of the most constructive things they can do while incarcerated. Some may try to earn their General Educational Development (GED) certificates or even take college courses that are offered on-site or through distance-learning programs. Some join formal religious, cultural-identity, and self-help groups or clubs that are sponsored by the prison and that offer supervised space for meetings (Johnson 2002; McCall 1994; Ross & Richards 2002).

Since the 1990s, we have heard more about the need to build so-called **supermax prisons**. A survey by the National Institute of Corrections (1997) identified 57 supermax prisons or supermax units within other institutions operating throughout the country. Sixteen of these facilities were in the state of Texas alone. Proponents of the supermax concept believe that these facilities are necessary to control violent and seriously disruptive inmates. Prisoners are segregated and their movement and contact with other prisoners and correctional staff is restricted. They are required to spend 23 hours a day locked in cells that may be as small as 8 by 10 feet, and they are tightly

FURTHER EXPLORATION

Solitary Confinement

Use of solitary confinement in the United States began in the early nineteenth century, but it was later abandoned as a routine practice when correctional officials found that insanity, suicide, and an inability to function in society upon release became commonplace. More recently, in 1989, Pelican Bay State Prison in California became the first supermax facility built exclusively to house prisoners in solitary confinement. Prisoners at Pelican Bay who are unable to psychologically tolerate such social isolation are transferred to a 128-bed psychiatric unit that operates at full capacity. Sans therapists, "group therapy" in the ward consists of listening to music, watching movies, playing games, composing art, or discussing current events in a small room with a few other prisoners who are each confined to phone booth–sized cages (Sullivan 2006).

Currently, over 25,000 prisoners are held in solitary confinement in the United States. Most serve over 5 years in isolation, but some have served in excess of 20 years. The vast majority of prisoners who serve solitary confinement will one day be released back into society, but we actually know very little about the long-term consequences of this severe form of deprivation. In Oregon, prisoners are transferred into the general prison population prior to release and given anger management training and the opportunity to attend classes and work in prison jobs to get adjusted to interacting with others. In Texas, on the other hand, prisoners are immediately released without any therapy or transitional adjustment period. In any case, research does show that prisoners who are retained in solitary confinement have a higher recidivism rate after release, and are more likely to commit violent crimes, than the general prisoner population (Sullivan 2006).

monitored by sophisticated electronic surveillance and a higher ratio of guards to inmates than is typical of ordinary prisons. Prisoners are taken out one at a time for a shower or exercise in a small, private pen or room (Austin et al. 2001; Cullen & Sundt 2000; Sullivan 2006).

Race/ethnicity and prison gangs. Racial and ethnic tensions are a significant feature of prison life. In an environment where the majority of prisoners are nonwhite, the power differentials of the outside society are reversed, making whites more vulnerable to victimization than other groups (Bowker 1980; Jacobs 1977; Johnson 2002). As one white, veteran convict observes:

> Most whites fuck up right away when they come into prison, because they try to be friendly. . . . If [a white] says hello or even nods to [the black convicts], then he's already doomed. . . . Half of them will think he is just being polite and treating them with respect, but the other half will know he is weak and afraid, because they know that a white man isn't even going to

> acknowledge them if he's been in prison before, because whites don't speak to [blacks] in prison. These [blacks] are going to move on that guy as soon as the [corrections officer] disappears. (quoted in Earley 1992:419)

According to Robert Johnson, life in prison is strikingly similar to life in "our dangerous and yet highly differentiated urban slums," and many prisoners come from communities that are "as harsh and depriving as the prisons they wind up in" (2002:54, 111). Thus in many respects the convict subculture may be viewed not simply as an adaptation to the pains of imprisonment but as a continuation of the urban street subculture that is imported into the prison from the outside. Consequently, whites (especially those of higher-class background) have greater difficulty adjusting to an institutional environment that is more incongruous with their prior experiences, and they are more likely than nonwhites to commit suicide (Hunt et al. 1993; Rodgers 1995).

Over the past few decades, prison gangs have become an increasingly significant feature of prison life. Some observers attribute the growth of such gangs since the 1980s to the incarceration boom and the decline of rehabilitation programs, and they characterize the rise of supermax institutions as a response to this problem (Hunt et al. 1993; Sullivan 2006). Prison gangs attract some of the most violent prisoners and exert considerable control over the informal prison economy. Gangs also have been expanding their base of operations to the outside, with activities on the streets being dictated at times from behind bars. As noted previously, the incarceration experience has even facilitated gang organization by bringing together a captive population of similarly situated offenders who can be recruited into larger, more powerful organizations (see Chapter 8).

Prison gangs have been documented in most states and in the federal system. About 5 percent of the nation's prisoners are involved in prison gangs, which are organized primarily along racial/ethnic lines (black, Latino, and white) and engage in both intra- and intergroup conflict (Camp 2003). In the California prison system, for instance, prison gangs can be traced to the emergence of a Chicano gang, the Mexican Mafia, in the late 1950s. Two other rival Chicano groups, La Nuestra Familia and the Texas Syndicate, also operate in California prisons. The Black Guerrilla Family has been for many years California's most well-known African American prison gang. And the Aryan Brotherhood, consisting of outlaw motorcycle and neo-Nazi convicts, is the most powerful white group and one of the most violent of all prison gangs (Balkan et al. 1980; Clear et al. 2006; Hunt et al. 1993; Ross & Richards 2002).

In a study of California prison gangs, Geoffrey Hunt and colleagues (1993) documented how a new generation of gang members has emerged to fill the power vacuum created in the convict subculture as older members are

segregated, drop out of the gang, or go undercover. In the past, for example, Crips and Bloods were more likely to put aside their intragang disputes that divided members on the streets of Los Angeles. As one convict observed: "When they are 'out there' they may fight amongst themselves. . . . But when they get to prison they are wise enough to know, we gotta join collectively to fend off everyone else." Nowadays, however, the intragang disputes persist in prison, and "old school" gang members complain that the younger generation does not accord them the respect they used to receive. From their point of view, the younger generation is "needlessly violent and erratic and not 'TBYAS'—thinking before you act and speak" (pp. 406–407).

Women in prison. Women's prisons are fewer in number than men's and more likely to be multiple-classification institutions, housing prisoners of various security risks in the same facility. Some states have no separate prisons for women and either confine them in a separate wing of a men's institution or transfer them to another state. Since the 1970s, a number of states and the federal government have operated coeducational prisons, where female and male inmates sleep in separate units but are allowed varying degrees of contact during the day. Prison reformers hoped that coed prisons would normalize the incarceration experience and reduce prison violence; and overall, violence is lower in these facilities. But while sexual contact is prohibited, it occurs nevertheless, and some women do become pregnant. Women in coed prisons, however, are more likely than men to be sanctioned (e.g., lose "good time" or privileges) for violating the "no sexual contact" policy (Belknap 2007; Clear et al. 2006).

In many respects, the subculture of women's prisons is similar to that of men's prisons. Women find ways to adapt to the pains of imprisonment, and they adhere to the convict code. Those who establish reputations for fighting and the ability to defend themselves physically achieve the highest status. At the same time, the gender norms of the larger society permeate the institution. Since women have less need to demonstrate toughness and physical prowess, women's prisons are comparatively less violent than men's. Women provide one another more interpersonal support and are more likely to form "pseudofamilies" and develop emotional bonds with friends and sexual partners. In the male prison subculture, male-on-male rape is accepted while consensual gay relationships are condemned. "The opposite is true in women's prisons; consensual lesbian relationships are more common and less taboo. The rape of women in prison by other prisoners is rare," although, as we will discuss shortly, the rape of women by correctional officials is all too common (Belknap 2007:219; Clear et al. 2006; Human Rights Watch Women's Rights Project 1996; Pollock-Byrne 1990).

In addition, prison gangs have yet to be reported in women's institutions, even though the number of younger prisoners who have been mem-

bers of street gangs has been increasing (see Chapter 9). Racial/ethnic divisions are also less salient among female prisoners, who often form relationships that cut across those lines. Some white women, however, are able to gain advantage over others by appealing to guards for preferential treatment and assistance in settling disputes.

As with men, both preincarceration and incarceration factors influence women's feelings about and adaptations to prison. In a study of women in two California prisons, the California Institution for Women and the Valley State Prison, Candace Kruttschnitt and colleages (2000) found that many women have a history of abuse that makes them especially sensitive to mistreatment by correctional officers. As one woman remarked: "I was in an abusive relationship for lots of years and. . . . I feel sometimes that I'm still getting abuse. . . . There's a lot of males, mostly male [guards]. . . . They have this attitude where [they] know they have full control over us. . . . When I lived with an abusive man, you know, full control. And these men have that same attitude" (p. 702). At the same time, Kruttschnitt and colleagues found that features of the institutional environment influenced women's responses. In the California Institution for Women, which had a more rehabilitative orientation, women expressed more positive views about other prisoners and correctional staff. In the Valley State Prison, which had a more custodial orientation and strict disciplinary regimen, women were more negative about their experiences. The family-like relationships among prisoners often noted in research on women's prisons were absent. As one woman said: "You don't have a friend here. . . . There's no closeness. . . . I don't have anyone I hang around with" (p. 704).

Although female prisoners are less likely than their male counterparts to be violent, they are more likely to be sanctioned for minor rule infractions. In a study of Texas prisons, for instance, Dorothy McClellan (1994) found that women (but not men) were cited for "drying their underwear, talking while waiting in lines, displaying too many family photographs, and failing to eat all of the food on their plates" (cited in Belknap 2007:190). Trafficking or contraband violations included lighting another woman's cigarettes, sharing shampoo in the shower, borrowing someone's comb, and possessing an extra pillowcase or bra. Criminologists have observed that "women's prison policies and supervision treat women like children" (p. 190). And when regulations are "oppressively petty . . . they wind women up to levels of teeth-grating irritability," causing conflicts to "flare with the frequency of brush fires" (Pearson 1997:210, 220).

Women in prison are also more likely than men to be sexually harassed and assaulted by correctional officers. According to a report by Amnesty International USA (1999), "Male prison staff routinely conduct strip and pat searches, scrutinize women in showers, and monitor female inmates by video." Amnesty International also reported on male correctional officers

who threatened to withhold basic needs and privileges (e.g., food, showers, family visitations) if women did not provide sexual favors. Women who were raped were threatened with sanctions if they reported being violated.

One of the most famous incidents of prison rape involved the case of Joan Little in North Carolina in the 1970s. Little, a black woman serving a 7- to 10-year sentence for theft and receiving stolen property, was sexually attacked by a white male guard. Little fought back, and the guard was killed after falling on the ice pick he was using to assault her. Little's indictment for first degree murder prompted a public outcry, and she was later acquitted (Balkan et al. 1980; Belknap 2007).

In addition, female prisoners are more likely than male prisoners to experience emotional distress as absent parents. They are more likely to have been single heads of households with dependent children, with about two-thirds having preschool- or school-age children (Owen & Bloom 1995). Because only about a quarter of incarcerated mothers have dependent children who are living with fathers—compared to about 90 percent of incarcerated fathers having children who live with mothers—children of incarcerated mothers are more likely than children of incarcerated fathers to be placed in foster care and to be separated from siblings (Snyder-Joy & Carlo 1998). Moreover, incarcerated mothers are more likely than incarcerated fathers to have their parental rights terminated. Consequently, mothers suffer greater levels of stress, depression, guilt, and feelings of inadequacy (Belknap 2007; Browne 1989; Clark 1995; Hagan & Coleman 2001).

Correctional officials are beginning to recognize the importance of maintaining ties between incarcerated mothers and their children. As one prison reformer observes, "If you want healthy mothers and healthy children, if you want to break the cycle of crime, you have to let mothers and their children spend time together" (Harris 1997:53). Thus in some states children are allowed to meet with their mothers in playrooms or nurseries at any time. In some cases transportation is provided and children are even permitted to stay overnight. A program called Girl Scouts Beyond Bars has been established in several states. This program arranges for girls to meet regularly with their mothers to work on projects and engage in structured play activities. At the Bedford Hills Correctional Facility in New York, children spend weekends with their mothers and an entire week during the summer. Mothers also make audiotapes of stories and mail these to their children, enabling the children to hear their mothers' voices whenever they wish (Kusmer 2008; Lord 1995; Moses 1995).

Issues surrounding pregnancy also pose significant problems for women in prison. Research suggests that from 5 to 9 percent of incarcerated women are pregnant, and as many as a quarter are either pregnant or have given birth in the previous year (Belknap 2007). A few programs have begun to address this concern, allowing for monthlong furloughs before and after birth, or

allowing women who give birth while confined to keep their babies for a period of time or even for the entire length of sentence. One study found that less than half of women's prisons provided prenatal care, only 15 percent provided adequate nutrition for mothers-to-be, and only 11 percent offered postnatal counseling (Wooldredge & Masters 1993). Some female prisoners have even been forced to give birth with their legs shackled to bedposts, restricting their movement in a way that endangers their health and the health of their newborns (Amnesty International USA 1999).

Healthcare and HIV/AIDS in prison. In the United States, prisoners have a constitutional right to medical care. The quality of that care, however, leaves much to be desired, especially since rates of HIV (human immunodeficiency virus), AIDS (acquired immunodeficiency syndrome), and other infectious diseases among prisoners are much higher than among the general population (Krebs 2006; Petersilia 2003a). As Jeffrey Ross and Stephen Richards note, if you get sick in prison, "pray it is nothing serious, as the medical services are limited and substandard":

> Prisoners suffering from chronic or acute illness will find medical staff to be few, overburdened, and even if they care to help, prevented from doing so by a prison healthcare system that is under-funded, bureaucratic, and severely limited in the services and medical procedures authorized. . . . If you need surgery, expensive medication, or sophisticated medical protocols, you need to have family and friends to pressure prison administrators. A life-threatening illness (e.g., cancer, heart attack, or stroke) will require outside intervention, possibly a lawsuit or a letter or phone call from a powerful politician, to get you transferred to a civilian hospital. Many prisons now have geriatric cellblocks filled with elderly prisoners, many of them in wheelchairs, on respirators, or in beds hooked up to machines or intravenous tubes. . . . Some prison systems allow elderly prisoners, or younger convicts diagnosed to die in a few months, to apply for compassionate release . . . to go home and die in the company of . . . loved ones. . . . [But] few prisoners ever make it out the door before they pass away, as the application process may take many months to officially approve. (2002:101)

HIV and AIDS are especially serious problems in prison. Researchers estimate that as many as a quarter of the people living with HIV/AIDS in the United States have spent some time in the correctional system, although most HIV-positive inmates were infected before entering prison (AIDS in Action 2001; Braithwaite & Arriola 2003). Currently, over 20,000 inmates who are incarcerated in the United States are HIV-positive (US Department of Justice 2007a). Although the majority of HIV/AIDS cases in prison involve men—since there are more men in prison than women—the rate of HIV/AIDS is proportionately higher among women. African American women in particular have the highest rates of HIV/AIDS, as well as the

highest rates of tuberculosis, cancer, and sexually transmitted diseases (Collins 1997; Hammett et al. 1999).

In 1985, 16 percent of the prison systems in the United States (state plus federal) had policies requiring all prisoners with HIV to be housed in separate units, and 75 percent required separation of prisoners with AIDS. By the late 1990s, however, only 4 percent of the systems required separate housing for HIV-infected inmates, and only 6 percent required separate housing for prisoners with AIDS. Still, there is considerable variation within prison systems in the treatment of those with HIV/AIDS, and many of these prisoners are denied equal access to prison jobs, education, and other programs. Because the primary methods of contracting HIV/AIDS involve sexual contact or intravenous drug use, the availability of condoms and clean needles could reduce the spread of disease (tattooing and body piercing are also sources of transmission). But few prison systems have adopted condom distribution or other harm-reduction strategies (e.g., furnishing clean needles, or bleach for disinfecting used needles). And when infected prisoners are released from prison without treatment, communities are at greater risk of escalating health problems (Abramsky 2002; Braithwaite & Arriola 2003; Cauchon 1995; Hammett et al. 1999).

Convict Labor and Prison Industries

Prisoners in the United States "have always worked, and making them work [has been] seen as a way to accomplish numerous correctional objectives" (Clear et al. 2006:363). Convict labor has been viewed as a form of punishment, as a means of rehabilitation, as an escape from idleness, and as a source of profit for the institution or government.

In the nineteenth century, prisons leased prisoners to private companies that used the workers to make products that were sold on the open market. In the South, following the Civil War, this system amounted to nothing less than legalized slavery, as African Americans constituted over 95 percent of prisoners in Southern states (Free 1996; Shelden 2001). As one South Carolina official observed, "After the emancipation of the colored people, whose idea of freedom from bondage was freedom from work and license to pillage, we had to establish means for their control" (quoted in Sellin 1976:158). Private companies ran their own forced-labor camps, where prisoners were beaten by their overseers and forced to work from daylight to dusk, at times in "black and noxious mud . . . almost to their waists" (Sellin 1976:150). In one Georgia camp, 61 men were required to sleep in a room measuring 9 by 17 feet. Needless to say, the mortality rate among workers was high. In fact, over half of the prisoners in South Carolina camps during the late 1870s died (DuBois 1904).

In other instances, prison officials allowed private companies to come into the institution and organize production inside the prison walls. Or pris-

ons would simply contract to make the goods for the companies, with the companies providing only the raw materials. Some prisons even operated their own businesses and sold their products on the open market. But in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, both private companies and organized labor began lobbying to limit unfair competition from prison industries that operated with minimal labor costs. In the 1930s and 1940s, the US Congress and states around the country banned interstate commerce in prison-made goods. Laws were also passed that required prisons to sell products only to other state agencies, rather than on the open market, and that limited the number of prisoners who could be employed and the kinds of goods that could be produced (Clear et al. 2006; Miller 1974, "At Hard Labor").

In the 1970s, the federal government and the states began to reevaluate these restrictive policies. In 1979, Congress lifted its ban on interstate commerce in prison-made goods, provided that prisons met the conditions of the newly created **Prison Industry Enhancement Certification Program** (PIECP). This program, which is administered by the US Department of Justice, allows prison-based joint ventures with private industry if prisoners are paid at local prevailing wage rates and other companies are not adversely affected by the arrangement. "Prevailing wage rates," however, allow for the deduction of incarceration costs and any training that is required, as well as social security, Medicare, victim compensation payments, and mandatory savings accounts. And work programs that produce goods for foreign export or for sale in intrastate commerce are not covered by PIECP standards (Johnson 2002; Miller 2000; Sexton 1995).

By the early 1990s, the PIECP had certified over 30 correctional agencies to operate private-sector prison industries using convict labor for a diverse range of enterprises, including "data entry and information processing, electronic component assembly, garment manufacturing, contract packaging, metal fabrication, telemarketing, and . . . travel reservations" (Sexton 1995:3). Companies that have utilized convict labor to manufacture products or delivery services, or that have sold products made by inmates, include Nike, Dell, Microsoft, Honda, Konica, TWA, Best Western Hotels, McDonald's, Eddie Bauer, Target, J.C. Penney, and Kmart (Clear et al. 2006; Miller 2000).

Nevertheless, most prison work entails routine manual jobs that do not provide inmates with marketable employment skills. Only a minority of prisoners are actually involved in the manufacturing of goods. Others work in farming, forestry, ranching, and road construction and maintenance, and most simply perform menial tasks that are necessary for the functioning of the prison itself—mopping floors, laundering, cooking and cleaning in the kitchen, cutting grass, shoveling snow, and so forth. Wage rates in prison may range from as little as 12 cents an hour for mopping floors to as much as $7 an hour for the most desirable PIECP jobs, with most prisoners earn-

ing less than a dollar an hour (Leonhardt 2000; Miller 2000; Ross & Richards 2002).

Clearly, some prison work opportunities are better than others. According to Robert Johnson, the **Federal Prison Industries** program, established in 1934, "has met with consistent and continuing success" and is at the heart of the relatively better living conditions found in some federal prisons. Under its trade name, UNICOR, its "goal is not to maximize profits . . . [but] to maximize employment and training of prisoners." Evaluation studies of UNICOR and the vocational training that is available in the federal system found that participants "were less likely to violate prison rules" than a control group of nonparticipants, and that they were "more likely to be rated as autonomous and responsible by [prison] officials." Upon release, these prisoners, both male and female, "made better adjustments than other inmates" (2002:304). They were more likely to find jobs and get better-paying jobs, and their rates of recidivism were lower (Gaes et al. 1999; Saylor & Gaes 1994).

In the 1990s, controversy arose over the reemergence of the **chain gang**, a practice that had been discontinued for about three decades. In chain gangs, prisoners are shackled together at the ankle and made to work long hours on roads and in fields. Public opinion about chain gangs had soured after the release of *I Am a Fugitive from a Chain Gang,* a 1930s film about an innocent man who was cruelly treated by his prison overseers. But in 1995, three states—Arizona, Alabama, and Florida—resurrected this practice. In Phoenix, Arizona, for example, women in ankle chains and orange jumpsuits can be found pulling weeds and picking up trash on city streets. While some passersby delight in the spectacle of chain gangs, others decry its use as a means of humiliating and degrading prisoners. In Alabama the Southern Poverty Law Center brought a lawsuit challenging that state's use of chain gangs as cruel and unusual punishment. The state agreed to stop shackling prisoners to each other, although it continues to use work crews of prisoners who have their own legs chained together (Brehm 2003; Clear et al. 2006; Pearson 1996).

The Work of Correctional Officers

In many respects, issues pertaining to the work of correctional officers parallel those of police. In Chapter 11 we discussed the difference between military and community styles of policing. In corrections there is a similar distinction between **custodial** and **human service styles** of correctional work.

Custodial-oriented officers place utmost priority on maintaining order within the institution. Unfortunately, research indicates that all too many correctional officers in the United States are rather brutal custodians of the nation's prisons, seeking "order at any price," and using violence—both their own and that of their convict allies—as "one of the tools of their trade"

Custodial-oriented correctional officers are less satisfied with their jobs than human service–oriented officers.

(Johnson 2002:201). Although these officers are a statistical minority, they are tolerated by other correctional officers and even viewed as role models. Many correctional officers equate authority with toughness and dominance and will put on a hard-nosed facade to appease their more aggressive colleagues (Toch & Klofas 1982).

So-called **goon squad** officers are those who epitomize the willingness to use force. They are the "physically powerful officers who 'enjoy a good fight' and . . . are called upon to rush to any area of the prison where it is felt that muscle power will restore the status quo" (Bowker 1980:102). They "are the men who 'get the job done' without recourse to such unmanly considerations as tact or persuasion" (Johnson 2002:216). Other correctional officers maintain order simply by not interfering with the activities of prisoners who dominate the informal economy and convict subculture, and by not protecting weaker inmates who pose little threat to correctional officers. As one correctional officer said of the illicit drugs and sex in prison: "If I got in the middle of that shit, I would be crazy because I will either get seriously hurt or killed. It would be plain stupid" (quoted in Stojkovic 1990:225–226). Still other correctional officers resort to petty abuses to gain leverage over prisoners. As one remarked:

> Guy wants to make a phone call? You can make him wait 10, 20 minutes. Guy wants some writing paper? Tell him you don't have any. Guy wants some matches? You can have a drawer full of matches, "I don't have any matches," you tell him. . . . And there's the ways that you can screw around with his property when he's not around. . . . One inmate . . . gave another officer a hard time. . . . This . . . inmate he loves plants. . . . And he had about . . . two dozen. . . . He woke up the next morning and every one of them plants was dead. . . . Say a guy works with . . . woodworking stuff. Just put [a] scratch in his furniture or something. He know[s] how it got there . . . why it was put there. But there's nothing he can do about it. . . . There's so many ways you can get these guys. (quoted in Kauffman 1988:66)

According to Johnson, correctional officers are for the most part an "an alienated and . . . embittered lot" (2002:235). Surveys have found that about two-thirds are dissatisfied with their jobs (Cullen et al. 1989; Toch & Grant 1982). Correctional officers with a human service orientation, however, are more satisfied than others, for they find more meaning in their work. For them, being a professional means caring about the prisoners. They "use their authority to help inmates cope with prison life . . . [and] they do the best they can with the resources at their disposal to make the prison a better place in which to live and work" (Johnson 2002:235). As one correctional officer observed: "I often put myself in the inmate's position. If I was locked up and . . . my only contact with authorities would be the officer walking by, it would be frustrating if I couldn't get him to listen to the problem I have. There is nothing worse than being in need of something and not being able to supply it yourself and having the man who can supply it ignore you" (quoted in Jacobs & Retsky 1981:68).

Human services–oriented correctional officers help prisoners obtain basic goods and services within the institution. As one said: "If an inmate hasn't had a change of underwear in two weeks, you should care enough to get him a change of underwear. If he hasn't had a shower in a week, you should care enough to get him a shower" (quoted in Earley 1992:269). Some prisoners also need help dealing with the prison bureaucracy—setting up appointments with counselors, getting access to telephone calls and visitors, checking on the status of their prison bank account or their upcoming parole hearing, or getting their prescribed medication or proper work assignment. Perhaps the most important service function of all is providing for the physical security of inmates. According to one correctional officer: "Security doesn't mean keep them from going over the wall. It means you try to make the guy feel . . . that he's not going to get killed or hurt . . . so an inmate can sit next to another inmate in the mess hall or auditorium and . . . [not] have to worry about something happening" (quoted in Lombardo 1988:293).

Criminologists have observed that the most common element in the tes-

timonials of reformed prisoners is the self-respect that was fostered in them by caring correctional officers: "This did not mean that the officers were unusually lenient, lax or permissive; it meant only that they treated the men with a personal interest and without pretension or condescension. . . . They were frank, fair and considerate" (Glaser 1969:92–93). Unfortunately, human service correctional officers—who perhaps constitute the majority of prison guards—often feel they are violating an unofficial code that calls for a tough-minded custodial stance rather than a concerned effort to help prisoners (Johnson 2002). As one said: "I am almost ashamed to say it . . . [but] the key to being a good [correctional officer] is having a caring attitude. Now that sounds to most staff here as being weak and not very macho. . . . It sounds like you are giving in to the inmate—or at least, that is how the staff interprets it . . . but it is not the same at all" (quoted in Earley 1992:269).

Minority and women correctional officers. Issues pertaining to racial/ethnic minorities and women who work in corrections parallel those of minorities and women in policing. Minorities constitute less than 30 percent of employees working in the adult system, with African Americans occupying nearly 70 percent of the minority positions (US Department of Justice 2003). (These data combine custody/security staff with other staff positions.) About a third of employees are women, who are much more likely to work in women's prisons than in men's prisons. There are also fewer women who work in men's prisons than men who work in women's prisons; and women have fewer opportunities for advancement into supervisory positions in men's prisons than men have in women's prisons (Belknap 2007; Britton 1997).

Some white male correctional officers, like their police counterparts, have resented the entrance of minorities and women into corrections. As one remarked:

> What will they think of next? They've lowered the standards so anybody can get in. First they brought in these minorities; some of them can hardly sign their name. Now we've got these women who can't even protect themselves. How do they expect to run a prison? Next thing you know, they'll be bringing kids in here to control the inmates. We might as well give the inmates the keys to the place and go home. (quoted in Zimmer 1986:59)

Apparently the prospect of women who are capable of doing correctional work is threatening to some male correctional officers' sense of masculinity. As one female correctional officer observed, "They can't go home and talk about how bad and mean they are and what a tough day they have had [if] some little chickie can do the same thing that he is doing" (Owen 1985:158).

While the evidence is mixed, some research suggests that minority and female correctional officers are more likely than their white male counterparts to favor a rehabilitative or human services approach to corrections (Johnson 2002; Van Voorhis et al. 1991; Whitehead & Lindquist 1989). Women in particular have been reported to have better communication skills and to be more effective at defusing prisoner violence. Female correctional officers even command more respect from male prisoners than do their male counterparts, and the presence of women in male prisons helps normalize the prison environment (Kissell & Katsampes 1980; Owen 1985; Zimmer 1986). Research also indicates that female correctional officers consider female prisoners to be more difficult to manage than males, "while for male [correctional officers] the reverse is true, suggesting that each sex has less tolerance for . . . the power plays of its own gender" (Pearson 1997:220; Pollock-Byrne 1990).

Nancy Jurik (1985) found that correctional officers' demographic characteristics had less impact on their attitudes toward prisoners and corrections than the organizational features of the workplace, however. Just as individual police officers conform to the organizational styles of their department, individual correctional officers conform to the expectations of superiors who define the operational goals of their institution (e.g., custodial versus human services). Dana Britton (1997) found that the "organizational logic" of correctional officer training programs emphasizes the physical skills perceived as necessary to deal with prisoner violence. Training classes are filled with "war stories" of prison violence that often intimidate women and lead them to drop out. But the day-to-day reality of prison work, especially in women's prisons, tends to be quite different. Correctional officers consistently describe their job as more of a mental than a physical challenge. As one woman said: "They try to prepare you . . . for the physical part. But that's not what gets to you, it's the mental part. Playing the games with the inmates, they're constantly trying to figure out a way to get one over on you" (quoted on p. 804).

Sexual harassment is a particular concern for female correctional officers, one of whom observed that "on any given night, 10 or 11 guys will be jacking off—or sometimes they'll be lying there with their fly open like they don't notice. . . . They never do that in front of the men" (quoted in Britton 1997:805). Female correctional officers, especially younger ones, are also prey to sexual harassment by their male counterparts. Unfortunately, the occupational environment can offset or undermine the professional outlook and sense of mission that correctional officer recruits bring to the job, and some end up leaving this line of work (Jurik 1985; Martin & Jurik 1996).

13

Community Corrections and Alternative Solutions

ERIC STERLING, COUNSEL TO THE US HOUSE OF Representatives Judiciary Committee from 1979 to 1989, recalls the political climate during which Congress passed the Anti–Drug Abuse Act of 1986. This act contained provisions for mandatory minimum sentences for federal drug offenders, with greater penalties for crack-cocaine offenders than for powder-cocaine offenders (see Chapter 8). Sterling now views his role in this legislation as "one of the greatest tragedies of my professional life" (quoted in Bikel 1999).

It was the summer of 1986. College basketball star Len Bias had just died of a cocaine overdose after being drafted and signed by the Boston Celtics (congressional officials were under the false impression that Bias had died from an overdose of crack rather than powder cocaine). The leading congressional Democrat, Speaker of the House Tip O'Neill, was from Boston. During the July 4 congressional recess, O'Neill observed how much his constituents were "consumed with anger and dismay about Bias's death" (Sterling 1991:1). In the previous 1984 election, the Republicans had outmaneuvered the Democrats on the drug issue, successfully accusing them of being "soft on crime." O'Neill saw an opportunity for Democrats to gain some ground. As Sterling recalls:

> O'Neill knew that for Democrats to take credit for an anti-drug program in [the] November elections, the bill had to get out of both Houses of Congress by early October. That required action on the House floor by early September, which meant that committees had to finish their work before the August recess. Since the idea was born in early July, the law-writing committees had less than a month to develop the ideas . . . [and] write the bills. . . . One idea [that] was considered for the first time by the House Judiciary Committee four days before the recess . . . was . . . mandatory minimum sentences in drug cases. It was a type of penalty that had been removed from federal law in 1970 after extensive and careful consideration. But in 1986, no hearings were held. . . . No experts on the relevant issues, no judges, no one from the Bureau of Prisons, or from any other office in the government, provided advice . . . before [the law] was rushed through the committee. . . . After bouncing back and forth between

> the Democratic controlled House and the Republican controlled Senate as each party jockeyed for political advantage, the Anti–Drug Abuse Act of 1986 . . . passed both houses a few weeks before the November election. (1991:1)

In the previous chapter we noted some unfortunate consequences of such knee-jerk crime policies—for example, an expanded prison population of nonviolent (especially African American) offenders who might be handled more judiciously through less expensive community correctional programs. In the world of crime politics, however, political expediency rather than rational deliberation often rules the day (Tonry 1999). In this book we have tried to provide a more thoughtful and informed foundation for considering solutions to the problem of crime. Although conventional law enforcement and imprisonment strategies are necessary elements of effective crime control, overreliance on these methods leads to neglect of alternatives that might have greater impact. In this concluding chapter we use our sociological imagination to explore some alternative measures that rely more on community interventions and preventative measures. We also consider proposals to establish a *more just social order,* which we think is a prerequisite to *law and order* (see Chapter 5).

Community Corrections

Although a "get tough" retributive philosophy has dominated criminal justice policy in the United States since the 1970s, the majority of offenders under correctional supervision are serving all or part of their sentences in the community (see Table 12.1, p. 450). Nevertheless, community corrections receive only a tenth of the monies that are spent on corrections overall. This problem is exacerbated by the fact that the United States is experiencing an unprecedented number of prisoners who are reentering society after serving time behind bars. This number is a direct outgrowth of the incarceration boom discussed in the previous chapter. Over 90 percent of all prisoners are eventually released. Thus the postincarceration population can be expected to grow in future years as more and more inmates complete their prison terms. The social costs of abandoning our commitment to rehabilitation have also concerned many criminologists. Funding for rehabilitation programs in state prisons, where most of the nation's prisoners are held, has been on the decline and now constitutes a mere 1–5 percent of state prison budgets (Levrant et al. 1999; Petersilia 2003a, 2003b; Travis & Petersilia 2001).

If these problems are to be remedied, the relative paucity of resources for community corrections and rehabilitation programs inside and outside prison will need to be addressed. Fortunately, there is an emerging political consensus that we can no longer afford to feed the prison-industrial complex. More and more people are starting to recognize that continuing our

spending binge on prison expansion is not a cost-effective remedy to our nation's woes (Kuttner 2003b).

Probation: Conventional and Alternative Approaches

Probation, a sentence of community supervision given in lieu of incarceration, is the most widely used correctional disposition. John Augustus, a wealthy nineteenth-century Boston shoemaker, is credited with developing this practice by personally providing bail and assistance to some 1,900 men and women. Augustus so impressed the Boston courts that the state of Massachusetts eventually endorsed the idea, becoming in 1880 the first state to employ probation officers statewide. By the 1950s, every state had developed a probationary system of its own (Adler et al. 2000; Clear et al. 2006).

Historically, probation has been regarded as a cost-effective alternative to prison, especially for nonviolent offenders, and as a means of reducing prison overcrowding. Although probation allows the offender to avoid the brutalizing experience of incarceration, as a stand-alone sentence it offers little in the way of rehabilitation. Nationally, the average probation officer's caseload includes about 130 adult offenders, and in many jurisdictions it is much higher (Camp & Camp 2002). One study found that nearly a quarter of adult felons and over a third of adult misdemeanants on probation had had no contact with their probation officer within the previous month (Bonczar 1997).

The conditions of probation require an offender to follow certain rules. Failure to comply may result in the revocation of probation and a subsequent jail or prison term. In addition to staying out of trouble and reporting periodically to a probation officer, probationers may be required to abstain from using alcohol, to undergo substance abuse treatment and drug testing, to receive counseling, to refrain from using firearms, to reside in a supervised community "halfway house," to pay restitution to their victims, and to perform community service.

Research on the effectiveness of probation yields disparate results due to the varying conditions under which probation is implemented, the length of the probationary period being examined, the nature of the client population, and whether rehabilitative treatment is part of the program (Geerken & Hayes 1993; Gray et al. 2001). Also at issue is how the effectiveness of probation is measured. For instance, effectiveness may be defined broadly as nonviolation of any condition of probation, or it may be defined more narrowly as avoidance of arrest, reconviction, or imprisonment. National data indicate that about 60 percent of probationers successfully complete their probationary terms, although "successful completion" often occurs "even when serious, or numerous, technical violations" were committed during the probationary period (Gray et al. 2001:539; Glaze & Bonczar 2007). About 18 percent of probationers are incarcerated due to a technical violation or

conviction for a new offense. Nonetheless, research suggests that probationers have lower rates of recidivism than offenders with similar offense histories who are released from prison, and that probationers who receive rehabilitative treatment have lower rates of recidivism than those who don't receive such treatment (Broome et al. 1996; Cohen 1995; Petersilia et al. 1985).

Intensive probation and home confinement. **Intensive probation supervision** and **home confinement** offer two alternatives to conventional probation. Under intensive supervision, probation officers work with significantly smaller caseloads, allowing for more frequent visitations with clients. Intensive supervision programs vary in their nature, with the best combining probationary supervision with other rehabilitative services (e.g., education and vocational training, individual and family counseling, substance abuse treatment). Many intensive supervision programs, however, do little more than provide daily officer-client visits of 10 minutes or less (Adler et al. 2000; Clear et al. 2006).

Evaluations of intensive supervision programs have been mixed. Some studies have found that the rates of probation violation were higher for offenders serving intensive supervision sentences than for those serving traditional probationary sentences. This higher rate was most likely due to the fact that more extensive supervision increases the likelihood that violations will be discovered. In any event, some research suggests that the recidivism rate of offenders serving intensive supervision sentences was lower than it was for offenders who were eventually released from prison, and that this lower rate was produced at less cost (Adler et al. 2000; Barton & Butts 1990; Petersilia & Turner 1993; Reid 2006).

Home confinement or house arrest requires offenders to serve all or part of their sentences within the confines of their homes. Participants may also be allowed to leave their homes for certain activities—for example, to go to work or school, receive medical care, or attend religious services. Most home confinement programs employ some type of **electronic monitoring**, which ranges from something as simple as a telephone call verifying that the offender is home, to a device that the participant wears that emits a continuous signal identifying his or her whereabouts. While research has failed to consistently demonstrate lower recidivism rates among home confinement and electronic-monitoring participants than among ordinary probationers with similar offense histories, many view it as a positive development. It allows for the supervision of offenders at lower labor costs and "provides for community safety while allowing offenders to maintain and perhaps strengthen family ties and employment" (Samaha 2000:382; Adler et al. 2000; Reid 2006).

Critics of these alternatives to conventional probation are concerned that the government will abuse its supervisory authority and extend its high-

Community monitoring of individuals is an important part of the contemporary criminal justice system.

tech monitoring to the general citizenry (Blomberg et al. 1993). They are also troubled about probation officers who have involved neighbors in the surveillance of offenders, creating a network of informants who end up spying on each other. At the same time, for wealthy offenders, home confinement and electronic monitoring may represent nothing more than being "grounded" in luxurious surroundings. For instance, in 1988, John Zaccaro, Jr. (son of Geraldine Ferraro, the 1984 Democratic candidate for vice president) was convicted of a drug violation and sentenced to four months of confinement in his $1,500-a-month apartment, complete with cable television, maid service, and YMCA privileges (Rackmill 1994). Despite their drawbacks, however, home confinement and electronic monitoring do seem to be particularly appropriate sanctions for offenders with special needs, such as pregnant women, AIDS patients, the elderly and terminally ill, and the cognitively disabled (Lilly et al. 1993).

Shock programs and boot camps. **Shock probation** is a sentencing alternative that entails the granting of a probationary term following a brief period of confinement. It is designed to "shock" or scare offenders out of criminality by giving them a taste of incarceration. Similarly, **shock incarceration** is a military-style "boot camp" experience, usually lasting three to six months, that consists of intense physical activity (drills, exercise, and work), rigid discipline, and regimented daily routines. In many cases the US Army and Marine Corps train correctional officers to serve as drill sergeants in these programs. The basic premise of shock incarceration is that offenders are in need of discipline and self-control. It is hoped that the program will serve as a crash course in character-building and personal responsibility and help offenders change their ways (Adler et al. 2000).

Like other correctional strategies, evaluations of shock incarceration have been mixed. The most successful programs combine the boot-camp experience with other rehabilitative interventions. Thus it is unclear that it is the military regimen per se that is responsible for lower recidivism among participants in successful shock incarceration programs (Bourque et al. 1996; MacKenzie et al. 1995; MacKenzie & Souryal 1995; McCorkle 1995). Furthermore, some criminologists are concerned that the intense physical and verbal tactics common to boot camps (e.g., belligerent drill sergeants who bark orders and belittle participants) will reinforce an aggressive model of masculinity that underlies much criminal behavior (see Chapter 9). According to Merry Morash and Lila Rucker, the very notion that such tactics will "'train' people to act in a prosocial manner is fraught with contradiction. The idea rests on the assumption that forceful control is to be valued," while empathy toward others is not (1990:214).

Critics also point out that boot camps, many of which are privately run "with little or no oversight," can be overly harsh. Some youths have reported that they were "punched, kicked and forced to eat dirt for minor infractions such as failing to stand up straight . . . [and that] they had bruised ribs from an exercise in which they were ordered to lie on their backs while counselors ran across their chests in boots" (Spencer 2001:28). Several youths have even died in boot camps.

The inclusion of women in some boot-camp programs raises additional concerns. Many female participants have previously been abused by men. For them, the military-style approach may be counterproductive. As one woman observed: "They get in your face and make you feel like dirt. . . . They grab you and push you around. . . . I have bruises on my arms. . . . For someone like me that's been physically and mentally abused that's all it reminds me of, being abused" (MacKenzie & Donaldson 1996:35). One 13-year-old offender said that her boot-camp counselors, who liked to be called "sergeant," repeatedly called her a "whore" and "prostitute" (Spencer 2001). On the other hand, some participants may find the program empowering. As

one woman maintained, boot camp taught her to be more assertive, "to stand up for myself and . . . [not] take anybody's crap" (MacKenzie & Donaldson 1996:35).

Parole and the Problem of Prisoner Reentry

In contrast to probation, parole entails release into the community after an offender has served a portion of his or her sentence in confinement. In some states, community correctional officers are assigned caseloads that include both probationers and parolees, while in other states parole is a specialized function. The conditions of parole are generally similar to those of probation, and parole may be revoked and the offender reincarcerated if he or she violates the rules. Nationally, about 45 percent of parolees successfully complete the terms of their parole and about 40 percent are reincarcerated for a technical violation or new offense (Glaze & Bonczar 2007).

The practice of parole allows inmates to receive early release from prison for good behavior. But in the late 1980s, the federal government eliminated parole for all new offenders, and many states followed suit, passing **truth-in-sentencing laws** that require inmates to complete all or most of their prison terms before being released from confinement (Seiter & Kadela 2003). Critics contend that denial of parole will increase prison overcrowding and remove inmates' incentive to cooperate while incarcerated. According to Joan Petersilia, it also means that an increasing number of prisoners will "max out" their sentences while incarcerated and will leave prison without any "obligation to report to a parole officer or abide by any other conditions of release" (2003a:3). In the late 1970s, less than 5 percent of prisoners served their full sentences prior to release; currently, nearly 20 percent "max out." But even prisoners who do not serve their entire terms behind bars will find themselves receiving little help readjusting to society:

> If they live in a state that provides funds upon release (1/3rd of states do not), they will be given $25 to $200 gate money. Sometimes a list of rental apartments or shelters is provided, but the arrangements are generally left up to the offender to determine where to reside and how to pay for basic essentials during the first few months. Few prisons have transitional case managers to assist offenders, and the current process places the offender almost solely in charge of his or her own transition plan. (p. 4)

Moreover, few prisoners will find opportunities to "make good" when they return home. At the same time that rehabilitative services for prisoners behind bars and after release were being reduced, the US Congress and state legislatures were passing numerous "laws and regulations . . . restricting the kinds of jobs for which prisoners can be hired, easing the requirements for parental rights to be terminated, restricting their access to welfare benefits

and public housing, disqualifying them from a host of job training programs, and limiting their right to vote" (p. 4).

While the public has supported such policies as a means of cracking down on crime, the abandonment of transition assistance and rehabilitative programming is shortsighted and will exacerbate the problems of communities to which prisoners return. Jeremy Travis and Petersilia advocate an alternative approach, one where correctional agencies would "create a seamless set of systems that span the boundaries of prison and community," with, for example, "linkages between in-prison job training and community-based employment and job training and between in-prison healthcare and community-based healthcare." Correctional agencies would also be "expected to link mental health services on both sides of the wall [and] to work with community-based domestic violence services when a prisoner with a history of spousal abuse is released" (2001:308).

In their review of prison reentry programs, Richard Seiter and Karen Kadela (2003) found favorable results from prison **work release** (or furlough) programs that allow inmates to work in the community for a few hours to a few days at a time. Prisoners who participated in work release, especially those who also received vocational training, had lower recidivism rates than those who did not. Seiter and Kadela also found that supervised community halfway houses helped ease the transition from prison to work.

Texas's "Reintegration of Offenders" project is noteworthy for its focus on combining in-prison "life skills" training in a variety of areas (e.g., anger management, parenting skills, domestic violence awareness, personal health) with job-search workshops, placement services, and postrelease follow-up that help offenders locate and maintain employment. Since the project began in 1985, participants have had lower recidivism rates than nonparticipants of similar racial/ethnic backgrounds and offense/incarceration histories (Finn 1998).

Drug rehabilitation, according to Seiter and Kadela (2003), is one of the most promising areas for correctional programming. Especially effective are programs based on social learning principles and utilizing guided group interaction or therapeutic community designs that rely upon the constructive influence of other recovering offenders (see Chapter 4). Lana Harrison (2001) advocates a phased-in **therapeutic continuum** that includes drug treatment in prison followed by both drug treatment and work release in a halfway house facility. Research on Delaware's therapeutic continuum program shows a relationship between length of time spent in the program and lower drug relapse and criminal recidivism rates (Inciardi et al. 1997). More generally, as discussed in Chapter 3, effective correctional interventions entail those that carefully match offenders' particular learning styles and psychological needs, enhance aggression management and stress management as well as academic and vocational skills, change antisocial attitudes and

ways of thinking, foster familial bonds, modify peer associations and role models, and help offenders access appropriate service agencies.

The Restorative Justice Movement

Another array of community correctional programs has been identified with the term **restorative justice**. According to Howard Zehr and Harry Mika, restorative justice involves a process by which all "parties with a stake in a particular offense come together to resolve collectively how to deal with [its] aftermath . . . and its implications for the future" (1998:54). Restorative justice is best understood in contrast to **adversarial justice**, which pits the accused against the accuser and hence encourages offenders "to deny, justify, or excuse their actions, thereby precluding the acceptance of responsibility" (Siegel 2003:272; see Chapter 11). Restorative justice is based on a *social* rather than a *legalistic* view of crime. Crime is defined as a conflict between offenders and their victims as well as others affected by the wrongdoing (e.g., family, school, community). "Fairness is assured, not by uniformity of outcomes, but through provision of necessary support and opportunities to all parties" (Zehr & Mika 1998:53). The goal is to empower people to resolve their own differences rather than relying on the state to do justice for them. Whereas adversarial justice aims to establish blame and administer punishment, restorative justice aims to establish obligations and promote healing.

In the distant past, as Andrew Karmen (2004) observes, victims were more involved in the response to law violation than they are today. In modern societies, the government has

> symbolically displaced the wounded person as the injured party, and the courts [have been] transformed from a forum to settle disputes between specific individuals into an arena for ritualized combat between representatives of the state and the accused. If the prosecution [succeeds], the state [inflicts] pain upon its vanquished opponent in order to teach them not to break the law again . . . and to make negative examples of them to serve as a warning to others. . . . Prisons . . . serve these purposes . . . [and] take troublemakers out of circulation to protect the public . . . and to force maladjusted persons to undergo compulsory treatment. (p. 342)

There is little in the process that benefits the victims of crime, outside of the satisfaction that offenders are being punished.

Karmen traces the rise of restorative justice to the emergence of the **victim rights movement** of the past few decades, which aims to give victims a greater role in the criminal justice process. Requiring the offender to make **restitution** to the victim—or in its place, the community—is one way this can be done. Restitution, which is more common in the juvenile justice system than the adult system, is a sanction that requires the offender to compensate the crime victim or recompense the community through some

form of monetary payment or service (e.g., working at a nursing home or hospital, performing grounds work at a city park, cleaning up graffiti). Typically, restitution is ordered as a condition of probation and is administered through a probation department (Schneider & Finkelstein 1998).

The purpose of restitution is not simply to punish law violators or compensate victims but to make offenders accountable to the *people they have harmed,* thereby erasing "one of the strongest defenses . . . to wrongdoing, [the] inability to empathize . . . with those who have suffered" (Binder et al. 1988:562). By requiring the sacrifice of time and convenience, the expenditure of effort, and the performance of meaningful tasks, it is hoped that offenders will acknowledge and understand their personal and social responsibilities. As Karmen notes, "By making fiscal atonement or contributing services, they can feel cleared of guilt, morally redeemed, and reaccepted into the fold" (2004:295). As such, restitution is consistent with John Braithwaite's concept (1989) of "reintegrative shaming" (see Chapter 4). In reintegrative shaming, offenders receive social disapproval that is designed to invoke remorse. However, if they are remorseful and willing to right their wrongs, they are forgiven and welcomed back into the community.

Restitution orders do not always stipulate that victims are to be fully compensated for their financial losses, and much of the ordered restitution is never paid (Levrant et al. 1999). Nevertheless, some studies report high rates of completed payments as well as rates of recidivism that are equal to or somewhat lower than those of other sanctions (Glaser 1997; Langan & Cuniff 1992; Schneider 1986). The programs work best when care is taken to substantiate victim losses, construct appropriate repayment schedules, monitor offender compliance, and keep accurate accounts of monies earned and disbursed (Harland 1983). Effective programs must also help unemployed offenders locate jobs. Left on their own, most participants will not succeed. The jobs must pay well enough to provide for the offenders' own living expenses, with enough left over to make payments to victims. According to Karmen:

> If a job pays wages [that are too] low, then the repayment cannot be completed within a reasonable period of time. If nearly all of the offender's earnings are confiscated and handed over to the victim, then commitment to the job and to repaying the debt is jeopardized. If the job is demeaning, then its therapeutic value as a first step in a new lifestyle built on productive employment is lost. If the job is temporary, only for the duration of the restitution obligation, then the risk of returning to . . . crime is heightened. (2004:300)

Some restitution programs are used in conjunction with **victim-offender mediation**, which brings offenders and victims together to work out a fair arrangement under the guidance of a trained mediator or counselor.

Beyond restitution, victim-offender mediation gives victims the opportunity to express their anger, indignation, anxieties, and fears, and to get answers to such lingering questions as "Why did you choose to attack me?" or "How did you gain entrance to my home?" or "How could I have avoided this?" Through this process victims may be helped to achieve some psychological closure to their experience. Offenders, in turn, are given the opportunity to accept responsibility for what they did, express genuine remorse, and agree to do as much as they can "to try to restore the victim to the condition he or she was in before the crime occurred" (Karmen 2004:347).

Research has found greater success in lowering the recidivism rates of juvenile offenders who participate in victim-offender mediation than the rates of adult offenders who do so (Umbreit 1994). Juveniles have been more likely to complete restitution payments that were negotiated with victims compared to "similar offenders ordered to make restitution by juvenile-court judges who didn't directly involve victims or use mediation" (Karmen 2004:349). In general, however, offenders are more likely than victims to be satisfied with victim-offender mediation conferences. Many victims have reported feeling even worse after mediation conferences because their hopes of achieving emotional closure were not realized and they felt pressured to forgive the offender when they were not "psychologically ready to do so" (Delgado 2000:762; Braithwaite & Daly 1998).

John Braithwaite and Kathleen Daly (1998) advocate the **community conference strategy**, based on the principle of reintegrative shaming, as a way to accomplish restorative justice (see Chapter 4). Community conferencing is sometimes employed through "neighborhood justice centers" (Karmen 2004), and has been employed in New Zealand since 1989 as the preferred response to juvenile crime. Community conferencing takes place after a warrant for an arrest is issued but before an actual arrest is made. The full power of the criminal justice system is invoked only as a last resort if a suitable victim-offender agreement cannot be worked out and successfully implemented.

In community conferencing, both the victim and the offender are allowed to bring members of their immediate and extended families, as well as additional significant others, into the mediation process. These "communities of care and concern" need not live in the area in which the victim and offender reside; they are simply people who genuinely care about the parties involved (Braithwaite & Daly 1998:155–156). This arrangement provides a supportive atmosphere in which victims are given voice in the shaming process and empowered to negotiate assurances that they "will be free from future predation and harm." At the same time, the assemblage of "people who care about and respect the offender" helps foster and ensure his or her community reintegration. These people are responsible for helping to supervise the offender and enforcing the agreements he or she has made. In this

way, "particular communities of citizens who care about particular people" try to devise unique solutions to problems in ways that seem fair and appropriate to all (p. 158). In a recent study of a restorative program in Arizona that reflects this approach to community conferencing, Nancy Rodriguez found that juveniles who participated in the "program were less likely to recidivate than juveniles in a comparison group," and that girls and offenders with limited criminal histories had the lowest recidivism rates of all (2007b:355).

Sharon Levrant and colleagues (1999) raise several concerns about the restorative justice movement. When programs like victim-offender mediation or community conferencing are implemented in lieu of or before a trial, they may lack the due process safeguards that are available in the adversarial system. Evidence against the offender that would be inadmissible in court may be presented and used later at trial if an agreement between victim and offender cannot be worked out. Offenders may be pressured to participate under threat of harsher sanctions, and refusal to do so may be used against them in charging and sentencing decisions. In addition, research has yet to demonstrate that restorative justice programs have greater reformative impact on offenders than the vocational and therapeutic interventions discussed previously in this chapter.

Restorative justice seems to work best for less serious crimes and interpersonal conflicts that are not as likely to result in court action in the first place, and thus may have little impact on the workload of the criminal justice system. There is also scant evidence that citizen-volunteers, especially in socially disorganized neighborhoods, have the requisite abilities "to effectively mediate conflict between a potentially emotional victim and a resistant offender" (Levrant et al. 1999:12). And clearly it is white-collar offenders, with their greater resources (i.e., money and occupational skills), who are in the best position to negotiate, enforce, and fulfill acceptable agreements (Conners 2003; Delgado 2000).

Nevertheless, many criminologists believe that community correctional strategies that combine conventional rehabilitative treatment with restorative justice offer a promising alternative to the view that punishing offenders is "the only and best solution to crime," and programs implemented under the guise of restorative justice have been growing around the country (Levrant et al. 1999:23). The Minnesota Department of Corrections, for instance, has a full-time restorative justice planner who is responsible for facilitating the development of restorative justice programs throughout the state (Sullivan et al. 1998). And the Vermont Department of Corrections has established reparative service boards of community volunteers who help develop an "agreement that requires the offender to (1) restore and make whole the victim(s) of his or her crime, (2) make amends to the community,

(3) learn about the impact of the crime, and (4) learn ways to avoid reoffending" (Levrant et al. 1999:5; Walther & Perry 1997).

Increasingly, **drug courts** are becoming part of the restorative justice movement in its efforts to develop community alternatives to prison. Drug courts were first established in 1989 in Miami as the brainchild of Florida associate chief justice Herbert Klein. Drug courts operate on the principle that court-enforced treatment in the community is a viable alternative to both incarceration and voluntary treatment. According to Perry Anderson, a judge who has presided over drug courts in the Boston area:

> The typical drug court combines substance-abuse treatment in the community, strict case management with direct judicial involvement, regular drug testing, and graduated incentives and sanctions based on performance in treatment. The ultimate reward is avoidance of a jail sentence or the expunging of criminal charges. The ultimate sanction is imprisonment. . . . Drug courts . . . offer a middle way between the war on drugs and the decriminalization of drugs. They protect public safety by providing strict, intense and coordinated supervision of participants . . . and in turning out a high percentage of graduates who are able to maintain their sobriety and obey the law. (2003:45, 48)

Thus far, research on the effectiveness of drug courts has been mixed, but favorable enough to encourage a growing number of jurisdictions to experiment with this alternative to incarceration and to search for ways to make it more effective. However, because people with prior criminal records are typically excluded from drug courts, the increased reliance on this alternative to incarceration has the potential of exacerbating the disparity between people of color and whites who are imprisoned for drug offenses (Adler et al. 2000; Berger & Gregory 2009; Hepburn & Harvey 2007).

In Search of Social Justice

The restorative justice movement is but one component of the peacemaking alternative to the war on crime that we introduced in Chapter 5. According to peacemaking criminologists, the elimination of crime will require the elimination of suffering more generally and the creation of a more just and equitable social order.

Focus on Prevention

Peacemaking solutions focus on the *prevention* rather than on the repression of crime. To be sure, any set of proposals to prevent crime will invariably fall short of the mark, either because society doesn't have the collective will to implement it or because the problem of crime is too complex and intractable, rooted in the very structure of society. Any serious effort to

reduce crime (other than at the margins) would require dramatic social changes that would challenge the entrenched interests of those who benefit from current economic and political arrangements. Moreover, a certain level of crime, as Émile Durkheim observed, is normal and inevitable (see Chapter 4). Nevertheless, we firmly believe that more can be done to improve the crime situation in the United States, and that such improvement will require abandonment of the "war" mentality.

In many respects, the Chicago Area Project of the 1930s and the opportunity and community action programs of the 1960s (e.g., Mobilization for Youth) (see Chapter 4) anticipated the comprehensive strategy that is currently required. Rather than review these earlier ventures, we discuss here what we believe to be essential ingredients of effective crime prevention.

Elliott Currie, among others, argues that "a commitment to full and decent employment remains the keystone of any successful anticrime policy" and that the government has an obligation to promote economic opportunities for those who need them (1985:263): "Employment reduces poverty, especially among the economic underclass, . . . [and] increases an individual's bond to society and sense of responsibility" (Barkan 2006:548). Research shows, however, that it is not simply employment but job *quality* (as measured by job satisfaction) that is important to reducing criminal recidivism, leaving us with the challenge of how to expand the number of quality job opportunities beyond the relatively few that are available to offenders today (Uggen 1999). Moreover, there is the dilemma of social *inequality* and the sense of relative deprivation that comes from living in an affluent society that dangles the enticements of materialism before everyone without being able to deliver the goods to all. Although some degree of inequality may be necessary to motivate individuals to work and achieve, too much inequality is criminogenic and destructive to the social fabric (see Chapters 4, 5, and 8).

As we have already suggested, there are people who benefit from this inequitable state of affairs. Any real remedy will have to go beyond vague calls for increasing opportunities. Left realists, for example, have proposed using the tax system to create disincentives for corporations to close plants or relocate jobs to low-wage foreign countries. They also advocate the promotion of workplace democracy by including workers and community representatives on the boards of directors of large corporations. Such reforms might allow a broader range of people (not just corporate owners, managers, and shareholders) to benefit from our economy (see Chapter 5).

Efforts to address the social disorganization often found in inner-city areas are also required. We need to put an end to racially segregated and densely populated housing projects that concentrate poor minorities, socially isolating them from the middle class (of all races) and depriving them of the resources necessary for stable communities: strong families and positive

role models who reinforce conventional values and provide networks of informal social control (see Chapters 4 and 8). Well-funded investments in family services and school programs are also part of the solution: prenatal and postnatal care for mothers and infants; training in parenting, prevention of child abuse and neglect, and family therapy; quality preschools and childcare; youth-mentoring and recreation programs; smaller schools and class sizes; and education in conflict resolution and anger/stress management (Barkan 2006; Sherman et al. 1998; Williams & Kornblum 1985). A study by the RAND corporation found that, in California, investments in such measures yielded more crime reduction than comparable expenditures to enforce the state's three-strikes law (Greenwood et al. 1996).

The Omega Boys Club (OBC) is another example of a successful program that could be expanded to reduce inner-city minority youths' attraction to crime. The OBC, founded in San Francisco in 1987, does not accept any government funding, relying instead on support from private foundations, trusts, civic groups, and private citizens. To attract new members, the OBC uses *Street Soldiers,* a radio call-in program that began in 1991 and that is now syndicated in a dozen radio markets with over 300,000 listeners. It also has produced television documentaries and sponsored national conferences and workshops. The OBC is especially proud of the fact that over 130 of its members have graduated from college (Marshall & Wheeler 1996; "Street Soldiers" 2008).

The OBC relies primarily on peer-group counseling to deal with the anger, fear, and pain that inner-city youths often experience. Youths are instructed in African American history and culture and provided with college and job preparation skills. They are also challenged to avoid use of derogatory language (e.g., "nigger," "bitch") that demeans black men and women, themselves included. The OBC contrasts the rules for survival on the street with new rules for living that reflect the OBC philosophy. The street rules include: *"Gotta handle my business. Gotta do what I gotta do. Gotta get my money on. Gotta be down for my set. Gotta be down for my 'hood. Gotta get my respect. Gotta pack a gun to watch my back. Gotta pack a gun to watch my homie's back. Gotta be with my potna, right or wrong."* In contrast, the OBC philosophy says: *"Life is the most precious thing an individual will ever have. A friend will never lead a friend to danger. Change starts with oneself. Respect comes from within"* (Marshall & Wheeler 1996:130–131). The OBC has also developed a program to bring its approach into schools, where teachers and staff are trained in the promotion of nonviolent methods of conflict resolution that foster an educational climate more conducive to learning. This approach frames violence as a public health problem that is "treatable and avoidable" and offers "specific methods and techniques for individuals and organizations to prevent violence in themselves and their communities" ("Street Soldiers" 2008).

Previously we noted the capacity of individuals to exercise personal agency to transform or reconfigure the social relationships in which they are enmeshed, a capacity that is often malnourished and undermined by the social constraints under which they live (see Chapters 1 and 4). Agency, however, is not merely a matter of individuals acting on their own, but of collections of individuals acting in concert to promote their common interests. Criminologists increasingly recognize that collective agency, or **collective efficacy**, as Robert Sampson and colleagues (1997) describe it, is an important element of the informal social controls that are necessary to reduce crime. Collective efficacy may be defined as "the capacity of adults in a community to work together to achieve a sense of public order" (Press 2007a:30). This was indeed the central insight of the Chicago Area Project: individuals working together for the solution of common problems. In their examination of 343 neighborhoods in the city of Chicago, Sampson and colleagues (1997) found that, all other things being equal, more collective efficacy in a neighborhood was associated with lower violent crime rates. At the same time, Sampson and colleagues note that collective efficacy is itself explained in large part by socioeconomic factors that are linked to the broader economic and political organization of society.

Any effort at crime prevention, be it a government-sponsored opportunity program or a private initiative like the OBC, ultimately confronts a broader culture that is conducive to crime. We previously discussed, for instance, research that examines the complexity of the relationship between media violence and crime (see Chapters 2 and 10). Franklin Zimring and Gordon Hawkins suggest that although criminologists "may lack the capacity to measure significant dimensions of the pervasive influence of mass media communications," the media may nevertheless "produce long-term citizen desensitization and value changes [as well as] a tolerance for violence that [may] interact with other . . . social conditions to elevate rates" of crime (1997:137). At the very least, it makes sense for parents to monitor their children's media habits (including Internet use and computer gaming) in order to reduce unnecessary exposure to violence. Also important are efforts to encourage the development of more responsible programming.

In addition, the culture of economic consumerism needs to be challenged. As long as consumption remains a primary signifier of people's self-worth, no amount of economic opportunity or equality will be sufficient to satisfy the insatiable appetite for "things." As we noted previously, in American society, products are consumed not just for their practical function but also for what we think the product says about us. The satisfaction we gain, however, "is illusory, and it is supposed to be" (Barak & Henry 1999:164). Mass advertising has succeeded in blurring the boundary between real and symbolic needs and in orienting consumers to seek out

"the latest version of the product whose difference lies only marginally in its substance but substantially in its image."

Neither can any credible crime prevention program ignore the powerful influence of gender (see Chapters 9 and 10). We must work to undermine the traditional gender socialization that encourages us to associate masculinity with power, superiority, and aggression. It is especially important to critique and resist media presentations that teach females as well as males to eroticize male dominance and female submission. And it is important that girls grow up knowing that they have every right to be treated with consideration, that it is not unfeminine, rude, or prudish to assert themselves or resist unwanted sexual advances. Boys should be given permission to express their feelings, to acknowledge hurt, fear, and vulnerability, for when we teach boys "to deny their own pain we inadvertently teach them to deny the pain of others" (Canada 1998:20). Efforts to support and expand social and economic policies that increase women's opportunities and reduce gender inequality are also necessary, for these will empower women to resist sexual exploitation and facilitate communication and mutual respect between women and men.

Moreover, we must recognize that male violence *against women* is related to the problem of male violence *against men.* As we previously observed, "children who grow up watching their mother being abused are more likely than other children to become delinquents and adult criminals *both* inside and outside the home" (DeKeseredy & Schwartz 1996:478–479; see Chapter 5). Thus it is important to expand the existing network of shelters and crisis services for battered women and survivors of rape. These safe havens of refuge and support "help protect . . . women from additional abuse . . . [and] reduce the likelihood that [their] children . . . will grow up in violent households" (Barkan 2006:552). We should also increase services for children who have grown up with abuse, such as summer-camp programs that give children a respite from family conflict as well as "a safe place to express their fears," work on redirecting their anger, and learn what to do in emergencies (Dowling 1998:39). And both women and men need to muster the courage to confront acquaintances and friends who engage in sexist conversation, who make sexist jokes, and who perpetuate myths about the abuse of women.

At the beginning of this chapter we acknowledged that conventional law enforcement and correctional strategies are necessary elements of effective crime control. We agree with those who favor community styles of policing as a means of improving the relationship between police and citizens and ensuring that the police have the eyes and ears of the community working *for* them rather than *against* them (see Chapter 11). Law enforcement personnel would benefit as well from expanded cultural sensitivity

and diversity training, and greater representation of minorities and women in law enforcement would make the criminal justice system more representative of the population (McNamara & Burns 2009; Ogawa 1999).

Racial/ethnic disparities in punishments that are unrelated to the nature of offenses should of course be eliminated. Mandatory sentencing practices (e.g., three-strikes laws) should be reevaluated, and prisons should be used less often for nonviolent offenders. The war on drugs needs to be deescalated, and reasonable gun regulations need to be enacted (see Chapter 5). Community correctional and restorative justice strategies that promote the reintegration of offenders offer reasonable alternatives to a costly and overcrowded prison system. The value of rehabilitation as a correctional philosophy needs reaffirmation, "both as an end in itself and as a means to the end of making society safer" (Cullen et al. 1999:201). In short, we need to be smarter about crime prevention and control, set some practical priorities (e.g., focus on violent crime), and not support overly punitive policies merely because they make us feel better, make us feel that we have drawn a line in the sand between the forces of good and the forces of evil.

The Problem of White-Collar Crime

The moral tone of a society, as we have suggested before, is set by those at the top. Just as Gabriel Tarde long ago observed that "criminal propensities . . . travel down and outward—from the powerful to the powerless" (Beirne & Messerschmidt 1995:367), Edward Ross noted that from the powerful and their "excuses spreads a noxious influence that tarnishes the ideals of ingenuous youth on the threshold of active life" (1907/1977:31). White-collar crime, however, is not and has never been a principal focus of either conventional crime prevention or law enforcement. This situation must change; the problem of corporate accountability for wrongdoing needs to be addressed.

A reasonable first step in dealing with white-collar crime is to raise public awareness of it. The educational arena is one place where this could be done. But even criminal justice curricula do not always provide sufficient attention to white-collar crime. And while most business schools in the United States teach something about business ethics, studies find that "any improvements in students' ethical awareness or reasoning" as a result of these courses are short-lived (Friedrichs 2007:309–310). Clearly ethics courses that "promote values that put integrity and concern with the well-being of others ahead of personal or corporate enrichment and advantage" will not be effective if the rest of the business curriculum promotes "a mindset where attention to the bottom line trumps all other considerations."

Another proposal calls for corporations to develop organizational codes of ethics to encourage employees not simply to make decisions that benefit owners and stockholders, but to make decisions that are consistent with a

"broader social responsibility to promote society's well-being" (Friedrichs 2007:310). Most often, however, these codes are just "window-dressing" intended for public relations. As long as top management continues to send a message that "heads will roll" unless the company grows a certain percentage in the next year or makes a certain profit, then "you're going to have people shipping inferior goods, juggling the books, bribing when they have to, [and] trampling workers beneath them" (Wilkes 1989:E24).

Corporate and governmental whistle-blowers have been and will continue to be an important source of exposure of white-collar criminality. Roberta Ann Johnson defines **whistle-blowing** in terms of four component parts:

> (1) An individual acts with the intention of making information public; (2) the information is conveyed to parties outside the organization, who make it public and a part of the public record; (3) the information has to do with possible or actual nontrivial wrongdoing in an organization; and (4) the person exposing the agency is not a journalist or ordinary citizen, but a member or former member of the organization. (2003:3–4)

Currently, many states and the federal government have laws to protect whistle-blowers against retaliation by their organizational superiors, but these laws are unevenly enforced, especially when "retaliation" is difficult to prove. Moreover, employees who might be in a position to know about organizational wrongdoing often have previously signed nondisclosure agreements, and they thus make themselves vulnerable to lawsuits and loss of compensation if they violate these contracts. Whistle-blowers are also subject to public "character assassination" by the people whom the whistle-blower is exposing and hence risk the tarnishing of their reputations.

Ultimately, more criminal prosecution will likely be necessary to reduce corporate and other white-collar crime. In a nationwide survey of local prosecutors, Michael Benson and Francis Cullen (1998) found that corporate crime prosecutions were more likely to occur in communities with lower rates of violent street crime and with stronger and more diversified economies. They argue that when the public feels safe from street crime, people are more likely to demand protection from other harms. In more prosperous communities there are also more resources available for white-collar prosecutions, and citizens feel less vulnerable to the job losses they think may follow. The public exhibits the strongest support for white-collar prosecutions of consumer fraud and environmental offenses. Nevertheless, research finds that major corporations are less likely than smaller companies to be prosecuted, as are higher-level executives compared to their subordinate managers (Cohen 1989; Friedrichs 2007).

The legal system has been rather forgiving of white-collar offenders, for when they are prosecuted and convicted they receive less serious penal-

ties than do other offenders. White-collar offenders are more likely to be fined or put on probation rather than be sent to prison, more likely to receive shorter terms when they are sent to prison, and more likely to obtain reversals of their convictions on appeal. The average fines imposed on corporations tend to be less than the amount of financial harm they cause. And companies responsible for the greatest amount of harm tend to pay fines at a much lower percentage of the harm they cause than companies that are responsible for more modest harm. Bank embezzlers and those who commit mail fraud or who defraud the government are among the white-collar offenders who receive the most serious penalties (Cohen 1989; Friedrichs 2007; Reiman 2007).

John Braithwaite and Gilbert Geis (1982) argue that sanctions for corporate crime should include provisions for publicizing wrongdoers and their misdeeds (e.g., in television spots), since corporations and their officers are genuinely afraid that such exposure will both damage their reputation and lower consumer demand for their products. Others advocate a system of corporate probation, whereby a company found guilty of a serious crime would be placed under the supervision of a probation officer or management specialist who has expertise in the field. Or public representatives with their own staffs could be added to corporate boards of directors to monitor the corporation and investigate complaints. Certainly, law-violating corporations should not be allowed to receive government contracts. These are but some of the measures criminologists have offered for dealing with corporate crime (Coleman 2002; DeKeseredy & Schwartz 1996; Friedrichs 2007).

Winning the Peace

The war on crime has brought us victor's justice. But it has not won the peace. As John Hagan and Juleigh Coleman observe, "All wars end with some level of vindictiveness, but at some point the vindictiveness threatens to destroy the peace the war was fought to achieve" (2001:365). It is time to search for another way.

We suffer no illusion that the problem of crime in our society can be "solved." We do retain hope, however, that progress can be made. As Nancy Wonders suggests:

> We can build bridges between diverse sectors of the population by forging an alliance between taxpayers tired of wasting money on prisons, parents fed up with the trade-off between education and incarceration, underrepresented racial and ethnic groups who are angry about the disproportionate impact of criminal justice policies on their communities, medical professionals who view drugs as a health problem rather than a criminal justice problem, and numerous other constituencies who have other good reasons to support change. (1999:125)

It will not be easy for such diverse groups to work together for change, "because so many of the differences [that divide] us have been made to matter, whether it is skin color, sex, social class, sexual orientation, or the style of the clothes we wear" (Wonders 1999:24). In the aftermath of September 11, 2001, we have been told that we must all stand together, united against the foreign enemies who want to destroy us, who want to ruin our cherished way of life. Desiree Taylor (2004) does not see the unity, however. To her, the United States feels like a country that is divided by people "who don't and perhaps won't take the time to really look at each other," who "live in separate worlds," who "can't feel each other's pains" (p. 508). Taylor wonders what this country really stands for: "They tell us these are attacks on freedom and justice itself. But how is this possible when here at home justice, freedom, and the American Dream are denied to so many?"

We believe that what can bring many of us together is a commitment to an overarching philosophy of the "just society." We think that eminent philosopher John Rawls (1971) had it right when he called for a social order based on the principle of **distributive justice**. Distributive justice goes beyond the procedural or due process justice we expect of a fair legal system. It goes beyond the notion of personal liberty that is of course necessary for a free society. It goes beyond the illusion that an unfettered "free market" of economic production and consumption will necessarily produce desirable social outcomes. Distributive justice requires political institutions that attend to the problematic social landscape that is the consequence of market forces that leave too much misery and inequality in their wake. A just society, according to Rawls, should be arranged so as to bolster the life chances of those who are least advantaged. It is a society that strives for an economy that works *for people,* not a society that makes people work *for the economy.* The following passage from his seminal book, *A Theory of Justice,* captures Rawls's vision of a just society:

> I assume that the basic structure [of society] is regulated by a just constitution that secures the liberties of equal citizenship. . . . Liberty of conscience and freedom of thought are taken for granted, and the fair value of political liberty is maintained. The political process is conducted . . . as a just procedure for choosing between governments and for enacting just legislation. I assume that there is fair (as opposed to formal) equality of opportunity. This means that . . . the government tries to ensure equal chances of education and culture for persons similarly endowed and motivated either by subsidizing private schools or by establishing a public school system. It also enforces and underwrites equality of opportunity in economic activities and in the free choice of occupation. This is achieved by policing the conduct of firms and private associations and by preventing the establishment of monopolistic restrictions and barriers to the more desirable positions. (p. 275)

Perhaps this is what Terry Williams and William Kornblum had in mind when they called for public policies that promote "continual opportunities for growth"—that supply the least-advantaged with an ongoing "supply of diverse opportunities for entry into the economic and social mainstream" and that maximize the chances that no one will be left behind (1985:133). We understand that not everyone would support a political agenda that strives for such lofty goals, or if they did, that such goals would be easy to realize. But failure to try, we think, will only prove the adage: "We have met the enemy, and the enemy is us."

References

Abadinsky, H. 2007. *Organized Crime.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.

Abbott, J. 1981. *In the Belly of the Beast.* New York: Vintage.

Abrams, J. 2006. "Report: No Link to Iraq, al-Qaida." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Sept. 9:A3.

Abramsky, S. 2002. "The Shame of Prison Health." *Nation,* July 1:28–34.

———. 2004. "Incarceration, Inc." *Nation,* July 19–26:22–25.

———. 2005. "Democrat Killer? The Political Price of Gun Control." *Nation,* Apr. 18:13–20.

Abramson, J. (ed.). 1996. *Postmortem: The O.J. Simpson Case.* New York: Basic.

Ackerman, S. 2004. "AWOL." *New Republic,* Feb. 9:10–11.

Adams, D. 1988. "Treatment Models for Men Who Batter." In K. Yllo & M. Bograd (eds.), *Feminist Perspectives on Wife Abuse.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.

Adams, K. 1999. "What We Know About Police Use of Force." In *Use of Force by Police.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.

Adler, F. 1975. *Sisters in Crime: The Rise of the New Female Offender.* New York: McGraw-Hill.

Adler, F., G. Mueller, & W. Laufer. 2000. *Criminal Justice: An Introduction.* New York: McGraw-Hill.

———. 2007. *Criminology and the Criminal Justice System.* New York: McGraw-Hill.

Adler, P., & P. Adler. 1983. "Shifts and Oscillations in Deviant Careers: The Case of Upper-Level Drug Dealers and Smugglers." *Social Problems* 31:195–207.

Ageton, S. 1983. "The Dynamics of Female Delinquency, 1976–1980." *Criminology* 21:555–584.

Agnew, R. 1985. "Social Control and Delinquency: A Longitudinal Test." *Criminology* 23:47–61.

———. 1992. "Foundation for a General Strain Theory of Crime and Delinquency." *Criminology* 30:47–87.

———. 1995. "Controlling Delinquency: Recommendations from General Strain Theory." In H. Barlow (ed.), *Crime and Public Policy.* Boulder: Westview.

———. 2000. "Strain Theory and School Crime." In S. Simpson (ed.), *Of Crime and Criminality.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

———. 2001. *Juvenile Delinquency: Causes and Control.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.

Agnew, R., T. Brezina, J. Wright, & F. Cullen. 2002. "Strain, Personality Traits, and Delinquency: Extending General Strain Theory." *Criminology* 40:43–71.

Ahern, J. 1972. *Police in Trouble.* New York: Hawthorn.

Aichorn, A. 1935. *Wayward Youth.* New York: Viking.

AIDS in Action. 2001. "Incarcerated Populations and HIV/AIDS." www.aidsaction.org.

Akers, R. 1985. *Deviant Behavior: A Social Learning Approach.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
———. 1992. "Linking Sociology and Its Specialties: The Case of Criminology." *Social Forces* 71:1–16.
———. 1998. *Social Learning and Social Structure: A General Theory of Crime and Deviance.* Boston: Northeastern University Press.
Akers, R., M. Krohn, L. Lanza-Kaduce, & M. Radosevich. 1979. "Social Learning and Deviant Behavior: A Specific Test of a General Theory." *American Sociological Review* 44:636–655.
Akers, R., & C. Sellers. 2009. *Criminological Theories: Introduction, Evaluation, Application.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Albanese, J. 2004. *Organized Crime in Our Times.* Bethesda, MD: LexisNexis.
Albini, J. 1971. *The American Mafia: Genesis of a Legend.* New York: Appleton-Century-Crofts.
Albonetti, C., R. Hauser, J. Hagan, & I. Nagel. 1989. "Criminal Justice Decision Making as a Stratification Process: The Role of Race and Stratification Resources in Pretrial Release." *Journal of Quantitative Criminology* 5:57–82.
Alexander, P. 1987. "Prostitution: A Difficult Issue for Feminists." In F. Delacoste & P. Alexander (eds.), *Sex Work.* Pittsburgh: Cleis.
Allen, M., D. D'Alessio, & K. Brezgel. 1995. "A Meta-Analysis Summarizing the Effects of Pornography II." *Human Communication Research* 22:258–283.
Almanac of Policy Issues. 2007. "Homelessness." www.policyalmanac.org.
Alpern, D. 1984. "A CIA Bombshell." *Newsweek,* Oct. 29:30.
Altheide, D., & J. Grimes. 2005. "War Programming: The Propaganda Project and the Iraq War." *Sociological Quarterly* 46:617–643.
American Civil Liberties Union. 1995. "ACLU Announces Settlement of Lawsuit over 'Racial Profile' Stops," Jan. 4. www.archive.aclu.org.
American Correctional Association. 1993. *Gangs in Correctional Facilities: A National Assessment.* Laurel, MD.
Amir, M. 1971. *Patterns in Forcible Rape.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Amnesty International USA. 1999. "Amnesty International Report on Women in US Prisons Documents Widespread Abuse." www.amnestyusa.org.
———. 2008. "Execution Facts and Figures." www.amnestyusa.org.
Anderson, C. 2003. "Feds Release Patriot Act Information." *Wisconsin State Journal,* May 21:A3.
———. 2004a. "Report Says AFT Lax in Gun Checks." *Wisconsin State Journal,* July 27:A3.
———. 2004b. "Saddam, al-Qaida Link Not Found." *Wisconsin State Journal,* June 17:A1, A13.
Anderson, D. 1995. *Crime and the Politics of Hysteria: How the Willie Horton Story Changed American Justice.* New York: Times Books.
———. 1997. "The Mystery of the Falling Crime Rate." *American Prospect,* May–June:49–55.
———. 1999. "Policing the Police." *American Prospect,* Jan.–Feb.:49–54.
Anderson, E. 1994. "The Code of the Streets." *Atlantic Monthly,* May:81–94.
———. 1999. *Code of the Street.* New York: Norton.
Anderson, L., & T. Calhoun. 1992. "Facilitative Aspects of Field Research with Deviant Street Populations." *Sociological Inquiry* 62:490–498.
Anderson, P. 2003. "Treatment with Teeth." *American Prospect,* Dec.:45–48.
Andrews, D., & J. Wormith. 1989. "Personality and Crime: Knowledge Destruction and Construction in Criminology." *Justice Quarterly* 6:289–309.

Andrews, D., et al. 1990. "Does Correctional Treatment Work? A Clinically Relevant and Psychologically Informed Meta-analysis." *Criminology* 28:369–404.
Anti-Defamation League. 2003. "Anti-Defamation League State Hate Crime Statutory Provisions." www.adl.org.
———. 2006. "ADL Reports Resurgence of Racist Skinheads in U.S. and Launches New Online Racist Skinhead Project," Feb. 7. www.adl.org.
———. 2008. "About the Ku Klux Klan." www.adl.org.
Applebome, P. 1991. "As Urban Blight Worsens, Victims Find Their Isolation Is Deepening." *New York Times,* Jan. 28. www.query.nytimes.com.
Armstrong, E., & S. Crage. 2006. "Movements and Memory: The Making of the Stonewall Myth." *American Sociological Review* 71:724–751.
Armstrong, K., & M. Possley. 1999. "Study: Prosecutors Sacrifice Justice to Win." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Jan. 11:A3.
Armstrong, S. 2003. "Not My Daughter." *Ms.,* Summer:22–23.
Arrigo, B. 1999a. "Can Students Benefit from an Intensive Engagement with Postmodern Criminology?" In J. Fuller & E. Hickey (eds.), *Controversial Issues in Criminology.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
——— (ed.). 1999b. *Social Justice/Criminal Justice: The Maturation of Critical Theory in Law, Crime, and Deviance.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Arvanites, T., & R. DeFina. 2006. "Business Cycles and Crime." *Criminology* 44:139–164.
Asseo, L. 2001. "No Drug Tests for Pregnant Women." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Mar. 22:A3.
Associated Press. 2007a. "'Jena Six' Teen Pleads Guilty." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Dec. 4:A3.
———. 2007b. "Study: 1 Out of 4 Homeless Are Veterans." www.newsvine.com.
———. 2008. "Study: False Statements Preceded War." www.msnbc.com.
Attinger, J. 1989. "The Decline of New York." *Time,* Sept. 17:36–40, 44.
Austin, J., & J. Dankwort. 1999. "The Impact of a Batterers' Program on Battered Women." *Violence Against Women* 5:25–42.
Austin, J., et al. 2001. "The Use of Incarceration in the United States." *Critical Criminology* 10:17–41.
Bachman, R., & L. Saltzman. 1995. *Violence Against Women: Estimates from the Redesigned Survey.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Bai, M. 1999. "Can Pistols Get Smarter?" *Newsweek,* Aug. 2:41.
Bailey, W. 1998. "Deterrence, Brutalization, and the Death Penalty: Another Examination of Oklahoma's Return to Capital Punishment." *Criminology* 36:711–733.
Baker, M. 1985. *Cops: Their Lives in Their Own Words.* New York: Fawcett.
Baker, P. 1992. "Maintaining Male Power: Why Heterosexual Men Use Pornography." In C. Itzin (ed.), *Pornography.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Baker, R. 2002. "What Are They Hiding?" *Nation,* Feb. 25:11–16.
Baldus, D., & G. Woodworth. 1998. "Race Discrimination and the Death Penalty: An Empirical and Legal Overview." In J. Acker et al. (eds.), *America's Experiment with Capital Punishment.* Durham, NC: Carolina Academic.
Balkan, S., R. Berger, & J. Schmidt. 1980. *Crime and Deviance in America: A Critical Approach.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Bamford, J. 2005. "The Man Who Sold the War." *Rolling Stone,* Nov. 18. www.commondreams.org.

———. 2008. *The Shadow Factory: The Ultra-Secret NSA from 9/11 to the Eavesdropping on America.* New York: Doubleday.
Bandura, A. 1973. *Aggression: A Social Learning Analysis.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
———. 1997. *Self-Efficacy: The Exercise of Control.* New York: Freeman.
Barak, G., & S. Henry. 1999. "An Integrative-Constitutive Theory of Crime, Law, and Social Justice." In B. Arrigo (ed.), *Social Justice/Criminal Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Barkan, S. 2006. *Criminology.* Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Barkan, S., & L. Snowden. 2001. *Collective Violence.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Barker, T. 1986. "An Empirical Study of Police Deviance Other Than Corruption." In T. Barker & D. Carter (eds.), *Police Deviance.* Cincinnati: Pilgrimage.
Barker, T., & D. Carter. 1999. "Fluffing Up the Evidence and Covering Your Ass: Some Conceptual Notes on Police Lying." In L. Gaines & G. Cordner (eds.), *Policing Perspectives.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Barlow, H. 1996. *Introduction to Criminology.* New York: HarperCollins.
Barlow, H., & D. Kauzlarich. 2002. *Introduction to Criminology.* Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Baron, L. 1993. "Gender Inequality and Child Homicide: A State-Level Analysis." In A. Wilson (ed.), *Homicide.* Cincinnati: Anderson.
Baron, L., & M. Straus. 1989. *Four Theories of Rape in American Society: A State-Level Analysis.* New Haven: Yale University Press.
Baron, S. 2003. "Self-Control, Social Consequences, and Criminal Behavior: Street Youth and the General Theory of Crime." *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency* 40:403–425.
———. 2004. "General Strain, Street Youth and Crime: A Test of Agnew's Revised Theory." *Criminology* 42:457–483.
Barry, K. 1979. *Female Sexual Slavery.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
———. 1995. *The Prostitution of Sexuality.* New York: New York University Press.
Barstow, D., & L. Bergman. 2003. "At a Texas Foundry, an Indifference to Life." *New York Times,* Jan. 8. www.nytimes.com.
Bart, P., & P. O'Brien. 1985. *Stopping Rape: Successful Survival Strategies.* New York: Pergamon.
Bartol, C., & A. Bartol. 1989. *Juvenile Delinquency.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Barton, W., & J. Butts. 1990. "Viable Options: Intensive Supervision Programs for Juvenile Delinquents." *Crime & Delinquency* 36:238–256.
Bass, E. 1983. "In the Truth Itself, There Is Healing." In E. Bass & L. Thornton (eds.), *I Never Told Anyone.* New York: Harper and Row.
Bass, E., & L. Davis. 1988. *The Courage to Heal.* New York: Harper and Row.
Bass, E., & L. Thornton (eds.). 1983. *I Never Told Anyone.* New York: Harper and Row.
Bates, E. 1998. "Private Prisons." *Nation,* Jan. 5:11–18.
Battle, J., & M. Bennett. 2007. "A Perfect Storm: The Jena Six from a Sociohistorical Perspective." ASA *Footnotes,* Dec.:4.
Baumer, E., R. Felson, & S. Messner. 2003. "Changes in Police Notification of Rape, 1973–2000." *Criminology* 41:841–872.
Bayley, D., & E. Bittner. 1999. "Learning the Skills of Policing." In L. Gaines & G. Cordner (eds.), *Policing Perspectives.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Beccaria, C. 1764/1963. *On Crimes and Punishments.* Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill.
Becker, G. 1968. "Crime and Punishment: An Economic Approach." *Journal of Political Economy* 76:493–517.

Becker, H. 1963. *Outsiders: Studies in the Sociology of Deviance.* New York: Free Press.
Beckett, K. 1994. "Setting the Public Agenda: 'Street Crime' and Drug Use in American Politics." *Social Problems* 41:425–447.
Bedau, H., & M. Radelet. 1987. "Miscarriages of Justice in Potentially Capital Case." *Stanford Law Review* 40:21–179.
Beinart, P. 2002. "Eight Days." *New Republic,* Dec. 2–9:6.
Beirne, P., & J. Messerschmidt. 1995. *Criminology.* Fort Worth: Harcourt Brace.
Beiser, V. 2000. "Fetal Abuse." *Mother Jones,* June 14. www.motherjones.com.
Belkin, A., & G. Bateman (eds.). 2003. *Don't Ask, Don't Tell: Debating the Gay Ban in the Military.* Boulder: Lynne Rienner.
Belknap, J. 2007. *The Invisible Woman: Gender, Crime, and Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Bellair, P. 1997. "Social Interaction and Community Crime: Examining the Importance of Neighbor Networks." *Criminology* 35:677–703.
Belluck, P. 2004. "Several Red States Are Splitsville." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Nov. 14:A3.
Beneke, T. 1982. *Men on Rape.* New York: St. Martin's.
Benekos, P. 1995. "Women as Victims and Perpetrators of Murder." In A. Merlo & J. Polock (eds.), *Women, Law, and Social Control.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Bennett, S., & P. Lavrakas. 1989. "Community-Based Crime Prevention: An Assessment of the Eisenhower Foundation's Neighborhood Program." *Crime & Delinquency* 35:345–364.
Bennett, T., & R. Wright. 1984. *Burglars on Burglary.* Aldershot: Gower.
Benokraitis, N. 1982. "Racial Exclusion in Juries." *Journal of Applied Behavioral Science* 18:29–47.
Bensinger, G. 1984. "Chicago Youth Gangs: A New Old Problem." *Crime & Justice* 7:1–16.
Benson, M. 1985. "Denying the Guilty Mind: Accounting for Involvement in White-Collar Crime." *Criminology* 23:583–608.
Benson, M., & F. Cullen. 1998. *Combating Corporate Crime: Local Prosecutors at Work.* Boston: Northeastern University Press.
Bergen, P. 2007. "War of Error: How Osama bin Laden Beat George W. Bush." *New Republic,* Oct. 22:23–27.
Bergen, R. 1996. *Wife Rape: Understanding the Response of Survivors and Service Providers.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Berger, R. (ed.). 1996. *The Sociology of Juvenile Delinquency.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
———. 2002. *Fathoming the Holocaust: A Social Problems Approach.* New York: de Gruyter.
———. 2008. "Agency, Structure, and the Transition to Disability: A Case Study with Implications for Life History Research." *Sociological Quarterly* 49:309–333.
Berger, R., & P. Gregory (eds.). 2009. *Juvenile Delinquency and Justice: Sociological Perspectives.* Boulder: Lynne Rienner.
Berger, R., W. Neuman, & P. Searles. 1994. "The Impact of Rape Law Reform: An Aggregate Analysis of Police Reports and Arrests." *Criminal Justice Review* 19:1–23.
Berger, R., P. Searles, & C. Cottle. 1991. *Feminism and Pornography.* Westport: Praeger.
Berger, R., P. Searles, & W. Neuman. 1988. "The Dimensions of Rape Law Reform." *Law & Society Review* 22:329–357.

Berger, R., P. Searles, R. Salem, & B. Pierce. 1986. "Sexual Assault in a College Community." *Sociological Focus* 19:1–26.
Bergman, J., & J. Reynolds. 2002. "The Guns of Opa-Locka: How US Dealers Arm the World." *Nation,* Dec. 2:19–22.
Berk, R., A. Campbell, R. Klap, & B. Western. 1992. "The Deterrent Effect of Arrest in Incidents of Domestic Violence: A Bayesian Analysis of Four Field Experiments." *American Sociological Review* 57:698–708.
Berman, A. 2008. "Swiftboat Blues." *Nation,* Nov. 10:4–5.
Berne, S. 1991. "'Excuse Me,' He Said." *New York Times Magazine,* June 30:10–11.
Bernsten, G., & R. Pezzullo. 2005. *Jaw Breaker: The Attack on Bin Laden and Al Qaeda: A Personal Account by the CIA's Key Field Commander.* New York: Crown.
Berrill, K. 1992. "Anti-Gay Violence and Victimization in the United States: An Overview." In G. Herek & K. Berrill (eds.), *Hate Crimes.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
Berrill, K., & G. Herek. 1992. "Primary and Secondary Victimization in Anti-Gay Hate Crimes: Official Response and Public Policy." In G. Herek & K. Berrill (eds.), *Hate Crimes.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
Best, J. 1999. *Random Violence: How We Talk About New Crimes and New Victims.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Betz, M. 1974. "Riots and Welfare: Are They Related?" *Social Problems* 21:345–355.
Bickle, G., & R. Peterson. 1991. "The Impact of Gender-Based Family Roles on Criminal Sentencing." *Social Problems* 38:372–394.
Bienen, L. 1980. "Rape III: National Developments in Rape Reform Legislation." *Women's Rights Law Reporter* 6:170–213.
Bikel, O. 1999. "Snitch." Public Broadcasting Station documentary.
Bilchik, S. 1999. "Minorities in the Juvenile Justice System." *1999 National Report Series.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Binder, A., G. Geis, & D. Bruce. 1988. *Juvenile Delinquency.* New York: Macmillan.
Bing, L. 1991. *Do or Die.* New York: HarperCollins.
Birsch, D., & J. Fielder (eds.). 1994. *The Ford Pinto Case: A Study in Applied Ethics, Business, and Technology.* Albany: State University of New York Press.
Bishop, D., C. Frazier, & J. Henretta. 1989. "Prosecutorial Waiver: Case Study of a Questionable Reform." *Crime & Delinquency* 35:179–201.
Black, D. 1970. "Production of Crime Rates." *American Sociological Review* 35:733–748.
———. 1980. *The Manners and Customs of the Police.* New York: Academic Press.
Black, D., & D. Nagin. 1998. "Do 'Right-to-Carry' Laws Deter Violent Crime?" *Journal of Legal Studies* 27:209–219.
Blalock, H. 1967. *Toward a Theory of Minority-Group Relations.* New York: Wiley.
Blau, J., & P. Blau. 1982. "The Cost of Inequality: Metropolitan Structure and Violent Crime." *American Sociological Review* 47:114–129.
Blitstein, R. 2007. "Internet Crooks Steal Billions." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Nov. 25:A1, A9.
Block, A., & W. Chambliss. 1981. *Organizing Crime.* New York: Elsevier.
Blomberg, T., W. Bales, & K. Reed. 1993. "Intermediate Punishment: Redistributing or Extending Social Control?" *Crime, Law, & Social Change* 19:187–201.

Bluestone, B., & B. Harrison. 1982. *The Deindustrialization of America: Plant Closings, Community Abandonment, and the Dismantling of Basic Industry.* New York: Basic.

Blumberg, A. 1967. "The Practice of Law as a Confidence Game." *Law & Society Review* 1:15–39.

Blumstein, A. 1993. "Making Rationality Relevant." *Criminology* 31:1–16.

———. 2002. "Why Is Crime Falling—Or Is It?" In A. Blumstein et al. (eds.), *Perspectives on Crime and Justice.* Rockville, MD: National Institute of Justice.

Blumstein, A., & E. Grady. 1982. "Prevalence and Recidivism in Index Arrests: A Feedback Model." *Law & Society Review* 16:265–290.

Blumstein, A., & J. Wallman (eds.). 2000. *The Crime Drop in America.* New York: Cambridge University Press.

Boehlert, E. 2000. "Fox Guarding the Henhouse." *Salon.com Politics,* Nov. 15. www.salon.com/politics.

Bogle, D. 1994. *Toms, Coons, Mulattos, Mammies, and Bucks: An Interpretive History of Blacks in American Films.* New York: Continuum.

Bohm, R. 1991. "Race and the Death Penalty in the United States." In M. Lynch & E. Patterson (eds.), *Race and Criminal Justice.* Albany, NY: Harrow and Heston.

———. 1998. "The Economic Costs of Capital Punishment: Past, Present, and Future." In J. Acker et al. (eds.), *America's Experiment with Capital Punishment.* Durham, NC: Carolina Academic.

Boland, B., P. Mahanna, & R. Stones. 1992. *The Prosecution of Felony Arrests 1988.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.

Bonczar, T. 1997. *Characteristics of Adults on Probation 1995.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.

Bonczar, T., & T. Snell. 2003. *Capital Punishment, 2002.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.

Bond-Maupin, L. 1998. "'That Wasn't Even Me They Showed': Women as Criminals on *America's Most Wanted.*" *Violence Against Women* 4:30–44.

Bonini, C., & G. D'Avanzo. 2007. *Collusion: International Espionage and the War on Terror.* Hoboken, NJ: Melville.

Bonsignore, J., et al. (eds.). 1994. *Before the Law: An Introduction to the Legal Process.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin.

Boostrom, R., & J. Henderson. 1983. "Community Action and Crime Prevention: Some Unresolved Issues." *Crime & Social Justice* 19:24–30.

Bourgois, Philippe. 1989. "In Search of Horatio Alger: Culture and Ideology in the Crack Economy." *Contemporary Drug Problems* 16:619–649.

———. 1995. *In Search of Respect: Selling Crack in El Barrio.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Bourque, B., M. Han, & S. Hill. 1996. *A National Survey of Aftercare Provisions for Boot Camp Graduates.* Washington, DC: National Institute of Justice.

Bowers, W., & G. Pierce. 1980. "Deterrence or Brutalization: What Is the Effect of Executions?" *Crime & Delinquency* 26:453–484.

Bowker, L. 1980. *Prison Victimization.* New York: Elsevier.

Bowker, L., & M. Klein. 1983. "The Etiology of Female Juvenile Delinquency and Gang Membership: A Test of Psychological and Social Structural Explanations." *Adolescence* 13:739–751.

Boyd, T. 1997. *Am I Black Enough for You? Popular Culture from the "Hood" and Beyond.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Brady, J. 1983. "Arson, Urban Economy, and Organized Crime: The Case of Boston." *Social Problems* 31:1–27.
Braga, A., & G. Pierce. 2005. "Disrupting Illegal Firearms Markets in Boston: The Effects of Operation Ceasefire on the Supply of New Handguns to Criminals." *Criminology & Public Policy* 4:717–748.
Braithwaite, J. 1989. *Crime, Shame, and Reintegration.* New York: Cambridge University Press.
Braithwaite, J., & K. Daly. 1998. "Masculinities, Violence, and Communitarian Control." In S. Miller (ed.), *Crime Control and Women.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Braithwaite, J., & G. Geis. 1982. "On the Theory and Action for Corporate Crime Control." *Crime & Delinquency* 28:292–314.
Braithwaite, R., & K. Arriola. 2003. "Male Prisoners and HIV Prevention: A Call for Action Ignored." *American Journal of Public Health* 93:759–763.
Brand, P., & A. Kidd. 1986. "Frequency of Physical Aggression in Heterosexual and Female Homosexual Dyads." *Psychological Reports* 59:1307–1313.
Brandell, S. 1998. "FGM Roundup." *Ms.,* May–June:26.
Brandl, S., M. Chamblin, & J. Frank. 1995. "Aggregation Bias and the Capacity for Formal Crime Control: The Determinants of Total and Disaggregated Police Force Size in Milwaukee, 1934–1987." *Justice Quarterly* 12:543–562.
Bratton, W. 1998. *Turnaround: How America's Top Cop Reversed the Crime Epidemic.* New York: Random.
Brazil, J., & S. Berry. 1992. "Color of Driver Is Key to Stops in I-95 Videos." *Orlando Sentinel,* Aug. 23:A1.
Brecher, E. 1972. *Licit and Illicit Drugs.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Brecher, J. 1980. *Strike!* Boston: South End.
Breen, T. 2007. "Gun Database Lacks State Records." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Apr. 27:A9.
Brehm, E. 2003. "Arizona Sheriff Introduces Female Chain Gang." Nov. 19. www.wsws.org.
Bridges, G., & R. Crutchfield. 1988. "Law, Social Standing, and Racial Disparities in Imprisonment." *Social Forces* 66:699–724.
Bridges, G., R. Crutchfield, & E. Simpson. 1987. "Crime, Social Structure, and Criminal Punishment: White and Nonwhite Rates of Imprisonment." *Social Problems* 34:345–361.
Briere, J. 1992. *Child Abuse Trauma.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
Brinkley, J., & S. Engelberg (eds.). 1988. *Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair.* New York: Random.
Brisard, J., & G. Dasquie. 2002. *Forbidden Truth: US-Taliban Secret Oil Diplomacy and the Failed Hunt for Bin Laden.* New York: Thunder's Mouth/Nation Books.
Britton, D. 1997. "Gender Organizational Logic: Policy and Practice in Men's and Women's Prisons." *Gender & Society* 11:796–818.
Brod, H. 1995. "Pornography and Alienation of Male Sexuality." In M. Kimmel & M. Messner (eds.), *Men's Lives.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Broidy, L., & R. Agnew. 1997. "Gender and Crime: A General Strain Perspective." *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency* 34:275–306.
Brook, D. 2004. "The Problem of Prison Rape." *Legal Affairs,* Mar.–Apr.:24–29.
Brooks-Gunn, J., G. Duncan, P. Klebanov, & N. Sealand. 1993. "Do Neighborhoods Influence Child and Adolescent Development?" *American Journal of Sociology* 99:353–395.
Broome, K., et al. 1996. "Drug Treatment Process Indicators for Probationers and

Prediction of Recidivism." *Journal of Substance Abuse Treatment* 13:487–491.
Browne, A. 1987. *When Battered Women Kill.* New York: Macmillan.
———. 1997. "Violence in Marriage: Until Death Do Us Part?" In A. Cardarelli (ed.), *Violence Between Intimate Partners.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Browne, A., & K. Williams. 1989. "Exploring the Effect of Resource Availability and the Likelihood of Female-Perpetrated Homicides." *Law & Society Review* 23:75–94.
———. 1993. "Gender, Intimacy, and Lethal Violence: Trends from 1976–1987." *Gender & Society* 7:78–98.
Browne, D. 1989. "Incarcerated Mothers and Parenting." *Journal of Family Violence* 4:211–221.
Browning, S., & L. Cao. 1992. "The Impact of Race on Criminal Justice Ideology." *Justice Quarterly* 9:685–701.
Brownmiller, S. 1975. *Against Our Will: Men, Women, and Rape.* New York: Simon and Schuster.
Brownstein, H. 1996. *The Rise and Fall of a Violent Crime Wave: Crack Cocaine and the Social Construction of a Crime Problem.* Guilderland, NY: Harrow and Heston.
Brownstein, R., & N. Easton. 1982. *Reagan's Ruling Class: Portraits of the President's Top One Hundred Officials.* New York: Pantheon.
Budhos, M. 1997. "Putting the Heat on Sex Tourism." *Ms.,* Mar.–Apr.:12–16.
Bull, C. 2003. "Justice Served." *Advocate,* Aug. 19:35–38.
Bullard, R., & B. Wright. 1989–1990. "Toxic Waste and the African American Community." *Urban League Review* 13:67–75.
Bureau of Justice Assistance. 1997. *A Policymaker's Guide to Hate Crimes.* Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office.
Burkett, S., & D. Ward. 1993. "A Note on Perceptual Deterrence, Religiosity Based on Moral Condemnation, and Social Control." *Criminology* 31:119–134.
Burkett, S., & B. Warren. 1987. "Religiosity, Peer Associations, and Adolescent Marijuana Use: A Panel Study of Underlying Causal Structures." *Criminology* 25:109–134.
Burns, R., & J. Smith. 1999. "DNA: Fingerprint of the Future?" *ACJS Today* 18:1, 3–4.
Burris-Kitchen, D. 1995. "Sisters in the Hood." PhD diss., Western Michigan University.
Bursik, R. 1988. "Social Disorganization and Theories of Crime and Delinquency: Problems and Prospects." *Criminology* 26:519–551.
Bursik, R., & H. Grasmick. 1993. *Neighborhoods and Crime: The Dimensions of Effective Community Control.* New York: Lexington Books.
Bursik, R., & J. Webb. 1982. "Community Change and Patterns of Delinquency." *American Journal of Sociology* 88:24–42.
Burstyn, V. (ed.). 1985. *Women Against Censorship.* Vancouver: Douglas and McIntyre.
Bush-Baskette, S. 1998. "The War on Drugs as a War Against Black Women." In S. Miller (ed.), *Crime Control and Women.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Bussey, J. 2002. "Cheney, Halliburton Accused of Fraud." *Wisconsin State Journal,* July 11:A3.
Butcher, K., & A. Piehl. 1998. "Cross-City Evidence on the Relationship Between Immigration and Crime." *Journal of Policy Administration & Management* 17:457–493.

Butler, P. 1997. "Brotherman: Reflections of a Reformed Prosecutor." In E. Cose (ed.), *The Darden Dilemma.* New York: HarperPerennial.

Bynum, T., G. Cordner, & J. Greene. 1982. "Victim and Offense Characteristics: Impact on Police Investigative Decision-Making." *Criminology* 20:301–318.

Calavita, K. 1983. "The Demise of the Occupational Safety and Health Administration: A Case Study in Symbolic Action." *Social Problems* 30:464–477.

Calavita, K., & H. Pontell. 1990. "Heads I Win, Tails You Lose: Deregulation, Crime, and Crisis in the Savings and Loan Industry." *Crime & Delinquency* 36:309–341.

———. 1993. "Savings and Loan Fraud as Organized Crime: Towards a Conceptual Typology of Corporate Illegality." *Criminology* 31:519–548.

Calhoun, C., & H. Hiller. 1988. "Coping with Insidious Injuries: The Case of Johns-Manville Corporation and Asbestos Exposure." *Social Problems* 35:162–181.

Calhoun, T. 1992. "Male Street Hustling: Introduction Processes and Stigma Containment." *Sociological Spectrum* 12:35–52.

Cameron, D., & E. Frazer. 1987. *The Lust to Kill: A Feminist Investigation of Serial Murder.* New York: New York University Press.

———. 1993. "On the Question of Pornography and Sexual Violence: Moving Beyond Cause and Effect." In C. Itzin (ed.), *Pornography.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Camp, C. 2003. *The Corrections Yearbook, 2002: Adult Corrections.* Middletown, CT: Criminal Justice Institute.

Camp, C., & G. Camp. 2002. *The Corrections Yearbook 2001.* Middleton, CT: Criminal Justice Institute.

Campbell, A. 1987. "Self Definition by Rejection: The Case of Gang Girls." *Social Problems* 34:451–466.

———. 1991. *The Girls in the Gang.* Cambridge: Blackwell.

———. 1993. *Men, Women, and Aggression.* New York: Basic.

Campbell, A., & S. Muncer. 1989. "Them and Us: A Comparison of the Cultural Context of American Gangs and British Subcultures." *Deviant Behavior* 10:271–288.

Canaan, J. 1991. "Is 'Doing Nothing' Just Boys' Play? Integrating Feminist and Cultural Studies Perspectives on Working-Class Young Men's Masculinity." In S. Franklin et al. (eds.), *Off-Centre.* London: HarperCollins.

Canada, G. 1998. "The Secret Life of Boys." *Hope,* Jan.–Feb.:16–20.

Cancio, A., T. Evans, & D. Maume. 1996. "Reconsidering the Declining Significance of Race: Racial Differences in Early Career Wages." *American Sociological Review* 61:541–556.

Cannon, A. 2004. "Not Quite Like on 'CSI.'" *US News & World Report,* Dec. 20:33.

Canter, R. 1982. "Sex Differences in Self-Report Delinquency." *Criminology* 20:373–393.

Cantor, D., & K. Land. 1975. "Unemployment and Crime Rates in the Post–World War II United States: A Theoretical and Empirical Analysis." *American Sociological Review* 50:317–323.

Cao, L., A. Adam, & V. Jensen. 1997. "A Test of the Black Subculture of Violence." *Criminology* 35:367–379.

Capaldi, D., P. Chamberlain, & G. Patterson. 1997. "Ineffective Discipline and Conduct Problems in Males: Association, Late Adolescent Outcomes, and Prevention." *Aggression & Violent Behavior* 2:343–353.

Caputi, J. 1987. *The Age of Sex Crime.* Bowling Green, OH: Bowling Green State University Press.
———. 1989. "The Sexual Politics of Murder." *Gender & Society* 3:437–456.
Carey, J. 1978. *Introduction to Criminology.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Carlson, S., & R. Michalowski. 1997. "Crime, Unemployment, and Social Structures of Accumulation: An Inquiry into Historical Contingency." *Justice Quarterly* 14:209–239.
Carpenter, C., B. Glassner, B. Johnson, & J. Loughlin. 1988. *Kids, Drugs, and Crime.* Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.
Carter, D., & A. Bannister. 2002. "Computer-Related Crime." In D. Shichor et al. (eds.), *Readings in White-Collar Crime.* Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.
Carter, S. 1987. "A Most Useful Tool." In F. Delacoste & P. Alexander (eds.), *Sex Work.* Pittsburgh: Cleis.
Caspi, A., G. Elder, & E. Herbener. 1990. "Childhood Personality and the Prediction of Life-Course Patterns." In L. Robins & M. Rutter (eds.), *Straight and Devious Pathways from Childhood to Adulthood.* New York: Cambridge University Press.
Caspi, A., et al. 1994. "Are Some People Crime-Prone? Replications of the Personality-Crime Relationship Across Countries, Genders, Races, and Methods." *Criminology* 32:163–195.
Cauchon, D. 1995. "AIDS in Prison: Locked Up and Locked Out." *USA Today,* Mar. 31:6.
Cauffman, E., L. Steinberg, & A. Piquero. 2005. "Psychological, Neuropsychological, and Physiological Correlates of Serious Antisocial Behavior in Adolescence: The Role of Self-Control." *Criminology* 43:133–175.
CBS. 2008. "Sex for Oil Scandal at Interior Department," Sept. 10. www.cbsnews.com.
Center for Auto Safety. 2008. "The C/K Pickup with Unsafe Side Saddle Tanks." www.autosafety.org.
Center for Responsible Lending. 2008. "Common Abuses: Seven Signs of Predatory Lending." www.responsiblelending.org.
Cernkovich, S., & P. Giordano. 1979a. "A Comparative Analysis of Female Delinquency." *Sociological Quarterly* 20:131–145.
———. 1979b. "Delinquency, Opportunity, and Gender." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 70:145–151.
———. 1987. "Family Relationships and Delinquency." *Criminology* 25:295–321.
Chalk, F., & K. Jonassohn (eds.). 1990. *The History and Sociology of Genocide.* New Haven: Yale University Press.
Challenger, J. 2004. "Frustrated Employers Looking Closer to Find Good Hires." *California Job Journal,* July 25. www.jobjournal.com.
Chambliss, W. 1973. "The Saints and the Roughnecks." *Society* 11:341–355.
———. 1988. *On the Take: From Petty Crooks to Presidents.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.
———. 1994. "Policing the Ghetto Underclass: The Politics of Law and Law Enforcement." *Social Problems* 41:177–194.
Chambliss, W., & R. Seidman. 1971. *Law, Order, and Power.* Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley.
Chamlin, M., & J. Cochran. 1997. "Social Altruism and Crime." *Criminology* 35:203–227.
Champion, C. 1986. "Clinical Perspectives on the Relationship Between Pornography and Sexual Violence." *Law & Inequality* 4:22–27.

Charns, A. 1992. *Cloak and Gavel: FBI Wiretaps, Bugs, Informers, and the Supreme Court.* Urbana: University of Illinois Press.
Chesney-Lind, M. 1989. "Girl's Crime and Woman's Place: Toward a Feminist Model of Female Delinquency." *Crime & Delinquency* 35:5–29.
Chesney-Lind, M., & R. Shelden. 2004. *Girls, Delinquency, and Juvenile Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Chesney-Lind, M., R. Shelden, & K. Joe. 1996. "Girls, Delinquency, and Gang Membership." In C. Huff (ed.), *Gangs in America.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Chin, K. 1990. *Chinese Subculture and Criminality: Non-Traditional Crime Groups in America.* Westport: Greenwood.
Chiricos, T. 1987. "Rates of Crime and Unemployment: An Analysis of Aggregate Research Evidence." *Social Problems* 34:187–212.
———. 1996. "Moral Panic as Ideology: Drugs, Violence, Race, and Punishment in America." In M. Lynch & E. Patterson (eds.), *Justice with Prejudice.* Guilderland, NY: Harrow and Heston.
Chiricos, T., & C. Crawford. 1995. "Race and Imprisonment: A Contextual Assessment of the Evidence." In D. Hawkins (ed.), *Ethnicity, Race, and Crime.* Albany: State University of New York Press.
Chiricos, T., & M. Delone. 1992. "Labor Surplus and Punishment: A Review and Assessment of Theory and Evidence." *Social Problems* 39:421–446.
Choice, P., & L. Lamke. 1997. "A Conceptual Approach to Understanding Abused Women's Stay/Leave Decisions." *Journal of Family Issues* 18:290–314.
Chorover, S. 1973. "Big Brother and Psychotechnology." *Psychology Today,* Oct.:43–54.
Christoffel, K., E. Zieserl, & J. Chiarmonte. 1985. "Should Child Abuse and Neglect Be Considered When a Child Dies Unexpectedly?" *American Journal of Diseases of Children* 39:876–880.
Church Committee. 1978. "Report of the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence." In M. Ermann & R. Lundman (eds.), *Corporate and Governmental Deviance.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Cienfuegos, E. 2004. "Rape of Iraqi Girls by US Mercenaries Was Rampant in Baghdad." Aztlan Communications Network. www.aztlan.net.
Citizens for Tax Justice. 2002. "Year-by-Year Analysis of the Bush Tax Cuts Shows Growing Tilt to the Very Rich." www.ctj.org.
———. 2003. "Bush Administration Pegs Its New Tax Cut Plan at $1.8 Trillion over Decade." www.ctj.org.
Clark, J. 1995. "The Impact of the Prison Environment on Mothers." *Prison Journal* 75:306–329.
Clarke, R. (ed.). 1992. *Situational Crime Prevention: Successful Case Studies.* New York: Harrow and Heston.
Clear, T., & G. Cole. 1994. *American Corrections.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Clear, T., G. Gole, & M. Reisig. 2006. *American Corrections.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Clift, E. 2007. "Something to Talk About." *Newsweek,* Apr. 30:39.
Clinard, M. 1983. *Corporate Ethics and Crime: The Role of Middle Management.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
Clinard, M., & P. Yeager. 1980. *Corporate Crime.* New York: Free Press.
Cloward, R., & L. Ohlin. 1960. *Delinquency and Opportunity: A Theory of Delinquent Gangs.* New York: Free Press.
CNN. 2001. "Florida Recount Study: Bush Still Wins," Nov. 11. www.cnn.com.
———. 2002. "Court Overturns Three Convictions in N.Y. Police Torture Case," Feb. 28. www.cnn.com.

———. 2006. "U.S. Military Names Soldiers Charged in Rape, Murder Problem," July 10. www.cnn.com.
———. 2008. "Sex, Drugs, Gifts Uncovered in Government Oil Probe," Sept. 10. www.cnn.com.
CNNMoney. 2008. "FBI Probing Bailout Firms," Sept. 23. www.cnnmoney.com.
Cochran, J., M. Chamlin, & M. Seth. 1994. "Deterrence or Brutalization? An Impact Assessment of Oklahoma's Return to Capital Punishment." *Criminology* 32:107–134.
Cochran, J., P. Wood, & B. Arneklev. 1994. "Is the Religiosity-Delinquency Relationship Spurious? A Test of Arousal and Social Control Theories." *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency* 31:92–123.
Cockburn, C. 1967. "*I Claud": The Autobiography of Claud Cockburn.* Harmondsworth: Penguin.
———. 1988. "Masculinity, the Left, and Feminism." In R. Chapman & J. Rutherford (eds.), *Male Order.* London: Lawrence and Wishart.
Cohen, A. 1955. *Delinquent Boys: The Culture of the Gang.* New York: Free Press.
———. 1966. *Deviance and Control.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Cohen, B. 1980. *Deviant Street Networks: Prostitution in New York.* Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.
Cohen, L., & M. Felson. 1979. "Social Change and Crime Rate Trends: A Routine Activity Approach." *American Sociological Review* 44:588–608.
Cohen, L., & K. Land. 1987. "Age Structure and Crime: Symmetry Versus Asymmetry and the Projection of Crime Rates Through the 1990s." *American Sociological Review* 52:170–183.
Cohen, M. 1989. "Corporate Crime and Punishment: A Study of Social Harm and Sentencing Practices in the Federal Courts, 1984–1987." *American Criminal Law Review* 26:605–662.
Cohen, N. 1967. *Los Angeles Riot Study: Summary and Implications for Policy.* Los Angeles: Institute of Government and Public Affairs, University of California.
Cohen, P., & A. Sas. 1996. *Cannabis Use: A Stepping Stone to Other Drugs? The Case of Amsterdam.* Amsterdam: Center for Drug Research, University of Amsterdam. www.mir.drugtext.org.
Cohen, R. 1995. *Probation and Parole Violators in State Prison, 1991.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Cohen, S. 1980. *Folk Devils and Moral Panics: The Creation of Mods and Rockers.* Oxford: Blackwell.
Cole, D. 1999a. *No Equal Justice: Race and Class in the American Criminal Justice System.* New York: Free Press.
———. 1999b. "Standing While Black." *Nation,* Jan. 4:24.
———. 1999c. "When the Reason Is Race." *Nation,* Mar. 15:22–24.
———. 2003. "Court Watching." *Nation,* July 21–28:3–5.
Cole, D., & J. Lobel. 2007. *Less Safe, Less Crime: Why America Is Losing the War on Terror.* New York: New Press.
Cole, L., & S. Foster. 2001. *From the Ground Up: Environmental Racism and the Rise of the Environmental Justice Movement.* New York: New York University Press.
Coleman, J. 2002. *The Criminal Elite: Understanding White-Collar Crime.* New York: Worth.
Collins, C. 1997. *The Imprisonment of African American Women.* Jefferson, NC: McFarland.
Comfort, A. 1991. *The New Joy of Sex: The Gourmet Guide to Lovemaking for the Nineties.* New York: Pocket.

Comstock, G. 1991. *Violence Against Lesbians and Gay Men.* New York: Columbia University Press.
Conklin, J. 2001. *Criminology.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
———. 2003. *Why Crime Rates Fell.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Connell, R. 1987. *Gender and Power: Society, the Person, and Sexual Politics.* Stanford: Stanford University Press.
———. 1995. *Masculinities.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Conners, R. 2003. "How 'Restorative' Is Restorative Justice? An Oppression Theory Critique." In M. Free (ed.), *Racial Issues in Criminal Justice.* Westport: Praeger.
Consason, J., & G. Lyons. 2000. *The Hunting of the President: The Ten-Year Campaign to Destroy Bill and Hillary Clinton.* New York: Thomas Dunne.
Conte, J. 1986. "Sexual Abuse in the Family: A Critical Analysis." *Journal of Psychotherapy & the Family* 2:113–126.
Continetti, M. 2006. *The K Street Gang: The Rise and Fall of the Republican Machine.* New York: Doubleday.
Cordner, G. 1999. "Elements of Community Policing." In L. Gaines & G. Cordner (eds.), *Policing Perspectives.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Corn, D. 2001. "Bush and Butterflies." *Nation,* Dec. 3:5–6.
———. 2003. *The Lies of George W. Bush: Mastering the Politics of Deception.* New York: Crown.
———. 2007. "Cheney on Trial." *Nation,* Mar. 26:1113.
Corsaro, W., & D. Eder. 1990. "Children's Peer Culture." *Annual Review of Sociology* 16:197–220.
Cose, E. 1999. "Casualties of the Drug War." *Newsweek,* Sept. 6:29.
———. 2007. "Sanity and Sentencing." *Newsweek,* Dec. 24:53.
———. 2007–2008. "The Rise of a New American Underclass." *Newsweek,* Dec. 31–Jan. 7:74.
Costanzo, M. 1997. *Just Revenge: Costs and Consequences of the Death Penalty.* New York: St. Martin's.
Coston, C. 1992. "The Influence of Race in Urban Homeless Females' Fear of Crime." *Justice Quarterly* 9:721–729.
Cothern, L. 2000. *Juveniles and the Death Penalty.* Washington, DC: Coordinating Council on Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention.
Council for Prostitution Alternatives. 1994. *Annual Report 1993–1994.* Portland.
Coupe, T., & L. Blake. 2006. "Daylight and Darkness Targeting Strategies and the Risks of Being Seen at Residential Burglaries." *Criminology* 44:431–464.
Court, J. 2003. "Identity Thieves." *Nation,* Nov. 3:8, 22.
Courtois, C. 1988. *Healing the Incest Wound: Adult Survivors in Therapy.* New York: Norton.
Cowley, G. 1991. "Video Vigilantes." *Newsweek,* July 22:42–45.
———. 1998. "Why Children Turn Violent." *Newsweek,* Apr. 6:25.
COYOTE. 1987. "National Task Force on Prostitution." In F. Delacoste & P. Alexander (eds.), *Sex Work.* Pittsburgh: Cleis.
Cressey, D. 1953. *Other People's Money.* Glencoe, IL: Free Press.
———. 1969. *Theft of the Nation.* New York: Harper and Row.
———. 1972. *Criminal Organization: Its Elementary Forms.* New York: Harper and Row.
Critchley, T. 1972. *A History of Police in England and Wales.* Montclair, NJ: Patterson Smith.
Crittenden, P., & S. Craig. 1990. "Developmental Trends in the Nature of Child Homicide." *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 5:202–216.

Crossette, B. 1995. "Female Genital Mutilation: A Reproductive Health Concern." Supplement to *Population Reports* 23, Oct.
Cullen, F., & B. Applegate (eds.). 1997. *Offender Rehabilitation: Effective Treatment Intervention.* Aldershot: Ashgate.
Cullen, F., P. Gendreau, G. Jarjoura, & J. Wright. 1997. "Crime and the Bell Curve: Lessons from Intelligent Criminology." *Crime & Delinquency* 43:387–411.
Cullen, F., B. Link, J. Cullen, & N. Wolfe. 1989. "How Satisfying Is Prison Work? A Comparative Occupational Approach." *Journal of Offender Counseling Services & Rehabilitation* 14:89–108.
Cullen, F., W. Maakestad, & G. Cavender. 1987. *Coporate Crime Under Attack: The Ford Pinto Case and Beyond.* Cincinnati: Anderson.
Cullen, F., & J. Sundt. 2000. "Imprisonment in the United States." In J. Sheley (ed.), *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Cullen, F., J. Wright, & M. Chamblin. 1999. "Social Support and Social Reform: A Progressive Agenda." *Crime & Delinquency* 45:188–207.
Curran, D. 1984. "The Myth of the 'New' Female Delinquent." *Criminology* 30:386–399.
Currie, C., & A. Pillick. 1996. "Sex Discrimination in the Selection and Participation of Female Jurors: A Post-*J.E.B.* Analysis." *Judges' Journal* 35:2–6, 38–42.
Currie, E. 1985. *Confronting Crime: An American Challenge.* New York: Pantheon.
Curtis, H. 1992. "Statistics Show Pattern of Discrimination." *Orlando Sentinel,* Aug. 23:A11.
Curtis, L. 1975. *Violence, Race, and Culture.* Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.
———. 1987. "The Retreat of Folly: Some Modest Replications of Inner-City Success." *Annals* 494:71–89.
Dahir, M. 2002. "The Dangerous Lives of Gay Priests." *Advocate,* July 23:30–35.
———. 2003. "Buried Alive in Egypt." *Advocate,* May 13:26–28.
D'Alessio, S., & L. Stolzenberg. 2003. "Race and the Probability of Arrest." *Social Forces* 81:1381–1397.
Dalgard, O., & E. Kringlen. 1976. "A Norwegian Twin Study of Criminality." *British Journal of Criminology* 23:711–741.
Dalla, R. 2006. *Exposing the "Pretty Woman" Myth: A Qualitative Investigation of Street-Level Prostituted Women.* Lanham, MD: Lexington Books.
Dalton, K. 1961. "Menstruation and Crime." *British Medical Journal* 2:1752–1753.
Daly, K. 1989. "Gender and Varieties of White-Collar Crime." *Criminology* 27:769–793.
———. 1994. *Gender, Crime, and Punishment.* New Haven: Yale University Press.
Daly, K., & R. Bordt. 1995. "Sex Effects and Sentencing: A Review of the Statistical Literature." *Justice Quarterly* 12:143–177.
Daly, K., & M. Chesney-Lind. 1988. "Feminism and Criminology." *Justice Quarterly* 5:497–538.
Daly, K., & L. Maher (eds.). 1998. *Criminology at the Crossroads: Feminist Readings in Crime and Justice.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Daly, M. 1978. *Gyn/Ecology.* Boston: Beacon.
———. 2003. "Suits Cut Environmental Protections." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Apr. 19:A3.
Daly, M., & M. Wilson. 1988. *Homicide.* New York: de Gruyter.
Dannefer, D., & R. Schutt. 1982. "Race and Juvenile Justice Processing in Court and Police Agencies." *American Journal of Sociology* 87:1113–1132.
Danner, M. 2007. "Words in a Time of War: On Rhetoric, Truth, and Power." In A. Szanto (ed.), *What Orwell Didn't Know.* New York: PublicAffairs.

Darden, C. 1996. *In Contempt.* New York: Regan.
Datesman, S., & F. Scarpitti. 1980. "The Extent of Female Crime." In S. Datesman & F. Scarpitti (eds.), *Women, Crime, and Justice.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Datesman, S., F. Scarpitti, & R. Stephenson. 1975. "Female Delinquency: An Application of Self and Opportunity Theories." *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency* 12:107–123.
Daudistel, H., W. Sanders, & D. Luckenbill. 1979. *Criminal Justice: Situations and Decisions.* New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston.
Davies, T. 1983. "A Hard Look at What We Know (and Still Need to Learn) About the 'Costs' of the Exclusionary Rule." *American Bar Foundation Research Journal,* Summer:611–690.
Davis, A. 1990. *Women, Race, and Class.* New York: Vintage.
Davis, N. (ed.). 1993. *Prostitution: An International Handbook on Trends, Problems, and Policies.* Westport: Greenwood.
Dawley, D. 1992. *A Nation of Lords: The Autobiography of the Vice Lords.* Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.
Dawson, J. 1992. "Prosecutions in State Courts." *BJS Bulletin,* Mar.:1–9.
De La Cruz, D. 1999. "Police Charged with Murder." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Apr. 1:A2.
Dean, J. 2007. *Broken Government: How Republican Rule Destroyed the Legislative, Executive, and Judicial Branches.* New York: Viking.
Death Penalty Information Center. 2004a. "Age Requirements for the Death Penalty." www.deathpenaltyinfo.org.
———. 2004b. "Juvenile Offenders on Death Row." www.deathpenaltyinfo.org.
———. 2004c. "Mental Retardation and the Death Penalty." www.deathpenaltyinfo.org.
———. 2008a. "Death Row Inmates by State." www.deathpenaltyinfo.org.
———. 2008b. "The Innocence List." www.deathpenaltyinfo.org.
———. 2009. "Facts About the Death Penalty." www.deathpenaltyinfo.org.
DeFrances, C. 2002. *Prosecutors in State Courts, 2001.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
DeFrances, C., & F. Marika. 2000. *Indigent Defense Services in Large Counties, 1999.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
DeKeseredy, W., & M. Schwartz. 1996. *Contemporary Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Delacoste, F., & F. Newman (eds.). 1981. *Fight Back: Feminist Resistance to Male Violence.* Minneapolis: Cleis.
Delgado, R. 2000. "Goodbye to Hammurabi: Analyzing the Atavistic Appeal of Restorative Justice." *Stanford Law Review* 52:751–775.
Denno, D. 1998. "Execution and the Forgotten Eighth Amendment." In J. Acker et al. (eds.), *America's Experiment with Capital Punishment.* Durham, NC: Carolina Academic.
Derber, C. 1996. *The Wilding of America: How Greed and Violence Are Eroding Our Nation's Character.* New York: St. Martin's.
Dershowitz, A. 1996. *Reasonable Doubts: The O.J. Simpson Case and the Criminal Justice System.* New York: Simon and Schuster.
———. 2001. *Supreme Injustice: How the High Court Hijacked Election 2000.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Diamond, J. 1996. "Report Links CIA, Cocaine Boom." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Oct. 5:A3.

Diaz, T. 1999. *Making a Killing: The Business of Guns in America.* New York: New Press.
Dickenson, J. 1977. "How the Scandals of History Left Mud on the White House Steps." In J. Douglas & J. Johnson (eds.), *Official Deviance.* Philadelphia: Lippincott.
Dickey, C., & R. Nordland. 2000. "Big Tobacco's Next Legal War." *Newsweek,* July 31:36–39.
Dietrich, K., et al. 2001. "Early Exposure to Lead and Juvenile Delinquency." *Neurotoxicology & Teratology* 23:511–518.
Dillon, F., H. Patin, M. Robbins, & J. Szapocznik. 2008. "Exploring the Role of Parental Monitoring of Peers on the Relationship Between Family Functioning and Delinquency in the Lives of African American and Hispanic Adolescents." *Crime & Delinquency* 54:65–94.
DiMascio, W. 1997. *Seeking Justice: Crime and Punishment in America.* New York: Edna McConnell Clark.
Dobash, R., M. Wilson, & M. Daly. 1992. "The Myth of the Symmetrical Nature of Domestic Violence." *Social Problems* 39:71–91.
Dobkowski, M., & I. Wallimann (eds.). 1998. *The Coming Age of Scarcity: Preventing Mass Death and Genocide in the Twenty-First Century.* Syracuse: Syracuse University Press.
Dodge, L. 1999. "Abortion Foes Lose Suit over Web Site." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Feb. 2:A1.
Dodge, M. 2009. *Women and White-Collar Crime.* Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall.
Donahue, J., & S. Levitt. 2001. "The Impact of Legalized Abortion on Crime." *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 116:379–420.
Donnerstein, E., D. Linz, & S. Penrod. 1987. *The Question of Pornography: Research Findings and Policy Implications.* New York: Free Press.
Doubt, K. 2007. "Scapegoating and the Simulation of Mechanical Solidarity in Former Yugoslavia: 'Ethnic Cleansing' and the Serbian Orthodox Church." *Humanity & Society* 31:65–82.
Douglas, J. 1977. "Major John Lindsay and the Revenge of Boss Tweed." In J. Douglas and J. Johnson (eds.), *Official Deviance.* Philadelphia: Lippincott.
Dowie, M. 1977. "Pinto Madness." *Mother Jones* 2:18–24, 28–32.
Dowie, M., & C. Marshall. 1980. "The Bendectin Cover-Up." *Mother Jones* Nov.:43–56.
Dowling, C. 1998. "Violence Lessons." *Mother Jones,* July–Aug.:32–41.
Downes, B. 1968. "The Social Characteristics of Riot Cities: A Comparative Study." *Social Science Quarterly* 49:504–520.
Dreier, P. 2006. "Why Mine Deaths Are Up." *Nation,* June 12:5–6.
Dreyfuss, R. 2005. *Devil's Game: How the United States Helped Unleash Fundamentalist Islam.* New York: Owl.
DuBois, W. (ed.). 1904. *Some Notes on Negro Crime, Particularly in Georgia.* Atlanta: Atlanta University Press.
Dugan, L. 2003. "Domestic Violence Legislation: Exploring Its Impact on the Likelihood of Domestic Violence, Police Involvement, and Arrest." *Criminology & Public Policy* 2:283–312.
Dugan, L., D. Nagin, & R. Rosenfeld. 2003. "Exposure Reduction or Retaliation? The Effects of Domestic Violence Resources on Intimate Partner Violence." *Law & Society Review* 37:169–198.

Dugdale, R. 1877. *The Jukes: A Study in Crime, Pauperism, Disease, and Heredity.* New York: Putnam.
Dugger, R. 2004. "How They Could Steal the Election This Time." *Nation,* Aug. 16–23:11–24.
Dulaney, M. 1996. *Black Police in America.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.
Dunford, F., D. Huizinga, & D. Elliott. 1990. "Role of Arrest in Domestic Assault: The Omaha Police Experiment." *Criminology* 28:183–206.
Dunn, J. 1999. "What Love Has to Do with It: The Cultural Construction of Emotion and Sorority Women's Responses to Forcible Interaction." *Social Problems* 46:440–459.
Durham, A. 1986. "Pornography, Social Harm, and Legal Control." *Justice Quarterly* 3:95–102.
Durkheim, É. 1893/1964. *The Division of Labor in Society.* New York: Free Press.
———. 1897/1952. *Suicide.* New York: Free Press.
Dworkin, A. 1989. *Pornography: Men Possessing Women.* New York: Dutton.
———. 1997. *Life and Death.* New York: Free Press.
Dworkin, A., & C. MacKinnon. 1988. *Pornography and Civil Rights.* Minneapolis: Organizing Against Pornography.
Dwyer, L. 1983. "Structure and Strategy in the Antinuclear Movement." In J. Freeman (ed.), *Social Movements in the Sixties and Seventies.* New York: Longman.
Eagan, S. 1996. "From Spikes to Bombs: The Rise of Eco-Terrorism." *Studies in Conflict & Terrorism* 19:1–18.
Earley, P. 1992. *The Hot House: Life Inside Leavenworth.* New York: Bantam.
Eaves, E. 2002. *Bare: On Women, Dancing, Sex, and Power.* New York: Knopf.
Ebert, R. 1986. *Robert Ebert's Movie Home Companion.* Kansas City, MO: Andrews, McMeel, and Parker.
Eck, J., & E. Maguire. 2000. "Have Changes in Policing Reduced Violent Crime? An Assessment of the Evidence." In A. Blumstein & J. Wallman (eds.), *The Crime Drop in America.* New York: Cambridge University Press.
Edelstein, J. 1987. "In the Massage Parlor." In F. Delacoste & P. Alexander (eds.), *Sex Work.* Pittsburgh: Cleis.
Ehrenreich, B., M. Dowie, & S. Minkin. 1979. "The Charge: Genocide; The Accused: The US Government." *Mother Jones* Nov.–Dec.:26–37.
Ehrenreich, B., & D. English. 1973. *Witches, Midwives, and Nurses.* Old Westbury, NY: Feminist Press.
Eig, J. 1996. "Eyes on the Street: Community Policing in Chicago." *American Prospect,* Nov.–Dec.:60–68.
Eigenberg, H. 1990. "The National Crime Survey and Rape: The Case of the Missing Question." *Justice Quarterly* 7:655–671.
"Eight Tray Gangster: The Making of a Crip." 1993. Discovery Channel documentary.
Einstader, W., & S. Henry. 1995. *Criminological Theory.* Fort Worth: Harcourt Brace.
Elias, T., & D. Schatzman. 1996. *The Simpson Trial in Black and White.* Los Angeles: General Publishing Group.
Elifson, K., D. Peterson, & C. Hadaway. 1983. "Religiosity and Delinquency: A Contextual Analysis." *Criminology* 21:505–527.
Elliott, D., & S. Ageton. 1980. "Reconciling Race and Class Differences in Self-Reported and Official Estimates of Delinquency." *American Sociological Review* 45:95–110.

Elliott, D., & D. Huizinga. 1983. "Social Class and Delinquent Behavior in a National Youth Panel." *Criminology* 21:149–177.
Elliott, P. 1996. "Shattering Illusions: Same-Sex Domestic Violence." In C. Renzetti & C. Miley (eds.), *Violence in Gay and Lesbian Domestic Relationships.* New York: Harrington Park.
Ellis, D., & W. DeKeseredy. 1997. "Rethinking Estrangement Interventions and Intimate Femicide." *Violence Against Women* 3:590–609.
Ellis, L., & A. Walsh. 1997. "Gene-Based Evolutionary Theories in Criminology." *Criminology* 35:229–276.
———. 2000. *Criminology: A Global Perspective.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Ellison, C. 1991. "An Eye for an Eye? A Note on the Southern Subculture of Violence Thesis." *Social Forces* 69:1223–1239.
Emerson, R., K. Ferris, & C. Gardner. 1998. "On Being Stalked." *Social Problems* 45:289–314.
Emery, J., & M. Newlands. 1991. "Child Abuse and Cot Deaths." *Child Abuse & Neglect* 15:275–278.
Emirbayer, M., & A. Mische. 1998. "What Is Agency?" *American Journal of Sociology* 4:962–1023.
Empey, L., & M. Stafford. 1991. *American Delinquency.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Engen, R., S. Steen, & G. Bridges. 2002. "Racial Disparities in the Punishment of Youth: A Theoretical and Empirical Assessment of the Literature." *Social Problems* 49:194–220.
Erikson, K. 1966. *Wayward Puritans: A Study in the Sociology of Deviance.* New York: Wiley.
Erickson, M., J. Gibbs, & G. Jensen. 1977. "The Deterrence Doctrine and the Perceived Certainty of Legal Punishment." *American Sociological Review* 42:305–317.
Erickson, M., & G. Jensen. 1977. "Delinquency Is Still Group Behavior." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 68:388–395.
Ermann, M., & W. Clements. 1984. "The Interfaith Center on Corporate Responsibility and Its Campaign Against Marketing Infant Formula in the Third World." *Social Problems* 32:185–196.
Esbensen, F., & D. Huizinga. 1993. "Gangs, Drugs, and Delinquency in a Survey of Urban Youth." *Criminology* 31:565–587.
Esbensen, F., & L. Winfree. 1998. "Race and Gender Differences Between Gang and Non-Gang Youth: Results from a Multi-Site Survey." *Justice Quarterly* 15:505–525.
Eschholz, S. 2003. "The Color of Prime-Time Justice: Racial Characteristics of Television Offenders and Victims." In M. Free (ed.), *Racial Issues in Criminal Justice.* Westport: Praeger.
Estrich, S. 1987. *Real Rape.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
Evans, E. 1983. "The Use of Terrorism by American Social Movements." In J. Freeman (ed.), *Social Movements of the Sixties and Seventies.* New York: Longman.
Evans, T., F. Cullen, R. Dunaway, & V. Burton. 1995. "Religion and Crime Reexamined: The Impact of Religion, Secular Controls, and Social Ecology on Adult Criminality." *Criminology* 33:195–224.
Eysenck, H. 1977. *Crime and Personality.* London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.
Fagan, J. 1990. "Social Processes of Delinquency and Drug Use Among Urban Gangs." In C. Huff (ed.), *Gangs in America.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.

———. 1994. "Women and Drugs Revisited: Female Participation in the Cocaine Economy." *Journal of Drug Issues* 24:179–225.
Fagan, J., & D. Wilkinson. 1998. "Guns, Youth Violence, and Social Identity in Inner-Cities." *Crime & Justice* 24:105–188.
Faith, K. 1993. *Unruly Women: The Politics of Confinement and Resistance.* Vancouver: Press Gang.
Faludi, S. 1999. "The Betrayal of the American Man." *Newsweek,* Sept. 13:48–50.
Farberman, H. 1975. "A Criminogenic Market Structure: The Automobile Industry." *Sociological Quarterly* 16:438–457.
Farley, J. 1987. "Suburbanization and Central-City Crime Rates: New Evidence and a Reinterpretation." *American Journal of Sociology* 93:688–700.
Farr, K. 1995. "Fetal Abuse and the Criminalization of Behavior During Pregnancy." *Crime & Delinquency* 41:235–245.
———. 1997. "Aggravating and Differentiating Factors in the Cases of White and Minority Women on Death Row." *Crime & Delinquency* 43:260–278.
Fausto-Sterling, A. 1993. "The Five Sexes: Why Male and Female Are Not Enough." *Science,* Mar./Apr.:20–24.
———. 2000. *Sexing the Body.* New York: Basic.
Featherstone, L. 2005. "Down and Out in Discount America." *Nation,* Jan. 3:11, 13–14, 19.
Feder, L., & D. Wilson. 2005. "A Meta-Analytic Review of Court-Mandated Batter Intervention Programs: Can Courts Affect Abusers' Behavior?" *Journal of Experimental Criminology* 1:239–262.
Federal Bureau of Investigation. 1966, 1976, 1986, 1996, 2005, 2007a. *Crime in the United States.* www.fbi.gov/ucr.
———. 2007b. *Hate Crime Statistics.* www.fbi.gov/ucr.
Feinberg, L. 1996. *Transgender Warrior.* Boston: Beacon.
Feldberg, M. 1980. *The Turbulent Era: Riot and Disorder in Jacksonian America.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Felson, M. 1998. *Crime and Everyday Life.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Pine Forge.
Felson, R., & J. Staff. 2006. "Explaining the Academic Performance-Delinquency Relationship." *Criminology* 44:299–319.
Ferraro, K. 1989. "Policing Woman Battering." *Social Problems* 36:61–74.
———. 1996. "Women's Fear of Victimization: Shadow of Sexual Assault?" *Social Forces* 75:667–690.
Ferrell, J. 1997. "Criminological Verstehen: Inside the Immediacy of Crime." *Justice Quarterly* 14:3–23.
Fessenden, R., & J. Broder. 2001. "Ballot Study Finds Court Didn't Give Bush Win." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Nov. 12:A1, A8.
Feuer, A. 2004. "New York Settles Lawsuit with Diallo Family for $3 Million." *New York Times,* Jan. 6. www.nytimes.com.
Figueira-McDonough, J. 1984. "Feminism and Delinquency: In Search of an Illusive Link." *British Journal of Criminology* 24:325–342.
Figueira-McDonough, J., W. Barton, & R. Sarri. 1981. "Normal Deviance: Gender Similarities in Adolescent Subcultures." In M. Warren (ed.), *Comparing Male and Female Offenders.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
Finkelhor, D., & L. Baron. 1986. "Risk Factors in Child Sexual Abuse." *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 1:43–71.
Finkelhor, D., G. Hotaling, I. Lewis, & C. Smith. 1990. "Sexual Abuse in a National Survey of Adult Men and Women: Prevalence, Characteristics, and Risk Factors." *Child Abuse & Neglect* 14:19–28.

Finkelhor, D., & K. Yllo. 1985. *License to Rape: Sexual Abuse of Wives.* New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston.
Finn, P. 1998. *Texas' Project RIO.* Washington, DC: National Institute of Justice.
Fischer, E., & E. Gondolf. 1988. *Battered Women as Survivors: An Alternative to Treating Learned Helplessness.* Lexington, MA: Lexington.
Fishbein, D. 1990. "Biological Perspectives in Criminology." *Criminology* 28:27–72.
Fisher, J. 1997. *Killer Among Us: Public Reactions to Serial Murder.* Westport: Praeger.
Fishman, L. 1988. "The Vice Queens: An Ethnographic Study of Black Female Gang Behavior." Paper presented at the conference of the American Society of Criminology, Chicago.
Fishman, M. 1978. "Crime Waves as Ideology." *Social Problems* 25:531–543.
Fishman, M., & G. Cavender (eds.). 1998. *Entertaining Crime: Television Reality Programs.* New York: de Gruyter.
Fitzpatrick, K., M. La Gory, & F. Ritchey. 1993. "Criminal Victimization Among the Homeless." *Justice Quarterly* 10:353–368.
Fletcher, C. 1995. *Breaking and Entering: Women Cops Talk About Life in the Ultimate Men's Club.* New York: HarperCollins.
Foa, P. 1977. "What's Wrong with Rape?" In M. Vetterling-Braggin et al. (eds.), *Feminism and Philosophy.* Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams.
Foote, D. 1999. "You Could Get Raped." *Newsweek,* Feb. 8:64–65.
Foster, H., & J. Hagan. 2007. "Incarceration and Intergenerational Exclusion." *Social Problems* 54:399–433.
Foucault, M. 1979. *Discipline and Punish: The Birth of the Prison.* New York: Vintage.
Fox, J., & J. Levin. 1993. "Female Serial Killers." In C. Colliver (ed.), *Female Criminality.* New York: Garland.
Fox, R., R. Van Sickel, & T. Steiger. 2007. *Tabloid Justice: Criminal Justice in an Age of Media Frenzy.* Boulder: Lynne Rienner.
Franklin, A. 1979. "Criminality in the Work Place: A Comparison of Male and Female Offenders." In F. Adler & R. Simon (eds.), *The Criminality of Deviant Women.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin.
Frease, D. 1973. "Delinquency, Social Class, and the Schools." *Sociology & Social Research* 57:443–459.
Free, M. 1996. *African Americans and the Criminal Justice System.* New York: Garland.
———. 1997. "The Impact of Federal Sentencing Guidelines on African Americans." *Journal of Black Studies* 28:268–286.
———. 2002. "Race and Presentencing Decisions in the United States: A Summary and Critique of the Research." *Criminal Justice Review* 27:203–222.
———. 2004. "Bail and Pretrial Release Decisions: An Assessment of the Racial Threat Perspective." *Journal of Ethnicity in Criminal Justice* 24:23–44.
Freeman, R. 1996. "Why Do So Many Young American Men Commit Crimes and What Might We Do About It?" *Journal of Economic Perspectives* 10:25–42.
Freiberg, P. 2002. "Mass Confusion." *Advocate,* Apr. 30:28–31.
Frey, H. 2002. "The Naked Truth." *Nation,* Nov. 25:28, 30–32.
Frick, P., & S. White. 2008. "Research Review: The Importance of Callous-Unemotional Traits for Development Models of Aggressive and Antisocial Behavior." *Journal of Child Psycholgy & Psychiatry* 49:359–375.

Friedlander, K. 1947. *The Psychoanalytic Approach to Juvenile Delinquency.* London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.
Friedman, A. 1993. *Spider's Web: The Secret History of How the White House Illegally Armed Iraq.* New York: Bantam.
Friedrichs, D. 1999. "Postmodernism, Postmodernity, and Postmodern Criminology." In J. Fuller & E. Hickey (eds.), *Controversial Issues in Criminology.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
———. 2007. *Trusted Criminals: White Collar Crime in Contemporary Society.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Friess, S. 1999. "Behind Closed Doors: Domestic Violence." In C. Albers (ed.), *Sociology of Families Readings.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Pine Forge.
Fukurai, H., E. Butler, & R. Krooth. 1993. *Race and the Jury: Racial Disenfranchisement and the Search for Justice.* New York: Plenum.
Fuller, J. 1998. *Criminal Justice: A Peacemaking Perspective.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Fyfe, J. 1981. "Who Shoots? A Look at Officer Race and Police Shooting." *Journal of Police Science & Administration* 9:367–382.
———. 1982. "Blind Justice: Police Shootings in Memphis." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 73:707–722.
———. 1988. "Police Use of Deadly Force: Research and Reform." *Justice Quarterly* 5:165–205.
Gabor, T., et al. 1987. *Armed Robbery: Cops, Robbers, and Victims.* Springfield, IL: Charles Thomas.
Gaes, G., T. Flanagan, L. Motiuk, & L. Stewart. 1999. "Adult Correctional Treatment." In M. Tonry & J. Petersilia (eds.), *Prisons.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Gaines, D. 1990. *Teenage Wasteland: Suburbia's Dead End Kids.* New York: HarperCollins.
Gaines, L., & V. Kappeler. 2005. *Policing in America.* Cincinnati: Anderson.
Gaines, P. 1993. "Tough Boyz and Trouble." In M. Golden (ed.), *Wild Women Don't Wear No Blues.* New York: Anchor.
Garfinkel, S. 2000. "Privacy and the New Technology." *Nation,* Feb. 28:11–15.
Garner, J., & C. Maxwell. 1999. "Measuring the Amount of Force Used By and Against the Police in Six Jurisdictions." In *Use of Force by Police.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Garrow, D. 1981. *The FBI and Martin Luther King, Jr.* New York: Penguin.
Gecas, V. 1989. "The Social Psychology of Self-Efficacy." *Annual Review of Sociology* 15:291–316.
Geerken, M., & J. Hayes. 1993. "Probation and Parole: Public Risk and the Future of Incarceration Alternatives." *Criminology* 31:549–564.
Gegax, T., & L. Clemetson. 1998. "The Abortion Wars Come Home." *Newsweek,* Nov. 9:34–35.
Geis, G. 1978. "The Heavy Electrical Equipment Antitrust Cases: Price-Fixing Techniques and Rationalizations." In M. Ermann & R. Lundman (eds.), *Corporate and Governmental Deviance.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Gelles, R. 1987. *Family Violence.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
George, T. 2000. "N.Y. Verdict Stirs Up Emotions." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Feb. 26:A2.
Gerber, J., & J. Short 1986. "Publicity and Control of Corporate Behavior: The Case of Infant Formula." *Deviant Behavior* 7:195–216.

Gerth, H., & C. Mills (eds.). 1946. *From Max Weber: Essays in Sociology.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Gibbons, D. 1999. "Review Essay: Changing Lawbreakers—What Have We Learned Since the 1960s?" *Crime & Delinquency* 45:272–293.
Gibbs, J. 1996. *Race and Justice: Rodney King and O.J. Simpson in a House Divided.* San Francisco: Josey-Bass.
Gibbs, N. 1993. "Til Death Do Us Part." *Time,* Jan. 18:38–45.
Giddens, A. 1981. *The Constitution of Society: Outline of the Theory of Structuration.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Gillespie, L. 2000. *Dancehall Ladies: Executed Women in the Twentieth Century.* Lanham: University Press of America.
Gillespie, M. 1993. "What's Good for the Race." *Ms.,* Jan.–Feb.:80–81.
Ginzburg, R. 1988. *100 Years of Lynching.* Baltimore: Black Classic.
Gioia, D. 1996. "Why I Didn't Recognize Pinto Fire Hazards: How Organizational Scripts Channel Managers' Thoughts and Actions." In M. Ermann & R. Lundman (eds.), *Corporate and Governmental Deviance.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Giordano, P. 1978. "Girls, Guys, and Gangs: The Changing Social Context of Female Delinquency." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 69:126–132.
Giordano, P., & S. Cernkovich. 1979. "On Complicating the Relationship Between Liberation and Delinquency." *Social Problems* 26:467–481.
Giordano, P., S. Cernkovich, & D. Holland. 2003. "Changes in Friendship Relations over the Life Course: Implications for the Desistance from Crime." *Criminology* 41:293–327.
Giordano, P., S. Cernkovich, & M. Pugh. 1986. "Friendships and Delinquency." *American Journal of Sociology* 91:1170–1202.
Giordano, P., M. Longmore, R. Schroeder, & P. Seffrin. 2008. "A Life-Course Perspective on Spirituality and Desistance from Crime." *Criminology* 46:99–131.
Giraldi, P. 2005. "Forging the Case for War." *American Conservative,* Nov. 21. www.amconmag.com.
Glaser, D. 1969. *The Effectiveness of a Prison and Parole System.* Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill.
———. 1997. *Profitable Penalties: How to Cut Both Crime Rates and Costs.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Pine Forge.
Glaze, L., & T. Bonczar. 2007. *Probation and Parole in the United States, 2006.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Glick, R., & V. Neto. 1977. *National Survey of Women's Correctional Programs.* Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office.
Glueck, S., & E. Glueck. 1950. *Unraveling Juvenile Delinquency.* New York: Commonwealth Fund.
———. 1968. *Delinquents and Nondelinquents in Perspective.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
Goddard, H. 1912. *The Kallikak Family: A Study in the Heredity of Feeblemindedness.* New York: Macmillan.
Godfrey, M., & V. Schiraldi. 1995. *How Homicide Rates Have Been Affected by California's Death Penalty.* San Francisco: Center on Juvenile and Criminal Justice.
Goetting, A. 1999. *Life Stories of Women Who Left Abusive Men.* New York: Columbia University Press.

Gold, M. 2000. "The Progress of Women in Policing." *Law & Order* 48:159–161.
Goldbaum, E. 2000. "Students Tackle Hickory Woods Issue." *University of Buffalo Reporter,* Mar. 30. www.buffalo.edu.
Goldberg, M. 2007. *Kingdom Coming: The Rise of Christian Nationalism.* New York: Norton.
Goldstein, D. 2007. "Poison for Profit." *Nation,* July 30–Aug. 6:5–6.
Goldstein, J. 1986. *Aggression and Crimes of Violence.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Goldstein, J., et al. 1975. "Punitiveness in Response to Films Varying in Content: A Cross-National Field Study of Aggression." *European Journal of Social Psychology* 5:149–165.
Goldstein, P. 1979. *Prostitution and Drugs.* Lexington, MA: Heath.
Gomez, L. 1997. *Misconceiving Mothers.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Goode, E. 2005. *Drugs in American Society.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Goodwin, J. 1998. "Buried Alive: Afghan Women Under the Taliban." *On the Issues,* Summer:26–31, 57–58.
Gordon, D. 1978. "Capitalist Development and the History of American Cities." In W. Tabb & L. Sawyers (eds.), *Marxism and the Metropolis.* New York: Oxford University Press.
———. 1994a. "Drugspeak and the Clinton Administration: A Lost Opportunity for Drug Policy Reform." *Social Justice* 21:30–37.
———. 1994b. *The Return of the Dangerous Classes: Drug Prohibition and Policy Politics.* New York: Norton.
Gordon, D., R. Edwards, & M. Reich. 1982. *Segmented Work, Divided Workers: The Historical Transformation of Labor in the United States.* New York: Cambridge University Press.
Gordon, L. 1988. *Heroes of Their Own Lives: The Politics and History of Family Violence.* New York: Viking.
Gordon, M. 2002. "Investigator: Big Banks Helped Enron Hide True Financial State." *Wisconsin State Journal,* July 24:A4.
Gorenberg, G. 2004. "The Terror Trap." *American Prospect,* Jan.:13–15.
Goring, C. 1913. *The English Convict.* London: HMSO.
Gottfredson, G. 1987. "Peer Group Interventions to Reduce the Risk of Delinquent Behavior: A Selective Review and a New Evaluation." *Criminology* 25:671–714.
Gottfredson, M., & T. Hirschi. 1990. *A General Theory of Crime.* Stanford: Stanford University Press.
Gould, J., & S. Mastrofski. 2004. "Suspect Searches: Assessing Police Behavior Under the U.S. Constitution." *Criminology & Public Policy* 3:315–361.
Gouldner, A. 1970. *The Coming Crises of Western Sociology.* New York: Avon.
Graff, E. 2001. "The M/F Boxes." *Nation,* Dec. 17:20–24.
———. 2003. "In the Bedroom." *American Prospect,* Spring:A22–23.
Gramlich, J. 2008. "Supreme Court Upholds Lethal Injection." www.stateline.org.
Grant Bowman, C. 1992. "The Arrest Experiments: A Feminist Critique." *Journal of Criminal Justice* 83:201–208.
Grasmick, H., R. Bursik, & B. Arneklev. 1993. "Reduction in Drunk Driving as a Response to Increased Threats of Shame, Embarrassment, and Legal Sanctions." *Criminology* 31:41–67.
Grasmick, H., R. Bursik, & J. Cochran. 1991. "Render Unto Caesar What Is Caesar's: Religiosity and Taxpayers' Inclinations to Cheat." *Sociological Quarterly* 32:251–266.

Gray, M. 1998. *Drug Crazy: How We Got Into This Mess and How We Can Get Out.* New York: Random.
Gray, M., M. Fields, & S. Maxwell. 2001. "Examining Probation Violations: Who, What, and When." *Crime & Delinquency* 47:558–572.
Gray, W., & J. Scholz. 1993. "Does Regulatory Enforcement Work? A Panel Analysis of OSHA Enforcement." *Law & Society Review* 27:177–213.
Green, J. 1996. "Mothers in 'Incest Families': A Critique of Blame and Its Destructive Sequels." *Violence Against Women* 2:322–348.
Greenberg, D. 1977. "Delinquency and the Age Structure of Society." *Contemporary Crises* 1:189–223.
——— (ed.). 1993. *Crime and Capitalism: Readings in Marxist Criminology.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Greenberg, D., & D. Humphries. 1980. "The Dialectics of Crime Control." In D. Black (ed.), *Toward a General Theory of Control.* New York: Academic Press.
Greenberg, D., & V. West. 2001. "State Prison Populations and Their Growth, 1971–1999." *Criminology* 39:615–653.
Greene, J. 1999. "Zero Tolerance: A Case Study of Police Policies and Practices in New York City." *Crime & Delinquency* 45:171–187.
Greenhouse, L. 1999. "Court Says Cops Can't Take Media for Home Search." *Wisconsin State Journal,* May 25:A2.
———. 2004. "Court to Rule on Death Penalty Issue." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Jan. 27:A3.
———. 2007. "Judges Given More Power." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Dec. 11:A3.
Greenwald, R. 2004. *Uncovered: The Whole Truth About the Iraq War.* DVD. New York: Disinformation Company.
Greenwood, P., et al. 1996. *Diverting Children from a Life of Crime: Measuring Costs and Benefits.* Santa Monica: RAND.
Greider, K. 1995. "Crackpot Ideas." *Mother Jones,* July–Aug.:53–56.
Griffin, M. 1988. "The Legacy of Love Canal." *Sierra* 73:26–30.
Griffin, S. 1981. *Pornography and Silence: Culture's Revenge Against Nature.* New York: Harper and Row.
Griset, P., & S. Mahan. 2003. *Terrorism in Perspective.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Gross, S. 1996. "The Risks of Death: Why Erroneous Convictions Are Common in Capital Cases." *Buffalo Law Review* 44:469–500.
Grossman, J. 1994. "Women's Jury Service: Right of Citizenship or Privilege of Difference?" *Stanford Law Review* 46:1115–1160.
Gruhl, J., C. Spohn, & S. Welch. 1981. "Women as Policymakers: The Case of Trial Judges." *American Journal of Political Science* 25:308–322.
Grunwald, M. 2003. "Washed Away: Bush vs. the Missouri River." *New Republic,* Oct. 27:16–18.
Gupta, A. 2003. "Over 2,000 Police Killings in the US in Past Decade." Baltimore Independent Media Center, Oct. 21. www.baltimore.indymedia.org.
Gurr, T (ed.). 1989. *Violence in America.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
Gusfield, J. 1963. *Symbolic Crusade: Status Politics and the American Temperance Movement.* Urbana: University of Illinois Press.
Guy, K., & R. Huckabee. 1988. "Going Free on a Technicality: Another Look at the Effect of the Miranda Decision on the Criminal Justice Process." *Criminal Justice Research Bulletin* 4:2–3.
Gwartney, D. 1998. "The Moral High Ground." *Newsweek,* Apr. 10:61.
Haarr, R. 1997. "Patterns of Interaction in a Police Patrol Bureau: Race and Gender Barriers to Integration." *Justice Quarterly* 14:53–85.

Hacker, A. 1992. *Two Nations: Black and White, Separate, Hostile, Unequal.* New York: Ballantine.
Hadaway, C., P. Marier, & M. Chaves. 1993. "What the Polls Don't Show: A Closer Look at US Church Attendance." *American Sociological Review* 58:741–752.
Hagan, F. 1997. *Political Crime: Ideology and Criminality.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
———. 1998. *Introduction to Criminology.* Chicago: Nelson-Hall.
Hagan, J. 1989. *Structural Criminology.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.
———. 1992. "The Poverty of a Classless Criminology." *Criminology* 30:1–20.
———. 1993. "The Social Embeddedness of Crime and Unemployment." *Criminology* 31:465–491.
———. 1994. *Crime and Disrepute.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Pine Forge.
Hagan, J., & C. Albonetti. 1982. "Race, Class, and the Perception of Criminal Injustice in America." *American Journal of Sociology* 88:329–335.
Hagan, J., & J. Coleman. 2001. "Returning Captives of the American War on Drugs: Issues of Community and Family Reentry." *Crime & Delinquency* 47:352–367.
Hagan, J., G. Hefler, G. Classen, K. Boehnke, & H. Merkens. 1998. "Subterranean Sources of Subcultural Delinquency Beyond the American Dream." *Criminology* 36:309–339.
Hagan, J., R. Levi, & R. Dinovitzer. 2008. "The Symbolic Violence of the Crime-Immigration Nexus: Migrant Mythologies in the Americas." *Criminology & Public Policy* 7:95–112.
Hagan, J., & B. McCarthy. 1997. *Mean Streets: Youth Crime and Homelessness.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
Hagan, J., & A. Palloni. 1998. "Immigration and Crime in the United States." In J. Smith & B. Edmonston (eds.), *The Immigration Debate.* Washington, DC: National Academy Press.
———. 1999. "Sociological Criminology and the Mythology of Hispanic Immigration and Crime." *Social Problems* 46:617–632.
Hagan, J., & S. Phillips. 2008. "Border Blunders: The Unanticipated Human and Economic Costs of the U.S. Approach to Immigration Control, 1986–2007." *Criminology & Public Policy* 7:83–94.
Hagan, J., W. Rymond-Richmond, & C. Gallagher. 2005. "The Criminology of Genocide: The Death and Rape of Darfur." *Criminology* 43:525–561.
Hagedorn, J. 1988. *People and Folks: Gangs, Crime, and the Underclass in a Rustbelt City.* Chicago: Lake View.
Hale, D., & S. Wyland. 1999. "Dragons and Dinosaurs: The Plight of Patrol Women." In L. Gaines & G. Cordner (eds.), *Policing Perspectives.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Halperin, M., J. Berman, R. Borosage, & C. Marwick. 1977. *The Lawless State: The Crimes of the US Intelligence Agencies.* New York: Penguin.
Hamlin, J. 1988. "The Misplaced Role of Rational Choice in Neutralization Theory." *Criminology* 26:425–438.
Hamm, M. 1993. *American Skinheads: The Criminology and Control of Hate Crimes.* Westport: Praeger.
Hammett, T., P. Harmon, & L. Maruschak. 1999. *HIV/AIDS, STD, and TB in Correctional Facilities.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Hammond, N. 1986. "Lesbian Victims and the Reluctance to Identify Abuse." In K. Lobel (ed.), *Naming the Violence.* Seattle: Seal.
Harer, M., & D. Steffensmeier. 1992. "The Differing Effects of Economic Inequality on Black and White Rates of Violence." *Social Forces* 70:1035–1054.

Harland, A. 1983. "One Hundred Years of Restitution: An International Review and Prospectus for Research." *Victimology* 8:190–202.
Harlow, C. 2000. *Defense Counsel in Criminal Cases.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Harmon, P., & J. Check. 1989. *The Role of Pornography in Woman Abuse.* Toronto: La Marsh Research Programme on Violence and Conflict Resolution, York University Press.
Harring, S. 1993. "Policing a Class Society: The Expansion of the Urban Police in the Late Nineteenth and Early Twentieth Centuries." In D. Greenberg (ed.), *Crime and Capitalism.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Harring, S., & L. McMullin. 1975. "The Buffalo Police, 1872–1900: Labor Unrest, Political Power and the Creation of the Police Institution." *Crime & Social Justice* 8:5–14.
Harris, D. 2003. "The Reality of Racial Disparity in Criminal Justice: The Significance of Data Collection." *Law & Contemporary Problems* 66:71–98.
Harris, L., & L. Paltrow. 2003. "The Status of Pregnant Women and Fetuses in US Criminal Law." *Journal of the American Medical Association* 289:1697–1699.
Harris, M. 1988. *Cholas: Latino Girls and Gangs.* New York: AMS Press.
———. 1997. "When Mothers Do Time." *Hope,* Sept.–Oct.:52–59.
Harrison, L. 2001. "The Revolving Prior Door for Drug-Involved Offenders: Challenges and Opportunities." *Crime & Delinquency* 47:462–484.
Hart, B. 1996. "Preface." In K. Lobel (ed.), *Naming the Violence.* Seattle: Seal.
Hartjen, C. 1974. *Crime and Criminalization.* New York: Praeger.
Hartnagel, T., J. Teevan, & J. McIntyre. 1975. "Television Violence and Violent Behavior." *Social Forces* 54:341–351.
Harvey, W. 1986. "Homicide Among Young Black Adults: Life in the Subculture of Exasperation." In D. Hawkins (eds.), *Homicide Among Black Americans.* Lanham: University Press of America.
Hathaway, S., & E. Monachesi. 1963. *Adolescent Personality and Behavior.* Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.
Hay, D., et al. 1975. *Albion's Fatal Tree: Crime and Society in Eighteenth Century England.* London: Allen Lane.
Hayden, T. 2004. *Street Wars: Gangs and the Future of Violence.* New York: New Press.
Hayes, P. 1998. "Station House Society: Joking and Police Subculture." Paper presented at the conference of the Academy of Criminal Justice Sciences, Albuquerque.
Hays, T. 1999. "Jury Puts Blame on Several Gun Companies." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Feb. 12:A3.
———. 2009. "Trustee: Some Madoff Stock Trades Were Fiction." *Associated Press,* Dec. 20. www.businessweek.com.
Hazelwood, R., & J. Harpold. 1986. "Rape: The Dangers of Providing Confrontational Advice." *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin,* June:1–5.
Healy, W., & A. Bronner. 1936. *New Light on Delinquency and Its Treatment.* New Haven: Yale University Press.
Heaney, G. 1991. "The Reality of Guidelines Sentencing: No End to Disparity." *American Criminal Law Review* 28:161–232.
Heise, L. 1989. "Crimes of Gender." *World Watch,* Mar.–Apr.:12–21.
Helfand, J. 1987. "Silence Again." In F. Delacoste & P. Alexander (eds.), *Sex Work.* Pittsburgh: Cleis.
Helmer, J. 1975. *Drugs and Minority Oppression.* New York: Seabury.
Henry, S., & D. Milovanovic. 1994. "The Constitution of Constitutive Criminology:

A Postmodern Approach to Criminological Theory." In D. Nelken (ed.), *The Futures of Criminology.* London: Sage.
———. 1996. *Constitutive Criminology: Beyond Postmodernism.* London: Sage.
Hepburn, J. 1978. "Race and the Decision to Arrest: An Analysis of Warrants Issued." *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency* 15:54–73.
Hepburn, J., & A. Harvey. 2007. "The Effect of Legal Sanction on Program Retention and Completion: Is That Why They Stay in Drug Court." *Crime & Delinquency* 53:255–280.
Herbert, B. 2008. "Now's the Time to Confront Misogyny." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Jan. 19:A8.
Herbert, S. 1998. "Police Subculture Reconsidered." *Criminology* 36:343–369.
Herman, J. 1981. *Father-Daughter Incest.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
———. 1988. "Considering Sex Offenders: A Model of Addiction." *Signs* 13:695–724.
———. 1992. *Trauma and Recovery.* New York: Basic.
Herrnstein, R. 1995. "Criminogenic Traits." In J. Wilson & J. Petersilia (eds.), *Crime.* San Francisco: Institute for Contemporary Studies.
Herrnstein, R., & C. Murray. 1994. *The Bell Curve: Intelligence and Class Structure in American Life.* New York: Free Press.
Hersh, S. 2004. *Chain of Command: The Road from 9/11 to Abu Ghraib.* New York: HarperCollins.
Heschel, A. 1962. *The Prophets.* Vol. 1. New York: Harper and Row.
Heumann, M. 1978. *Plea Bargaining: The Experience of Prosecutors, Judges, and Defense Attorneys.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Hickey, E. 1991. *Serial Murderers and Their Victims.* Pacific Grove, CA: Brooks/Cole.
Hickman, M., & B. Reaves. 2003. *Local Police Departments 2000.* Washington, DC: Bureau of Justice Statistics.
Hill, A. 1997. "Moon's Paradox." In E. Cose (ed.), *The Darden Dilemma.* New York: HarperPerennial.
Hill, G., & E. Crawford. 1990. "Women, Race, and Crime." *Criminology* 28:601–626.
Hindelang, M. 1981. "Variations in Sex-Race-Age-Specific Incidence Rates of Offending." *American Sociological Review* 46:461–474.
Hindelang, M., T. Hirschi, & J. Weis. 1978. "Correlates of Delinquency: The Illusion of Discrepancy Between Self-Report and Official Measures." *American Sociological Review* 44:995–1014.
———. 1981. *Measuring Delinquency.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
Hirschel, J., & I. Hutchison. 1992. "Female Spouse Abuse and the Police Response: The Charlotte, North Carolina, Experiment." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 83:73–119.
Hirschi, T. 1969. *Causes of Delinquency.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Hirschi, T., & M. Hindelang. 1977. "Intelligence and Delinquency: A Revisionist Critique." *American Sociological Review* 43:571–587.
Hirschi, T., & R. Stark. 1969. "Hellfire and Delinquency." *Social Problems* 17:202–213.
History of Women in Policing. 2003. www.womenandpolicing.org.
Hitchens, C. 1999. *No One Left to Lie To: The Values of the Worst Family.* New York: Verso.
Hobsbawm, E. 1959. *Primitive Rebels: Studies in Archaic Forms of Social Movements in the Nineteenth and Twentieth Centuries.* New York: Norton.

Hochstetler, A., & N. Shover. 1997. "Street Crime, Labor Surplus, and Criminal Punishment, 1980–1990." *Social Problems* 44:358–368.
Hoffman, B. 1993. "Terrorism in the United States: Recent Trends and Future Prospects." In B. Schechterman & M. Slann (eds.), *Violence and Terrorism.* Guilford, CT: Dushkin.
Hoffman, M. 1997. "Fatal Denial? The Tragic Case of Amy Grossberg and Brian Peterson." *On the Issues* 6:3–5.
Hofstader, R. 1959. *Social Darwinism in American Social Thought.* Boston: Beacon.
Holdaway, S. 1997. "Some Recent Approaches to the Study of Race in Criminological Research." *British Journal of Criminology* 37:383–400.
Holland, J. 2000. "Health Groups Directly Link Media to Child Violence." *Wisconsin State Journal,* July 7:A1, A3.
Hollinger, R., & J. Clark. 1983. *Theft by Employees.* Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.
Holloway, W. 1981. "'I Just Wanted to Kill a Woman': The Ripper and Male Sexuality." *Feminist Review* 9:33–40.
Holmes, M., et al. 1993. "Judges' Ethnicity and Minority Sentencing: Evidence Concerning Hispanics." *Social Science Quarterly* 74:496–506.
Holmlund, C. 1994. "A Decade of Deadly Dolls: Hollywood and the Woman Killer." In H. Birch (ed.), *Moving Targets.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Holtfreter, K. 2005. "Is Occupational Fraud 'Typical' White-Collar Crime? A Comparison of Individual and Organizational Characteristics." *Journal of Criminal Justice* 33:353–365.
Holtzworth-Munroe, A., S. Beatty, & K. Anglin. 1995. "The Assessment and Treatment of Marital Violence." In A. Gurman & N. Jacobson (eds.), *Clinical Handbook of Couple Therapy.* New York: Guilford.
Honan, E., & D. Wilchins. 2008. "Bernard Madoff Arrested Over $50 Billlion Fraud." *Yahoo! News,* Dec. 12. www.news.yahoo.com.
Honey, M. 1995. "Pesticides: Nowhere to Hide." *Ms.,* July–Aug.:16–24.
Horney, J. 1978. "Menstrual Cycles and Criminal Responsibility." *Law & Human Behavior* 2:25–36.
Horney, J., D. Osgood, & I. Marshall. 1995. "Criminal Careers in the Short-Term: Intra-Individual Variability in Crime and Its Relation to Local Life Circumstances." *American Sociological Review* 60:655–673.
Horowitz, I. 1997. *Taking Lives: Genocide and State Power.* New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.
Horowitz, R. 1987. "Community Tolerance of Gang Violence." *Social Problems* 34:437–450.
Howell, J. 1996. "Juvenile Transfers to the Criminal Justice System: State of the Art." *Law & Policy* 18:17–60.
Hubbard, R. 1995. *Profitable Promises: Essays on Women, Science, and Health.* Monroe, MN: Common Courage.
Hubbs, K., & D. Klinger. 2004. *Impact Munitions Data Base of Use and Effect.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Huber, T. 2007. "Mining Reforms Not in Effect." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Aug. 8:A3.
Huesmann, L., & L. Eron (eds.). 1986. *Television and the Aggressive Child: A Cross-National Comparison.* Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum.
Huff, C. 1993. "Gangs in the United States." In A. Goldstein & C. Huff (eds.), *The Gang Intervention Handbook.* Champaign, IL: Research Press.

Huff, C., A. Rattner, & E. Sagarin. 1996. *Convicted But Innocent: Wrongful Conviction and Public Policy.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Huff-Corzine, L., J. Corzine, & D. Moore. 1986. "Southern Exposure: Deciphering the South's Influence on Homicide Rates." *Social Forces* 64:906–924.
Huizinga, D., & D. Elliott. 1987. "Juvenile Offenders: Prevalence, Offender Incidence, and Arrest Rates by Race." *Crime & Delinquency* 33:206–233.
Hull, E. 2006. *The Disenfranchisement of Ex-Felons.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Human Rights Campaign. 2007. "Don't Ask, Don't Tell." www.hrc.org.
Human Rights Watch Women's Rights Project. 1996. *All Too Familiar: Sexual Abuse of Women in US State Prisons.* New York.
Humphries, D. 1998. "Crack Mothers at Six: Prime-Time News, Crack/Cocaine, and Women." *Violence Against Women* 4:45–61.
Hunt, J., & P. Manning. 1991. "The Social Context of Police Lying." *Symbolic Interaction* 14:51–70.
Hunt, G., S. Riegel, T. Morales, & D. Waldorf. 1993. "Changes in Prison Culture: Prison Gangs and the Case of the 'Pepsi Generation.'" *Social Problems* 40:398–409.
Hutcheson, R. 2007. "Bush Keeps Libby Out of Prison." *Wisconsin State Journal,* July 3:A1, A5.
Hutchinson, E. 1996. *Beyond O.J.: Race, Sex, and Class Lessons for America.* Los Angeles: Middle Passage.
Ianni, F., & E. Reuss-Ianni (eds.). 1976. *The Crime Society: Organized Crime and Corruption in America.* New York: New American Library.
Inciardi, J. 1996. *Criminal Justice.* Fort Worth: Harcourt.
Inciardi, J., et al. 1997. "An Effective Model of Prison-Based Treatment for Drug-Involved Offenders." *Journal of Drug Issues* 27:261–278.
Inciardi, J., R. Horowitz, and A. Pottieger. 1993. *Street Kids, Street Drugs, Street Crime: An Examination of Drug Use and Serious Delinquency in Miami.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Independent Commission on the Los Angeles Police Department. 1991. *Report of the Independent Commission on the Los Angeles Police Department.* Los Angeles.
Inequality.org. 2008. "By the Numbers." www.inequality.org.
Institute for the Study of Labor and Economic Crisis. 1982. *The Iron Fist and the Velvet Glove: An Analysis of the US Police.* San Francisco: Synthesis.
International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia. 1999. "Fact Sheet." United Nations. www.un.org.
Inverarity, J., P. Lauderdale, & B. Feld. 1983. *Law and Society: Sociological Perspectives on Criminal Law.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Ireland, D. 1998. "The Right Plays the Gay Card." *Nation,* Sept. 7:21–22, 24.
Irons, P. 1988. *The Courage of Their Convictions: Sixteen Americans Who Fought Their Way to the Supreme Court.* New York: Penguin.
Irvine, M. 2006. "School Killings Not the Worst Picture." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Oct. 15:A5.
Irwin, J. 1980. *Prisons in Turmoil.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Isikoff, M., & D. Corn. 2006. *Hubris: The Inside Story of Spin, Scandal, and the Selling of the Iraq War.* New York: Crown.
Isikoff, M., & D. Klaidman. 2003. "Ashcroft's Campaign to Shore Up the Patriot Act." *Newsweek,* Aug. 26:6.
Island, D., & P. Letellier. 1991. *Men Who Beat the Men Who Love Them.* New York: Harrington Park.

Ivins, M., & L. Dubose. 2003. *Bushwhacked: Life in George W. Bush's America.* New York: Random.
Jackson, B. 1988. *Honest Graft: Big Money and the American Political Process.* New York: Knopf.
———. 1990. "The Savings and Loan Crisis." Cable News Network documentary.
Jackson, D. 2002. "Executive Robber Barons Have Left Scorched Earth in Their Wake." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Sept. 1:F3.
Jackson, P. 1985. "Ethnicity, Region, and Public Fiscal Commitment to Policing." *Justice Quarterly* 2:167–195.
Jackson, P., & L. Carroll. 1981. "Race and the War on Crime: The Sociopolitical Determinants of Municipal Police Expenditures in Ninety Non-Southern US Cities." *American Sociological Review* 46:290–305.
Jackson, S. 1978. "The Social Context of Rape: Sexual Scripts and Motivation." *Women's Studies International Quarterly* 1:27–38.
Jacobs, D., & R. Helms. 1996. "Toward a Political Model of Incarceration: A Time-Series Examination of Multiple Explanations for Prison Admission Rates." *American Journal of Sociology* 102:323–357.
Jacobs, D., & R. O'Brien. 1998. "The Determinants of Deadly Force: A Structural Analysis of Police Violence." *American Journal of Sociology* 103:837–862.
Jacobs, D., & R. Wright. 1999. "Stick-Up, Street Culture, and Offender Motivation." *Criminology* 37:149–173.
Jacobs, J. 1977. *Stateville: The Penitentiary in Mass Society.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
———. 1990. "Reassessing Mother Blame in Incest." *Signs* 15:500–514.
Jacobs, J., & K. Potter. 1998. *Hate Crimes: Criminal Law and Identity Politics.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Jacobs, J., & H. Retsky. 1981. "Prison Guard." In R. Ross (ed.), *Prison Guard/Correctional Officers.* Toronto: Butterworth.
James, J., & J. Meyerding. 1977. "Early Sexual Experiences as a Factor in Prostitution." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 77:31–42.
Jang, S., & B. Johnson. 2001. "Neighborhood Disorder, Individual Religiosity, and Adolescent Use of Illicit Drugs: A Test of Multilevel Hypotheses." *Criminology* 39:109–141.
Jang, S., & T. Thornberry. 1998. "Self-Esteem, Delinquent Peers, and Delinquency: A Test of the Self-Enhancement Thesis." *American Sociological Review* 63:586–598.
Janofsky, M. 2003. "Man Who Shot Reagan Allowed to Visit Parents Unsupervised." *New York Times,* Dec. 18. www.nytimes.com.
Janus, M., A. McCormack, A. Burgess, & C. Hartman. 1987. *Adolescent Runaways: Causes and Consequences.* Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.
Jargowsky, P., & Y. Park. 2009. "Cause or Consequence? Suburbanization and Crime in U.S. Metropolitan Areas." *Crime & Delinquency* 55:28–50.
Jaspin, E., & S. Montgomery. 1998. "Review Uncovers Thousands of Unsafe Meat Shipments." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Jan. 18:A7.
Jenkins, P. 1994. *Using Murder: The Social Construction of Serial Homicide.* New York: de Gruyer.
Jenness, V. 1999. "Managing Differences and Making Legislation: Social Movements and the Racialization, Sexualization, and Gendering of Federal Hate Crime Law in the US, 1985–1998." *Social Problems* 46:548–571.
Jennings, K. 1994. "Female Child Molesters: A Review of the Literature." In M. Elliott (ed.), *Female Sexual Abuse of Children.* New York: Guilford.

Jensen, G., & M. Karpos. 1993. "Managing Rape: Exploratory Research on the Behavior of Rape Statistics." *Criminology* 31:363–385.
Jensen, R. 1995. "Pornographic Lives." *Violence Against Women* 1:32–54.
Joe, K., & M. Chesney-Lind. 1995. "Just Every Mother's Angel: An Analysis of Gender and Ethnic Variations in Youth Gang Membership." *Gender & Society* 9:408–430.
Johnson, B., A. Golum, & J. Fagan. 1995. "Careers in Crack, Drug Use, Drug Distribution, and Nondrug Criminality." *Crime & Delinquency* 41:275–295.
Johnson, B., S. Jang, D. Larson, & S. Li. 2001. "Does Adolescent Religious Commitment Matter? A Reexamination of the Effects of Religiosity on Delinquency." *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency* 38:22–44.
Johnson, B., D. Larson, Spencer Li, & S. Jang. 2000. "Escaping from the Crime of Inner Cities: Church Attendance and Religious Salience Among Disadvantaged Youth." *Justice Quarterly* 17:377–391.
Johnson, L. 1989. "The Employed Black: The Dynamics of Work-Family Tension." *Review of Black Political Economy* 17:69–85.
Johnson, R. 2002. *Hard Time: Understanding and Reforming the Prison.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
———. 2003. *Whistle-Blowing: When It Works—and Why.* Boulder: Lynne Rienner.
Johnston, L., P. O'Malley, & J. Bachman. 1986. *Drug Use Among High School Students, College Students, and Other Young Adults: National Trends Through 1985.* Rockville, MD: National Institute on Drug Abuse.
Johnston, L., P. O'Malley, J. Bachman, & J. Schulenberg. 2007. *Monitoring the Future National Survey Results on Drug Use, 1975–2006.* Vol. 1. Bethesda, MD: National Institute on Drug Abuse.
Jones, A. 1980. *Women Who Kill.* New York: Fawcett.
———. 1994. *Next Time She'll Be Dead.* Boston: Beacon.
Jones, J. 1986. *Labor of Love, Labor of Sorrow: Black Women, Work, and the Family from Slavery to the Present.* New York: Vintage.
Jones, M. 2007. "When Harry Met Tony." *Newsweek,* June 11:57.
Jost, K. 1995. "The Jury System: The Issues." *CQ Researcher* 5:995–998.
Judis, J. 2002. "Strategic Disinformation." *American Prospect,* Sept.:12–13.
Juette, M., & R. Berger. 2008. *Wheelchair Warrior: Gangs, Disability, and Basketball.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Jurik, N. 1985. "An Officer and a Lady: Organizational Barriers to Women Working as Correctional Officers in Men's Prisons." *Social Problems* 32:375–388.
Jurik, N., & R. Winn. 1990. "Gender and Homicide: A Comparison of Men and Women Who Kill." *Violence and Victims* 5:227–242.
Justice, B., & R. Justice. 1979. *The Broken Taboo: Sex in the Family.* New York: Human Science.
Kalven, H., & H. Zeisel. 1971. *The American Jury.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Kaminer, W. 1999. "Taking Liberties: The New Assault on Freedom." *American Prospect,* Jan.–Feb.:33–40.
Kane, R. 2003. "Social Control in the Metropolis: A Community-Level Examination of the Minority Group–Threat Hypothesis." *Justice Quarterly* 20:265–295.
———. 2006. "On the Limits of Social Control: Structural Deterrence and the Policing of 'Suppressible' Crimes." *Justice Quarterly* 23:186–213.
Kaplan, H., S. Martin, & R. Johnson. 1986. "Self-Rejection and the Explanation of Deviance: Specification of the Structure Among Latent Constructs." *American Journal of Sociology* 92:384–411.

Kaplan, J. 1983. *The Hardest Drug: Heroin and Public Policy.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Kaplan, M. 2007. "Welcome to the Information Freak Show." In A. Szanto (ed.), *What Orwell Didn't Know.* New York: PublicAffairs.
Kappeler, V., M. Blumberg, & G. Potter. 2000. *The Mythology of Crime and Criminal Justice.* Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.
Kappeler, V., & G. Potter. 2005. *The Mythology of Crime and Criminal Justice.* Long Grove, IL: Waveland.
Karmen, A. 2004. *Crime Victims: An Introduction to Victimology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Kasinitz, P., & J. Rosenberg. 1996. "Missing the Connection: Social Isolation and Employment on the Brooklyn Waterfront." *Social Problems* 43:180–196.
Kassindja, F., & L. Bashir. 1998. *Do They Hear You When You Cry?* New York: Delacourte.
Katz, J. 1980. "The Social Movement Against White-Collar Crime." In E. Bittner & S. Messinger (eds.), *Criminology Review Yearbook.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
———. 1988. *Seductions of Crime: Moral and Sensual Attractions in Doing Evil.* New York: Basic.
Katz, J., & W. Chambliss. 1995. "Biology and Crime." In J. Sheley (ed.), *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Katz, S. 1988. "Quantity and Interpretation: Issues in the Comparative Historical Analysis of the Holocaust." *Holocaust & Genocide Studies* 4:127–148.
———. 1996. "The Uniqueness of the Holocaust: The Historical Dimension." In A. Rosenbaum (ed.), *Is the Holocaust Unique?* Boulder: Westview.
Kauffman, K. 1988. *Prison Officers and Their World.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
Keeney, B., & K. Heider. 1994. "Gender Differences in Serial Murderers." *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 9:383–398.
Kellman, L., & D. Cassata. 2006. "Tracking Every Phone Call." *Wisconsin State Journal,* May 12:A1, A5.
Kelly, L. 1987. "The Continuum of Sexual Violence." In J. Hanmer & M. Maynard (eds.), *Women, Violence, and Social Control.* Atlantic Highlands, NJ: Humanities International.
———. 1993. "Pornography and Child Abuse." In C. Itzin (eds.), *Pornography.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Kennedy, J. 2003. "Drug Wars in Black and White." *Law & Contemporary Problems* 66:153–181.
Kennedy, R. 2004. *Crimes Against Nature: How George W. Bush and His Corporate Pals Are Blundering the Country and Hijacking Our Democracy.* New York: HarperCollins.
Kerner Commission. 1968. *Report of the National Advisory Commission on Civil Disorders.* New York: Bantam.
Kerr, J. 2003. "Envoy: Bush Manipulated Findings." *Wisconsin State Journal,* July 7:A9.
Kessler, S. 1998. *Lessons from the Intersexed.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.
Killias, M., M. Aebi, & D. Ribeaud. 2000. "Learning Through Controlled Experiments: Community Service and Heroin Prescription in Switzerland." *Crime & Delinquency* 46:233–251.
Kilpatrick, D., & M. Himelein. 1986. "Male Crime Victims, the Most Victimized, Often Neglected." *National Organization for Victim Assistance Newsletter* 10:5–7.

Kim, R. 1999. "The Truth About Hate Crimes Law." *Nation,* July 12:16.
———. 2003. "Queer Cheer." *Nation,* July 21–28:5–6.
Kimmel, M. (ed.). 1990. *Men Confront Pornography.* New York: Crown.
———. 2000. "Masculinity as Homophobia." In E. Disch (ed.), *Reconstructing Gender.* Mountain View, CA: Mayfield.
Kimmelman, J. 2000. "Just a Needle-Stick Away." *Nation,* Nov. 27:17, 19–20, 22.
King, H., & W. Chambliss. 1984. *Harry King: A Professional Thief's Journey.* New York: Wiley.
King, M. 1994. "Letter from Birmingham Jail." In J. Bonsignore et al. (eds.), *Before the Law.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin.
King, N. 1993. "Postconviction Review of Jury Discrimination: Measuring the Effects of Juror Race on Jury Decisions." *Michigan Law Review* 92:63–130.
Kinser, S. 2006. *Overthrow: America's Century of Regime Change from Hawaii to Iraq.* New York: Times Books.
Kiragu, K. 1995. "Female Genital Mutilation: A Reproductive Health Concern." *Population Reports Supplement* 41:25–30.
Kirkwood, C. 1993. *Leaving Abusive Partners.* London: Sage.
Kirschenbaum, G. 1991. "A Potential Landmark for Female Human Rights." *Ms.,* Sept.–Oct.:13.
Kissell, P., & P. Katsampes. 1980. "The Impact of Women Corrections Officers on the Functioning of Institutions Housing Male Inmates." *Journal of Offender Counseling Services & Rehabilitation* 4:213–231.
Kitsuse, J., & A. Cicourel. 1963. "A Note on the Uses of Official Statistics." *Social Problems* 11:131–139.
Kitwana, B. 2002. *The Hip Hop Generation: Young Blacks and the Crisis in African-American Culture.* New York: Basic.
Kleck, G., & T. Chiricos. 2002. "Unemployment and Property Crime: A Target-Specific Assessment of Opportunity and Motivation as Mediating Factors." *Criminology* 40:649–679.
Kleck, G., & M. Gertz. 1995. "Armed Resistance to Crime: The Prevalence and Nature of Self-Defense with a Gun." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 85:150–187.
Kleck, G., & S. Sayles. 1990. "Rape and Resistance." *Social Problems* 37:149–162.
Kleck, G., B. Sever, S. Li, & M. Gertz. 2005. "The Missing Link in Deterrence Research." *Criminology* 43:623–659.
Klein, D. 1973. "The Etiology of Female Crime: A Review of the Literature." *Issues in Criminology* 8:3–30.
Klein, H., & B. Chao. 1995. "Sexual Abuse During Childhood and Adolescence as Predictors of HIV-Related Sexual Risk During Adulthood Among Female Sexual Partners of Injection Drug Users." *Violence Against Women* 1:55–76.
Klein, M. 1971. *Street Gangs and Street Workers.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Klein, N. 2007. *The Shock Doctrine: The Rise of Disaster Capitalism.* New York: Metropolitan.
Klofas, J., & R. Weisheit. 1987. "Guilty but Mentally Ill: Reform of the Insanity Defense in Illinois." *Justice Quarterly* 4:39–50.
Knapp Commission. 1972. *Knapp Commission Report on Police Corruption.* New York: Braziller.
Knudsen, D. 1992. *Child Maltreatment.* Dix Hills, NY: General Hall.
Kocieniewski, D., & R. Hanley. 2000. "Racial Profiling Routine, New Jersey Finds." *New York Times,* Nov. 27. www.nytimes.com.

Komisar, L. 2001. "After Dirty Air, Dirty Money." *Nation,* June 18:16–19.
Konopka, G. 1966. *The Adolescent Girl in Conflict.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Koren, G., H. Shear, K. Graham, & T. Einarson. 1989. "Bias Against the Null Hypothesis: The Reproductive Hazards of Cocaine." *Lancet* 2:1440–1443.
Koss, M. 1988. "Hidden Rape: Sexual Aggression and Victimization in a National Sample of Students in Higher Education." In A. Burgess (ed.), *Rape and Sexual Assault II.* New York: Garland.
Koss, M., C. Gidycz, & N. Wisniewski. 1987. "The Scope of Rape: Incidence and Prevalence of Sexual Aggression in a National Sample of Higher Education Students." *Journal of Consulting & Clinical Psychology* 55:162–170.
Kovandzic, T., & T. Marvell. 2003. "Right-to-Carry Concealed Handguns and Violent Crime: Crime Control Through Gun Decontrol." *Criminology & Public Policy* 2:363–396.
Kposowa, A., & K. Breault. 1993. "Reassessing the Structural Covariates of US Homicide Rates: A County Level Study." *Sociological Focus* 26:27–46.
Krafka, C. 1985. "Sexually Explicit, Sexually Violent, and Violent Media: Effects of Multiple Naturalistic Exposures and Debriefing on Female Viewers." PhD diss., University of Wisconsin–Madison.
Kramer, J., & D. Steffensmeier. 1993. "Race and Imprisonment Decisions." *Sociological Quarterly* 34:357–376.
Kramer, R., & R. Michalowski. 1995. "The Iron Fist and the Velvet Tongue: Crime Control Policies in the Clinton Administration." *Social Justice* 22:87–100.
———. 2005. "War, Aggression, and State Crime: A Criminological Analysis of the Invasion and Occupation of Iraq." *British Journal of Criminology* 45:446–469.
——— (eds.). 2006. *State Corporate Crime: Wrong Doing at the Intersection of Business and Government.* Piscataway, NJ: Rutgers University Press.
Krane, J. 2003. "Experts Worried About Power Grid Hackers." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Sept. 12:D10.
———. 2006. "Massive Graft and Waste in Iraq." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Jan. 10:A1, A4.
Kraska, P. 1990. "The Unmentionable Alternative: The Need for, and the Argument against, the Criminalization of Drugs." In R. Weisheit (eds.), *Drugs, Crime, and the Criminal Justice System.* Cincinnati: Anderson.
Kraska, P., & L. Cubellis. 1997. "Militarizing Mayberry and Beyond: Making Sense of American Paramilitary Policing." *Justice Quarterly* 14:607–629.
Kraska, P., & V. Kappeler. 1995. "To Serve and Pursue: Exploring Police Sexual Violence Against Women." *Justice Quarterly* 12:85–111.
———. 1997. "Militarizing American Police: The Rise and Normalization of Paramilitary Units." *Social Problems* 44:1–18.
Krebs, C. 2006. "Inmate Factors Associated with HIV Transmission in Prison." *Criminology & Public Policy* 5:113–136.
Krisberg, B. 2005. *Juvenile Justice: Redeeming Our Children.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Kritzer, H., & T. Uhlman. 1977. "Sisterhood in the Courtroom: Sex of Judge and Defendant in Criminal Case Disposition." *Social Science Journal* 14:77–88.
Krivo, L., & R. Peterson. 1996. "Extremely Disadvantaged Neighborhoods and Urban Crime." *Social Forces* 75:619–650.
Krohn, M. 2000. "Sources of Criminality: Control and Deterrence Theories." In J. Sheley (ed.), *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Krohn, M., & J. Massey. 1980. "Social Control and Delinquent Behavior: An

Examination of the Elements of the Social Bond." *Sociological Quarterly* 21:529–543.
Kroll, M. 1991. *Chattahoochee Judicial District: Buckle of the Death Belt.* Washington, DC: Death Penalty Information Center.
Krugman, P. 2004. "The Death of Horatio Alger." *Nation,* Jan. 5:16–17.
———. 2007. *The Conscience of a Liberal.* New York: Norton.
Kruttschnitt, C. 1982. "Respectable Women and the Law." *Sociological Quarterly* 23:221–234.
Kruttschnitt, C., R. Gartner, & A. Miller. 2000. "Doing Her Own Time? Women's Responses to Prison in the Context of the Old and the New Penology." *Criminology* 3:681–717.
Kruttschnitt, C., J. McLeod, & M. Dornfeld. 1986. "Family Violence, Television Viewing Habits, and Other Adolescent Experiences Related to Violent Criminal Behavior." *Criminology* 24:235–266.
Kubrin, C. 2005. "Gangstas, Thugs, and Hustlas: Identity and the Code of the Street in Rap Music." *Social Problems* 52:360–378.
Kubrin, C., & R. Weitzer. 2003. "Retaliatory Homicide: Concentrated Disadvantage and Neighborhood Culture." *Social Problems* 50:157–180.
Kuper, L. 1990. "The United States Ratifies the Genocide Convention." In F. Chalk & K. Jonassohn (eds.), *The History and Sociology of Genocide.* New Haven: Yale University Press.
Kurlantzick, J. 2006. "What Lies Beneath?" *American Prospect,* Nov.:26–31.
Kushner, T. 1998. "Matthew's Passion." *Nation,* Nov. 9:4–6.
Kusmer, K. 2008. "Behind Bars." *Wisconsin State Journal,* May 11:A8.
Kuttner, R. 2003a. "The Great Crash, Part II." *American Prospect,* June:47–49.
——— (ed.). 2003b. "Prison Break: Special Report on Criminal Justice Reform." *American Prospect,* Dec.:33–56.
LaFree, G. 1980. "The Effect of Sexual Stratification by Race on Official Reactions to Rape." *American Sociological Review* 45:842–854.
———. 1989. *Rape and Criminal Justice: The Social Construction of Sexual Assault.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
———. 1998. *Losing Legitimacy: Street Crime and the Decline of Social Institutions in America.* Boulder: Westview.
LaFree, G., & K. Drass. 1996. "The Effect of Changes in Intraracial Income Inequality and Educational Attainment on Changes in Arrest Rates for African Americans and Whites, 1957 to 1990." *American Sociological Review* 61:614–634.
Langan, P., & M. Cuniff. 1992. *Recidivism of Felons on Probation, 1986–1989.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Langer, E. 1990. "The American Neo-Nazi Movement Today." *Nation,* July 16:82–107.
Lantigua, J. 2001. "How the GOP Gamed the System in Florida." *Nation,* Apr. 30:11–17.
Laporte, S. 1998. "Download Your Local Sheriff." In M. Fisch (ed.), *Criminology 98/99.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Largen, P., & J. Brown. 1997. *Felony Sentences in State Courts, 1994.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Larkin, R. 2007. *Comprehending Columbine.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Larsen, P. 1991. "Racism 'Widespread' in LAPD: Panel Cites Comments on Patrol-Car Computers." *San Bernardino Sun,* July 10:A1.
Larson, R. 1980. *Bundy: The Deliberate Stranger.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.

Laub, J., & M. McDermott. 1985. "An Analysis of Serious Crime by Young Black Women." *Criminology* 23:81–98.
Laub, J., & R. Sampson. 1993. "Turning Points in the Life Course: Why Change Matters to the Study of Crime." *Criminology* 31:301–325.
Lauderback, D., J. Hansen, & D. Waldorf. 1992. "Sisters Are Doin' It for Themselves: A Black Female Gang in San Francisco." *Gang Journal* 1:57–72.
Lauritsen, J., & R. Shaum. 2004. "The Social Ecology of Violence Against Women." *Criminology* 42:323–357.
Lavoie, D. 2003. "$85 Million Payout Goes to Sex Abuse Victims." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Sept. 10:A3.
Lawrence, R. 1998. *School Crime and Juvenile Justice.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Lawson, C. 1993. "Mother-Son Sexual Abuse: Rare or Underreported?" *Child Abuse & Neglect* 17:261–269.
Lazare, D. 2007. "Stars and Bars." *Nation,* Aug. 27–Sept. 3:29–36.
Lea, J., & J. Young. 1984. *What Is to Be Done About Law and Order?* New York: Penguin.
Lederer, E. 2003. "War Crimes Tribunal Hires a Chief Prosecutor." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Apr. 22:A3.
Lederer, L. (ed.). 1980. *Take Back the Night: Women on Pornography.* New York: Morrow.
Lederer, L., & R. Delgado (eds.). 1995. *The Price We Pay: The Case Against Racist Speech, Hate Propaganda, and Pornography.* New York: Hill and Wang.
Lee, M., & M. Ermann. 1999. "Pinto 'Madness' as a Flawed Landmark Narrative: An Organizational and Network Analysis." *Social Problems* 46:30–47.
Lee, M., R. Martinez, & R. Rosenfeld. 2001. "Does Immigration Increase Homicide? Negative Evidence from Three Border Cities." *Sociological Quarterly* 42:559–580.
Leinen, S. 1984. *Black Police, White Society.* New York: New York University Press.
Leland, J. 1998. "Savior of the Streets." *Newsweek,* June 1:20–25.
Lemert, C. 1997. *Postmodernism Is Not What You Think.* Malden, MA: Blackwell.
Lemert, E. 1951. *Social Pathology.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Lens, S. 1973. *The Labor Wars: From the Molly Maguires to the Sitdowns.* New York: Doubleday.
Leonard, E. 1982. *Women, Crime, and Society: A Critique of Criminology Theory.* New York: Longman.
Leonard, W., & M. Weber. 1970. "Automakers and Dealers: A Study of Criminogenic Market Forces." *Law & Society Review* 4:407–424.
Leonhardt, D. 2000. "As Prison Labor Grows, So Does the Debate." *New York Times,* Mar. 19:A1.
Lerner, G. 1997. *Why History Matters.* New York: Oxford University Press.
———. 1998. *The Grimke Sisters from South Carolina: Pioneers for Women's Rights.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Lerner, M. 1996. *The Politics of Meaning.* Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley.
Lesieur, H., & J. Sheley. 1987. "Illegal Appended Enterprises: Selling the Lines." *Social Problems* 34:249–260.
Lester, D. 1992. "*Roe v. Wade* Was Followed by a Decrease in Neonatal Homicide." *Journal of American Medical Association* 207:3027.
Letellier, P. 1996. "Twin Epidemics: Domestic Violence and HIV Infection Among Gay and Bisexual Men." In C. Renzetti & C. Miley (eds.), *Violence in Gay and Lesbian Domestic Relationships.* New York: Harrington Park.

Levin, B. 2002. "Cyberhate: A Legal and Historical Analysis of Extremists' Use of Computer Networks in America." *American Behavioral Scientist* 45:958–988.
Levin, J., & J. McDevitt. 1999. "Hate Crimes." *Encyclopedia of Violence, Peace, and Conflict.* San Diego: Academic Press.
Levine, A. 2007. "Medifraud Amok." *American Prospect,* Oct.:48–52.
Levitt, S. 1999. "The Limited Role of Changing Age Structure in Explaining Aggregate Crime Rates." *Criminology* 37:581–597.
Levitt, S., & S. Dubner. 2005. *Freakonomics: A Rogue Economist Explores the Hidden Side of Everything.* New York: Morrow.
Levrant, S., F. Cullen, B. Fulton, & C. Thomas. 1999. "Reconsidering Restorative Justice: The Corruption of Benevolence Revisited?" *Crime & Delinquency* 45:3–27.
Lew, M. 1990. *Victims No Longer.* New York: Harper and Row.
Lewis, C. 1996. *The Buying of the President.* New York: Avon.
Lichtblau, E. 2003. "Some Fear FBI Is Back to Hooverism." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Nov. 23:A3.
Lilly, J., R. Ball, G. Curry, & J. McMullen. 1993. "Electronic Monitoring of the Drunk Driver: A Seven-Year Study of the Home Confinement Alternative." *Crime & Delinquency* 42:491–516.
Lingren, R., & N. Taub. 1993. *The Law of Sex Discrimination.* Minneapolis: West.
Liptak, A. 2008. "Incarceration Rate Hits Historic High." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Feb. 29:A6.
Lipton, D. 1996. "Prison-Based Therapeutic Communities: Their Success with Drug-Abusing Offenders." *National Institute of Justice Journal,* Feb.:12–30.
Lipton, D., R. Martinson, & J. Wilks. 1975. *The Effectiveness of Correctional Treatment: A Survey of Treatment Evaluation Studies.* New York: Praeger.
Lithwick, D. 2008. "Getting Away with Torture." *Newsweek,* May 5:17.
Lock, E., J. Timberlake, & T. Arcury. 2002. "Battle Fatigue: Is Public Support Waning for 'War'-Centered Drug Control Strategies?" *Crime & Delinquency* 48:380–398.
Lockwood, D. 1977. "Living in Protection." In H. Toch (ed.), *Living in Prison.* New York: Free Press.
Logan, J., & B. Stults. 1999. "Racial Differences in Exposure to Crime: The City and Suburbs of Cleveland in 1990." *Criminology* 37:251–276.
Lombardo, L. 1988. "Alleviating Inmate Stress: Contributions from Correctional Officers." In R. Johnson & H. Toch (eds.), *The Pains of Imprisonment.* Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.
Lombroso, C., & W. Ferrero. 1895. *The Female Offender.* London: T. Fisher Unwin.
Longshore, D., E. Chang, S. Hsieh, & N. Messina. 2004. "Self-Control and Social Bonds: A Combined Control Perspective on Deviance." *Crime & Delinquency* 50:542–564.
Lorber, J. 1997a. "Female Genital Mutilation: A Women's Rights/Cultural Conflict." *SWS Network News* 14:5–6.
———. 1997b. "'Night to His Day': The Social Construction of Gender." In L. Richardson et al. (eds.), *Feminist Frontiers.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Lord, E. 1995. "A Prison Superintendent's Perspective on Women in Prison." *Prison Journal* 75:257–269.
Lott, J. 1998. *More Guns, Less Crime: Understanding Crime and Gun Control Laws.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Lowney, K., & J. Best. 1995. "Stalking Strangers and Lovers: Changing Media Typifications of a New Crime Problem." In J. Best (ed.), *Typifying Contemporary Problems.* New York: de Gruyter.

Luckenbill, D. 1986. "Deviant Career Mobility: The Case of Male Prostitutes." *Social Problems* 33:283–296.
Lumb, R., & P. Friday. 1997. "Impact of Pepper Spray Availability on Police Office Use-of-Force Decisions." *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategy and Management* 20:136–148.
Lundman, R. 1980. *Police and Policing.* New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston.
———. 2001. *Prevention and Control of Juvenile Delinquency.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Lutiger, B., K. Graham, T. Einarson, & G. Koren. 1991. "Relationship Between Gestational Cocaine Use and Pregnancy Outcome: A Meta-Analysis." *Teratology* 44:405–414.
Lynch, M. 1996. "Class, Race, Gender, and Criminology: Structured Choices and the Life Course." In M. Schwartz & D. Milovanovic (eds.), *Race, Gender, and Class in Criminology.* New York: Garland.
Lynch, M., & A. Schuck. 2003. "Picasso as Criminologist: The Abstract Art of Racial Profiling." In M. Free (ed.), *Racial Issues in Criminal Justice.* Westport: Praeger.
Lyon, D. 2001. *Surveillance Society: Monitoring Everyday Life.* Buckingham: Open University Press.
Maas, P. 1973. *Serpico.* New York: Viking.
MacCoun, R., & P. Reuter. 1997. "Interpreting Dutch Cannabis Policy: Reasoning by Analogy in the Legalization Debate." *Science* 278:47–52.
———. 2001. *Drug War Heresies: Learning from Other Vices, Times, and Places.* New York: Cambridge University Press.
MacDonald, A. 1980. *The Turner Diaries.* Arlington, VA: National Alliance.
MacDonald, J. 2002. "The Effectiveness of Community Policing in Reducing Urban Violence." *Crime & Delinquency* 48:592–618.
MacKenzie, D., R. Brame, D. McDowall, & C. Souryal. 1995. "Boot Camp Prisons and Recidivism in Eight States." *Criminology* 33:327–357.
MacKenzie, D., & H. Donaldson. 1996. "Boot Camp for Women Offenders." *Criminal Justice Review* 21:21–43.
MacKenzie, D., & C. Souryal. 1995. "Inmates Attitude Change During Incarceration: A Comparison of Boot Camp with Traditional Prison." *Justice Quarterly* 112:325–353.
MacKinnon, C. 1983. "Feminism, Marxism, Method, and the State: Toward Feminist Jurisprudence." *Signs* 8:635–658.
———. 1986. "Pornography as Sex Discrimination." *Law & Inequality* 4:38–49.
Madigan, N. 2003. "Burning of Hummers a Message?" *Wisconsin State Journal,* Aug. 31:A3.
Madriz, E. 1997. "Images of Criminals and Victims: A Study of Women's Fear and Social Control." *Gender & Society* 11:342–356.
Maguigan, H. 1991. "Battered Women and Self-Defense: Myths and Misconceptions in Current Reform Proposals." *Pennsylvania Law Review* 140:379–486.
Maguin, E., & R. Loeber. 1996. "Academic Performance and Delinquency." In M. Tonry (ed.), *Crime and Justice.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Maguire, K., & A. Pastore. 2001. *Sourcebook of Criminal Justice Statistics.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Maher, L., & R. Curtis. 1992. "Women on the Edge of Crime: Crack Cocaine and the Changing Contexts of Street-Level Sex Work in New York City." *Crime, Law, & Social Change* 18:221–258.
Maher, L., & K. Daly. 1996. "Women in the Street-Level Drug Economy: Continuity or Change?" *Criminology* 34:465–491.

Mahoney, A., & C. Fenster. 1982. "Female Delinquents in a Suburban Court." In N. Rafter & E. Stanko (eds.), *Judge, Lawyer, Victim, Thief.* Boston: Northeastern University Press.
Malamuth, N. 1985. "The Mass Media and Aggression Against Women: Research Findings and Prevention." In A. Burgess (ed.), *Rape and Sexual Assault.* New York: Garland.
Malamuth, N., & E. Donnerstein (eds.). 1984. *Pornography and Sexual Aggression.* New York: Academic Press.
Mann, C. 1993. *Unequal Justice: A Question of Color.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.
———. 1996. *When Women Kill.* Albany: State University of New York Press.
Manning, P. 1999. "Semiotics and Justice: 'Justice,' Justice, and JUSTICE." In B. Arrigo (ed.), *Social Justice/Criminal Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Manza, J., & C. Uggen. 2005. *Locked Out: Felon Disenfranchisement and American Democracy.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Margolin, S., & J. Schor. 1990. *The End of the Golden Age.* Oxford: Clarendon.
Markowitz, F. 2006. "Psychiatric Hospital Capacity, Homelessness, and Crime and Arrest Rates." *Criminology* 44:45–72.
Marris, P., & M. Rein. 1973. *Dilemmas of Social Reform.* Chicago: Aldine.
Marshall, J., & L. Wheeler. 1996. *Street Soldier.* New York: Delta.
Martin, G. 2003. *Understanding Terrorism: Challenges, Perspectives, and Issues.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Martin, P., & R. Hummer. 1989. "Fraternities and Rape on Campus." *Gender & Society* 3:457–473.
Martin, S. 1980. "*Breaking and Entering": Policewomen on Patrol.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
———. 1994. "'Outsider Within' the Station House: The Impact of Race and Gender on Black Women Police." *Social Problems* 41:383–400.
———. 1995. "'A Cross-Burning Is Not Just an Arson': Police Social Construction of Hate Crimes in Baltimore." *Criminology* 33:303–326.
Martin, S., & N. Jurik. 1996. *Doing Justice, Doing Gender: Women in Law and Criminal Justice Occupations.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Martinez, R. 1996. "Latinos and Lethal Violence: The Impact of Poverty and Inequality." *Social Problems* 43:131–146.
Martinez, R., & A. Valenzuela (eds.). 2006. *Immigration and Crime: Race, Ethnicity, and Violence.* New York: New York University Press.
Martz, L. 1990. "A Dirty Drug Secret." *Newsweek,* Feb. 19:74, 77.
Marx, G. 1981. "Ironies of Social Control: Authorities as Contributors to Deviance Through Escalation, Non-Enforcement, and Covert Facilitation." *Social Problems* 28:221–246.
Massey, D., & N. Denton. 1993. *American Apartheid: Segregation and the Making of the Underclass.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
Masson, J. 1984. "Freud and the Seduction Theory." *Atlantic Monthly,* Feb.:33–60.
Matthews, N. 1989. "Surmounting a Legacy: The Expansion of Racial Diversity in a Local Anti-Rape Movement." *Gender & Society* 3:518–532.
Matthews, R., & J. Young (eds.). 1992. *Issues in Realist Criminology.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
Matza, D. 1964. *Delinquency and Drift.* New York: Wiley.
Matza, D., & G. Sykes. 1961. "Juvenile Delinquency and Subterranean Values." *American Sociological Review* 26:712–719.
Mauer, M. 1994. *Americans Behind Bars: The International Use of Incarceration, 1992–1993.* Washington, DC: Sentencing Project.

———. 1999. *Race to Incarcerate.* New York: New Press.
Mauer, M., & T. Huling. 1995. *Young Black Americans and the Criminal Justice System.* Washington, DC: Sentencing Project.
Maull, S. 2002. "Prosecutor Wants Convictions Tossed in Central Park Case." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Dec. 6:A1, A11.
Maxson, C. 2006. "Gang Members on the Move." In A. Egley et al. (eds.), *The Modern Gang Reader.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Maxwell, C., J. Garner, & J. Fagan. 2002. "The Preventive Effects of Arrest on Intimate Partner Violence: Research, Policy, and Theory." *Criminology & Public Policy* 2:51–80.
McCaffrey, S. 2003. "Detainees Faced Abuse." *Wisconsin State Journal,* June 3:A3.
McCaghy, C., T. Capron, & J. Jamison. 2003. *Deviant Behavior: Crime, Conflict, and Interest Groups.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
McCall, N. 1994. *Makes Me Wanna Holler: A Young Black Man in America.* New York: Vintage.
McCarthy, B., D. Felmlee, & J. Hagan. 2004. "Girl Friends Are Better: Gender, Friends, and Crime Among School and Street Youth." *Criminology* 42:805–835.
McCarthy, B., J. Hagan, & M. Martin. 2002. "In and Out of Harm's Way: Violent Victimization and the Social Capital of Street Families." *Criminology* 40:831–865.
McClam, E. 2003. "Judge Sets Date for Martha Stewart." *Wisconsin State Journal,* June 20:D10.
McCleary, R., B. Nienstedt, & J. Erven. 1982. "Uniform Crime Reports as Organizational Outcomes: Three Time Series Experiments." *Social Problems* 29:361–372.
McClellan, D. 1994. "Disparity in the Discipline of Male and Female Inmates in Texas Prisons." *Women & Criminal Justice* 5:71–97.
McConahay, S., & J. McConahay. 1977. "Sexual Permissiveness, Sex-Role Rigidity, and Violence Across Cultures." *Journal of Social Issues* 33:134–143.
McCorkle, R. 1992. "Personal Reactions to Violence in Prison." *Criminal Justice & Behavior* 19:160–173.
———. 1993. "Punish or Rehabilitate? Public Attitudes Toward Six Common Crimes." *Crime & Delinquency* 39:240–252.
———. 1995. "Correctional Boot Camps and Change in Attitude: Is All This Shouting Necessary?" *Justice Quarterly* 12:365–375.
McCorkle, R., & T. Miethe. 2002. *Panic: The Social Construction of the Street Gang Problem.* Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
McCormack, W. 2001. "Deconstructing the Election: Foucault, Derrida, and GOP Strategy." *Nation,* Mar. 26:25–34.
McCormick, A. 1977. "Rule Enforcement and Moral Indignation: Some Observations on the Effects of Criminal Antitrust Convictions upon Societal Reaction Processes." *Social Problems* 25:30–39.
McCormick, J. 1998. "The Wrongly Convicted." *Newsweek,* Nov. 9:64.
McCoy, A. 2003. *The Politics of Heroin: CIA Complicity in the Global Drug Trade.* Chicago: Lawrence Hill.
———. 2006. *A Question of Torture: CIA Interrogation—From the Cold War to the War on Terror.* New York: Metropolitan.
McDermott, J. 1979. *Rape Victimization in Twenty-six American Cities.* Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office.
McDowall, D., C. Loftin, & B. Wiersema. 1995. "Easing Concealed Firearms Laws:

Effects on Homicide in Three States." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 86:193–206.
McGahey, R. 1986. "Economic Conditions, Neighborhood Organization, and Urban Crime." In A. Reiss & M. Tonry (eds.), *Communities and Crime.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
McIntyre, L. 1987. *The Public Defender: The Practice of Law in the Shadows of Repute.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
McLean, B., & P. Elkind. 2004. *The Smartest Guys in the Room: The Amazing Rise and Scandalous Fall of Enron.* New York: Portfolio.
McNamara, R., & R. Burns. 2009. *Multiculturalism in the Criminal Justice System.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Mead, G. 1934. *Mind, Self, and Society.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Mears, B. 2003. "Supreme Court Upholds Long Sentences Under Three-Strikes-You're-Out Law," Mar. 5. www.cnn.com.
———. 2008. "Child Rapists Can't Be Executed: Supreme Court Rules," cnn.com, June 25. www.cnn.com.
Mears, D., & A. Bhati. 2006. "No Community Is an Island: The Effects of Resource Deprivation on Urban Violence in Spatially and Socially Proximate Communities." *Criminology* 44:509–547.
Medea, A., & K. Thompson. 1974. *Against Rape.* New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux.
Mednick, S., V. Pollock, & J. Volavka. 1982. "Biology and Violence." In M. Wolfgang & N. Weiner (eds.), *Criminal Violence.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
Meeks, K. 2000. *Driving While Black: Highways, Shopping Malls, Taxicabs, Sidewalks—How to Fight Back If You Are a Victim of Racial Profiling.* New York: Broadway.
Meier, R., & G. Geis. 1997. *Victimless Crime? Prostitution, Drugs, Homosexuality, Abortion.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Melekian, B. 1990. "Police and the Homeless." *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin* 59:1–7.
Melton, A. 2002. "Traditional and Contemporary Tribal Justice." In C. Mann & M. Zatz (eds.), *Images of Color, Images of Crime.* Los Angeles, Roxbury.
Melton, H. 2000. "Stalking: A Review of the Literature and Direction for the Future." *Criminal Justice Review* 25:246–262.
Menard, S., & B. Morse. 1984. "A Structuralist Critique of the IQ-Delinquency Hypothesis: Theory and Evidence." *American Journal of Sociology* 89:1347–1378.
Mendoza, M. 2006. "Military Recruiters in Sex Cases." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Aug. 21:A3.
Merlo, A. 1995. "Female Criminality in the 1990s." In A. Merlo & J. Pollock (eds.), *Women, Law, and Social Control.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Merlo, A., & J. Pollock (eds.). 1995. *Women, Law, and Social Control.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Merton, R. 1938. "Social Structure and Anomie." *American Sociological Review* 3:672–682.
———. 1964. "Anomie, Anomia, and Social Interaction." In M. Clinard (ed.), *Anomie and Deviant Behavior.* New York: Free Press.
———. 1968. *Social Theory and Social Structure.* New York: Free Press.
Merton, R., & A. Rossi. 1968. "Contributions to the Theory of Reference Group Behavior." In H. Hyman & E. Singer (eds.), *Readings in Reference Group Theory and Research.* New York: Free Press.

Messerschmidt, J. 1993. *Masculinities and Crime: Critique and Reconceptualization of Theory.* Lanham: Rowman and Littlefield.
———. 1995. "From Patriarchy to Gender: Feminist Theory, Criminology, and the Challenge of Diversity." In N. Rafter & F. Heidensohn (eds.), *International Feminist Perspectives in Criminology.* Buckingham: Open University Press.
———. 1997. *Crime as Structured Action: Gender, Race, Class, and Crime in the Making.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Messner, S. 1986. "Television Violence and Violent Crime: An Aggregate Analysis." *Social Problems* 33:218–235.
———. 1989. "Economic Discrimination and Homicide Rates: Further Evidence on the Cost of Inequality." *American Sociological Review* 54:597–611.
Messner, S., & R. Rosenfeld. 2001. *Crime and the American Dream.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Metraux, S., & D. Culhane. 2006. "Recent Incarceration History Among a Sheltered Homeless Population." *Crime & Delinquency* 52:504–517.
Michalowski, R. 1983. "Crime Control in the 1980s: A Progressive Agenda." *Crime & Social Justice* 19:13–23.
———. 1985. *Order, Law, and Crime.* New York: Random.
Michalowski, R., & S. Carlson. 1999. "Unemployment, Imprisonment, and Social Structures of Accumulation: Historical Contingency in the Rusche-Kirchheimer Hypothesis." *Criminology* 37:217–248.
Michalowski, R., & R. Kramer. 1987. "The Space Between Laws: The Problem of Corporate Crime in a Transnational Context." *Social Problems* 34:34–53.
Michaud, S., & H. Aynesworth. 1983. *The Only Living Witness.* New York: Liden.
Mieczkowski, T. 1994. "The Experiences of Women Who Sell Crack: Some Descriptive Data from the Detroit Crack Ethnography Project." *Journal of Drug Issues* 24:227–248.
Miethe, T., & R. McCorkle. 1998. *Crime Profiles: The Anatomy of Dangerous Persons, Places, and Situations.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Miethe, T., & C. Moore. 1986. "Racial Differences in Criminal Processing: The Consequences of Model Selection on Conclusions About Differential Treatment." *Sociological Quarterly* 27:217–237.
Mignon, S., & W. Holmes. 1995. "Police Response to Mandatory Arrest Laws." *Crime & Delinquency* 41:430–442.
Miller, A. (ed.). 2005. *What Went Wrong in Ohio: The Conyers Report on the 2004 Presidential Election.* Chicago: Academy Chicago.
Miller, E. 1986. *Street Woman: The Illegal Work of Underclass Women.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Miller, E., K. Romenesko, & L. Wondolkowski. 1993. "The United States." In N. Davis (ed.), *Prostitution.* Westport: Greenwood.
Miller, J. 1998. "Up It Up: Gender and the Accomplishment of Street Robbery." *Criminology* 36:37–65.
Miller, J., & R. Brunson. 2000. "Gender Dynamics in Youth Gangs: A Comparison of Males' and Females' Accounts." *Justice Quarterly* 17:419–448.
Miller, J., & D. Lynam. 2001. "Structural Models of Personality and Their Relation to Antisocial Behavior: A Meta-Analytic Review." *Criminology* 39:765–795.
Miller, K. 2000. "Prison Labor: Some Facts and Issues." Prison Talk. www.prisontalk.com.
Miller, M. 1974. "At Hard Labor: Rediscovering the Nineteenth Century Prison." *Issues in Criminology* 9:91–114.

———. 1974. *The Breaking of a President.* Vol. 4. City of Industry, CA: Therapy Productions.
———. 2005. *Fooled Again: How the Right Stole the 2004 Election and Why They'll Steal the Next One Too (Unless We Stop Them).* New York: Basic.
Miller, S. 1993. "Arrest Policies for Domestic Violence and Their Implications for Battered Women." In R. Muraskin & T. Alleman (eds.), *It's a Crime: Women and Justice.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Miller, W. 1973. "Ideology and Criminal Justice Policy: Some Current Issues." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 64:141–162.
———. 1980. "Gangs, Groups, and Serious Youth Crime." In D. Shichor & D. Kelly (eds.), *Critical Issues in Juvenile Delinquency.* Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.
Mills, C. 1959. *The Sociological Imagination.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Milwaukee Journal. 1994a. "Clinton Vows to Fight Repeal of Crime Bill." Dec. 21:A3.
———. 1994b. "The Crime Bill." Aug. 26:A3.
Minkowitz, D. 1999. "Love and Hate in Laramie." *Nation,* July 12.
Minor, W. 1984. "Neutralization as a Hardening Process: Considerations in the Modeling of Change." *Social Forces* 62:995–1019.
Mintz, M. 1985. *At Any Cost: Corporate Greed, Women, and the Dalkon Shield.* New York: Pantheon.
Moffitt, T., et al. 1998. "Whole Blood Serotonin Relates to Violence in an Epidemiological Study." *Biological Psychiatry* 43:446–457.
Mohai, P., & R. Saha. 2007. "Racial Inequality in the Distribution of Hazardous Waste: A National-Level Reassessment." *Social Problems* 54:343–370.
Mokhiber, R. 1988. *Corporate Crime and Violence: Big Business and the Abuse of Public Trust.* San Francisco: Sierra Club.
Monahan, J., & H. Steadman. 1983. "Crime and Mental Disorder: An Epidemiological Approach." In M. Tonry & N. Morris (eds.), *Crime and Justice.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Monitoring the Future. 2007. "Data Tables and Figures." www.monitoringthefuture.org.
Monto, M. 1998. "Holding Men Accountable for Prostitution." *Violence Against Women* 4:506–517.
Moon, M., J. Wright, F. Cullen, & J. Pealer. 2000. "Putting Kids to Death: Specifying Public Support for Juvenile Capital Punishment." *Justice Quarterly* 17:663–684.
Mooney, C. 2005. "Some Like It Hot." *Mother Jones,* May–June:36–49.
Moore, A. 1997. "Intimate Violence: Does Socioeconomic Status Matter?" In A. Cardarelli (ed.), *Violence Between Intimate Partners.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Moore, J. 1991. *Going Down to the Barrio.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Moore, J., & J. Hagedorn. 1996. "What Happens to Girls in the Gang?" In C. Huff (ed.), *Gangs in America.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Moore, J., & A. Mata. 1981. *Women and Heroin in Chicano Communities.* Los Angeles: Chicano Pinto Research Project.
Moore, J., D. Vigil, & R. Garcia. 1983. "Residence and Territoriality in Chicano Gangs." *Social Problems* 31:182–194.
Moore, M. 1995. "Public Health and Criminal Justice Approaches to Prevention." In M. Tonry & D. Farrington (eds.), *Building a Safer Society.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Morash, M., & M. Chesney-Lind. 1991. "A Reformulation and Partial Test of the Power Control Theory of Delinquency." *Justice Quarterly* 8:347–377.

Morash, M., & R. Haarr. 1995. "Gender, Workplace Problems, and Stress in Policing." *Justice Quarterly* 12:113–140.
Morash, M., & L. Rucker. 1990. "A Critical Look at the Idea of Boot Camps as a Correctional Reform." *Crime & Delinquency* 36:204–222.
Morgan, P. 1987. "Living on the Edge." In F. Delacoste & P. Alexander (eds.), *Sex Work.* Pittsburgh: Cleis.
Morgan, R., & G. Steinem. 1983. "The International Crime of Genital Mutilation." In L. Richardson & V. Taylor (eds.), *Feminist Frontiers.* Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley.
Morganthau, T. 1986. "Kids and Cocaine." *Newsweek,* Mar. 17:58–65.
Morris, A. 1987. *Women, Crime, and Criminal Justice.* Oxford: Blackwell.
Morris, A., & A. Wilczynski. 1994. "Rocking the Cradle." In H. Birch (ed.), *Moving Targets.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Morris, G., P. Wood, & R. Dunaway. 2006. "Self-Control, Native Traditionalism, and Native American Substance Use: Testing the Cultural Invariance of a General Theory of Crime." *Crime & Delinquency* 52:572–598.
Morris, N., & G. Hawkins. 1970. *The Honest Politician's Guide to Crime Control.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Moses, M. 1995. *Keeping Incarcerated Mothers and Their Daughters Together: Girl Scouts Beyond Bars.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Mosher, C., T. Miethe, & D. Phillips. 2002. *The Mismeasure of Crime.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Moss, K. 1990. "Legal Issues: Drug Testing of Postpartum Women and Newborns as the Basis for Civil and Criminal Proceedings." *Clearinghouse Review* 23:1406–1414.
Moyers, B. 1988. *The Secret Government: The Constitution in Crisis.* Cabin John, MD: Seven Locks.
———. 1990a. "Global Dumping Ground." Public Broadcasting Station documentary.
———. 1990b. "High Crimes and Misdemeanors." Public Broadcasting Station documentary.
———. 1991. "Circle of Recovery." Public Broadcasting Station documentary.
———. 2006. "Capitol Crimes." Public Broadcasting Station documentary.
Ms. 2002. "Female Genital Mutilation: Flash Forward." Spring:44.
———. 2003. "Global." Summer:23.
Musolf, G. 1993. "Some Recent Directions in Symbolic Interactionism." In L. Reynolds, *Interactionism.* Dix Hills, NY: General Hall.
Musto, D. 1987. *The American Disease: Origins of Narcotic Control.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Myers, D. 1997. "Racial Rioting in the 1960s: An Event History Analysis of Local Conditions." *American Sociological Review* 62:94–112.
Myers, M. 2000. "The Social World of America's Courts." In J. Sheley (ed.), *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Nader, R. 1965. *Unsafe at Any Speed: The Designed-In Dangers of the American Automobile.* New York: Grossman.
Narayan, U. 1995. "The Discriminating Nature of Industrial Health-Hazard Policies and Some Implications for Third World Women Workers." In J. Callahan (ed.), *Reproduction, Ethics, and the Law.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.
Nation. 2000. "Firestonewalling." Oct. 2:3–4.
National Center for Women and Policing. 2002. *Equality Denied: The Status of Women in Policing.* www.womenandpolicing.org.

National Institute of Corrections. 1997. *Supermax Housing: A Survey of Current Practice.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Naughton, K. 2000. "Spinning Out of Control." *Newsweek,* Sept. 11:58.
Needleman, H., J. Riess, M. Biesecker, & J. Greenhouse. 1996. "Bone Lead Levels and Delinquent Behavior." *Journal of the American Medical Association* 275:363–369.
Nelsen, C., J. Corzine, & L. Huff-Corzine. 1994. "The Violent West Reexamined: A Research Note on Regional Homicide Rates." *Criminology* 32:149–161.
Nelson, A., & P. Oliver. 1998. "Gender and the Construction of Consent in Child-Adult Sexual Contact." *Gender & Society* 12:554–577.
Nelson, J. 1994. "A Dollar or a Day: Sentencing Misdemeanants in New York State." *Journal of Criminal Justice* 31:183–201.
Neubauer, D. 2001. *America's Courts and the Criminal Justice System.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Neuman, W. 1996. "William Julius Wilson: Racism Is Not Sufficient." *Journal of American Studies* 28:699–717.
———. 1998. "Negotiated Meanings and State Transformation." *Social Problem*s 45:315–335.
———. 2003. *Social Research Methods.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
———. 2005. *Power, State, and Society: An Introduction to Political Sociology.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Neuman, W., & R. Berger. 1988. "Competing Perspectives on Cross-National Crime: An Evaluation of Theory and Evidence." *Sociological Quarterly* 29:281–313.
Nevin, R. 2000. "How Lead Exposure Relates to Temporal Changes in IQ, Violent Crime, and Unwed Pregnancy." *Environmental Research* 83:1–22.
New Republic. 2003. "Sixteen Words." July 28–Aug. 4:8–9.
———. 2006. "Editorial." May 15: cover page.
New York Times. 2003. "Errors at FBI May Be Issue in 3,000 Cases." Mar. 17:A18.
Newman, D. 2000/2004. *Sociology: Exploring the Architecture of Everyday Life.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Pine Forge.
Newman, G. 1993. "Batman and Justice: The True Story." *Humanity & Society* 17:261–274.
———. 1998. "Popular Culture and Violence: Decoding the Violence in Popular Movies." In F. Bailey & D. Hale (eds.), *Popular Culture, Crime, and Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Newman, O. 1972. *Defensible Space: Crime Prevention Through Urban Design.* New York: Macmillan.
NewsInferno.com. 2007. "Vioxx Lawsuit Settlement Could Rank Among the Largest Defective Drug Settlements." Nov. 12. www. newsinferno.com.
NewsMax.com. 2007. "Fred Thompson Raps 'Open Border' Immigration." www.newsmax.com.
Nichols, L. 1999. "White-Collar Cinema: Changing Representations of Upper-World Deviance in Popular Films." In *Perspectives on Social Problems,* vol. 11. Stamford: JAI.
Nilson, C., & T. Burke. 2002. "Environmental Extremists and the Eco-Terrorism Movement." *ACJS Today,* Jan.–Feb.:1–6.
Noonan, J. 1994. "Virginian Liberators." In J. Bonsignore et al. (eds.), *Before the Law.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin.
Nye, J., P. Zelikow, & D. King (eds.). 1997. *Why People Don't Trust Government.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.

Oakley, A. 1986. *From Here to Maternity: Becoming a Mother.* Harmondsworth: Penguin.
Oates, S. 1983. *The Fires of Jubilee: Nat Turner's Fierce Rebellion.* New York: New American Library.
O'Brien, R. 1987. "The Interracial Nature of Violent Crimes: A Reexamination." *American Journal of Sociology* 92:817–835.
O'Conner, T., J. Duncan, & F. Quilard. 2006. "Criminology and Religion: The Shape of an Authentic Dialogue." *Criminology & Public Policy* 5:559–570.
Office of National Drug Control Policy. 1989. *National Drug Control Strategy.* Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office.
Ogawa, B. 1999. *Color of Justice: Culturally Sensitive Treatment of Minority Crime Victims.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Ogle, R., D. Maier-Katkin, & T. Bernard. 1995. "A Theory of Homicidal Behavior Among Women." *Criminology* 33:173–193.
Oliphant, J. 2008. "Court Slices Exxon Valdez Damage Award." www.weblogs.baltimoresun.com.
Oliver, M. 1994. "Portrayals of Crime, Race, and Aggression in 'Reality-Based' Police Shows: A Content Analysis." *Journal of Broadcasting & Electronic Media* 38:179–191.
Oliver, M., & T. Shapiro. 2008. "Sub-Prime as a Black Catastrophe." *American Prospect,* Oct.:A9–A11.
Oppermann, M. 1999. "Sex Tourism." *Annals of Tourism Research* 26:252–266.
Orcutt, J. (ed.). 1983. *Analyzing Deviance.* Homewood, IL: Dorsey.
Orcutt, J., & J. Turner. 1993. "Shocking Numbers and Graphic Accounts: Quantified Images of Drug Problems in Print Media." *Social Problems* 40:190–212.
O'Reilly, J. 1979. "Jury Representation by Neighborhood." In R. Alvarez et al. (eds.), *Discrimination in Organizations.* San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.
Orenstein, P. 1994. *School Girls.* New York: Doubleday.
Orwell, G. 1946/2007. "Politics of the English Language." In A. Szanto (ed.), *What Orwell Didn't Know.* New York: PublicAffairs.
Osbun, L., & P. Rode. 1984. "Prosecuting Juveniles as Adults: The Quest for 'Objective' Decisions." *Criminology* 22:187–202.
O'Shea, K. 1999. *Women and the Death Penalty in the United States, 1900–1998.* Westport: Praeger.
Owen, B. 1985. "Race and Gender Relations Among Prison Workers." *Crime & Delinquency* 31:147–159.
Owen, B., & B. Bloom. 1995. "Profiling Women Prisoners: Findings from National Surveys and a California Sample." *Prison Journal* 75:164–185.
Packer, H. 1964. "Two Models of the Criminal Process." *University of Pennsylvania Law Review* 113:1–68.
Padilla, F. 1992. *The Gang as an American Enterprise.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.
Pagelow, M. 1984. *Family Violence.* New York: Praeger.
Pager, D. 2003. "The Mark of a Criminal Record." *American Journal of Sociology* 108:937–975.
Palast, G. 2003. *The Best Democracy Money Can Buy: The Truth About Corporate Cons, Globalization, and High-Finance Fraudsters.* New York: Plume.
———. 2007. *Armed Madhouse: From Baghdad to New Orleans—Sordid Secrets and Strange Tales of a White House Gone Wild.* New York: Plume.
Palen, J. 2005. *The Urban World.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Parenti, M. 1983. *Democracy for the Few.* New York: St. Martin's.

———. 2004. "Fables of Reconstruction." *Nation,* Aug. 30–Sept. 6:16–19.
Park, R., & E. Burgess. 1924. *Introduction to the Science of Sociology.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Parker, K., M. Dewees, & M. Radelet. 2001. "Racial Bias and the Conviction of the Innocent." In S. Westervelt & J. Humphrey (eds.), *Wrongly Convicted.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.
Parker, R. 1989. "Poverty, Subculture of Violence, and Type of Homicide." *Social Forces* 67:983–1007.
Parsons, T. 1951. *The Social System.* New York: Free Press.
Pasha, S. 2006. "Skilling Gets 24 Years." www.cnnmoney.com.
Passas, N. 1990. "Anomie and Corporate Deviance." *Contemporary Crises* 14:157–178.
———. 1995. "The Mirror of Global Evils: A Review Essay on the BCCI Affair." *Justice Quarterly* 12:377–405.
Pastore, A., & K. Maguire. 2002. *Sourcebook of Criminal Justice Statistics.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Pate, A., & E. Hamilton. 1992. "Formal and Informal Deterrents to Domestic Violence: The Dade County Spouse Assault Experiment." *American Sociological Review* 57:691–697.
Paternoster, R. 1987. "The Deterrent Effect of the Perceived Certainty and Severity of Punishment: A Review of the Evidence and Issues." *Justice Quarterly* 4:173–217.
———. 1989. "Absolute and Restrictive Deterrence in a Panel of Youth: Explaining the Onset, Persistence/Desistance, and Frequency of Delinquent Offending." *Social Problems* 36:289–309.
———. 1991. *Capital Punishment in America.* New York: Lexington Books.
Paternoster, R., & L. Iovanni. 1989. "The Labeling Perspective and Delinquency: An Elaboration of the Theory and an Assessment of the Evidence." *Justice Quarterly* 6:359–394.
Paternoster, R., & R. Triplett. 1988. "Disaggregating Self-Reported Delinquency and Its Implications for Theory." *Criminology* 26:591–625.
Patterson, E., & M. Lynch. 1991. "Bias in Formalized Bail Procedures." In M. Lynch & E. Patterson (eds.), *Race and Criminal Justice.* Albany, NY: Harrow and Heston.
Patterson, R., & M. Stouthamer-Loeber. 1984. "The Correlation of Family Management Practices and Delinquency." *Child Development* 55:1299–1307.
Pattillo, M. 1998. "Sweet Mothers and Gangbangers: Managing Crime in a Black Middle-Class Neighborhood." *Social Forces* 76:747–774.
Pearson, F., D. Lipton, C. Cleland, & D. Yee. 2002. "The Effects of Behavioral/Cognitive Programs on Recidivism." *Crime & Delinquency* 48:476–496.
Pearson, M. 1996. "Alabama to Halt Use of Chain Gangs." *Denver Post,* June 21:A2.
Pearson, P. 1997. *When She Was Bad.* New York: Viking.
———. 1998. "Sex Discrimination on Death Row." *New York Times,* Jan. 13:A19.
Pelka, F. 1995. "Raped: A Male Survivor Breaks His Silence." In P. Searles & R. Berger (eds.), *Rape and Society.* Boulder: Westview.
Peltier, L. 1989. "War Against the American Nation." In B. Schultz & R. Schultz (eds.), *It Did Happen Here.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Pepinsky, H., & R. Quinney (eds.). 1991. *Criminology as Peacemaking.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Perez, A., S. Leifman, & A. Estrada. 2003. "Reversing the Criminalization of Mental Illness." *Crime & Delinquency* 49:62–78.
Perry, S., and J. Dawson. 1985. *Nightmare: Women and the Dalkon Shield.* New York: Macmillan.
Petersilia, J. 2003a. "Prisoner Reentry and Criminological Knowledge." *Criminologist,* Mar.–Apr.:1–5.
———. 2003b. *When Prisoners Come Home: Parole and Prisoner Reentry.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Petersilia, J., & S. Turner. 1988. "Minorities in Prison: Discrimination or Disparity?" *Corrections Today* 50:92–94.
———. 1993. "Evaluating Intensive Supervision Probation/Parole: Results of a Nationwide Experiment." *National Institute of Justice Research in Brief,* May:1–10.
Petersilia, J., et al. 1985. *Granting Felons Probation.* Santa Monica: RAND.
Peterson, D., J. Miller, & F. Esbensen. 2001. "The Impact of Sex Composition on Gangs and Gang Member Delinquency." *Criminology* 39:411–439.
Peterson, R., & W. Bailey. 1998. "Is Capital Punishment an Effective Deterrent to Murder? An Examination of Social Science Research." In J. Acker et al. (eds.), *America's Experiment with Capital Punishment.* Durham, NC: Carolina Academic.
Petrillo, L. 1990. "When a Cop Shoots, Who Takes a Close Look?" *San Diego Union,* Dec. 21:A1, A10.
Pettiway, L. 1997. *Workin' It: Women Living Through Drugs and Crime.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Pfohl, S. 1985. *Images of Deviance and Social Control: A Sociological History.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Pfost, D. 1987. "Reagan's Nicaraguan Policy: A Case Study of Political Deviance and Crime." *Crime & Social Justice* 27–28:66–87.
Piliavan, I., R. Gartner, C. Thornton, & R. Matsueda. 1986. "Crime, Deterrence, and Rational Choice." *American Sociological Review* 51:101–119.
Pincus, W. 2005. "British Intelligence Warned of Iraq War." *Washington Post,* May 13:A18. www.washingtonpost.com.
Piquero, N., M. Exum, & S. Simpson. 2005. "Integrating the Desire-for-Control and Rational Choice in a Corporate Crime Context." *Justice Quarterly* 22:252–280.
Piven, F., & R. Cloward. 1971. *Regulating the Poor: The Functions of Public Welfare.* New York: Vintage.
Pizzo, S., M. Fricker, & P. Muolo. 1989. *Inside Job: The Looting of America's Savings and Loans.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Platt, A. 1974. "The Triumph of Benevolence: The Origins of the Juvenile Justice System in the United States." In R. Quinney (ed.), *Criminal Justice in America.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Platt, L. 2001. "Regulating the Global Brothel." *American Prospect,* July:10–14.
Polk, K., D. Frease, & F. Richmond. 1974. "Social Class, School Experience, and Delinquency." *Criminology* 12:84–96.
Pollak, J., & C. Kubrin. 2007. "Crime in the News: How Crimes, Offenders, and Victims Are Portrayed in the Media." *Journal of Criminal Justice & Popular Culture* 14:49–83.
Pollitt, K. 1998. "'Fetal Rights': A New Assault on Feminism." In R. Weitz (ed.), *The Politics of Women's Bodies.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Pollock-Byrne, J. 1990. *Women, Prison, and Crime.* Pacific Grove, CA: Brooks/Cole.

Polsky, N. 1969. *Hustlers, Beats, and Others.* Garden City, NY: Anchor.
Porterfield, A. 1943. "Delinquency and Its Outcome in Court and College." *American Journal of Sociology* 49:199–208.
Possley, M. 2007. "3 Children Die Leading to Massive Crib Recall." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Oct. 22:A3.
Potterat, J., D. Woodhouse, J. Muth, & S. Muth. 1990. "Estimating the Prevalence and Career Longevity of Prostitute Women." *Journal of Sex Research* 27:233–243.
Poussaint, A. 1983. "Black-on-Black Homicide: A Psychological-Political Perspective." *Victimology* 8:161–169.
Poveda, T. 1990. *Lawlessness and Reform: The FBI in Transition.* Belmont, CA: Brooks/Cole.
———. 1994. "Clinton, Crime, and the Justice Department." *Social Justice* 21:73–84.
Power, S. 2002. "*A Problem from Hell": America and the Age of Genocide.* New York: Basic.
Pratt, T., & F. Cullen. 2000. "The Empirical Status of Gottfredson and Hirchi's General Theory of Crime: A Meta-Analysis." *Criminology* 38:931–964.
Pratt, T., & J. Maahs. 1999. "Are Private Prisons More Cost-Effective Than Public Prisons? A Meta-Analysis of Evaluation Research Studies." *Crime & Delinquency* 45:358–371.
President's Commission on Law Enforcement and Administration of Justice. 1967. *The Challenge of Crime in a Free Society.* Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office.
Press, E. 2007a. "Can Block Clubs Block Despair?" *American Prospect,* May:29–33.
———. 2007b. "The Missing Class." *Nation,* Aug. 13–20:22–23.
———. 2007c. "The New Suburban Poverty." *Nation,* Apr. 23:18–24.
Pryor, D. 1996. *Unspeakable Acts: Why Men Seriously Abuse Children.* New York: New York University Press.
Pulido, L., S. Sidawi, & R. Vos. 1996. "An Archaeology of Environmental Racism in Los Angeles." *Urban Geography* 17:419–439.
Quadagno, J., & C. Fobes. 1995. "The Welfare State and the Cultural Reproduction of Gender: Making Good Girls and Boys in the Job Corps." *Social Problems* 42:171–190.
Quicker, J. 1983. *Homegirls: Characterizing Chicana Gangs.* San Pedro, CA: International Universities.
Quinney, R. 1970. *The Social Reality of Crime.* Boston: Little, Brown.
———. 1977. *Class, State, and Crime: On the Theory and Practice of Criminal Justice.* New York: David McKay.
———. 1999. "The Prophetic Meaning of Justice." In B. Arrigo (ed.), *Social Justice/Criminal Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
———. 2000. "Socialist Humanism and the Problem of Crime: Thinking About Erich Fromm in the Development of Critical/Peacemaking Criminology." In K. Anderson & R. Quinney (eds.), *Erich Fromm and Critical Criminology.* Urbana-Champaign: University of Illinois Press.
Rackmill, S. 1994. "An Analysis of Home Confinement as a Sanction." *Federal Probation* 58:48–52.
Radelet, M. 1981. "Racial Characteristics and the Imposition of the Death Penalty." *American Sociological Review* 46:918–927.
Radelet, M., & H. Bedau. 1998. "The Execution of the Innocent." In J. Acker et al.

(eds.), *America's Experiment with Capital Punishment.* Durham, NC: Carolina Academic.
Radelet, M., H. Bedau, & C. Putnam. 1992. *In Spite of Innocence: Erroneous Convictions in Capital Cases.* Boston: Northeastern University Press.
Radelet, M., & G. Pierce. 1985. "Race and Prosecutorial Discretion in Homicide Cases." *Law & Society Review* 19:587–621.
Rafter, N. 1992. "Criminal Anthropology in the United States." *Criminology* 30:525–545.
Rainville, G., & B. Reaves. 2003. *Felony Defendants in Large Urban Counties, 2000.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Rampart Independent Review Panel. 2002. "The Los Angeles Police Department Rampart Division Scandal: Exposing Police Misconduct and Responding to It." In M. Ermann & R. Lundman (eds.), *Corporate and Governmental Deviance.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Rand, M., J. Lynch, & D. Cantor. 1997. *Criminal Victimization 1973–95.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Randall, M., & L. Haskell. 1995. "Sexual Violence in Women's Lives: Findings from the Women's Safety Project—A Community Survey." *Violence Against Women* 1:6–31.
Rankin, J. 1980. "School Factors and Delinquency: Interaction by Age and Sex." *Sociology & Social Research* 64:420–434.
Rankin, J., & R. Kern. 1994. "Parental Attachments and Delinquency." *Criminology* 32:495–515.
Rashke, R. 1981. *The Killing of Karen Silkwood.* New York: Penguin.
Rawls, J. 1971. *A Theory of Justice.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
Reaves, B. 1991. *Pretrial Release of Felony Defendants 1988.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Rebellion, C. 2002. "Reconsidering the Broken Homes/Delinquency Relationship and Exploring Its Mediating Mechanism(s)." *Criminology* 40:103–135.
Reckless, W. 1967. *The Crime Problem.* New York: Appleton-Century Crofts.
Reece, R. 1993. "Fatal Child Abuse and Sudden Infant Death Syndrome: A Critical Diagnostic Decision." *Pediatrics* 91:423–429.
Reeves, J., & R. Campbell. 1994. *Cracked Coverage: Television News, the Anti-Cocaine Crusade, and the Reagan Legacy.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.
Regoli, R., & J. Hewitt. 1997. *Delinquency in Society.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Reichard, K. 1998. "Look at Me!" *Isthmus,* Aug. 7:35–36.
Reichel, P. 1999. "Southern Slave Patrols as a Transitional Police Type." In L. Gaines & G. Cordner (eds.), *Policing Perspectives.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Reid, S. 1997/2006. *Crime and Criminology.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Reiman, J. 2007. *The Rich Get Richer and the Poor Get Prison: Ideology, Class, and Criminal Justice.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Reinarman, C., & H. Levine. 1989. "The Crack Attack: Politics and Media in America's Latest Drug Scare." In J. Best (ed.), *Images of Issues.* New York: de Gruyter.
Reiner, I. 1992. *Gangs, Crime, and Violence in Los Angeles.* Arlington, VA: National Youth Gang Information Center.
Reiss, A. 1951. "Delinquency as a Failure of Personal and Social Controls." *American Sociological Review* 26:720–732.
———. 1968. "Police Brutality: Answers to Key Questions." *Transaction* 5:10–19.

———. 1971. *The Police and the Public.* New Haven: Yale University Press.
———. 1980. "Police Brutality." In R. Lundman (ed.), *Police Behavior.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Renzetti, C. 1992. *Violent Betrayal: Partner Abuse in Lesbian Relationships.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
———. 1996. "The Poverty of Services for Battered Lesbians." In C. Renzetti & C. Miley (eds.), *Violence in Gay and Lesbian Domestic Partnerships.* New York: Harrington Park.
Resnick, S. 1993. "Fear Itself." *Utne Reader,* Mar.–Apr.:64–65.
Ressler, R., & T. Schachtman. 1992. *Whoever Fights Monsters.* New York: St. Martin's.
Reuter, P. 1995. "The Decline of the American Mafia." *Public Interest* 120:89–99.
Richardson, L., V. Taylor, & N. Whittier (eds.). 1997. *Feminist Frontiers.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Rickert, C. 2008. "Storage Locker Home for Some." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Jan. 5:A1, A7.
Roane, K. 2005. "The CSI Effect." *US News & World Report,* Apr. 25:48–54.
Roberts, J., & L. Stalans. 2000. *Public Opinion, Crime, and Criminal Justice.* Boulder: Westview.
Roberts, N. 1994. "The Game's Up." *New Statesman & Society,* July 16:44–45.
Robin, C. 1963. "Patterns of Department Store Shoplifting." *Crime & Delinquency* 9:163–172.
Robinson, C. 1993. "The Production of Black Violence in Chicago." In D. Greenberg (ed.), *Crime and Capitalism.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Robinson, D., & O. Stephens. 1992. "Patterns of Mitigating Factors in Juvenile Death Penalty Cases." *Criminal Law Bulletin* 28:246–275.
Robinson, G., & D. Stewart. 1986. "Postpartum Psychiatric Disorders." *Canadian Medical Association Journal* 134:31–37.
Robinson, L. 1996. "Subject/Position." In N. Maglin & D. Perry (eds.), *"Bad Girls"/"Good Girls."* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.
Robinson, M. 2000. "The Construction and Reinforcement of Myths of Race and Crime." *Journal of Contemporary Criminal Justice* 16:133–156.
Rodgers, L. 1995. "Prison Suicide: Suggestions from Phenomenology." *Deviant Behavior* 6:113–126.
Rodriguez, N. 2007a. "Juvenile Court Context and Detention Decisions: Reconsidering the Role of Race, Ethnicity, and Community Characteristics in Juvenile Court Processes." *Justice Quarterly* 24:629–655.
———. 2007b. "Restorative Justice at Work: Examining the Impact of Restorative Justice Resolutions on Recidivism." *Crime & Delinquency* 53:355–379.
Rolling Stone. 2006. "A Call for Investigation: Electronic Voting Machines Pose a Grave Threat to Democracy." Editorial. June 15:54.
Romano, A. 2006. "Walking the New Beat." *Newsweek,* Apr. 24:48.
Roncek, D., & D. Faggiani. 1985. "High Schools and Crime: A Replication." *Sociological Quarterly* 26:491–505.
Roncek, D., & A. LoBosco. 1983. "The Effect of High Schools on Crime in Their Neighborhood." *Social Science Quarterly* 64:589–613.
Rose, D., & T. Clear. 1998. "Incarceration, Social Capital, and Crime: Implications for Social Disorganization Theory." *Criminology* 36:441–479.
Rosen, J. 1997. "One Angry Woman." *New Yorker,* Feb. 24:54–63.
Rosenbaum, A. 1993. *Prosecuting Nazi War Criminals.* Boulder, CO: Westview.
Rosenbaum, D. 1988. "Community Crime Prevention: A Review and Synthesis of the Literature." *Justice Quarterly* 5:323–395.

Rosenbaum, J., & L. Prinsky. 1991. "The Presumption of Influence: Recent Responses to Popular Music Subcultures." *Crime & Delinquency* 37:528–535.
Rosenberg, D. 2003. "Love Canal's Long Shadow." *Newsweek,* Aug. 4:50–51.
———. 2007. "(Rethinking) Gender." *Newsweek,* May 21:50–57.
Rosenfeld, R. 2004. "The Case of the Unsolved Crime Decline." *Scientific American,* Feb.:82–89.
Rosenfeld, R., R. Fornango, & A. Rengifo. 2007. "The Impact of Order-Maintenance Policing on New York City Homicide and Robbery Rates: 1988–2001." *Criminology* 45:355–383.
Rosoff, S., H. Pontell, & R. Tillman. 2007. *Profit Without Honor: White-Collar Crime and the Looting of America.* Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Ross, E. 1907/1977. "The Criminaloid." In G. Geis & R. Meier (eds.), *White-Collar Crime.* New York: Free Press.
Ross, J., & S. Richards. 2002. *Behind Bars: Surviving Prison.* Indianapolis: Alpha.
Ross, J., & D. Rothe. 2007. "Swimming Upstream: Teaching State Crime to Students at American Universities." *Journal of Criminal Justice Education* 18:460–473.
Rossmo, D. 1994. "Targeting Victims: Serial Killers and the Urban Environment." In T. O'Reilly-Fleming & S. Egger (eds.), *Serial and Mass Murder.* Toronto: University of Toronto Press.
Rotello, G. 2002. "Who's the Butchest of Them All?" *Advocate,* Apr. 30:72.
Rothe, D., & C. Mullins. 2007. "Darfur and the Politicization of International Law: Genocide or Crimes Against Humanity?" *Humanity & Society* 31:83–107.
Rothman, D. 1971. *The Discovery of the Asylum.* Boston: Little, Brown.
———. 1980. *Conscience and Convenience: The Asylum and Its Alternatives in Progressive America.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Rottman, D., C. Flango, & R. Lockley. 1995. *State Court Organization 1993.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Rowe, D. 1986. "Genetic and Environmental Components of Antisocial Behavior: A Study of 265 Twins." *Criminology* 24:513–532.
Rozee, P., P. Bateman, & T. Gilmore. 1991. "The Personal Perspective of Acquaintance Rape Prevention: A Three-Tier Approach." In A. Parrot & L. Bechhofer (eds.), *Acquaintance Rape.* New York: Wiley.
Rubenstein, R., & J. Roth. 1987. *Approaches to Auschwitz: The Holocaust and Its Legacy.* Atlanta: Knox.
Rude, G. 1964. *The Crowd in History.* New York: Wiley.
Ruesink, M., & M. Free. 2005. "Wrongful Convictions Among Women: An Exploratory Study of a Neglected Topic." *Women & Criminal Justice* 15:1–23.
Ruffins, P. 1988. "'Toxic Terrorism' Invades Third World Nations." *Black Enterprise* 19:31.
Russakoff, D., & S. Kovaleski. 1998. "Two Angry Men." In B. Schechterman & M. Slann (eds.), *Violence and Terrorism.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
Russell, D. 1982. *Rape in Marriage.* New York: Macmillan.
———. 1984. *Sexual Exploitation: Rape, Child Sexual Abuse, and Workplace Harassment.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
———. 1986. *The Secret Trauma: Incest in the Lives of Girls and Women.* New York: Basic.
———. 1993a. *Against Pornography: Evidence of Harm.* Berkeley: Russell.
——— (ed.). 1993b. *Making Violence Sexy: Feminist Views on Pornography.* New York: Teachers College Press.
———. 1995. "The Making of a Whore." *Violence Against Women* 1:77–98.

Russell, K. 1998. *The Color of Crime: Racial Hoaxes, White Fear, Black Protectionism, Police Harassment, and Other Macroaggressions.* New York: New York University Press.
———. 2003. "'Driving While Black': Corollary Phenomena and Collateral Consequences." In M. Free (ed.), *Racial Issues in Criminal Justice.* Westport: Praeger.
Ryerson, E. 1978. *The Best-Laid Plans: America's Juvenile Court Experiment.* New York: Hill and Wang.
Sabol, W., & H. Couture. 2008. *Prison Inmates Midyear 2007.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Sabol, W., H. Couture, & P. Harrison. 2007. *Prisoners in 2006.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Sachs, S. 1982. "The Exclusionary Rule: A Prosecutor's Defense." *Criminal Justice Ethics* 1:31–32.
Safetyforum.com. 2003. "Chrysler Minivan Latch Failure Is a Safety Defect That Involves Children." www.safetyforum.com.
Safire, W. 1992a. "Democrats Slow to See Potential in Bush Cover-Up of Lavoro Scandal." *Milwaukee Journal,* Apr. 4:A9.
———. 1992b. "Iraq Diverted Grain, Bush Admits." *Milwaukee Journal,* Oct. 9:A9.
———. 1993. "Iraqgate Giveaway." *New York Times,* May 20:A13.
Samaha, J. 2000. *Criminal Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Sampson, R. 1985a. "Race and Criminal Violence: A Demographically Disaggregated Analysis of Urban Homicide." *Crime & Delinquency* 31:47–82.
———. 1985b. "Structural Sources of Variation in Race-Age-Specific Rates of Offending Across Major US Cities." *Criminology* 23:647–673.
———. 1986. "Effects of Socioeconomic Context on Official Reaction to Delinquency." *American Sociological Review* 51:876–885.
———. 1987. "Urban Black Violence: The Effect of Male Joblessness and Family Disruption." *American Journal of Sociology* 93:348–382.
Sampson, R., & W. Groves. 1989. "Community Structure and Crime: Testing Social-Disorganization Theory." *American Journal of Sociology* 94:774–802.
Sampson, R., & J. Laub. 1990. "Crime and Deviance over the Life Course: The Salience of Adult Social Bonds." *American Sociological Review* 55:609–627.
———. 1993. *Crime in the Making: Pathways and Turning Points Through Life.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
Sampson, R., J. Morenoff, & S. Raudenbush. 2005. "Social Anatomy of Racial and Economic Disparities in Violence." *American Journal of Public Health* 95:224–232.
Sampson, R., S. Raudenbush, & F. Earls. 1997. "Neighborhoods and Violence Crime: A Multilevel Study of Collective Efficacy." *Science* 277:918–924.
Sampson, R., & W. Wilson. 1995. "Race, Crime, and Urban Inequality." In J. Hagan & R. Peterson (eds.), *Crime and Inequality.* Stanford: Stanford University Press.
Sanchez Jankowski, M. 1991. *Islands in the Street: Gangs and American Urban Society.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Sanday, P. 1981. "The Socio-Cultural Context of Rape: A Cross-Cultural Study." *Journal of Social Issues* 37:5–27.
———. 2007. *Fraternity Gang Rape.* New York: New York University Press.
Sandberg, J. 1999. "Spinning a Web of Hate." *Newsweek,* July 19:28–29.
Sanders, W. 1980. *Rape and Woman's Identity.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
———. 1981. *Juvenile Delinquency.* New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston.

———. 1983. *Criminology.* Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley.
———. 1994. *Gangbangs and Drive-Bys: Grounded Culture and Juvenile Gang Violence.* New York: de Gruyter.
Sandstrom, K., D. Martin, & G. Fine. 2006. *Symbols, Selves, and Social Reality: A Symbolic Interactionist Approach to Social Psychology and Sociology.* Los Angeles: Roxbury.
Sapp, A. 1986. "Sexual Misconduct and Sexual Harassment by Police Officers." In T. Barker & D. Carter (eds.), *Police Deviance.* Cincinnati: Pilgrimage.
Sarabi, B. 2000. "America's Internal Colony." Partnership for Safety and Justice, June 1. www.safetyandjustice.org.
Satz, D. 1995. "Markets in Women's Sexual Labor." *Ethics* 106:63–85.
Saylor, W., and G. Gaes. 1994. "The Post-Release Employment Project: Prison Work Has Measurable Effects on Post-Release Success." In P. Kratcoski (ed.), *Correctional Counseling and Treatment.* Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.
Scahill, J. 2007. *Blackwater: The Rise of the World's Most Powerful Military Army.* New York: Nation Books.
Schaffner, L. 1999. *Teenage Runaways: Broken Hearts and "Bad Attitudes."* Binghamton, NY: Haworth.
Schapiro, M. 2002. "Big Tobacco: Uncovering the Industry's Multibillion-Dollar Global Smuggling Network." *Nation,* May 6:11–20.
Schechter, D. 2002. "Counting on Democracy." Globalvision Incorporated documentary.
Scheck, B., P. Neufield, & J. Dwyer. 2000. *Actual Innocence.* New York: Doubleday.
Schell, J. 2008. "When the Gloves Come Off." *Nation,* Nov. 3:18–24.
Scherer, M. 2003. "K Street on the Tigris," *Mother Jones,* Nov.–Dec. www.motherjones.com.
Schlesinger, T. 2005. "Racial and Ethnic Disparity in Pretrial Criminal Processing." *Justice Quarterly* 22:170–192.
Schlosser, E. 1998. "The Prison-Industrial Complex." *Atlantic Monthly,* Dec.:51–77.
———. 1999. "The Politics of Pot: A Government in Denial." *Rolling Stone,* Mar. 4:47–52.
———. 2003. *Reefer Madness: Sex, Drugs, and Cheap Labor in the United States.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin.
Schlossman, S., et al. 1984. *Delinquency Prevention in South Chicago: A Fifty-Year Assessment of the Chicago Area Project.* Santa Monica: RAND.
Schneider, A. 1986. "Restitution and Recidivism Rates of Juvenile Offenders: Results from Four Experimental Studies." *Criminology* 24:533–552.
Schneider, P., & M. Finkelstein (eds.). 1998. *RESTTA National Directory of Restitution and Community Service Programs.* Bethesda, MD: Pacific Institute for Research and Evaluation.
Schreier, H., & J. Libow. 1993. *Hurting for Love: Munchausen by Proxy Syndrome.* Guilford, CT: Guilford.
Schrock, D., & I. Padavic. 2007. "Negotiating Hegemonic Masculinity in a Batterer Intervention Program." *Gender & Society* 21:625–649.
Schuessler, K., & D. Cressey. 1950. "Personality Characteristics of Criminals." *American Journal of Sociology* 43:476–484.
Schulenburg, C. 2007. "Dying to Entertain: Violence on Prime Time Broadcast Television 1998–2006." www.parentstv.org.
Schur, E. 1971. *Labeling Deviant Behavior.* New York: Harper and Row.
———. 1973. *Radical Non-Intervention: Rethinking the Delinquency Problem.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.

———. 1984. *Labeling Women Deviant: Gender, Stigma, and Social Control.* New York: Random.
Schuyten, P. 1979. "Computers and Criminals." *New York Times,* Sept. 27:D2.
Schwartz, G., & D. Merten. 1967. "The Language of Adolescence: An Anthropological Approach to Youth Culture." *American Journal of Sociology* 72:453–468.
Schwartz, M., & W. DeKeseredy. 1997. *Sexual Assault on the College Campus: The Role of Male Peer Support.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Schwartz, M., W. DeKeseredy, D. Tait, & S. Alvi. 2001. "Male Peer Support and a Feminist Routine Activities Theory: Understanding Sexual Assault on the College Campus." *Justice Quarterly* 18:623–649.
Schwartz, M., & D. Friedrichs. 1994. "Postmodern Thought and Criminological Discontent: New Metaphors for Understanding Violence." *Criminology* 32:221–246.
Schwartz, R., & J. Skolnick. 1962. "Two Studies of Legal Stigma." *Social Problems* 10:133–142.
Schwendinger, H., & J. Schwendinger. 1970. "Defenders of Order or Guardians of Human Rights?" *Issues in Criminology* 5:123–157.
———. 1974. *The Sociologists of the Chair: A Radical Analysis of the Formative Years of North American Sociology.* New York: Basic.
———. 1985. *Adolescent Subcultures and Delinquency.* New York: Praeger.
———. 1993. "Giving Crime Prevention Top Priority." *Crime & Delinquency* 39:425–446.
Schwendinger, J., & H. Schwendinger. 1983. *Rape and Inequality.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
ScienceDaily. 2005. "More Homeless Mentally Ill Than Expected." www.sciencedaily.com.
Scott, P. 1993. *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Scott, P., & J. Marshall. 1991. *Cocaine Politics: Drugs, Armies, and the CIA in Central America.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Scully, D., & J. Marolla. 1984. "Convicted Rapists' Vocabulary of Motives: Excuses and Justification." *Social Problems* 31:530–544.
———. 1985. "'Riding the Bull at Gilley's': Convicted Rapists Describe the Rewards of Rape." *Social Problems* 32:251–263.
Searles, P., & R. Berger (eds.). 1995. *Rape and Society: Readings on the Problem of Sexual Assault.* Boulder: Westview.
Segrave, J., & D. Hastad. 1985. "Evaluating Three Models of Delinquency Causation for Males and Females: Strain Theory, Subculture Theory, and Control Theory." *Sociological Focus* 18:1–17.
Seiter, R., & K. Kadela. 2003. "Prisoner Reentry: What Works, What Does Not, and What Is Promising." *Crime & Delinquency* 49:360–381.
Sellin, T. 1938. *Culture Conflict and Crime.* New York: Social Science Research Council.
———. 1976. *Slavery and the Penal System.* New York: Elsevier.
Senn, C. 1993. "The Research on Women and Pornography: The Many Faces." In D. Russell (ed.), *Making Violence Sexy.* New York: Teachers College Press.
Senna, J., & L. Siegel. 1996. *Introduction to Criminal Justice*. Minneapolis: West.
Sessions Stepp, L. 2007. *Unhooked: How Young Women Pursue Sex, Delay Love, and Lose at Both.* New York: Riverhead.

Setterberg, F., & L. Shavelson. 1993. *Toxic Nation: The Fight to Save Our Communities from Chemical Contamination.* New York: Wiley.
Sexton, G. 1995. *Work in American Prisons: Joint Ventures with the Private Sector.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Shakur, S. 1993. *Monster: The Autobiography of an L.A. Gang Member.* New York: Penguin.
Shaw, C., & H. McKay. 1942. *Juvenile Delinquency and Urban Areas.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Shaw, C., F. Zorbaugh, H. McKay, & L. Cottrell. 1929. *Delinquency Areas.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Sheffield, C. 1989. "The Invisible Intruder: Women's Experiences of Obscene Phone Calls." *Gender & Society* 3:483–488.
Shelden, R. 2001. *Controlling the Dangerous Classes: A Critical Introduction to the History of Criminal Justice.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Shelden, R., S. Tracy, & W. Brown. 2004. *Youth Gangs in American Society.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Sheldon, W. 1949. *Varieties of Delinquent Youth.* New York: Harper and Row.
Sheley, J. 1985. *America's "Crime Problem."* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Shenon, P. 2008. *The Commission: The Uncensored History of the 9/11 Investigation.* New York: Twelve.
Sherman, L. 1986. *Citizens Killed by Big City Police, 1970–1984.* Washington, DC: Crime Control Research Corporation.
———. 1992. *Policing Domestic Violence: Experiments and Dilemmas.* New York: Free Press.
———. 2001. "Reducing Gun Violence: What Works, What Doesn't, What's Promising." In F. Zimring et al. (eds.), *Perspectives on Crime and Justice.* Rockville, MD: National Institute of Justice.
Sherman, L., & R. Berk. 1984. "Specific Deterrent Effects of Arrest for Domestic Assault." *American Sociological Review* 49:261–272.
Sherman, L., P. Gartin, & M. Buerger. 1989. "Hot Spots of Predatory Crime: Routine Activities and the Criminology of Place." *Criminology* 27:27–56.
Sherman, L., & D. Smith. 1992. "Crime, Punishment, and Stake in Conformity: Legal and Informal Control of Domestic Violence." *American Sociological Review* 57:680–690.
Sherman, L., et al. 1991. "From Initial Deterrence to Long-Term Escalation: Short-Custody Arrest for Poverty Ghetto Domestic Violence." *Criminology* 29:821–850.
———. 1998. *Preventing Crime: What Works, What Doesn't, What's Promising.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Sherman, M. 2007. "Sentencing Rules Retroactive." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Dec. 12:A14.
Shichor, D. 1997. "Private Prisons in Perspective." In M. Schwartz & L. Travis (eds.), *Corrections.* Cincinnati: Anderson.
Shichor, D., & D. Sechrest (eds.). 1996. *Three Strikes and You're Out: Vengeance as Public Policy.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Shihadeh, E., & G. Ousey. 1996. "Metropolitan Expansion and Black Social Dislocations: The Link Between Suburbanization and Center-City Crime." *Social Forces* 75:649–666.
Shoemaker, D. 1996. *Theories of Delinquency: An Examination of Explanations of Delinquent Behavior.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Shoemaker, D., & J. Williams. 1987. "The Subculture of Violence and Ethnicity." *Journal of Criminal Justice* 15:461–472.

Shorrock, T. 2003. "Big Bucks in Iraq." *Nation,* Nov. 10:5–6.
Shover, N., & D. Honaker. 1992. "The Socially Bounded Decision Making of Persistent Property Offenders." *Howard Journal of Criminal Justice* 31:276–293.
Shover, N., & J. Inverarity. 1995. "Adult Segregative Confinement." In J. Sheley (ed.), *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Sick, G. 1991. *October Surprise: America's Hostages in Iran and the Election of Ronald Reagan.* New York: Times Books.
Siegel, L. 2003. *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Siegel, L., B. Welsh, & J. Senna. 2003. *Juvenile Delinquency: Theory, Practice, and Law.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Sikes, G. 1997. *8 Ball Chicks: A Year in the Violent World of Girl Gangs.* New York: Anchor.
Silberman, C. 1978. *Criminal Violence, Criminal Justice.* New York: Random.
Silbert, M. 1982. "Prostitution and Sexual Assault: Summary of Results." *International Journal of Biosocial Research* 3:69–71.
Silbert, M., & A. Pines. 1981. "Sexual Child Abuse as an Antecedent to Prostitution." *Child Abuse & Neglect* 5:407–411.
Silk, L., & D. Vogel. 1976. *Ethics and Profits: The Crisis of Confidence in American Business.* New York: Simon and Schuster.
Silver, A. 1974. "The Demand for Order in Civil Society." In R. Quinney (ed.), *Criminal Justice in America.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Silverman, F. 2002. "Who Counts? Election Reform in America." Public Broadcasting Station documentary.
Simmons, C. 2007. "More Toys, Necklaces with Lead Are Recalled." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Sept. 27:A3.
Simon, D. 2002/2006. *Elite Deviance.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Simon, E. 2007. "Executive Pay Still Increasing at Frenzied Rate." *Wisconsin State Journal,* June 10:A1, A10.
Simon, R. 1975. *Women and Crime.* Lexington, MA: Heath.
Simons, R., et al. 2002. "A Test of Life-Course Explanations for Stability and Change in Antisocial Behavior from Adolescence to Young Adulthood." *Criminology* 40:401–434.
Simpson, C. 1993. *The Splendid Blonde Beast: Money, Law, and Genocide in the Twentieth Century.* New York: Grove.
Simpson, D. 2007. "Prosecutor Won't Fight Ruling on Jena 6 Case." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Sept. 27:A7.
Simpson, S. 1991. "Caste, Class, and Violent Crime: Explaining Difference in Female Offending." *Criminology* 29:115–135.
———. 1992. "Corporate-Crime Deterrence and Corporate-Crime Control Policies: Views from the Inside." In K. Schlegel & D. Weisburd (eds.), *White-Collar Crime Reconsidered.* Boston: Northeastern University Press.
Sinclair, U. 1906. *The Jungle.* New York: New American Library.
Sink, L. 1998. "DA Seeks to Restrict 'Cocaine Mother.'" *Milwaukee Journal Sentinel,* Apr. 7:A1.
Skinner, B. 1953. *Science and Human Behavior.* New York: Macmillan.
Skipper, J., & W. McWhorter. 1981. "A Rapist Gets Caught in the Act." In J. Skipper et al. (eds.), *Deviance: Voices from the Margins.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Skogan, W. 1986. "Fear of Crime and Neighborhood Change." In A. Reiss & M. Tonry (eds.), *Communities and Crime.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
———. 2006. *Police and Community in Chicago: A Tale of Three Cities.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Skolnick, J. 1992. "Gangs in the Post-Industrial Ghetto." *American Prospect,* Winter:109–120.
———. 1996. "Passions of Crime." *American Prospect,* Mar.–Apr.:89–95.
Skolnick, J., R. Bluthenthal, & T. Correl. 1993. "Gang Organization and Migration." In S. Cummings & D. Monti (eds.), *Gangs.* New York: State University of New York Press.
Skolnick, J., & J. Fyfe. 1993. *Above the Law: Police and the Excessive Use of Force.* New York: Free Press.
Skrapec, C. 1994. "The Female Serial Killer." In H. Birch (ed.), *Moving Targets.* Berkeley: University of California Press.
Sloan, A. 2001. "Lights Out for Enron." *Newsweek,* Dec. 10:50–51.
Smith, D. 1976. "Some Things That May Be More Important to Understand About Organized Crime Than Cosa Nostra." In F. Ianni & E. Reuss-Ianni (eds.), *The Crime Society.* New York: American Library.
———. 1980. "Paragons, Pariahs, and Pirates: A Spectrum-Based Theory of Enterprise." *Crime & Delinquency* 26:358–386.
———. 1986. "The Plea Bargaining Controversy." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 77:949–967.
Smith, D., C. Visher, & L. Davidson. 1984. "Equity and Discretionary Justice: The Influence of Race on Police Arrest Decisions." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 75:234–249.
Smith, M. 2000. "Capital Punishment in America." In J. Sheley (ed.), *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
"Smoking Gun." 2003. www.organizedcrime.about.com.
Smolowe, J. 1993. "Sex with a Scorecard." *Time,* Apr. 5. www.time.com.
Smyth, J. 2003. "Voting Machine Controversy." *Cleveland Plain Dealer,* Aug. 28. www.commondreams.org.
Sniffen, M. 1999. "FBI May Have Used Flammables at Waco Standoff." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Aug. 26:A1.
———. 2003. "First Study on Prosecutorial Misconduct Released." *Wisconsin State Journal,* June 26:A3.
Snitow, A., C. Stansell, & S. Thompson (eds.). 1983. *Powers of Desire: The Politics of Sexuality.* New York: Monthly Review.
Snow, D., S. Baker, L. Anderson, & M. Martin. 1986. "The Myth of Pervasive Mental Illness Among the Homeless." *Social Problems* 33:407–423.
Snyder-Joy, Z., & T. Carlo. 1998. "Parenting Through Prison Walls." In S. Miller (ed.), *Crime Control and Women.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Sontag, D., & D. Barry. 1997. "Using Settlements to Measure Police Abuse." *New York Times,* Sept. 17. www.nytimes.com.
Sorensen, J., J. Marquart, & D. Brock. 1993. "Factors Related to Killings of Felons by Police Officers: A Test of the Community Violence and Conflict Hypotheses." *Justice Quarterly* 10:417–440.
Sorensen, J., A. Widmayer, & F. Scarpitti. 1994. "Examining the Criminal Justice and Criminological Paradigms: An Analysis of ACJS and ASC Members." *Journal of Criminal Justice Education* 5:149–166.
Southern Poverty Law Center. 2003. "U.S. Map of Hate Groups." www.tolerance.org.
Spahr Nelson, T. 2002. *For Love of Country: Confronting Rape and Sexual Harassment in the U.S. Military.* New York: Haworth.
Spencer, J. 2001. "Tough Love, Teen Death." *Newsweek,* July 16:28.
Sperry, P. 2003. *Crude Politics: How Bush's Oil Cronies Hijacked the War on Terrorism.* Nashville: WND.

Spitzer, E. 1999. *The New York City Police Department's "Stop and Frisk" Practices.* New York: Civil Rights Bureau. www.oag.state.ny.us.
Spivak, A., & S. Sharp. 2008. "Inmate Recidivism as a Measure of Private Prison Performance." *Crime & Delinquency* 54:482–508.
Spohn, C. 1990a. "Decision Making in Sexual Assault Cases: Do Black and Female Judges Make a Difference?" *Women & Criminal Justice* 2:83–105.
———. 1990b. "The Sentencing Decisions of Black and White Judges: Expected and Unexpected Similarities." *Law & Society Review* 24:1197–1216.
Spohn, C., & J. Cederblom. 1991. "Race and Disparities in Sentencing: A Test of the Liberation Hypothesis." *Justice Quarterly* 8:305–327.
Spohn, C., J. Gruhl, & S. Welch. 1987. "The Impact of the Ethnicity and Gender of Defendants on the Decision to Reject or Dismiss Felony Charges." *Criminology* 25:175–191.
Spohn, C., & J. Horney. 1992. *Rape Law Reform: A Grassroots Revolution and Its Impact.* New York: Plenum.
Spohn, C., & J. Spears. 1996. "The Effect of Offender and Victim Characteristics on Sexual Assault Case Processing Decisions." *Justice Quarterly* 13:649–679.
Stafford, M. 1984. "Gang Delinquency." In R. Meier (ed.), *Major Forms of Crime.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
Stanko, E. 1997. "Should I Stay or Should I Go? Some Thoughts on the Variants of Intimate Violence." *Violence Against Women* 3:629–635.
Stannard, D. 1992. *American Holocaust: Columbus and the Conquest of the New World.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Stark, R. 1984. "Religion and Conformity: Reaffirming a Sociology of Religion." *Sociological Analysis* 45:273–282.
Steadman, G. 2002. *Survey of DNA Crime Laboratories, 2001.* Washington, DC: Bureau of Justice Statistics.
Steffensmeier, D. 1978. "Crime and the Contemporary Woman: An Analysis of Changing Levels of Female Property Crime, 1960–1975." *Social Forces* 58:1080–1108.
———. 1983. "Organization Properties and Sex-Segregation in the Underworld: Building a Sociological Theory of Sex Differences in Crime." *Social Forces* 61:1010–1032.
———. 1986. *The Fence: In the Shadow of Two Worlds.* Totowa, NJ: Rowman and Littlefield.
Steffensmeier, D., & E. Allen. 1988. "Sex Disparities in Arrests by Residence, Race, and Age: An Assessment of the Gender Convergence/Crime Hypothesis." *Justice Quarterly* 5:53–80.
Steffensmeier, D., E. Allen, M. Harer, & C. Streifel. 1989. "Age and the Distribution of Crime." *American Journal of Sociology* 94:803–831.
Steffensmeier, D., & M. Cobb. 1981. "Sex Differences in Urban Arrest Patterns, 1934–79." *Social Problems* 29:37–50.
Steffensmeier, D., & S. Demuth. 2000. "Ethnicity and Sentencing Outcomes in U.S. Federal Courts: Who Is Punished More Harshly—White, Black, White-Hispanic, or Black-Hispanic Defendants?" *American Sociological Review* 65:705–729.
Steffensmeier, D., C. Streifel, & M. Harer. 1987. "Relative Cohort Size and Youth Crime in the United States, 1953–1984." *American Sociological Review* 52:702–710.
Steffensmeier, D., J. Ulmer, & J. Kramer. 1998. "The Interaction of Race, Gender, and Age in Criminal Sentencing: The Punishment Cost of Being Young, Black, and Male." *Criminology* 36:763–797.

Stein, J. 2002. "The New Politics of Pot." *Time,* Nov. 4:56–66.
Steinberg, D. 1990. "The Roots of Pornography." In M. Kimmel (ed.), *Men Confront Pornography.* New York: Crown.
Steinem, G. 1980. "Erotica and Pornography: A Clear and Present Difference." In L. Lederer (ed.), *Take Back the Night.* New York: Morrow.
———. 1993. "The Real Linda Lovelace." In D. Russell (ed.), *Making Violence Sexy.* New York: Teachers College Press.
———. 1999. "Supremacy Crimes." *Ms.,* Aug.–Sept.:44–47.
Steinkraus, D. 2005. "Pregnant, Addicted Woman Asks for Help, Gets Locked Up." *Journal Times,* May 11. www.journaltimes.com.
Stephan, J. 2004. *State Prison Expenditures, 2001.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Sterling, E. 1991. "Drug Laws and Snitching: A Primer." *Frontline* documentary, Public Broadcasting Station.
Stevens, D. 2003. *Applied Community Policing in the Twenty-First Century.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Stevens, S. 1999. "Big Brother at Work." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Oct. 10:B1, B7.
Stevenson, R. 2004. "Commission's Findings Put Bush on the Defensive." *Wisconsin State Journal,* June 17:A1, A13.
Stewart, J. 1991. *Den of Thieves.* New York: Simon and Schuster.
———. 1996. *Blood Sport: The President and His Adversaries.* New York: Simon and Schuster.
Stock, W. 1995. "The Effects of Pornography on Women." In L. Lederer & R. Delgado (eds.), *The Price We Pay.* New York: Hill and Wang.
Stojkovic, S. 1990. "Accounts of Prison Work: Corrections Officers' Portrayals of Their Work Worlds." In *Perspectives on Social Problems,* vol. 2. Greenwich, CT: JAI.
Stone, C. 1975. *Where the Law Ends: The Social Control of Corporate Behavior.* Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.
Stoneall, L. 1997. "Rural Gang Origins: A Wisconsin Case Study." *Sociological Imagination* 34:45–58.
Storaska, F. 1975. *How to Say No to a Rapist and Survive.* New York: Warner.
Stout, D. 1995. "Black Businessman Ponders Ordeal as a Suspect." *New York Times,* May 9:B1.
Strasburger, V., & B. Wilson. 2002. *Children, Adolescents, and the Media.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Street Soldiers. 2008. www.street-soldiers.org.
Streib, V. 1998. "Executing Women, Children, and the Retarded: Second Class Citizens in Capital Punishment." In J. Acker et al. (eds.), *America's Experiment with Capital Punishment.* Durham, NC: Carolina Academic.
Stretesky, P., & M. Lynch. 1999. "Corporate Environmental Violence and Racism." *Crime, Law, & Social Change* 30:163–184.
Strom, K., S. Smith, & H. Snyder. 1998. *Juvenile Felony Defendants in Criminal Courts.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Stucky, T. 2005. "Local Politics and Police Strength." *Justice Quarterly* 22:139–169.
Stucky, T., K. Heimer, & J. Lang. 2005. "Partisan Politics, Electoral Competition, and Imprisonment: An Analysis of States over Time." *Criminology* 43:211–247.
Subin, H. 1993. "The Criminal Lawyer's 'Different Mission': Reflections on the 'Right' to Present a False Case." In M. Katsh (ed.), *Taking Sides: Clashing Views on Controversial Legal Issues.* Guilford, CT: Dushkin.

Sullivan, C. 1997. "Societal Collusion and Culpability in Intimate Male Violence: The Impact of Community Response Toward Women with Abusive Partners." In A. Cardarelli (ed.), *Violence Between Intimate Partners.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Sullivan, D., L. Tifft, & P. Cordella. 1998. "The Phenomenon of Restorative Justice." *Contemporary Justice Review* 1:7–20.
Sullivan, L. 2006. "Life in Solitary Confinement." National Public Radio. www.npr.org.
Sullivan, M. 1989. *Getting Paid: Youth Crime and Work in the Inner City.* Ithaca: Cornell University Press.
Sundahl, D. 1987. "Stripper." In F. Delacoste & P. Alexander (eds.), *Sex Work.* Pittsburgh: Cleis.
Sunstein, C. 2007. "The Most Mysterious Right." *New Republic,* Nov. 19:42–47.
Surette, R. 1998. *Media, Crime, and Criminal Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Suskind, R. 2006. *The One Percent Doctrine: Deep Inside America's Pursuit of Its Enemies Since 9/11.* New York: Simon and Schuster.
Sutherland, E. 1937. *The Professional Thief.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
———. 1947. *Principles of Criminology.* Philadelphia: Lippincott.
———. 1949. *White Collar Crime.* New York: Dryden.
———. 1983. *White Collar Crime: The Uncut Version.* New Haven: Yale University Press.
Swasy, A. 1993. *Soap Opera: The Inside Story of Procter & Gamble.* New York: Times Books.
Sweezy, P. 1953. *The Present as History.* New York: Monthly Review.
Sykes, G. 1958. *The Society of Captives: A Study of a Maximum Security Prison.* Princeton: Princeton University Press.
Sykes, G., & F. Cullen. 1992. *Criminology.* Fort Worth: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich.
Sykes, G., & D. Matza. 1957. "Techniques of Neutralization: A Theory of Delinquency." *American Sociological Review* 22:664–670.
Szasz, A. 1986a. "Corporations, Organized Crime, and the Disposal of Hazardous Waste: An Examination of the Making of a Criminogenic Regulatory Structure." *Criminology* 24:1–27.
———. 1986b. "The Process and Significance of Political Scandals: A Comparison of Watergate and the 'Sewergate' Episode at the Environmental Protection Agency." *Social Problems* 33:202–217.
Takata, S., & R. Zevitz. 1990. "Divergent Perceptions of Group Delinquency in a Midwestern Community: Racine's Gang Problem." *Youth & Society* 21:282–305.
Talking Points Memo. 2007. "TPM Grande Ole Docket." www.talkingpointsmemo.com.
Tamaki, J., J. Chong, & M. Landsberg. 2003. "Radicals Target SUVs in Series of Southland Attacks." *Los Angeles Times,* Aug. 23. www.rickross.com.
Tanenbaum, L. 2000. *Slut! Growing Up Female with a Bad Reputation.* New York: HarperCollins.
Tankersley, J., & M. Possley. 2008. "Product Watchdog to Get Overhaul." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Jan. 1:A5.
Tanner, R. 2002. "False Confessions May Be Frequent." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Dec. 7:A4.
———. 2003. "Forensic Scientists Under Scrutiny After Rash of Errors." *Wisconsin State Journal,* July 7:A3.
Tappan, P. 1947. "Who Is the Criminal?" *American Sociological Review* 12:96–102.

Task Force on Organized Crime. 1967. *Task Force Report: Organized Crime.* Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office.
Tavris, C. 1992. *The Mismeasure of Woman.* New York: Simon and Schuster.
Taylor, C. 1990. *Dangerous Society.* East Lansing: Michigan State University Press.
———. 1993. *Girls, Gangs, Women, and Drugs.* East Lansing: Michigan State University Press.
Taylor, D. 2004. "How Safe Is America?" In P. Hill Collins (ed.), *Race, Class, and Gender.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Taylor, R., & J. Covington. 1988. "Neighborhood Changes in Ecology and Violence." *Criminology* 26:553–589.
Taylor, R., E. Fritsch, & T. Caeti. 1998. "Core Challenges Facing Community Policing: The Emperor *Still* Has No Clothes." *ACJS Today* 27:1, 3–5.
Taylor Greene, H. 1994. "Black Perspectives on Police Brutality." In A. Sulton (ed.), *African-American Perspectives on Crime Causation, Criminal Justice, and Crime Prevention.* Englewood, CO: Sulton.
———. 2003. "Do African American Police Make a Difference?" In M. Free (ed.), *Racial Issues in Criminal Justice.* Westport: Praeger.
Taylor Greene, H., & A. del Carmen. 2002. "Female Police Officers in Texas: Perceptions of Colleagues and Stress." *Policing* 25:385–398.
Tennenbaum, D. 1977. "Personality and Criminality: A Summary and Implications of the Literature." *Journal of Criminal Justice* 5:225–235.
Tewksbury, W. 1994. "The Ordeal as a Vehicle for Divine Intervention in Medieval Europe." In J. Bonsignore et al. (eds.), *Before the Law.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin.
Texeira, M. 2002. "'Who Protects and Serves Me?' A Case Study of Sexual Harassment of African American Women in One US Law Enforcement Agency." *Gender & Society* 16:524–545.
Theilgaard, A. 1984. "A Psychological Study of the Personalities of XYY- and XXY-Men." *Acta Psychiatrica Scandinavia* 69:1–133.
Thistlethwaite, A., J. Wooldredge, & D. Gibbs. 1998. "Severity of Dispositions and Domestic Violence Reduction." *Crime & Delinquency* 44:388–398.
Thomas, E. 2007. "Making of a Massacre." *Newsweek,* Apr. 30:22–31.
Thomas, W. 1923. *The Unadjusted Girl.* New York: Harper and Row.
Thompson, C. 1998. "The Psycho-Femme Thriller: A Woman's Place." In *Perspectives on Social Problems,* vol. 10. Stamford: JAI.
Thompson, M., M. Reuland, and D. Souweine. 2003. "Criminal Justice/Mental Health Consensus: Improving Responses to People with Mental Illness." *Crime & Delinquency* 49:30–51.
Thomson, E. 1997. "Deterrence Versus Brutalization: The Case of Arizona." *Homicide Studies* 1:110–128.
Thoreau, H. 1969. "Civil Disobedience." In H. Bedau (ed.), *Civil Disobedience.* New York: Pegasus.
Thornberry, T. 1987. "Toward an Interactional Theory of Delinquency." *Criminology* 25:863–891.
Thornberry, T., & R. Christenson. 1984. "Unemployment and Criminal Involvement: An Investigation of Reciprocal Causal Structures." *American Sociological Review* 49:398–411.
Thorne, B. 1993. *Gender Play: Girls and Boys in School.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.
Thrasher, F. 1927. *The Gang.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Tienda, M., & H. Stier. 1996. "Generating Labor Market Inequality: Employment

Opportunities and the Accumulation of Disadvantage." *Social Problems* 43:147–165.
Tierney, J. 1994. "Porn: The Low-Slung Engine of Progress." *New York Times,* Jan. 9, Section 1:18.
Tigges, L., I. Browne, & G. Green. 1998. "Social Isolation of the Urban Poor: Race, Class, and Neighborhood Effects on Social Resources." *Sociological Quarterly* 39:53–77.
Tilly, C. 1989. "Collective Violence in European Perspective." In T. Gurr (ed.), *Violence in America.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
Tittle, C., and R. Meier. 1990. "Specifying the SES/Delinquency Relationship." *Criminology* 28:271–299.
Tittle, C., W. Villemez, & D. Smith. 1978. "The Myth of Social Class and Criminality: An Empirical Assessment of the Empirical Evidence." *American Sociological Review* 43:643–656.
Titunik, N. 1992. "When Worlds Collide." *Isthmus,* May 1–7:1, 8–9.
Tjaden, P., & N. Thoennes. 1998a. *Prevalence, Incidence, and Consequences of Violence Against Women.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
———. 1998b. *Stalking in America: Findings from the National Violence Against Women Survey.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Toch, H., & J. Grant. 1982. *Reforming Human Services: Change Through Participation.* Beverly Hills: Sage.
Toch, H., & J. Klofas. 1982. "Alienation and Desire for Job Enrichment Among Corrections Officers." *Federal Probation* 46:35–44.
Toffler, B. 2003. *Final Accounting: Ambition, Greed, and the Fall of Arthur Andersen.* New York: Broadway.
Tollet, T., & B. Close. 1991. "The Overrepresentation of Blacks in Florida's Juvenile Justice System." In M. Lynch & E. Patterson (eds.), *Race and Criminal Justice.* Albany, NY: Harrow and Heston.
Tomlinson, T., & D. Sears. 1967. *Los Angeles Riot Study: Negro Attitudes Toward the Riot.* Los Angeles: Institute of Government and Public Affairs, University of California.
Tonry, M. 1995. *Malign Neglect: Race, Crime, and Punishment in America.* New York: Oxford University Press.
———. 1999. "Why Are US Incarceration Rates So High?" *Crime & Delinquency* 1999:419–437.
Toobin, J. 1994. "An Incendiary Defense." *New Yorker,* July 11:56–59.
Tracy, P., M. Wolfgang, & R. Figlio. 1990. *Delinquency Careers in Two Birth Cohorts.* New York: Plenum.
Travis, J., & J. Petersilia. 2001. "Reentry Reconsidered: A New Look at an Old Question." *Crime & Delinquency* 47:291–313.
Treleven, E. 2006. "A Culturally Insensitive Drug Case?" *Wisconsin State Journal,* Nov. 16:A1, A5.
Tremblay, P., & C. Morselli. 2000. "Patterns of Criminal Achievement: Wilson and Abrahamse Revisited." *Criminology* 38:633–659.
Trojanowicz, R., M. Morash, & P. Schram. 2001. *Juvenile Delinquency: Concepts and Controls.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Truong, T. 1990. *Sex, Money, and Morality: Prostitution and Tourism in Southeast Asia.* London: Zed.
Tunnell, K. 1992. *Choosing Crime: The Criminal Calculus of Property Offenders.* Chicago: Nelson-Hall.
Turk, A. 1969. *Criminality and the Legal Order.* Chicago: Rand McNally.

———. 1975. "Prospects and Pitfalls for Radical Criminology." *Crime & Social Justice* 4:41–42.
Turman, K. 2001. *Understanding DNA Evidence: A Guide for Victim Services Providers.* Washington, DC: US Department of Justice.
Tyler, G. (ed.). 1967. *Organized Crime in America.* Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.
Uggen, C. 1999. "Ex-Offenders and the Conformist Alternative: A Job Quality Model of Work and Crime." *Social Problems* 46:127–151.
———. 2000. "Work as a Turning Point in the Life Course of Criminals: A Duration Model of Age, Employment, and Recidivism." *American Sociological Review* 67:529–546.
Uhlman, T. 1978. "Black Elite Decision Making: The Case of Trial Judges." *American Journal of Political Science* 22:884–895.
Umbreit, M. 1994. "Victim Empowerment Through Mediation: The Impact of Victim Offender Mediation in Four Cities." *Perspectives,* Summer:25–28.
Unnever, J., & L. Hembroff. 1988. "The Prediction of Racial/Ethnic Sentencing Disparities: An Expectation States Approach." *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency* 25:53–82.
Urbina, J., & A. Lehren. 2006. "U.S. Is Reducing Safety Penalties for Mine Flaws." *New York Times,* Mar. 2. www.nytimes.com.
US Census Bureau. 2008. *The 2008 Statistical Abstract.* www.census.gov.
US Department of Health and Human Services. 2007. "Appendix G: Selected Prevalence Tables." www.oas.samhsa.gov.
US Department of Justice. 1997. *Criminal Victimization in the United States 1994.* Washington, DC: Bureau of Justice Statistics.
———. 1998. "Press Release on Police Corruption." Washington, DC: FBI National Press Office, Jan. 21. www.fbi.gov.
———. 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007a. *Sourcebook of Criminal Justice Statistics Online.* www.albany.edu/sourcebook.
———. 2006b. "Key Facts at a Glance: Correctional Populations." www.ojp.gov/bjs.
———. 2007b. *Criminal Victimization in the United States.* www.ojp.usdoj.gov.
———. 2007c. "Probation and Parole Statistics." Bureau of Justice Statistics. www.ojp.usdoj.gov.
US Department of State. 2006. *Trafficking in Persons Report.* www.state.gov.
US News & World Report. 1996a. "A Marijuana Mecca Rethinks Its Drug Laws." Apr. 15:15.
———. 1996b. "The Unabomber's Worldview." Apr. 15:35.
USA Today. 2008. "Rape in the Military: Female Troops Deserve Better." www.usatoday.com.
Van Boven, S., & A. Gesalman. 1998. "A Fatal Ride in the Night." *Newsweek,* June 22:33.
Van Maanen, J. 1995. "Kinsmen in Repose: Occupational Perspectives of Patrolmen." In V. Kappeler (ed.), *The Police and Society.* Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.
Van Voorhis, P., F. Cullen, B. Link, & N. Wolfe. 1991. "The Impact of Race and Gender on Correctional Officers' Orientation to the Integrated Environment." *Journal of Research on Crime & Delinquency* 28:472–500.
Vance, C. (ed.). 1984. *Pleasure and Danger: Exploring Female Sexuality.* Boston: Routledge and Kegan Paul.

Vandal, G. 1991. "'Bloody Caddo': White Violence Against Blacks in a Louisiana Parish, 1865–1876." *Journal of Social History* 25:373–388.
Vaughan, D. 1982. "Toward Understanding Unlawful Organizational Behavior." *Michigan Law Review* 80:1377–1402.
———. 1983. *Controlling Unlawful Organizational Behavior.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Venkatesan, V. 2003. "The Issue of Extradition." www.frontlineonnet.com.
Venkatesh, S. 1997. "The Social Organization of Street Gang Activity in an Urban Ghetto." *American Journal of Sociology* 103:82–111.
Vincentnathan, S. 1995. "Societal Reaction and Secondary Deviance in Culture and Society: The United States and Japan." In F. Adler & W. Laufer (eds.), *The Legacy of Anomie Theory.* New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.
Visher, C. 1983. "Gender, Police Arrest Decisions, and Notions of Chivalry." *Criminology* 21:5–28.
Visher, C., A. Harrell, L. Newmark, & J. Yahner. 2008. "Reducing Intimate Partner Violence: An Evaluation of a Comprehensive Justice System—Community Collaboration." *Criminology & Public Policy* 7:495–523.
Vizzard, W. 2000. *Shots in the Dark: The Policy, Politics, and Symbolism of Gun Control.* Lanham: Rowman and Littlefield.
Vold, G., T. Bernard, & J. Snipes. 2002. *Theoretical Criminology.* New York: Oxford University Press.
von Hirsch, A. 1976. *Doing Justice: The Choice of Punishments.* New York: Hill and Wang.
Vosters, H. 2003. "Partial Chronology of Union Carbide's Bhopal Disaster." CorpWatch. www.corpwatch.org.
Waegel, W. 1989. *Delinquency and Juvenile Control.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
Waldo, G., & S. Dinitz. 1967. "Personality Attributes of the Criminal: An Analysis of Research Studies," *Journal of Research on Crime & Delinquency* 4:185–201.
Waldron, Lamar, with T. Hartmann. 2005. *Ultimate Sacrifice: John and Robert Kennedy, the Plan for a Coup in Cuba, and the Murder of JFK.* New York: Carroll and Graff.
Walker, J. 1996. "Police and Correctional Use of Force: Legal and Policy Standards and Implications." *Crime and Delinquency* 42:144–156.
Walker, L. 1979. *The Battered Woman.* New York: Harper and Row.
Walker, S. 1992. *The Police in America.* New York: McGraw-Hill.
———. 2001. *Sense and Nonsense About Crime: A Policy Guide.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Walker, S., C. Spohn, & M. Delone. 2004. *The Color of Justice: Race, Ethnicity, and Crime in America.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Wallace, D., & D. Humphries. 1993. "Urban Crime and Capitalist Accumulation, 1950–1971." In D. Greenberg (ed.), *Crime and Capitalism.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Wallace, H. 1993. "Mandatory Minimums and the Betrayal of Sentencing Reform: A Legislative Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde." *Federal Probation* 57:9–19.
———. 1999. *Family Violence: Legal, Medical, and Social Perspectives.* Boston: Allyn and Bacon.
Walsh, A. 1987. "The Sexual Stratification Hypothesis and Sexual Assault in Light of the Changing Conceptions of Race." *Criminology* 25:153–173.
Walsh, D. 1980. *Break-Ins: Burglary from Private Houses.* London: Constable.

Walters, G. 1992. "A Meta-Analysis of the Gene-Crime Relationship." *Criminology* 30:595–613.
Walters, G., & T. White. 1989. "Heredity and Crime: Bad Genes or Bad Research?" *Criminology* 27:455–485.
Walther, L., & J. Perry. 1997. "The Vermont Reparative Probation Program." *ICCA Journal on Community Corrections* 8:26–34.
Wambaugh, J. 1975. *The Choirboys.* New York: Dell.
Warner, B. 1997. "Community Characteristics and the Recording of Crime: Police Recording of Citizens' Complaints of Burglary and Assault." *Justice Quarterly* 14:631–650.
Warr, M. 1998. "Life-Course Transitions and Desistance from Crime." *Criminology* 36:183–216.
———. 2000. "Public Perceptions of and Reactions to Crime." In J. Sheley (ed.), *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
———. 2005. "Making Delinquent Friends: Adult Supervision and Children's Affiliations." *Criminology* 43:77–105.
Washington, W. 2002. "Child Porn Rise, Internet Linked." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Mar. 13:A5.
Waskow, A. 1967. *From Race Riot to Sit-In.* Garden City, NY: Doubleday.
Waterston, A. 1993. *Street Addicts in the Political Economy.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.
Websdale, N. 1995. "An Ethnographic Assessment of the Policing of Domestic Violence in Rural Eastern Kentucky." *Social Justice* 22:102–122.
Webster, B., & M. McCampbell. 1992. "International Money Laundering: Research and Investigation Join Forces." *NIJ Research in Brief,* Sept.:1–8.
Webster, M., A. Doob, & F. Zimring. 2006. "Proposition 8 and Crime Rates in California: The Case of the Disappearing Deterrent." *Criminology & Public Policy* 5:417–448.
Weis, K., & S. Borges. 1973. "Victimology and Rape: The Case of the Legitimate Victim." *Issues in Criminology* 8:71–115.
Weisburd, D., et al. 2006. "Does Crime Just Move Around the Corner? A Controlled Study of Spatial Displacement and Diffusion of Crime Control Benefits." *Criminology* 44:549–591.
Weiss, M. 1984. *Double Play: The San Francisco City Hall Killings.* Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley.
Weitz, R. 1996. *The Sociology of Health, Illness, and Health Care.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Welch, S., M. Combs, & J. Gruhl. 1988. "Do Black Judges Make a Difference?" *American Journal of Political Science* 32:126–136.
Welch, S., J. Gruhl, & C. Spohn. 1984. "Sentencing: The Influence of Alternative Measures of Prior Record." *Criminology* 22:215–277.
Wellford, C. 2005. "Editorial Introduction to Special Issue on Gun Policy." *Criminology & Public Policy* 4:673–676.
Welsh, B., & D. Farrington. 1999. "Value for Money? A Review of the Costs and Benefits of Situational Crime Prevention." *British Journal of Criminology* 39:345–369.
———. 2004. "Surveillance for Crime Prevention in Public Space: Results and Policy Choices in Britain and America." *Criminology & Public Policy* 3:497–526.
Werthman, C., & I. Piliavin. 1967. "Gang Members and the Police." In D. Bordua (ed.), *The Police.* New York: Wiley.

West, C. 1994. *Race Matters.* Boston: Beacon.
West, C., and D. Zimmerman. 1987. "Doing Gender." *Gender & Society* 1:125–151.
West, D., and B. de Villiers. 1993. *Male Prostitution.* New York: Harrington Park.
Westen, D. 2007. "The New Frontier: Instruments of Emotion." In A. Szanto (ed.), *What Orwell Didn't Know.* New York: PublicAffairs.
Westervelt, S., & J. Humphrey (eds.). 2001. *Wrongly Convicted: Perspectives on Failed Justice.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.
Wheeler, S. 1992. "The Problem of White-Collar Motivation." In K. Schlegel & D. Weisburd (eds.), *White-Collar Crime Reconsidered.* Boston: Northeastern University Press.
Wheeler, S., & M. Rothman. 1982. "The Organization as Weapon in White Collar Crime." *Michigan Law Review* 80:1403–1426.
White, H., R. Pandina, & R. LaGrange. 1987. "Longitudinal Predictors of Serious Substance Use and Delinquency." *Criminology* 25:715–740.
White, J. 2003. *Terrorism: An Introduction.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
White, M. 2001. "Controlling Police Decisions to Use Deadly Force: Reexamining the Importance of Administrative Policy." *Crime & Delinquency* 47:131–151.
Whitehead, J., & S. Lab. 1989. "A Meta-Analysis of Juvenile Correctional Treatment." *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency* 26:276–295.
Whitehead, J., & C. Lindquist. 1989. "Determinants of Correctional Officers' Professional Orientation." *Justice Quarterly* 6:69–87.
Widom, C. 1989. "Child Abuse, Neglect, and Violent Criminal Behavior." *Criminology* 27:251–271.
Widom, C., & M. Ames. 1984. "Criminal Consequences of Childhood Sexual Victimization." *Child Abuse & Neglect* 18:303–318.
Wilber, D., & C. Johnson. 2008. "Abramoff Gets Reduced Sentence of Four Years." *Washington Post,* Sept. 5. www.washingtonpost.com.
Wilchins, R. 2002. "Teenage Terrorism." *Advocate,* Oct. 15:72.
———. 2003. "The Problem with 'Passing.'" *Advocate,* May 13:72.
Wilkes, P. 1989. "The Tough Job of Teaching Ethics." *New York Times,* Jan. 22:E1, E24.
Will, G. 2003. "Three Strikes and You're In." *Newsweek,* Mar. 17:74.
Williams, J. 1987. *Psychology of Women.* New York: Norton.
Williams, K. 1984. "Economic Sources of Homicide: Reestimating the Effects of Poverty and Inequality." *American Sociological Review* 49:283–289.
Williams, K., & R. Hawkins. 1986. "Perceptual Research on General Deterrence: A Critical Review." *Law & Society Review* 20:211–236.
Williams, L. 1988. "Police Officers Tell of Strains of Living As a 'Black in Blue.'" *New York Times,* Feb. 14:1, 26.
Williams, L., & K. Holmes. 1981. *The Second Assault: Rape and Public Attitudes.* Westport: Greenwood.
Williams, M. 2003a. "The Effects of Pretrial Detention on Imprisonment Decisions." *Criminal Justice Review* 28:299–316.
———. (ed.). 2003b. *The Terrorist Attack on America.* Farmington Hills, MI: Greenhaven.
Williams, P. 1999a. "The Auguries of Innocence." *Nation,* May 24:9.
———. 1999b. "Smart Bombs." *Nation,* June 7:10.
Williams, S. 2007. *Blue Rage, Black Redemption: A Memoir.* New York: Touchstone.
Williams, T., & W. Kornblum. 1985. *Growing Up Poor.* Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.
Williams, W. 1996. *Taking Back Our Streets: Fighting Crime in America.* New York: Scribner.

Wilson, C. 1984. "The Ripper Revealed." *Time Out,* Apr.:19–25.
Wilson, J. 1968. *Varieties of Police Behavior: The Management of Law and Order in Eight Communities.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
———. 1975. *Thinking About Crime.* New York: Basic.
———. 2005. *The Politics of Truth.* New York: Caroll & Graf.
Wilson, J., & R. Herrnstein. 1985. *Crime and Human Nature.* New York: Simon and Schuster.
Wilson, J., & G. Kelling. 1982. "The Police and Neighborhood Safety: Broken Windows." *Atlantic Monthly,* Mar.:29–38.
Wilson, W. 1987. *The Truly Disadvantaged: The Inner City, the Underclass, and Public Policy.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
———. 1991. "Studying Inner-City Social Dislocations: The Challenge of Public Agenda Research." *American Sociological Review* 56:1–14.
Wisconsin State Journal. 1998. "Newspaper: Prosecutors Lie, Cheat with Impunity." Nov. 11:A2.
———. 1999a. "Assaults on US Schools." Apr. 21:A3.
———. 1999b. "Shootings in US Schools." May 21:A3.
———. 1999c. "Washington." May 20:A3.
———. 2002. "Ford Settles Claims over Rollover Risks." Dec. 24:C9–10.
———. 2005. "Congressman Resigns After Bribery Plea." Nov. 29:A3.
———. 2006a. "Exxon Valdez Oil Spill Award Cut in Half." Dec. 23:A3.
———. 2006b. "First U.S. Conviction in Genital Mutilation." Nov. 2:A3.
———. 2007a. "Merck Agrees to Pay $4.85 Billion for Vioxx." Nov. 10:A3.
———. 2007b. "Probe Finds Gang Killed People Due to Their Race." Dec. 31:A3.
———. 2007c. "Report Counts 744,000 Homeless in U.S." Jan. 11:A3.
Wiseman, R. 2002. *Queen Bees and Wannabes: Helping Your Daughter Survive Cliques, Gossip, Boyfriends, and Other Realities of Adolescence.* New York: Three Rivers.
Witt, K. 1994. "Many in US Back Singapore's Plan to Flog American Youth." *New York Times,* Apr. 5:A4.
Wolfgang, M., & F. Ferracuti. 1967. *The Subculture of Violence.* London: Tavistock.
Wolfgang, M., R. Figlio, & T. Sellin. 1972. *Delinquency in a Birth Cohort.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Wonders, N. 1999. "Postmodern Feminist Criminology and Social Justice." In B. Arrigo (ed.), *Social Justice/Criminal Justice.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Wonders, N., & R. Michalowski. 2001. "Bodies, Borders, and Sex Tourism in a Globalized World: A Tale of Two Cities—Amsterdam and Havana." *Social Problems* 48:545–571.
Wood, P., W. Gove, J. Wilson, & J. Cochran. 1997. "Nonsocial Reinforcement and Habitual Criminal Conduct: An Extension of Learning Theory." *Criminology* 35:335–366.
Wooden, W., & R. Blazak. 2001. *Renegade Kids, Suburban Outlaws: From Youth Culture to Delinquency.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Woodward, A. 2007. "White Supremacy and the Jena Six." *Counterpunch,* July 10. www.counterpunch.org.
Woodward, B. 1999. *Shadow: Five Presidents and the Legacy of Watergate.* New York: Touchstone.
Wooldredge, J., & K. Masters. 1993. "Confronting Problems Faced by Pregnant Inmates in State Prisons." *Crime & Delinquency* 39:195–203.
Wriggens, J. 1995. "Rape, Racism, and the Law." In P. Searles & R. Berger (eds.), *Rape and Society.* Boulder: Westview.
Wright, B. 1973. "A Black Broods on Black Judges." *Judicature* 57:22–25.

Wright, B., A. Caspi, T. Moffitt, R. Miech, & P. Silva. 1999. "Reconsidering the Relationship Between SES and Delinquency: Causation but Not Correlation." *Criminology* 37:175–194.
Wright, E., C. Costello, D. Hachen, & J. Sprague. 1982. "The American Class Structure." *American Sociological Review* 47:709–726.
Wright, J., & F. Cullen. 2001. "Parental Efficacy and Delinquent Behavior: Do Control and Support Matter?" *Criminology* 39:677–705.
Wright, J., & P. Rossi. 1986. *Armed and Considered Dangerous: A Survey of Felons and Their Firearms.* New York: de Gruyter.
Wright, J., & T. Vail. 2000. "The Guns-Crime Connection." In J. Sheley (ed.), *Criminology.* Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
Wright, L. 1994. "One Drop of Blood." *New Yorker,* July 25:46–55.
———. 2006. *The Looming Tower: Al-Qaeda and the Road to 9/11.* New York: Knopf.
Wright, R., & S. Decker. 1994. *Burglars on the Job: Street Life and Residential Break-Ins.* Boston: Northeastern University Press.
Wright, S. 2007. *Patriots, Politics, and the Oklahoma City Bombing.* New York: Cambridge University Press.
Wyre, R. 1992. "Pornography and Sexual Violence: Working With Sexual Offenders." In C. Itzin (ed.), *Pornography.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Yeager, P. 1987. "Structural Bias in Regulatory Law Enforcement: The Case of the US Environmental Protection Agency." *Social Problems* 34:330–344.
Yochelson, S., & S. Samenow. 1976, 1977. *The Criminal Personality.* Vols. 1–2. New York: Jason Aronson.
Younge, G. 2007. "Jena Is America." *Nation,* Oct. 8:10.
Zatz, M. 1987. "Chicano Youth Gangs and Crime: The Creation of a Moral Panic." *Contemporary Crises* 11:129–158.
Zatz, N. 1997. "Sex Work/Sex Act: Law, Labor, and Desire in Constructions of Prostitution." *Signs* 22:277–308.
Zehr, H., & H. Mika. 1998. "Fundamental Concepts of Restorative Justice." *Contemporary Justice Review* 1:47–55.
Zietz, D. 1981. *Women Who Embezzle or Defraud: A Study of Convicted Felons.* New York: Praeger.
Zillmann, D., J. Weaver, N. Mundorf, & C. Aust. 1986. "Effects of Opposite-Gender Companion's Affect to Horror on Distress, Delight, and Attraction." *Journal of Personality & Social Psychology* 51:586–594.
Zimmer, L. 1986. *Women Guarding Men.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
Zimring, F. 2003. *The Contradictions of American Capital Punishment.* New York: Oxford University Press.
———. 2007. *The Great American Crime Decline.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Zimring, F., & R. Frase. 1980. *The Criminal Justice System.* Boston: Little, Brown.
Zimring, F., & G. Hawkins. 1992. *The Search for Rational Drug Control.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
———. 1997. *Crime Is Not the Problem: Lethal Violence in America.* New York: Oxford University Press.
Zingraff, M., J. Leiter, K. Myers, & M. Johnson. 1993. "Child Maltreatment and Youthful Problem Behavior." *Criminology* 31:173–202.
Zoll, R. 2004a. "4% of Clerics Accused Since 1950." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Feb. 27:A3.
———. 2004b. "Priest-Abuse Claims Exceed Estimates." *Wisconsin State Journal,* Feb. 11:A1, A7.

Index

Abbott, Jack, 466
Abolitionists. *See* Slavery
Abortion: attitudes of female gang members toward, 337; culture conflict and, 152; declining crime rate and, 50; neonaticide and, 355–356; Operation Rescue and, 239; pro-life and pro-choice movements and, 239. *See also Roe v. Wade;* Terrorism, right-wing domestic
Abramhoff, Jack, 252–253
Abu Ghraib (Iraq), 275. *See* Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration
Abu Nidal terrorist organization, 224
Abyad, Wissam, 151
Acquaintance rape. *See* Rape
Adams, David, 397, 404
Adler, Freda, 328–329
Adler, Patricia and Peter, 64
Adolescent rebellion, 106, 131
Adolescent subcultures, 305–311; capitalism and, 306; class and, 306–307; local sites for formation of, 306; renegade kids and suburban outlaws as, 308–311; as social movements, 306; suburban malls and, 308–309; tagging and, 309–310; values/concerns of, 130, 307. *See also* Age and crime; Consumerism/consumers; Gangs; Juvenile delinquency; Law-violating youth group
Adolescent subcultures, types of: Punkers, 308–309; Skinheads, 68, 248–249, 310–311; socialite youths, 307; Spur Posse, 309; Stoner gangs, 311; streetcorner youths, 307; Taggers, 309–310
Adopted children and crime, 92–93
Adversary system, 435–438. *See also* Restorative justice
Advertising. *See* "Battered Chic" advertisements; Consumerism/consumers
Afghanistan: CIA support of rebels in, 235, 261; diverted military resources from, 236; formation of Al-Qaida in, 235; punishment in, 449; Taliban control of, 235; US military invasion of, 19, 273
African Americans, 30; disenfranchisement in the 2000 election, 272–273; experience of policing by, 290–291, 407, 411, 413, 417–419, 429; impact of war on drugs on, 30–31, 297, 460–461; intraracial victimization among, 5, 293, 302–303, 379–380; media portrayals, of, 4–5; opinions about O.J. Simpson case, 6; as police officers, 419–421; predatory lending against, 218; racial profiling of, 417–419; relative deprivation and, 133; rural to urban migration and, 279; slave patrols against, 409, 419; under the control of the criminal justice system, 31; and urban race riots, 154, 233, 411; wrongful convictions of, 441–442. *See also* Biological theories of criminal behavior; Conflict theory; Death penalty; Drug scares; Drug surveys; Environmental racism; Gangs; Hate Crime Statistics Act; Hate crimes; Jena Six; King, Rodney/Rodney King beating; Lynching; *National Crime Victimization Survey;* Political crime and rebellion; Prison; Prison gangs; Prosecutors; Race; Racial/ethnic

groups; Rape; Self-report surveys; Sentencing; Slavery; Trial by jury; Underground railroad; *Uniform Crime Reports,* arrests; Urban underclass
Age and crime, 47, 49–50; deterrent effect of punishment and, 85; and maturational reform, 85. *See also* Adolescent rebellion; Adolescent subcultures; Child abuse and neglect; Crime waves; Death penalty; Differential association theory; Family and crime; Freudian psychology; Juvenile delinquency; Juvenile justice system; Sentencing; Sexual abuse of children; Social learning theory
The Age of Sex Crime, 6
Agency. *See* Personal agency
Agent provocateuring, 258
Ageton, Suzanne, 55
Aggregate studies, 282, 300–301
Agnew, Robert, 135
Agnew, Spiro, 254
Ahern, James, 415
Akers, Ronald, 20, 138–139, 157
Al-Qaida, 18–19, 234–236, 273; alleged link to Saddam Hussein, 235–236, 273; FBI warnings about, 19. *See also* Afghanistan; bin Laden, Osama; Terrorism
Albini, Joseph, 226
Alcohol: arrests related to, 46; dependency and prostitution, 349; and drunk driving, 85; genetic predisposition for alcoholism, 93; prohibition movement and, 152; rates of use by high school seniors, 57; use during pregnancy, 96, 353–354. *See also* Anomie-strain theory
Alfred Murrah Federal Building. *See* Oklahoma City bombing
Alinsky, Saul, 120–121
Allen, Emilie Andersen, 331
Allende, Salvadore, 256–257
American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU), 19, 257, 418, 445
American dream, 125–126, 501. *See also* Anomie-strain theory
American Indian Movement, 155
American Indians/Alaskan Natives, 30. *See also* Native Americans
America's Most Wanted, 4
Ames, Oak, 250
Amir, Menachim, 32
Amnesty International, 470
Anderson, Elijah, 113, 301–304
Anderson, Jack, 205
Anderson, Perry, 493
Andrade, Leandro, 445
Andrews, D. A., 106
Animal Liberation Front, 241
Animal rights movement, 241
Anomie, 114–115, 125
Anomie-strain theory, 125–127, 129–134, 146, 299; adaptations and, 127, 129–132; alcohol/drug addiction and, 130–131; class inequality and, 126; comprehensive community action projects and, 133–134; conformity and, 127; delinquency and, 130–131; fetishism of money and, 126; gangs and, 127, 131; gender and, 134–135; gender generalizability and, 134; innovation and, 127, 129–130; Mobilization for Youth and, 133–134; opportunity programs and,132–133; organized crime and, 127–129, 187–188; racial inequality and, 126; rebellion and, 130–132; relative deprivation and, 126, 133; retreatism and, 130–131; schools and, 130; white-collar/corporate crime and, 129, 187–188. *See also* Durkheim, Émile; Merton, Robert
Anslinger, Harry, 11, 168
Anthony, Susan B., 233
Anti-Drug Abuse Acts of 1986 and 1988, 296–297, 481–482
Anti–nuclear power movement. *See* Nuclear power plants
Anti-Semitism, 238
Antitrust law/violations. *See* Corporate crime; Sherman Antitrust Act
Arbenz, Jacob, 256
Arnold, Ron, 199
Arraignment, 434
Arrests. *See* Police/policing; *Uniform Crime Reports,* arrests
Arson, 39. *See also* Organized crime
Arvanites, Thomas, 50
Aschroft, John, 18
Asians/Asian Americans: and Chinese Exclusion Act, 295; diversity among,

287; and Japanese internment during World War II, 229–230; and organized crime, 128; and rape in traditional Hmong culture, 153. *See also* Drug scares; Drug surveys; Gangs; Hate Crime Statistics Act; Hate crimes; Race; Racial/ethnic groups; Self-report surveys; Shaming; *Uniform Crime Reports*, arrests
Assassinations/assassination attempts: of Allende, Salvadore, 257; of Castro, Fidel, 256; involvement of organized crime in, 256, 258; of Kennedy, John, 6, 258; of Reagan, Ronald, 108; of Schneider, René, 257
Atavists, 89
Attica prison uprising, 459
Augustus, John, 483
Autonomic nervous system and crime, 95

The Bad Seed, 92
Bail, 434; impact on likelihood of conviction and sentence, 434; impact of race/ethnicity and gender in decisions regarding, 434
Baker, Peter, 374
Baldwin, Lola, 421
Balkan, Sheila, 219
Bamford, James, 19
Banco Nazionale del Lavoro, 265. *See also* Iraqgate, George H. W. Bush administration
Bandura, Albert, 59
Bank of Credit and Commerce International, 224. *See also* Organized crime
Banks: complicity in arson fraud, 222–223; complicity in money laundering, 223–224, 261; redlining by, 222, 279. *See also* Central Intelligence Agency, complicity in drug trafficking; Savings and loan scandal; Iraqgate, George H. W. Bush administration
Banks, Dennis, 155
Barlow, Hugh, 45, 428
Barnes, Clifford, 15
Baron, Larry, 326
Barry, Kathleen, 346–347, 349–352
Basic Instinct, 7
Bass, Ellen, 375–376, 384, 391
Batista, Fulgencio, 255–256
"Battered Chic" advertisements, 375
Batterer intervention programs, 403–404; Duluth model of, 403; sporadic batterers and, 403
Battering, 395–404; criminal justice system and, 402–403; definitions of, 396–397; difficulty leaving relationships of, 399–400; experience of, 396–400; in gay and lesbian relationships, 401–402; *Hustler* magazine and, 395; homophobic control and, 401; honeymoon phase of, 398; intraracial, 400–401; mandatory arrest policy and, 62–64, 402; and men's sense of entitlement and need to control, 387–398; prevalence of, 395; race versus gender in, 401; services for victims of, 41–42, 64, 404, 497; of women in prison, 470; and women who kill batterers, 86–87
Battle, Juan, 310
Bay of Pigs operation, 255–256, 258. *See also* Central Intelligence Agency
Beccaria, Cesare, 83
Becker, Gary, 83
Behaviorism, 104–106, 136, 138. *See also* Psychological theories of criminal behavior; Social learning theory
Beirne, Piers, 117
Bell curve, 94. *See also* IQ and delinquency
The Bell Curve, 94; critique of, 94–95
Bell, Mychal, 310
Bennett, Michael, 310
Benson, Michael, 499
Bentham, Jeremy, 83
Berg, Alan, 242
Bergen, Peter, 236
Bergman, Jack, 173
Berk, Richard, 62, 64
Berne, Suzanne, 363
Bernstein, Carl, 253
Best, Joel, 245
Betz, Michael, 154
Bhati, Avinsah, 282
Bianchi, Kenneth, 368–369
Bianco, Lisa, 396
Bias, Len, 482
bin Laden, Osama: and 1993 World Trade Center bombing, 235; escape from Afghanistan to Pakistan, 236;

and Kenya and Tanzania embassy bombings, 235; and September 11, 2001, attacks, 18, 235; and USS *Cole* bombing, 235. *See also* Hussein, Saddam; Terrorism
Binet, Alfred, 93
Bing, Léon, 315
Biological theories of criminal behavior, 88–99, 114; African Americans/people of color in, 89, 94, 287; applications of, 90–91, 96–101; critique of research on, 90, 92–98; family inheritance and, 92–93; women offenders in, 89, 97–98. *See also* Body types and crime; Criminal anthropology; Eugenics
Biosocial theory, 91; and genetic predispositions for crime, 91, 93
Birsch, Douglas, 186
Birth of a Nation, 15
Black, Donald, 41
Blackwater USA, 214, 276
Blair, Tony, 273
Blandon, Danilo, 262
Blazak, Randy, 106, 308–310, 323
Blumstein, Alfred, 50, 55
Body types and crime, 90
Boesky, Ivan, 216
Boland Amendment. *See* Iran-Contra scandal
Bonnie and Clyde, 231
Boot camps. *See* Shock incarceration
Bourgois, Philippe, 65–67, 70, 337
Bowers v. Hardwick, 160
Bowers, William, 88
Boyd, Graham, 445
Boys Don't Cry, 244
Brace, Charles Loring, 27
Bradwell v. Illinois, 32
Brady Handgun Violence Prevention Act (Brady Bill), 15–16, 50
Brady, James (arson study), 222–223
Brady, James (Reagan's press secretary), 15–16, 108
Brady, Katherine, 371
Braga, Anthony, 172
Braithwaite, John, 143, 491, 500
Branch Davidian religious sect, and shootout at Waco, Texas, compound, 239. *See also* Koresh, David; McVeigh, Timothy; Terrorism, right-wing domestic
Brandl, Steven, 292
Brandley, Clarence Lee, 452
Brank. *See* Punishment
Bratton, William, 48–49
Breuer, Josef, 102
Britton, Dana, 479
Brockway, Zebulon, 458
Brod, Harry, 374
Broken windows strategy of policing. *See* Police/policing
Brown v. Board of Education, 310
Brown, Lee, 16
Brown v. Mississippi, 407
Brown, Thomas Kiel, 445
Brown, William, 277
Browne, Angela, 357
Brownmiller, Susan, 363
Brownstein, Harry, 12, 44
Buchanan, Pat, 269
Buckley, William, 259
Bundy, Ted, 358, 368–369
Buono, Angelo, 368–369
Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms, involvement in Ruby Ridge and Branch Davidian incidents, 238–239
Bureau of Narcotics, 11, 168
Burk, Connie, 402
Burkett, Stephen, 147
Burris-Kitchen, Deborah, 334
Bursik, Robert, 298
Bush, George H. W.: crime control policies of, 14–15; as director of CIA, 259; and Iran-Contra scandal, 264; and Iraqgate scandal, 264–265; and William Horton campaign ad, 14–15
Bush, George W., 17–19, 176, 268; association with Enron, 18; association with Jack Abramhoff, 252; claims about Saddam Hussein, 20, 235–236, 273–274; crime control policies of, 18–19; disputed election of, 181, 268–273; environmental and regulatory policies of, 176–177, 199–200, 202, 210; and January 2003 State of the Union address, 274; tax policies of, 273. *See also* Cheney, Dick; Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration; Presidential election of 2000; Presidential election of 2004
Bush v. Gore, 270–271

Bush, Jeb, 270, 272
Businesses, crimes by. *See* Corporate crime; Insider trading; White-collar crime
Butler, Paul, 440
Byrd, James, 242

Calavita, Kitty, 198, 215, 226–227
Calhoun, Craig, 203
Cameron, Deborah, 362, 366–367
Campbell, Anne, 332–334, 336
Canaan, Joyce, 322
Caning, 449
Cannabis. *See* Drug policy; Marijuana
Capital Correctional Resources Incorporated, 463
Capital punishment. *See* Death penalty
Capitalism, 28, 278; adolescent subcultures and, 306; business/corporate concentration and, 188–190; business cycles and, 280; as a casino economy, 216; crime and, 156–157; deindustrialization and, 121; gentrification and, 122; golden age of, 280; historical evolution of, 188–189, 278–281, 306; income and conditions of work under, 281; and nineteenth-century policing, 409; primary and secondary labor markets in, 281; Reagan administration policies and, 280; reforms of, 117, 189, 196–197; street crime and, 156–157, 280; structural unemployment and, 281–283; surplus population and, 156, 282–283; urbanization/suburbanization and, 279–280, 306. *See also* Class/class structure*;* Corporate crime; Engels, Friedrich; Left realism; Marx, Karl; Regulatory law
Capone, Al, 129
Capture theory, 200. *See also* Regulatory law
Caputi, Jane, 6, 364, 366, 368
Carlson, Susan, 283, 460
Carpenter, Cheryl, 85
Carroll, Leo, 292
Carter, Jimmy, 14, 258–259
Carter, Sunny, 345
Casey, William, 259–260, 263–264
Casino, 7
Castro, Fidel, 255–256
Causes of Delinquency, 32, 144
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA): association with Abdul Rahman, 235; Bank of Credit and Commerce International and, 224; establishment of, 256; exclusion from Department of Homeland Security, 19; former operatives involved in Watergate burglary, 254; illegal domestic operations and, 258; reduction in covert operatives under Jimmy Carter, 258–259; role in assassinations/assassination attempts, 256–258; role in Iraq intelligence, 20, 273–274; role in overthrowing foreign governments, 256–257, 260, 263; role in Watergate cover-up, 254; support of "death squads," 257. *See also* Bay of Pigs operation; Iran-Contra scandal
Central Intelligence Agency, complicity in drug trafficking: in Afghanistan, 261; African American community and, 262; Contras and, 262; Corsican syndicate and, 261; during Vietnam War, 261; Frederick Hitz's investigation of, 262; Gary Webb's exposé of, 262; Nugan Hand Bank and, 261
Central Park "wilding" incident, 100, 441. *See also* Wrongful convictions
Cernkovich, Stephen, 330–331, 333
Chain gangs, 475
Chalabi, Ahmed, 20
Chalk, Frank, 73
Challenger disaster, 6
Chambliss, William, 25, 67, 226, 307, 317
Champion, Cheryl, 373
Cheney, Dick, 18, 20, 176, 273–275; association with Enron, 18; association with Halliburton, 218. *See also* Bush, George W.; Iraqgate, George W. Bush adminstration
Chesney-Lind, Meda, 124, 330, 332
Chicago Area Project, 119–121, 132, 165, 494; and detached street workers, 120. *See also* Social disorganization theory
Chicanos, 8–9, 25; code of honor and, 302; moral panic regarding, 9. *See also* Gangs; Hispanics; Prison gangs
Child abuse and neglect, 102, 326, 334; postpartum influences on, 97; prevention of, 495. *See also* Female genital

mutilation; Freudian psychology; Homeless/homelessness; Juvenile justice system; Murder; Pornography; Sexual abuse of children
Chinese. *See* Asians/Asian Americans
Chinese Exclusion Act, 295
Chiricos, Theodore, 282–283
ChoicePoint, and the 2000 presidential election, 274
The Choirboys, 426
Christenson, R. L., 283
Christian Identity, 238, 249. *See also* Terrorism, right-wing domestic; Weaver, Randy
Church Committee, 233–234, 257–258
Church, Frank, 233
A Civil Action, 7
Civil disobedience, 153, 233–234, 239–240. *See also* Political crime and rebellion
Civil law, 23–24, 57
Civil Rights Act of 1964, 310, 419
Civil rights movement, 23, 153–154; impact on prison protest movement, 459. *See also* Civil disobedience; King, Martin Luther, Jr.; Parks, Rosa; Political crime and rebellion
Civil War, 71–72, 233, 247
Clamshell Alliance, 240
Clark, John, 85
Class/class structure, 27–29; capitalism and, 28; capitalist class and, 28; conflict and, 116, 156–157; criminal behavior across, 29; inequality and, 28, 278; life experience and, 29; professional-managerial class and, 28; racial inequality and, 133; urban underclass and, 121, 133; working class and, 28, working poor and, 28. *See also* Anomie-strain theory; Capitalism; Conflict theory; Juvenile delinquency; Self-report surveys; Urban underclass
Classical criminology, 82–84, 88; and the death penalty, 83. *See also* Deterrence; Neoclassical criminology; Rational-choice theory
Clinard, Marshall, 57–58, 191–193, 195, 200
Clinton, Bill: antitrust policies of, 205; budget surplus left by, 273; crime control policies of, 15–17; election of, 265–266; Filegate and, 267; foreign campaign contributions and, 267; Fostergate and, 267; impeachment of, 17, 268; investigation of CIA complicity in drug trafficking and, 262; and Monica Lewinsky, 17, 268; and Paula Jones sexual harassment lawsuit, 268; perjury committed by, 268; regulatory policies of, 199, 209; Travelgate and, 267; Whitewater scandal and, 266
Clinton, Hillary, 266; and Rose Law Firm transactions, 266–267
Cloward, Richard, 233
Cocaine/crack cocaine: drug scares/media stories involving, 12–13, 56–57, 295–296, 481; gender roles in selling of, 340–343; Harrison Narcotics Act and criminalization of, 295; manufacturer of, 12; nature of market for, 12, 50, 340–343; penalties for crack versus powder, 296–297, 445; penalties specified in Anti-Drug Abuse Acts of 1986 and 1988, 296–297, 481–482; prior to criminalization, 294; prostitution and, 342–343; racial/ethnic differences in use of, 294; violence and, 12. *See also* Drug policy; Drug scares; Drug surveys; Drug trade/dealers
Cochran, Johnnie, 440
Code of the street, 113, 301–302, 338
Cohen, Albert, 32, 123–124, 130–131
Cohen, Bernard, 348
Cohen, Lawrence, 123–124
Colby, William, 261
Cold War, 256–257
Coleman, James, 192–193, 197–198
Coleman, Juleigh, 500
Colfax, Schuyler, 250
Collective conscience, 115. *See also* Durkheim, Émile
Collective efficacy, 496. *See also* Personal agency; Self-efficacy
Collective rebellion. *See* Political crime and rebellion
College Republicans, 252
Columbine High School shootings, 174–175, 323. *See also* School shootings
Comfort, Alex, 395

Commission on Wartime Relocation and Internment of Civilians, 230
Communism, 116, 264. *See also* Cold War; Soviet Union
Community conference strategy, 491–492. *See also* Restitution; Restorative justice; Victim-offender mediation
Community corrections, 450, 482–493, 498. *See also* Parole; Probation; Rehabilitation; Restorative justice
Community crime prevention. *See* Anomie-strain theory; Crime, prevention of; Situational crime prevention
Community organizers and crime prevention. *See* Chicago Area Project; Mobilization for Youth
Community policing, 17, 413–415, 475, 497; and paramilitary police units, 415; police resistance to, 414–415; research on effectiveness of, 414; and Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act, 17. *See also* Organizational styles of policing; Police/policing
Comparative method, 71, 73
Comprehensive community action projects. *See* Anomie-strain theory; Crime, prevention of
Computer crime: child pornography on Internet, 179; cyberstalking and, 179; hackers and hacker subculture, 177–178; identity theft and, 178; organized online criminals and, 178; phishing and, 178–179; salami slicing and, 177; viruses and, 178. *See also* Postmodernity; Presidential Election of 2004
Comte, Auguste, 88
The Conditions of the Working Class in England in 1844, 116
Conflict perspective on crime, 24
Conflict theory, 152; class conflict and, 116, 156–157; crimes of accommodation and resistance and, 156; crimes of economic domination and, 156, 201; crimes of repression and, 156, 230; culture conflict and, 152–153; group conflict and, 152–154; racial conflict and, 153–156; street crime and, 156–157; surplus population and, 156, 282. *See also* Capitalism; Crime; Critical criminology
Conklin, John, 49–50
Connell, R. W., 324
Consensus perspective on crime, 24
Conservatives and crime. *See* Crime policy; Politics of crime control
The Constant Gardener, 7
Consumer Product Safety Commission. *See* Regulatory law
Consumer rights movement, 185
Consumerism/consumers: adolescents and, 130; advertising and, 175, 496–497; crime prevention and, 496; and females involvement in shoplifting, 327
Contanzo, Mark, 452
Continetti, Matthew, 252
Contract with America, 252
Conyers, John, 181
Cooper, Jeff, 174
Coors, Joseph, 199
Cops, 4
Cordner, Gary, 414
Cordova, Roberto Suazo, 264
Coriell, Mary Ellen, 79–80
Corporate crime, 24, 156–157, 187; A. H. Robbins intrauterine device and, 207; anomie-strain theory and, 187; antitrust violations, 24, 189–190, 192–193, 205–206; Archers Daniels Midland antitrust violations and, 205; asbestos exposure and, 203–204; in automobile/motor vehicle industry, 186–187, 191–195, 206–207; Bridgestone Corporation tires and, 206; by Chrysler, 206; contaminated food/pet food and, 196, 208, 210; costs to consumers from, 205–211; costs to general public from, 211–218; costs to workers from, 202–205; criminogenic market structure and, 191–193; defective toys and, 210; Dow Corning breast implants and, 209; in electrical equipment industry, 141; Ely Lilly/Oraflex and, 208; environmental racism and, 212; by Film Recovery Systems, 202–203; by Ford Motor Company, 186–187, 194–195, 206–207; by General Electric, 141; by General Motors,

206; hazardous waste disposal and, 211–212; Hooker Chemical Corporation/Love Canal and, 211–212; insidious injuries/postponed violence and, 203; by J. P. Stevens, 204; by Johns-Manville, 204; by Kerr-McGee Corporation, 204–205; by Liggett Group, 210; by McCane, Inc., 203; Merck & Co/Vioxx and, 197, 207; by Microsoft Corporation, 205–206; middle-level managers' view of, 193; in mining industry, 202; Nestlé infant formula and, 26; in nuclear power industry, 204–205; in oil refinery industry, 191; oil spill by *Exxon Valdez* and, 213; in pharmaceutical industry, 191, 197, 207–208; by Philip Morris, 209; price-fixing and, 3, 24, 141, 205; Procter & Gamble/Rely tampon and, 208; by R. J. Reynolds and, 209; Richardson-Merrell/thalidomide and, 207; tax evasion and, 213; in textile industry, 204; in tobacco industry, 209–210; top management's knowledge of, 193–194; toxic shock syndrome and, 208; by Tyson Foods, 208–209; by Union Carbide plant in Bhopal, India, 212–213; by Wal-Mart, 206; by Westinghouse, 141. *See also* Banks; Ford Pinto case; Organized crime; Regulatory law; Savings and loan scandal; Sherman Antitrust Act; Sutherland, Edwin; Tobacco industry, attorneys general lawsuit; Whistle-blowing; White-collar crime

Corporate culture and crime, 193–195; external environment and, 193; financial oriented managers and, 193; internal environment and, 193; man(agerial) masculinity and, 195; professional oriented managers and, 193; selective recruitment and, 195; top management's role in, 193–194

Corporate dumping into foreign markets and, 73

Corporate financial fraud, 3, 27; by Adelphia, 217, 227; by Arthur Andersen, 218; by Blackwater USA, 214, 276; by Citigroup, 218; by Enron, 18, 27, 216–217; by General Dynamics, 214; by Global Crossing, 217; by Halliburton, 214, 218, 276; Hurricane Katrina and, 214; Iraq War and, 214; by J. P. Morgan Chase & Company, 218; Medicare/Medicaid insurance and, 214; predatory lending and, 218; by Quest communications, 213; by WorldCom, 213. *See also* Insider trading; Madoff, Bernard; Ponzi scheme; Savings and loan scandal

Corporate management. *See* Corporate culture and crime

Corporate socialism/corporatism, 190

Corporate welfare, 280

Corporations: cost-benefit approach to decisionmaking in, 195–196, history of, 188–189

Correctional officers: custodial style, 475–477; goon squad, 476; human-service style, 475, 477–478; impact of organizational environment on, 479; job satisfaction of, 477; masculinity and, 478; minority, 478–479; organizational styles of correctional work and, 475–478; sexual harassment of women by, 479; treatment of prisoners by, 476–478; women, 478–479. *See also* Prison

Correctional system: number of adults in, 450. *See also* Community corrections; Jails; Parole; Prison

Corrections Corporation of America, 463

Cose, Ellis, 305

Counseling, peer group, 139. *See also* Therapeutic communities

Court TV/truTV, 4

Courtesy stigma, 66

Courts: arraignment in, 435; initial appearance in, 434; as a multitiered system, 431; origin of 431; preliminary hearing in 434. *See also* Bail; Defense attorneys; Grand jury; Juvenile justice system; Prosecutors; Summary trial; Trial; Trial by jury

COYOTE (Call Off Your Old Tired Ethics), 350

Crack cocaine. *See* Cocaine/crack cocaine

Crawford, Elizabeth, 135

Cressey, Donald, 224–225
Crime, amount and rates of. *See* Self-report surveys; *National Crime Victimization Survey; Uniform Crime Reports*
Crime, definition of: analogous social injury, 25–26, 152; culture conflict and, 152–153; human rights, 25–26, 152; labeling theory and, 24–25; legalistic, 23, 152, 187
Crime displacement, 125
Crime fighters, 5–6; and FBI as model of professional, 410; as superheroes, 5
Crime policy: Brady Handgun Violence Prevention Act (Brady Bill) and, 15–16, 50; conservative views on, 13, 81, 147, 443, 449, 460; Democratic Party/politicians and, 13–17, 174, 460, 481–482; knee-jerk approach to, 482; liberal views on, 13, 132–134, 157, 443; passage of drug legislation and, 11, 295–297, 481–482; Presidential Commission on Law Enforcement and the Administration of Justice and, 13; Republican Party/politicians and, 13–17, 174, 460, 481–482; Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act and, 17. *See also* Bush, George H. W.; Bush, George W.; Clinton, Bill; Reagan, Ronald; Regulatory law; Sentencing
Crime, prevention of, 165, 493–497; Chicago Area Project and, 119–121, 132, 165, 494; comprehensive community action projects and, 133–134; continual opportunities for growth and, 502; employment and, 133, 282, 494; gender and, 497; liberal programs of 1960s and, 132–134, 494; media and, 496; Mobilization for Youth and, 133–134, 494; primary, secondary, and tertiary prevention and, 165; quality of work/job satisfaction and, 284, 494; situational crime prevention and, 124–125; social disorganization and, 494–495; and white-collar crime and, 498–499. *See also* Anomie-strain theory; Peacemaking criminology; Routine activities theory; Social disorganization theory; White-collar crime
Crime, underreporting of, 37, 41–45, 52–53, 245, 385. *See also National Crime Victimization Survey*; Self-report surveys; *Uniform Crime Reports*
Crime waves, 8; crimes against the elderly and, 8; gangs and, 8–9; serial murder and, 10. *See also* Drug scares; Moral panic
Criminal anthropology, 90–91. *See also* Eugenics
Criminal justice: criminology versus, 21; education in the field of, 21; versus social justice, 182
Criminal justice system, 408, 431; African Americans under control of, 31; crime control model of, 408; due process model of, 408. *See also* Courts; Correctional system; Death penalty; Defense attorneys; Jails; Judges; Parole; Police/policing; Prison; Probation; Punishment; Sentencing; Trial; Trial by jury
Criminal law, 23–24, 57–58
Criminalization, 25, 152; of drugs, 166
Criminogenic market structure, 191–193
Criminogenic regulatory structure, 227
Criminology, 20; criminal justice versus, 21; interdisciplinary components of, 20; sociology and, 20
Critical criminology/criminologists, 25, 152, 201; feminist criminology and, 157–159; left realism and, 157, 494; peacemaking criminology and, 161, 164–165, 170, 182, 493; role of power and, 164. *See also* Conflict theory; Postmodernism
Cruel and unusual punishment, 88, 445, 451. *See also* Death penalty
CSI: Crime Scene Investigation, 100
Cubellis, Louis, 413
Cullen, Francis, 94, 499
Culture conflict, 152; abortion and, 152; alcohol prohibition and, 152; drugs and, 153; immigration and, 152–153; rape in traditional Hmong culture and, 153
Cunningham, Randy, 251, 253
Currie, Cameron, 439

Currie, Elliott, 133, 284, 494
Curtis, Lynn, 301
Curtis, Richard, 342–343
Cyberstalking, 179

D'Allesio, Stewart, 291
Dahmer, Jeffrey, 110–111, 358. *See also* Serial murder/murderers
Dalgard, Odd, 92
Dalton, Katharina, 97–98
Daly, Kathleen, 124, 341–343, 491
Damiens, Robert Francois, 82
Dannefur, Dale, 292
Darden, Christopher, 417
Darwin, Charles, 89
Database Technologies, and the 2000 presidential election, 272
Davidson, Lewis, 244
Davis, Angela, 380
Davis, Laura, 392
Dawley, David, 22
Dean, John, 254
Death penalty, 451–457; African American and Latina women and, 455; aggravating and mitigating conditions and use of, 451; appeal process and, 452–453; Bill Clinton and, 15, 455; brutalization effect of, 88; George W. Bush and, 455; classical criminologists' view of, 83; costs associated with use of, 452; as cruel and unusual punishment, 88, 451; deterrent effect of, 83, 88; and execution of Gary Gilmore, 451; and execution of Karla Faye Tucker, 455; and execution of Stanley Tooky Williams, 454; impact of race of offender on decisions regarding, 443, 446, 451–454; impact of race of victim on decisions regarding, 446, 454; juveniles and, 456; lethal injection and other methods of execution and, 454; mental retardation and, 456; number of states with, 452; rise in use of, 449, 452; US Supreme Court decisions about, 88, 451, 453, 456; women and, 454–456; wrongful convictions and, 442, 452–453. *See also Furman v. Georgia; McCleskey v. Kemp*
Decent families, 303–304. *See also* Street families
Decriminalization, 143; of drugs, 143, 166; of gambling, 143; of prostitution, 350; of status offenses, 329. *See also* Labeling theory/labeling
Deep ecology, 241
Deep Throat, 370–371
Defense attorneys: in an adversary system, 435–438; belief in clients' guilt or innocence, 437; death penalty cases and assignment of, 453; disreputable behavior by, 437–438; impression management and, 436–437; plea bargaining and, 435–436. *See also* Trial; Trial by jury
DeFina, Robert, 50
Deindustrialization, 121, 316
DeKeseredy, Walter, 159
DeLay, Tom, 252–253
Democratic Party/politicians. *See* Crime policy
Demuth, Stephen, 447–448
Department of Agriculture. *See* Regulatory law
Department of Homeland Security, 18
Department of Housing and Urban Development. *See* Governmental crime
Deregulation movement. *See* Regulatory law; Savings and loan scandal
Dershowitz, Alan, 270–271
Desistance from crime, 149–150. *See also* Life-course research; Social control theory
Deterrence, 83–88, 283; and corporate/white-collar crime, 86; death penalty and, 83, 88; effect of certainty, celerity, and severity of punishment and, 83–84; perceptions of punishment and, 84–85; research on effects of punishment, 84–88; stake in conformity and, 85. *See also* Classical criminology; Neoclassical criminology; Rational-choice theory
Deutch, John, 262
Diallo, Amadou, 430
Diaz, Tom, 171–172
Diebold Incorporated, 181
Differential association theory, 136–138; adolescent peer groups and, 137; behaviorism and, 136; definitions and, 136; gang rape and, 137; symbolic interactionism and, 136; white-collar crime and, 137. *See*

also Social learning theory; Sutherland, Edwin
Dillinger, John, 231
Dirty Harry, 5
Disintegrative shaming, 143; and restitution, 490. *See* also Reintegrative shaming
Distributive justice, 501
District attorneys. *See* Prosecutors
DNA and the criminal justice system, 100–101; and Central Park "wilding" incident, 100, 441; as portrayed in television shows, 100
Dobash, Russell, 357
Dobkowski, Michael, 181
Doheny, Edward, 250–251
Doing gender, 34, 321–324; in policing, 421–423. *See also* Gender
Domestic violence. *See* Battering
Dominion theology and environmental deregulation, 199
Donnerstein, Edward, 60
Donohue, John, 50
Donovan, Raymond, 198
Dowie, Mark, 195
Downing Street Memo. *See* Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration
Drass, Kriss, 298
"Driving while black," 417. *See also* Racial profiling by police
Drug addiction, 86, 130–131, 167–169, 294–295; and prostitution, 131, 342–345, 349
Drug courts, 493; effectiveness of, 493. *See also* Restorative justice
Drug Enforcement Administration, 12, 15, 261–262
Drug policy, 165–170; critics of, 165–167, 170; decriminalization, 143, 166; discrimination against minorities in, 30–31, 294–297; as a factor in rising incarceration rates, 297, 460; in historical and comparative perspective, 168–169, 294–297, 481–482; legalization, 166–169; needle exchange programs and, 167, 169. *See also* Cocaine/crack cocaine; Marijuana; War on drugs
Drug scares, 11; African Americans and, 11, 295–296; Chinese and, 11, 295; cocaine/crack cocaine and, 11–12, 56, 295–296; marijuana and, 11, 295–296; Mexicans and, 11, 295–296; *Newsweek* magazine coverage of, 56–57. *See also* Cocaine/crack cocaine; Crime waves; Marijuana; Moral panic
Drug surveys, 56–57, 170; Monitoring the Future project, 56–57, 294; rates of use by gender, 327–328; rates of use by high school seniors, 56–57; rates of use by race/ethnicity, 294
Drug trade/dealers, 64–65; black versus Latina women in, 341, 343; gender roles in, 340–343; and organized crime, 128, 219; structure of, 313, 341. *See also* Central Intelligence Agency, complicity in drug trafficking
Drug treatment: declining resources for/obstacles to receiving, 14, 354, 460; drug courts and, 493; heroin maintenance and, 168–169; methadone maintenance and, 167, 354
Drummond, Edward, 107
Drunk driving, 85. *See also* Alcohol
Dugan, Lisa, 63
Dugdale, Richard, 92
Dukakis, Michael, 14–15
Duke, David, 248
Dunn, Jennifer, 364
Durgan, Bridget, 79–80
Durkheim, Émile: anomie and, 115, 125, 494; collective conscience and, 115; functionalism and, 116; normality of crime and, 494; punishment and, 450; social control theory and, 144; suicide and, 115
Dworkin, Andrea, 361, 394, 399–400

Earth First!, 241
Earth Liberation Front, 241–242
Eastwood, Clint, 5
Eaves, Elisabeth, 346
Economic Opportunity Act of 1964, 132
Economists and crime, 83
Ecoterrorism, 241
Edelstein, Judy, 346
Edgar, Jim, 456
Eig, Jonathan, 415
Eighteenth Amendment, 152
Eighth Amendment, and cruel and unusual punishment, 88, 445, 451

Eisenck, Hans, 95
Eisenhower, Dwight, 462
El-Amin, Norman, 418
Elderly, crime against. *See* Crime waves
Elders, Jocelyn, 16
Electronic monitoring. *See* Probation
Elliott, Delbert, 55
Elliott, Pam, 402
Ellis, John, 269
Ellsberg, Daniel: burglary of psychiatrist's office, 253; and release of "The Pentagon Papers," 253
Elmira Reformatory, 458
Embezzlement, 215; punishment of, 500; women's involvement in, 327. *See also* Savings and loan scandal
Emerson, Robert, 365
Employee theft, 3
Employment and crime. *See* Crime, prevention of; Prison; Rehabilitation; Unemployment
Engels, Friedrich, 116–117, 156–157, 231
English, Christine, 97
Enlightenment, 82–83
Enron. *See* Bush, George W.; Cheney, Dick; Corporate financial fraud; Lay, Kenneth; Skilling, Jeffrey
Environmental hazards, exposure to, 211. *See also* Corporate crime; Organized crime; Regulatory law
Environmental movement, 240–241. *See also* Ecoterrorism; Deep ecology; Earth First!; Earth Liberation Front; Greenpeace; Sea Shepard Conservation Society; Terrorism, left-wing domestic
Environmental Protection Agency. *See* Regulatory law; Sewergate
Environmental racism, 212
Environmental regulation/deregulation. *See* Bush, George W.; Regulatory law; Sewergate
Equal Employment Opportunity Commission, 207
Equal Opportunity Act of 1972, 419
Erotica, 369; versus pornography, 369. *See also* Pornography
Eroticization of violence, 60, 372–373, 375, 395. *See also* Gorenography; Pornography; "Slasher" films
Errors in thinking approach, 106
Estrich, Susan, 37
Ethnic succession in organized crime. *See* Organized crime
Ethnicity, 29–30. *See also* Racial/ethnic groups
Ethnography, 64. *See also* Observational field research
Eugenics, 90–91; involuntary sterilization and, 91; Nazi regime and, 91
Evaluation research, 59, 62; and mandatory arrest of women batterers, 62–64
Evans, T. David, 147
Ewing, Gary, 445
Exclusionary rule and, 425; exceptions to, 425; impact on dismissed cases of, 425. *See also Mapp v. Ohio;* Police/policing; *Weeks v. United States*
Exhaustion psychosis, 356; and myth of motherhood, 356
Experimental method, 59–61; field experiment, 62; and media experiments on aggression, 59–62; and media experiments on pornography, 371–372; media experiments on "Slasher" films and, 60. *See also* Evaluation research
Extraordinary rendition, 275. *See* Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration

Fagan, Jeffrey, 340–341, 343
Fall, Albert, 250–251
Family and crime/delinquency: adoption and, 92–93; child abuse/neglect and, 102, 148, 495; and crime prevention, 494–495; "decent" and "street" families, 303–304; gang members views' of, 337; genetics and, 92–93; immigration and, 118; impact of incarceration on, 461, 471–472; life-course research and, 148–150; marriage and, 148–149; motherhood and, 337, 356; parenting and, 101–102, 122, 138, 303–304; pseudofamilies among women in prison, 469; religion and, 148; social control theory and, 144–146; "street families" (among homeless youths), 265; twins

and, 92–93. *See also* Abortion; Child abuse; Female murderers; Female offenders; Fetal abuse/abusers; Freudian psychology; Murder; Sexual abuse of children; Social control theory
Fatal Attraction, 7
Fay, Michael, 12
Fear of crime, 1–2; influences on, 2
Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI): counterintelligence operations of, 257–258; crack down against Ku Klux Klan, 248; creation of *Uniform Crime Reports* and, 38; estimates of organized crime families, 224; exclusion from Department of Homeland security, 19; illegal activities of, 234, 258; investigation of Martin Luther King, Jr., 233–234, 257; as model of professional crime fighter, 410; role in Ruby Ridge and Branch Davidian incidents and, 238–239; role in Watergate cover-up, 254; serial murder problem and, 10–11; warnings about terrorist attack, 19. *See also* Hoover, J. Edgar
Federal Crime Bill (1994). *See* Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act
Federal Prison Industries (UNICOR), 475
Feinberg, Leslie, 162–163
Felson, Marcus, 123–124
Female genital mutilation, 74–76; the intersexed and, 75
Female murderers: battering and, 86, 357; class and race and, 332; compared to males, 355, 357–359; exhaustion psychosis and, 356; films about, 7; of intimate partners, 86, 357; motherhood and killing of children by, 355–357; and postpartum depression, 356; prior arrest records of, 358; serial murderers, 358–360. *See also* Death penalty; Murder; Serial murder/murderers
Female offenders/delinquents: attitudes toward abortion among, 337; attitude toward women's liberation/rights among, 330–331; use of birth control by, 337; criminal justice chivalry toward/viewed as less blameworthy, 33, 329, 447, 454–456; early criminologists' characterizations of, 32, 89, 115; in gangs, 332–337; relationship between criminality and victimization and, 86–87, 102, 148, 159, 334. *See also* Anomie-strain theory; Gender; Postpartum influences on crime; Premenstrual syndrome and crime; Self-report surveys; Social control theory; Social learning theory
Femininity/femininities, 34, 320, 324; "bad girl" femininity, 336. *See also* Gangs; Gender
Feminism/feminist movement, 41, 157, 328; law reform and, 41, 380. *See also* Pornography; Women's liberation
Feminist criminology, 157–159; blurred boundaries between criminality and victimization and, 159; gender generalizability and, 124, 158; intersectionalities and, 159, 162. *See also* Critical criminology; Gender
Ferracuti, Franco, 300
Ferraro, Geraldine, 485
Ferrell, Jeff, 69–70
Fetal abuse/abusers, 351–355; alcohol abuse, nutritional deficiencies, and poverty as causes of, 354; and "boarder babies," 353, 355; "crack babies" and "crack mothers," 351–352; criminalization of, 353–354; fetal rights and, 353; nonpunitive interventions for, 355; state legislation regarding, 353; testing of pregnant women for, 353
Fielder, John, 186
Fifth Amendment, 407
Figueria-McDonough, Josephine, 330
Filicide. *See* Murder
Financial crimes. *See* Banks; Corporate financial fraud; Insider trading; Savings and loan scandal; White-collar crime
Finkelhor, David, 326, 352
Firmage, Edwin, 256
First Amendment, 274, 375. *See also* Pornography
Fishbein, Diane, 99
Fishman, Mark, 8–9

Fitzgerald, Patrick, 274–275
Flogging. *See* Punishment
Floyd, Pretty Boy, 231
Food and Drug Administration, product testing by, 197. *See also* Regulatory law
Ford, Gerald, pardoning of Richard Nixon, 254
Ford, Henry, II, 185
Ford, Nancy, 210
Ford Pinto case, 186–187, 194–195, 206; reckless homicide trial of, 186–187
Forensic Files, 100
Fort, Jeff, 314
Foster, Jody, 108, 365
Foster, Vince, 267
Fourteenth Amendment. *See* Presidential election of 2000
Fourth Amendment: US Supreme Court rulings regarding, 176, 425, 429. *See also* Exclusionary rule
Frazer, Elizabeth, 362, 366–367
Freakonomics: A Rogue Economist Explores the Hidden Side of Everything, 50
Free, Marvin, 434, 442
Free will, 83
Freeh, Louis, 424
Freud, Sigmund, 99, 101–102; psychoanalytic theory of, 99, 101; seduction theory of, 102
Freudian psychology, 99, 101–102; abuse of females in, 102; criticisms of, 101; and early explanations of juvenile delinquency, 99; id, ego, and superego in, 99, 115; and parent-child interaction, 99, 101; treatment of women in, 102
Friday the 13th, 6
Friedrichs, David, 98, 197
Fugitive Slave Law, 233
Fuhrman, Mark, 8–9, 417
Functionalism, 116
Furman v. Georgia, 451, 453
Fyfe, James, 415, 426, 428–429

Gambling/casino industry, 68, 128, 143, 219, 225, 252
Gandhi, Mahatma, 161, 233
Gang rape, 124, 137; fraternities and, 124
Gangs, 9, 22, 65–66, 306, 311–318; African Americans in, 314–317, 335, 337; Asian Americans/Chinese in, 314–315; Black P Stone Nation, 314; birth control used by members in, 337; Chicanos in, 9, 25, 312, 333–334; crime waves/moral panics and, 9; Crips and Bloods, 22, 131, 315–316, 469; cultural diffusion of, 316; El Rukn, 314; European immigrants and, 312; female autonomy in, 335; females in, 332–337; femininity in, 336–337; gender composition of, 333; gender stratification in, 334–335; initiation rituals in, 325–336; labeling of, 142; Latinos/Latinas in, 314, 333, 337; law-violating youth groups and, 306, 311; masculinity in, 336; multiple generations in, 119, 312; Native Americans in, 316–317; nonresident membership in, 315–316; observational research on, 65–66; older youths in, 314; organized crime and, 314; People and Folks, 316; in prison, 314, 468–469; Puerto Ricans and, 313; reasons for joining, 312, 334; robbery by female members of, 340; self-report surveys of, 333; sex among members in, 333–335; in small cities and rural areas, 316; taggers and, 309–310; turf/symbolic territoriality and, 131, 310; Vice Lords, 22. *See also* Adolescent subcultures; Anomie-strain theory; Prison gangs
Gangsta rap, 303, 309
Garcia, Guinevere and George, 455–456
Garfield, James, 250
Garner, Edward, 429
Garner, Tyrone, 160
Gates, Bill, 205
Gault, Gerald, 432
Gays/lesbians, 151, 159–161; battering and, 401–402; and Catholic clergy, 386; criminalization of, 151, 159–160; "don't ask, don't tell" military policy and, 160; gay rights movement and, 160; homophobia and, 161, 244; homophobic control and, 401; homosexual panic defense and, 246; Jeffrey Dahmer and, 110–111; marriage of, 161; relation-

ships in prison, 464, 469; sexual abuse and, 386, 388; sodomy/sodomy laws and, 151, 159; US Supreme Court decisions regarding, 151–152, 160; violence against, 243–246. *See also Bowers v. Hardwick;* Hate crimes; *Lawrence v. Texas;* Stonewall Rebellion; Transgendered/transsexuals
Geis, Gilbert, 500
Gender, 32–34; and accommodating masculinity, 322, 324; and anomie-strain theory, 134–135; and attitudes toward punishment, 449; and changing position of women, 134–135, 328; and conventional femininity (emphasized), 320, 324, 333; and conventional masculinity (hegemonic), 324; and crime prevention, 497; and death penalty, 454–456; doing gender, 34, 321–324; doing gender in policing, 421–423; doing masculinity, 322; and drug use, 327–328; and the drug trade, 340–343; and embezzlement and white-collar crime, 327; and gangs, 332–337; and general patterns of criminality 34, 325–330; and general patterns of victimization, 34; and increases in female criminality, 135, 328–329; and intersectionalities, 159, 162; and intersections of race/ethnicity and class, 34, 135, 324, 331–332, 334; and intersexed people, 33, 75; and masculine rage, 323; and masculinity-liberation theory, 328–331; and oppositional femininity, 333; and oppositional masculinity, 338; and robbery 340–348; and running away, 103, 148, 159, 326, 330; and shoplifting, 135, 326–327; traditional criminologists' view of, 32, 158–159; and traditional socialization, 33–34, 146, 158; and white supremacist masculinity, 72, 242–243. *See also* Bail; Battering; Correctional officers; Crime, prevention of; Death penalty; Drug trade/dealers; Female murderers; Female offenders; Feminism/feminist movement; Feminist criminology; Fetal abuse/abusers; Gangs; Police/policing; Prison, women in; Prosecutors; Prostitution; Rape; Self-report surveys; Sentencing; Serial murder/murderers; Sex work/workers; Sexual abuse of children; Sexual murder; Sexual violence; Trial by jury; *Uniform Crime Reports*, arrests; Women's liberation
Gender generalizability, 124, 134, 146, 158. *See also* Anomie-strain theory; Social control theory; Social learning theory
General strain theory, 135
Genocide: against Armenians, 181; in Burundi, 181; in Cambodia, 76, 181; in Darfur, 77; definition of, 73; in former Yugoslavia, 76, 181; Genocide Convention (United Nations) and, 76; the Holocaust and, 73, 76-77, 181; International Court of Justice (World Court) and, 76-77; International Criminal Court and, 77; International Criminal Tribunal for the former Yugoslavia and, 76; International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda and, 76; International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg and, 73, 77; Reagan administration and, 77; in Rwanda, 76, 181; Stalin's planned famine in Ukraine and, 181; twentieth century as "age of genocide," 181; United States and, 76-77
Gentrification, 122
Gillespie, Marcia Ann, 380
Gilligan, James, 323
Gilmore, Gary, 451
Gingrich, Newt, 252
Gioia, Dennis, 195
Giordano, Peggy, 139, 330–331, 333
Giuliani, Rudy, 48
Global warming/climate change, 213; and ExxonMobil, 213
Glueck, Sheldon and Eleanor, 148
Goddard, Henry, 92
The Godfather, 7
Golab, Stefan, 202
Goldman, Ronald, 4, 400, 417. *See also* Simpson, O.J., trial of
Goldstein, David, 210
Goldstein, Jeffrey, 60
Goodfellas, 7
Gordon, Diana, 31
Gordon, Linda, 397

Gore, Al, 18, 269–271, 273
Gorenography, 7. *See also* Eroticization of violence; Pornography; Sexual murder; "Slasher" films
Goring, Charles, 90
Gorsuch, Ann, 198–199
Gottfredson, Michael, 102, 104, 145–146
Gouldner, Alvin, 303
Governmental crime, 230, 250–276; Bay of Pigs operation and attempted overthrow of Fidel Castro and, 255–256, 258; Credit Mobilier scandal and, 250–251; Housing and Urban Development scandal and, 251; International Telephone and Telegraph and, 256; Operation Ill Wind and, 251; overthrow of Allende (Chile) government and, 256–257; overthrow of Arbenz (Guatemala) government and, 256; overthrow of Mossadegh (Iran) government and, 256; secret government and, 255–258; state-sponsored terrorism and, 234; Teapot Dome scandal and, 250–251; United Fruit Company and, 256; William Marcy (Boss) Tweed scandal and, 250–251. *See also* Assassinations/assassination attempts; Bush, George H. W.; Bush, George W.; Central Intelligence Agency; Clinton, Bill; Cold War; Genocide; Iran-Contra scandal; Iraqgate, George H. W. Bush administration; Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration; Lobbying, K Street Project scandal; Nixon, Richard; Political crime; Reagan, Ronald; Secret government; State crime; State-corporate crime; Watergate scandal
Grady, Elizabeth, 55
Graff, E. F., 244
Graffiti writing/taggers, 309–310; participatory research and, 69–70
Grand jury, 434–435
Grant, Ulysses, 250
Grasmick, Harold, 85, 147
Graunger, Thomas, 456
Graves, Earl, 417
Gray, L. Patrick, 254
Gray, Mike, 165, 170
Great Depression, 279, 296; bank robbers during, 231
Greenberg, David, 130, 460
Greenpeace, 241
Griffith, D. W., 5
Griles, Stephen, 199
Grimke, Sarah and Angelina, 233
Grisham, John, novels by, 7
Gross, Samuel, 453
Grossberg, Amy, 356
Group conflict. *See* Conflict theory; Culture conflict
Groves, W. Byron, 122
Guantanamo (Cuba). *See* Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration
Guided group interaction. *See* Therapeutic communities
Gun control, 170–174, 498; assault weapon ban and, 17; background checks and, 16, 173; evaluations of effectiveness of, 173–174; National Association for the Advancement of Colored People lawsuit and, 174; National Rifle Association and, 16, 174; politics of, 16, 18, 174; racial dimensions of the debate over, 174–175; "right to carry" laws and, 173; Second Amendment and, 16; terrorism and, 18, 173; US Supreme Court ruling about, 16, 170. *See also* Brady Handgun Violence Prevention Act
Guns: availability of and deaths due to, 170; gun industry and, 171–172; primary and secondary markets for purchase of, 172–173; as a repository of US values, 171; safety and, 171–172
Guthrie, Woody, 231

Hacker, Andrew, 413
Hagan, Frank, 128, 230
Hagan, John, 26, 284, 500
Hagedorn, John, 316, 337
Hakim, Albert, 263
Haldemann, H. R., 254
Hall, Kenny, 131
Halliburton, 214, 218, 276
Halloween, 6–7
Hamm, Mark, 68, 249
The Hand That Rocks the Cradle, 7

Harding, Warren, 250
Hardwick, Michael, 160
Harring, Sidney, 409
Harris, David, 419
Harris, Eric, 174, 323
Harris, Kathryn, 270–271
Harrison, Lana, 488
Harrison Narcotics Act, 295
Hart, Barbara, 401
Harvey, William, 302
Haskell, Lori, 363–364, 385
Hate Crime Statistics Act, 244; coalition leading to passage of, 244–245; exclusion of gender from, 244–245
Hate crimes, 242–247; African Americans as victims of, 242; data on, 244–247; gays and lesbians as victims of, 243–244, 246–247; Hispanics as victims of, 246–247; Jews as victims of, 246–247; organized hate groups and, 238, 246–249; people with disabilities as victims of, 246–247; police and, 245–246; rationale for, 245; types and numbers of incidents of, 246–247; and underreporting by immigrants and gay people, 245; white supremacist masculinity and, 242–243
Hathaway, Starke, 103
Hawkins, Gordon, 165–166, 170, 460–461, 496
Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 457
Hazardous waste disposal. *See* Corporate crime; Organized crime; Regulatory law
Heide, Kathleen, 358
Helfand, Judy, 347
Helms, Ronald, 460
Henderson, Russell, 243
Herman, Judith, 387–388, 391–392, 395
Heroin. *See* Drug policy
Heroin maintenance. *See* Drug treatment
Herrnstein, Richard, 94–95, 287
Heston, Charlton, 174
Heterosexuality and heterosexism, 324
Hickey, Eric, 358–359
Hill, Gary, 135
Hiller, Henryk, 203
Hillside Strangler, 368–369
Hinckley, John, 16, 108–110, 365
Hindelang, Michael, 54
Hirabayashi, Gordon Kiyoshi, 229–230
Hirschel, J. David, 63
Hirschi, Travis, 31, 102, 104, 144–147
Hispanics/Latinos/Latinas, diversity among, 287; intra-Latino inequality, 299. *See also* Chicanos; Drug scares; Drug surveys; Drug trade/dealers; Gangs; Hate crimes; Immigration and crime; Judges; Marijuana; Organized crime; Prison; Prison gangs; Racial/ethnic groups; Self-report surveys
Historical method, 71
Hitler, Adolf, 91, 248
Hitz, Frederick, 262
HIV/AIDS: battering in gay relationships and, 402; drug use and, 166, 169; offenders on probation and, 485; in prison, 472–473
Hmong. *See* Asians/Asian Americans; Culture conflict
Hobsbawn, Eric, 232
Hoffa, Jimmy, 258
Hoffman, Bruce, 236
Holder, Eric, 441
Holliday, George, 176
Hollinger, Richard, 85
Holloway, Natalee, 176
Holmes, Karen, 379
Holmes, Malcolm, 448
The Holocaust. *See* Genocide
Home confinement. *See* Probation
Homeless/homelessness, 284–286; children/youths and, 285–286; composition of, 285; crimes committed by 286; mental illness and, 295; number of, 284; as victims of crime, 286; women in drug trade and, 341
Homicide, felony versus nonfelony, 433. *See also* Death penalty; Female murderers; Murder; Serial murder/murderers; Sexual murder; Subculture of violence theory; Sudden infant death syndrome; *Uniform Crime Reports*
Homophobia/homosexual panic defense/homosexuality. *See Bowers v. Hardwick;* Gays/lesbians; Hate crimes; *Lawrence v. Texas;* Stonewall Rebellion; Transgendered/transsexuals

Hoover, Herbert, 257
Hoover, J. Edgar, 38, 257, 410
Hormones and crime, 96–97. *See also* Premenstrual syndrome and crime
Horney, Julie, 97
Horowitz, Ruth, 302
Horton, Willie, 14–15
Hostage crisis (Iran), 259
Houston, Willie, 244
Howard Beach incident, 242
Hubbard, Ruth, 355
Hubbell, Webster, 267
Hudspeth, Cindy Lee, 368
Huff, C. Ronald, 311
Huizinga, David, 55
Hull, John, 261
Human rights, definition of crime, 25–26
Humphries, Drew, 280
Hunt, 468
Hurricane Katrina, 214
Hussein, Saddam, 19, 224, 264–265, 273–274; alleged link to Al-Qaida, 20, 235–236, 273. *See also* Iraqgate, George H. W. administraion; Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration
Hustler magazine. *See* Battering; Pornography; Sexual murder
Hutchinson, Earl, 5
Hutchinson, Ira, 63

I Am a Fugitive from a Chain Gang, 475
I Know What You Did Last Summer, 6
I Spit on Your Grave, 60
Iacocca, Lee, 185–186, 194
Identity theft. *See* Computer crime
Imitation and crime, 117, 136, 138. *See also* Social learning theory
Immigration and crime, 27, 118, 304–305; more immigrants, less crime hypothesis about, 305; and organized crime, 128. *See also* Hate crimes
Impeachment: of Andrew Johnson, 268; of Bill Clinton, 268; of Richard Nixon, 245
In the Belly of the Beast, 466
In-depth interviewing, 68–69; snowball sampling and, 69
Incarceration. *See* Prison; Unemployment
Incest. *See* Sexual abuse of children
Incidence of offending, 55. *See also* Prevalence of offending
Index crimes. *See Uniform Crime Reports*
Individualistic explanations of criminal behavior, 81–109; and biological theories, 88–99; and classical and neoclassical theories, 82–84; conservative ideology and, 81; in contrast to sociological explanations, 114, 118; and psychological theories, 88, 99, 101–109, 114; and supernatural explanations, 81–82
Industrial revolution, 188
Inequality, intraracial and interracial, 298–299. *See also* Anomie-strain theory; Class/class structure; Gender; Minorities/minority/minority group; Racial/ethnic groups; Social inequality; Street crime; Urban underclass
Infant formula sales, in underdeveloped countries, 26
Infotainment, 4. *See also* Media
Initial appearance, 434
Inouye, Daniel, 263
Insanity defense, 107–110; American Law Institute and, 108; guilty but mentally ill (GBMI) and, 109; irresistible impulse doctrine and, 108; Jeffrey Dahmer case and, 110–111; John Hinckley case and its impact on, 108–110; M'Naghten Rule and, 107–109; temporary insanity and, 108
Insider trading, 216–217
International Association of Chiefs of Police. *See Uniform Crime Reports*
International tribunals. *See* Genocide
Internet. *See* Computer crime; Pornography; Postmodernity
Intersex Society of North America, 75
Intersexed, 33, 75
Inverarity, James, 290
IQ and delinquency, 93–95. *See also The Bell Curve*
IQ test, 93; critique of, 94
Iran. *See* Governmental crime
Iran-Contra scandal (Ronald Reagan administration), 76, 258–260, 262–264; criminal convictions in, 264; The Enterprise and, 263–264; George H. W. Bush's role in, 264;

hostage crisis and, 259; International Criminal Court of Justice and, 76; "October surprise" and, 259; violation of Boland Amendment and, 260–263; violation of US Arms Export Control Act and, 259. *See also* Casey, William; North, Oliver
Iraq War: as a boon to Al-Qaida, 235; deaths and injuries due to, 275; rape by troops during, 386. *See also* Bush, George H. W.; Hussein, Saddam; Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration
Iraqgate, George H. W. Bush administration, 264–265; Banco Nazionale del Lavoro and, 265; violation of US Arms Export Control Act and, 265. *See also* Bush, George H. W.; Hussein, Saddam
Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration, 273–276; Abu Ghraib and, 275; claims about Niger uranium and, 274; conviction and commutation of I. Lewis (Scooter) Libby and, 275; Downing Street Memo and, 273; extraordinary rendition and, 275; Guantanamo and, 275; January 2003 State of the Union address and, 274; Plamegate and, 274–275; strategic disinformation and, 20, 176, 274; torture and, 275; war profiteering and, 275–276; weapons of mass destruction and, 20, 273–274. *See also* Bush, George W.; Central Intelligence Agency; Cheney, Dick; Hussein, Saddam
Iraqi National Congress, 20

Jack the Ripper, 358–359, 367
Jackson, Pamela, 292
Jackson, Stevi, 376, 378
Jacobs, David, 460
Jacobs, Sonia, 452
Jails, 450; in colonial times, 457; number of people in, 450
Jamal, Omar, 153
James, Frank and Jesse, 231
Jankowski, Martin Sanchez, 65, 314
Japan/Japanese. *See* Asians/Asian Americans; Hate Crime Statistics Act; Hirabayashi, Gordon Kiyoshi; Shaming
Jena Six, 310
Jenkins, Philip, 10
Jensen, Robert, 373
Jews. *See* Anti-Semitism; Genocide; Hate Crime Statistics Act; Hate crimes
Job Corps, 132–133
Johnson, Lyndon, 13, 132
Johnson, Robert, 468, 475, 477
Johnson, Roberta Ann, 499
Johnston, Lloyd, 56
Jonassohn, Kurt, 73
Jones, Ann, 86, 396–397, 403
Jones, Paula, 268
Judges: bail decisions and, 434; impact of gender of offender on decisions by, 447; impact of race/ethnicity of offender on decisions by, 446–448; impact of race of victim on decisions by, 446; initial appearance before, 434; plea bargaining and, 436; presumptive sentencing and, 444; racial/ethnic and gender differences in sentencing by, 448; summary trial and, 434; "three-strikes and you're out" laws and, 445; trial by judge versus trial by jury and, 438. *See also* Trial; Trial by jury
The Jukes: A Study in Crime, Pauperism, Disease, and Heredity, 92
The Jungle, 196
Juries. *See* Grand jury; Trial by jury
Jurik, Nancy, 421, 479
Jury nullification, 440–441; African Americans and, 441; in colonial America, 440; court rulings regarding, 440. *See also* Trial by jury
Just deserts. *See* Punishment; Retribution; Sentencing
Justice. *See* Criminal justice system; Distributive justice; Juvenile justice system; Restorative justice; Social justice
Juvenile delinquency, 305; class and, 54–56; middle-class, 308; status offenses and, 329–330. *See also* Adolescent rebellion; Adolescent subcultures; Age and crime; Differential association theory; Gangs; Juvenile justice system; Social learning theory

Juvenile justice system: adult criminal justice system versus, 85, 432; delinquents and, 432; dependent children and, 432; discrimination in, 432–433; diversion from, 143; Gault case and, 432; historical origins of, 432; reform schools in, 458; status offenders and, 432; US Supreme Court decisions regarding, 432; waiver procedure and, 432

K Street Project. *See* Lobbying, K Street Project scandal
Kaczynski, Theodore, 240–241
Kadela, Karen, 488
The Kallikak Family: Study in the Heredity of Feeblemindedness, 92
Kaminer, Wendy, 425
Kane, Robert, 84
Kappeler, Victor, 412–413, 427
Karmen, Andrew, 489–490
Keeney, Belea, 358
Kefauver, Estes, 224
Kelling, George, 49
Kelly, Liz, 362
Kennedy, Anthony, 160
Kennedy, John F.: assassination of, 6, 258; and Bay of Pigs operation, 256; as an unreliable "cold warrior," 258
Kennedy, Robert, Jr., 176, 199
Kerry, John, 181, 261–262
Key, Felix, 395
Khmer Rouge, 76
Khomeini, Ayatollah Ruhollah, 256, 259
Kimmel, Michael, 244, 374
King, Joyce, 401
King, Martin Luther, Jr., 154, 161; FBI's investigation of, 233–234; and "Letter from Birmingham Jail," 154, 233
King, Nancy, 439
King, Rodney/Rodney King beating, 154, 175–176, 396, 416, 430
Klebold, Dylan, 174, 323
Kleck, 383
Klein, Herbert, 493
Klein, Malcolm, 306
Klofas, John, 109
Knapp Commission. *See* Police corruption
Knapp, Whitman, 423
Koresh, David, 239. *See also* Branch Davidian religious sect
Kornblum, William, 145–146, 502
Koss, Mary, 379
Kraska, Peter, 412–413, 427
Kringlen, Einar, 92
Kruttschnitt, Candace, 470
Ku Klux Klan, 232, 246–248; David Duke and the "New Klan," 248; FBI crack down against, 248; history of, 247–248; number of members in, 247–248. *See also* Organized hate groups; Terrorism, right-wing domestic
Kuper, Leo, 76

La Cosa Nostra. *See* Organized crime
Labeling theory/labeling, 24–25, 54, 141–143; absolute labeling and, 142; definition of crime and, 24; of female offenders, 329; of gang members, 142; primary deviation and, 141; radical nonintervention and, 143; relative labeling and, 142; secondary deviation and, 141; self-esteem and, 141–142; and shaming, 142–143; social control theory versus, 145; stigmatization of ex-offenders and, 143. *See also* Decriminalization; Shaming
Labor market, primary and secondary, 281
Labor racketeering. *See* Organized crime
LaFree, Gary, 40, 298, 433
Lanksy, Meyer, 128
Larkin, Ralph, 324
Latinos/Latinas. *See* Hispanics/Latinos/Latinas
Laub, John, 148–149
Lauderback, David, 335
Lavelle, Rita, 199
Law: in international context, 73–77, 168–169; types of, 23–24
Law and Order, 100
Law-violating youth group, 306. *See also* Adolescent subcultures; Gangs; "The Saints and the Roughnecks"
Lawrence, John, 160
Lawrence v. Texas, 151, 160–161
Lay, Kenneth, 217

Lead exposure and crime, 50, 96
Learning-reinforcement theory. *See* Behaviorism
Lederer, Laura, 361
Left realism, 157, 494. *See also* Critical criminology
Legalistic definition of crime, 23, 152, 187
Legalization: of drugs, 166–169; of prostitution, 350
Lemert, Charles, 181
Leonard, William, 191, 227
Lerner, Michael, 182
Lesbians. *See* Gays/lesbians
Lethal injection. *See* Death penalty
Levine, Harry, 11–12
Levitt, Steven, 50
Levrant, Sharon, 492
Lew, Mike, 389
Lewinsky, Monica, 17, 268
Libby, I. Lewis (Scooter), 275
Liberals and crime. *See* Crime policy; Politics of crime control
Liddy, G. Gordon, 255, 264
Life-course research, 148–150. *See also* Social control theory
Life history studies, 69
Little, Joan, 470
Lobbying, K Street Project scandal, 252–253; bilking of Native American tribes and, 252. *See also* Abramhoff, Jack; DeLay, Tom
Lombroso, Cesare, 89–91, 287
Lorber, Judith, 33–34
Los Angeles Police Department (LAPD), 411, 416–417, 420–421, 424, 426, 440
Lott, John, 173
Lott, Trent, 161
Louima, Abner, 427, 430
"Lovelace," Linda, 370
Lucas, Henry Lee, 45–46
Lutz, Frank, 176
Lynch, Michael, 28
Lynching, 71–73, 232, 380; and subordinate black masculinity, 72, 242; and white supremacist masculinity, 72, 242

M'Naghten, Daniel, 107–108
M'Naghten Rule, 107–109
MacCoun, Robert, 169
MacDonald, Andrew. *See* Pierce, William
MacKinnon, Catharine, 370–371, 379–380, 394
Macrosociological theories, 114
Madoff, Bernard, 218
Mafia. *See* Organized crime
Maher, Lisa, 341–343
Making a Killing: The Business of Guns in America, 171
Malamuth, Neil, 373
Malcolm X, 131
Malleus Maleficarum (*Hammer of Witches*), 81
Malvo, Lee, 456
Manifest destiny, 155
Mann, Coramae Richy, 29, 332, 357–358
Mapp v. Ohio, 425
Marcello, Carlos, 258
Margolin, Steven, 280
Marijuana: atrocity stories about, 11; decriminalization of, 167; health effects of, 167, 169; legalization of, 167–168, 170; Mexicans and, 11, 296; prior to criminalization, 294; racial/ethnic differences in use of, 294. *See also* Drug policy; Drug scares; Drug surveys
Marijuana Tax Act, 296
Marion, Francis, 229
Marital rape. *See* Rape
Marriage, and desistance from crime, 148–149. *See also* Life-course research
Marriage, gay, 161. *See also* Gays/lesbians
Martell, Clark, 248
Martin, Gus, 235, 237
Martin, Susan, 421, 423
Martinez, Ramiro, 299
Marx, Karl, 28, 116–117, 156–157
Marx, Skidd, 308
Masculinity/masculinities, 34, 324. *See also* Corporate culture and crime; Gangs; Gender; Hate crimes; Lynching; Slavery
Masculinity-liberation hypothesis, 328–331
Masculinity-liberation theory, 328; eval-

uations and critiques of, 328–331. *See also* Women's liberation
Mass media. *See* Media
Massip, Sheryl Lynn, 96
Matheney, Al, 396
Matza, David, 85, 139–140
McCaffrey, Barry, 16
McCain, John, 268–269
McCall, Nathan, 87, 124, 137, 149–150, 302
McCarthy, Bill, 286
McCleary, Robert, 43
McClellan, Dorothy, 470
McCleskey, Warren, 453–454
McCleskey v. Kemp, 453–454
McCorkle, Richard, 466
McCormack, Win, 271
McCormick, Albert, 189–190
McDermott, Joan, 383
McDougal, James and Susan, 266
McFarland, Robert, 263
McKay, Henry, 118, 122, 298
McKim, Duncan, 91
McKinney, Aaron, 243
McVeigh, Timothy, 236, 238–239
Mead, George Herbert, 136
Mears, David, 282
Meat Inspection Act, 196
Medellín cartel, 224, 261
Media: advertising, 175, 375–376, 496–497; aggression and experiments on, 59–62; amount of viewing of, 3–4; "crack babies" and "crack mothers" in, 351; crime as portrayed in television and film, 4–8, 100; crime prevention and, 496; cultural images of women and girls in, 375–376; gangsta rap and, 303, 309; "hot babe" image in, 377; portrayals of African Americans in, 4–5; postmodernity and, 175–176; predisposition to influence by, 59–61; subterranean values and glamorization of violence promoted by, 301, 303, 324. *See also* DNA and the criminal justice system; Female murderers; Organized crime; Pornography; "Slasher" films; White-collar crime
Mednick, Sarnoff, 95
Mein Kampf, 248
Melton, Ada Peco, 317
Mental hospitalization of youths, 106–107
Mental illness: among the homeless, 285; and crime, 79–80, 93, 107. *See also* Insanity defense; Personality theory and crime
Merten, Don, 307
Merton, Robert, 125–127, 129–131, 134
Message to the Oppressed, 131
Messerschmidt, James, 72, 117, 322–333, 337, 376
Messner, Steven, 134
Methadone maintenance. *See* Drug treatment
Metzger, Tom, 249
Mexicans. *See* Hispanics; Immigration and crime; Marijuana; Prison gangs
Michael Clayton, 7
Michalowski, Raymond, 25, 283, 460
Microsociological theories, 114
Microsoft Corporation antitrust case, 205
Mika, Harry, 489
Military-industrial complex, 462
Militia movement, 236–238; blurred boundaries with organized hate groups, 238; and patriot movement, 236; reasons for joining, 237
Milk, Harvey, 96
Milken, Michael, 216
Miller, Angela, 15
Miller, Eleanor, 69, 122, 348–349
Miller, Jody, 338–340
Miller, Judith, 20
Miller, Walter, 306
Mills, C. Wright, xiii, 21
Milosevic, Slobodan, 76
Mining industry: deaths and injuries in, 201–202; deregulation of, 199, 202
Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, 103
Minorities/minority/minority group, 30, 286–287; workplace deficits of, 300. *See also* Hate crimes; Organized hate groups; Racial/ethnic groups
Minority correctional officers. *See* Correctional officers
Minority group-threat theory, 291–292, 430. *See also* Police
Minority police officers. *See* Police
Miranda v. Arizona, 407

Miranda, Ernesto, 407
Miranda warning, 407
Miscegenation, 238
Misogyny, 366
Mitchell, John, 254
Mob violence. *See* Political crime and rebellion
Mobilization for Youth, 133–134
Model Cities program, 132
Mollen Commission. *See* Police corruption
Monachesi, Elio, 103
Money laundering. *See* Banks; Organized crime
Monitoring the Future project, 56–57, 294
Monster: The Autobiography of an L.A. Gang Member, 22, 131
Moon, Felicia and Warren, 400–401
Moore, Joan, 316, 333, 335, 337
Moral indignation: antitrust law and the decline of, 189–190; and social solidarity, 450
Moral panic, 9. *See also* Crime waves; Drug scares
Morash, Merry, 486
Morris, Allison, 134, 357
Moscone, George, 96
Mossadegh, Mohammed, 256
Motherhood: attitudes of gang members toward, 337; myth of, 356. *See also* Exhaustion psychosis; Female murderers
Mothers Against Drunk Driving, 85
Motor vehicles/motor vehicle industry. *See* Corporate crime
Mountain States Legal Foundation, 199
Moyers, Bill, 258
Muhammed, John, 456
Munchausen syndrome by proxy, 360. *See also* Female murderers; Sudden infant death syndrome
Murder: familicidal massacre, 357; filicide, 355, 357; gender patterns of, 355–360; involving intimate partners, 357; Munchausen syndrome by proxy and, 360; neonaticide, 355. *See also* Death penalty; Female murderers; Gorenography; Serial murder/murderers; Sexual murder; Subculture of violence theory; Sudden infant death syndrome; *Uniform Crime Reports*
Murray, Charles, 94–95, 287
Musto, David, 296

Nader, Ralph, 185
Nation of Islam, 131
A Nation of Lords: The Autobiography of the Vice Lords, 22
National Commission on Law Observance and Enforcement. *See* Police corruption, Wickersham Commission and
National Crime Victimization Survey (*NCVS*), 51–53, 292–293; intraracial and interracial victimizations and, 293; number and rates of victimizations and, 51–53; perceived gender of offender and, 332; perceived race of offender and, 293, 332; rape victims and, 52; rates by age, income, race, ethnicity, and gender, 53; unreported crimes and, 51–52
National Highway Traffic Safety Administration. *See* Regulatory law
National Rifle Association, 16, 18, 174; criticism of federal law enforcement by, 239. *See also* Branch Davidian religious sect; Gun control; Heston, Charlton; Ruby Ridge, Idaho, shootout
National Security Act of 1947, 256
National Security Agency, 19
National Shooting Sports Foundation, 172
National Violence Against Women Survey, 366, 390
National Youth Survey, 55, 293
Nationalization, 255; in Chile, 256; in Cuba, 255; in Iran, 256
Native Americans, 155–156; American Indian Movement and, 155; conviction of Leonard Peltier and, 156; European conquest of, 155; manifest destiny and, 155; Wounded Knee, South Dakota, and, 155. *See also* American Indians/Alaskan Natives; Gangs; Hate crimes; Lobbying, K Street Project scandal; *Uniform Crime Reports,* arrests
Native Hawaiians, 30

Nazism/Nazis/neo-Nazis, 73, 91, 239, 248, 311, 468. *See also* Gangs; Organized hate groups; Prison gangs; Skinheads/skinhead movement; White Aryan Resistance
Necrophiliacs, 366
Needle exchange programs, 167, 169
Neighborhood Youth Corps, 132
Nelson, Andrea, 385, 388–389
Neoclassical criminology, 83. *See also* Classical criminology; Deterrence; Rational-choice theory
Neonaticide. *See* Murder
Nevin, Rick, 50
New Afrikan Independence Movement, 131
The New Joy of Sex: The Gourmet Guide to Lovemaking in the Nineties, 395
New York City Transit Authority, 10
New York Police Department (NYPD), 6, 8, 48–49, 180, 419– 420, 423–424, 427, 429–430
Newman, David, 28
Nichols, Terry, 236, 239
Nixon, Richard, 14, 167, 185–186, 198, 253–257; Gerald Ford's pardoning of, 254; House Judiciary Committee impeachment recommendation for, 254; resignation of, 254. *See also* Watergate scandal
Noriega, Manuel, 224, 261
Norquist, Grover, 252
North, Oliver, 263–264
Norton, Gale, 199
Novak, Robert, 274
Novice sex workers, 342
Nuclear power plants: and anti–nuclear power movement, 240; vulnerability to terrorist attacks of, 19. *See also* Clamshell Alliance; Corporate crime; Silkwood, Karen
Nuclear weapons. *See* Weapons of mass destruction
Nutrition and crime, 96. *See also* Fetal abuse/abusers; Twinkie defense
NYPD Blue, 6

O'Dell, Walden, 181
O'Neil, Tip, 481
Obama, Barack, 269, 441
Observational field research, 64–71; courtesy stigma and, 66; gaining access to subjects and establishing rapport in, 65–69; participation in crime and, 68–70
Occupational hazards, deaths and injuries due to, 201. *See also* Corporate crime
Occupational Safety and Health Administration. *See* Regulatory law
Ogle, Robin, 97, 358
Oklahoma City bombing, 236, 238–239. *See also* McVeigh, Timothy; Nichols, Terry; Terrorism, right-wing domestic
Oliver, Pamela, 385, 388–389
Omega Boys Club, 495–496; and *Street Soldiers,* 495
One-drop rule, 30
Operant conditioning. *See* Behaviorism
Operation Rescue. *See* Abortion
Opium: and enforcement against the Chinese, 295; prior to criminalization, 294–295
Opportunity programs. *See* Anomie-strain theory
Opportunity reduction. *See* Situational crime prevention
Orcutt, James, 56
"The Order," 238, 242. *See also* Pierce, William; *The Turner Diaries*; Zionist Occupied Government
Orenstein, Peggy, 335
Organizational styles of correctional work. *See* Correctional officers
Organizational styles of policing: community, 413–414; legalistic, 411; paramilitary, 412–413, 415, 475; service, 411–412; watchman, 411
Organized crime, 187, 218–227; African Americans and, 129, 314; arson-for-profit and, 219, 222–223; association of banks with, 222–224; attempted assassination of Fidel Castro and, 256; Bank of Credit and Commerce International and, 224; blurred boundaries between corporate crime and, 220–224, 226–227; Chinese and, 128, Corsican syndicates and, 261; difference between corporate crime and, 187, 218–219; drugs and, 128, 219; El Rukn and, 314; ethnic succession in, 128–129; extortion and, 219; films and, 7; gangs and, 314; gender

and, 340; geographic location of, 224–225; hazardous waste disposal and, 220–221; illegal goods and services of, 219, 225; illicit enterprise and, 226; Italians and, 128, 224, 226, 314; Kennedy assassination and, 258; La Cosa Nostra and, 224–226; labor racketeering/sweetheart contracts and, 220; legal businesses of 219, 225; Mafia and, 128–129, 224; money laundering and, 223–224; outlaw motorcycle gangs and, 129; patron-client relationships and, 226; police/political corruption and, 68, 226; prison gangs and, 314, 468; Prohibition and, 128; racial/ethnic variation in, 128–129, 226; Resource Conservation Recovery Act and, 220; savings and loan scandal and, 227; structure of, 224–226; tobacco smuggling and, 221–222; unions and 127, 219–220, 225. *See also* Central Intelligence Agency, complicity in drug trafficking
Organized hate groups, 238, 246–249; electronic communication network of, 249; emphasis on mainstream conservative issues by, 249. *See also* Christian identity; Hate crimes; Ku Klux Klan; Militia movement; Nazism/Nazis/neo-Nazis; Skinheads/Skinhead movement; Terrorism, right-wing domestic; White Aryan Resistance
Organized online criminals, 178
Orwell, George, 177
Oswald, Lee Harvey, 258

Pacific Islanders, 30
Packer, Herbert, 408
Padavic, Irene, 403
Padilla, Felix, 313
Paisley, Melvyn, 251
Pao, Vang, 261
Paramilitary police units, 412–413; and community policing, 415; "no knock" entries, and 412; in small communities, 413. *See also* Organizational styles of policing
Parenti, Christian, 276
Parenting. *See* Family and crime/delinquency
Parents Television Council, 3
Park, Robert, 64
Parks, Rosa, 23, 153, 233
Parole, 450, 487; number of people on, 450; truth-in-sentencing laws and, 487. *See also* Prison furlough/work release; Prisoner reentry; Texas Reintegration of Offenders project
Patriarchal societies, 34
Patriarchal terrorism, 366
Patriot Act. *See* USA Patriot Act
Patriot movement, 236–237. *See also* Militia movement
Pattillo, Mary, 122
Peacemaking criminology, 161, 164–165, 170, 182, 493; and crime prevention, 165, 493; tradition of social prophecy and, 161; versus war-making, 161
Pearson, Patricia, 356, 360, 456
Pedophiles, 395
Peel, Robert, 107
Pelka, Fred, 390
Peltier, Leonard, 156
Penitentiary. *See* Prison
"The Pentagon Papers," 253
People of color, 30
Pepinsky, Hal, 15, 161
Perez, Rafael, 424
Personal agency, 23, 150; of urban poor, 303. *See also* Collective efficacy; Self-efficacy
Personality theory and crime, 103–104; personality inventories and, 103–104; sociological critics of, 103–104. *See also* Freudian psychology; Psychopath/sociopath
Petersilia, Joan, 487–488
Peterson, Brian, 356
Peterson, Dana, 333
Pettiway, Leon, 344
Pharmaceuticals/pharmaceutical industry. *See* Corporate crime
Pickard, Thomas, 19
Pierce, Glenn, 88, 172, 433
Pierce, Samuel, 251
Pierce, William (pen name Andrew MacDonald), 238
Piliavin, Irving, 85
Pillick, Aleta, 439
Pillory. *See* Punishment
Piven, Francis Fox, 233

Plame, Valerie, 274
Plamegate, 274–275
Platt, Leah, 351
Plea bargaining, 435–436; judges' approval of, 436; reasons for, 435–436; *Santobello v. New York* decision regarding, 436
Poindexter, John, 264
Pol Pot, 76
Police/policing, 42–43, 49, 68, 291–292, 407–431, 497–498; African Americans' experience of, 290–291, 407, 411, 413, 417, 429–430; black males versus black females in, 420; broken windows strategy of, 49, 414; class and racial bias and, 290–291; code of silence and, 426; community racial/ethnic composition and size of, 292; community relations style of, 17, 411–415, 475, 497; complainant status, community characteristics, and recording of crime by, 42–43; computerized mapping of communities by, 49, 427; constable-watch system of, 409; culture of, 415–417; cultural sensitivity/diversity training for, 497–498; dangers faced by, 415–416; discretion and, 411; exclusionary rule and, 425; foot patrols and, 17, 410, 414; as hardchargers, 416; history of, 409–411, 419, 421; legalistic style of, 411; masculinity and, 421; minority group-threat theory and, 291–292, 430; minority officers in, 419–421, 498; and the Miranda case, 407–408; and nineteenth century capitalism, 409–410; organizational styles of, 411–415, 475; paramilitary police units/paramilitary style of, 411–412, 415, 475; *police*women and police*women* in, 423; professionalization of, 410–411; racial profiling by, 417–418; rape/sexual assault by, 427; responses to rape by, 42–43; service style of, 411–412; sexual misconduct by, 426–427; slave patrols and, 409, 419; stop-and-search practices of, 49, 411, 419; suspect demeanor and arrest by, 291; symbolic assailants and use of stereotypes by, 426–427; urban race riots and, 411; use of alternative technologies by, 430–431; watchman style of, 411; white male officers' attitudes/treatment of minority and women officers, 420, 422–423; women in, 421–423, 498; working personality of, 415; zero tolerance policies and, 49, 427. *See also Brown vs. Mississippi;* Community policing; Exclusionary rule; Los Angeles Police Department; New York Police Department; Paramilitary police units; Racial profiling by police; *Uniform Crime Reports*
Police brutality, 154, 407, 411, 416, 427–428; definition of, 428; landmark study of, 428. *See also* King, Rodney
Police corruption, 68, 225–226, 410, 423–424, 426; code of silence about, 426; grass-eaters and, 424; Knapp Commission and, 423–424; LAPD CRASH antigang unit and, 424; meat-eaters and, 424; Mollen Commission and, 424; testilying and, 424; Wickersham Commission and, 410
Police use of deadly force, 428–430; against Amadou Diallo, 430; by black officers versus white officers, 429–430; and elective versus nonelective shootings, 428–429; minority-group threat theory and, 430; prosecution of police for, 430; *Tennessee v. Garner* decision regarding, 429
Political corruption, 68, 157, 225–226, 250–251, 254
Political crime, 230. *See also* Governmental crime; State Crime; State-corporate crime; Terrorism
Political crime and rebellion, 230–233; civil disobedience as, 153, 233–234, 239–240; collective violence as, 231; depression-era bank robbers and, 231; East St. Louis riot of 1917 and, 232; farmers and, 231; Haymarket Riot of 1886 and, 232; individual versus collective, 231; mob action in preindustrial Europe and, 232; Native Americans and, 155–156;

Robin Hood legend and, 231; slaves and, 231–232; Stonewall Rebellion and, 159; urban race riots as, 154, 232–233; white mob violence and, 232. *See also* King, Martin Luther, Jr.; Parks, Rosa
Political legitimacy, 276
Politics of crime control, 13–20. *See also* Crime policy
"Politics of the English Language," 177
The Politics of Meaning, 182
Pollitt, Katha, 354
Polsky, Ned, 71
Pontell, Henry, 215, 226–227
Ponzi, Charles, 218
Ponzi scheme, 218
Pope John Paul II, 455
Pornography, 61, 361, 369–375; abuse of women and children and, 361, 370; child, 179, 370, 375; clinical evidence on effect of, 373–374; educational intervention about, 375; erotica versus, 369; experimental research on effect of, 371–373; feminist critique of, 361, 371; First Amendment and, 375; *Hustler* magazine and, 368–369, 395; on Internet, 179, 361; male socialization and manipulation by, 374–375; Minneapolis City Council hearings on, 361; rape and, 370; sexual murder and, 368–369; survey research on effect of, 61, 373; as a symptom versus a cause of sexual violence, 369–370; US Supreme Court rulings on, 375; violent and nonviolent, 371–373. *See also* Eroticization of violence; Gorenography; "Slasher" films
Pornography: Men Possessing Women, 361
Porterfield, Austin, 53
Positive peer culture. *See* Therapeutic communities
Positivism, 88; sociological, 115
Postmodernism, 175, 181; affirmative and skeptical, 181–182; as a mode of analysis, 175, 181; and social difference, 182
Postmodernity, 175; consumerism and, 175; and Internet/webcams, 179–180; media and, 175–176; and political manipulation, 176–177; as a stage of society, 175; as a surveillance society, 180; and technological advances in crime control, 180. *See also* Computer crime; Orwell, George; Presidential election of 2004
Postpartum influences on crime, 97, 356
Poussaint, Alvin, 303
Power, xiii, 25, 164
Predatory lending. *See* Corporate financial fraud
Prefrontal lobe cortex and crime, 95
Pregnancy. *See* Abortion; Fetal abuse/abusers; Prison, women in
Prejudice, versus institutional racism, 31
Preliminary hearing, 434
Premenstrual syndrome (PMS) and crime, 97–98
Presentence investigation, 442–443
Presidential election of 2000, 17–18; ballot problems of, 269–270; disenfranchisement of African Americans and, 272–273; disputed results of, 268–273; Florida recount and, 269–273; former felons and, 271–272; Fourteenth Amendment and, 270; US Supreme Court and, 270–271. *See also Bush v. Gore*
Presidential election of 2004: electronic voting and, 180–181; voting fraud and, 181
Presidential scandals. *See* Bush, George H. W.; Bush, George W.; Clinton, Bill; Governmental crime; Reagan, Ronald; Regulatory law
Presidents Commission on Law Enforcement and the Administration of Justice, 13
Pretty Woman, 320
Prevalence of offending, 55. *See also* Incidence of offending
Prevention. *See* Crime, prevention of; Peacemaking criminology
Price-fixing. *See* Corporate crime; Sherman Antitrust Act
Prinsky, Lorraine, 106
Prison, 457–479; adaptation to, 464–466, 468–470; African Americans and 297, 460–461, 467–468; architectural design of, 458; and Attica uprising, 459;

Auburn model of, 458; as Big Houses, 458; coed institutions and, 469; convict code in, 465–466; costs associated with, 461–462; declining opportunities for treatment in, 460; and destabilization of minority communities, 461; diagnostic classification in, 459; diminishing deterrent effect of, 462; education in, 466; Elmira Reformatory and, 458; factors affecting admissions into, 283, 460; gangs in, 314, 468–469; healthcare and HIV/AIDS in, 472–473; Hispanics in, 461, 468; history of, 457–459; impact on families of, 461, 471–472; incarceration boom and, 450, 459–462, 482; influence of psychological theories on, 459; informal prison economy and, 464–465; number of prisoners by offense type in, 460–462; number of prisoners by race/ethnicity and gender in, 461; number of prisoners in state and federal systems, 460–461; overcrowding in, 460, 483; pains of imprisonment and, 464, 469; prison-industrial complex and, 462, 482; privatization of, 462–463; protective custody and, 466; protests and riots in, 459; Quakers' influence on, 457–458; racial/ethnic tensions in, 467–468; rape in, 464, 469; recidivism following, 14, 475; reform of, 457–459; rehabilitation and, 459, 470, 482; solitary confinement in, 467; suicide in, 467–468; supermax, 466–467; types of, 463–464, 466–467, 469; as used for violent versus nonviolent offenders, 462, 498; victimization of whites in, 467–468; war on drugs and, 297, 460; women in, 469–472. *See also* Correctional officers; Correctional system; Punishment

Prison, convict labor: Federal Prison Industries Program and, 475; history of, 458, 473–474; impact on recidivism and, 475; laws regulating, 474; as legalized slavery, 473; Prison Industry Enhancement Certification program and, 474; private sector industries in, 474; wage rates for, 474–475

Prison furlough/work release: impact on recidivism of, 14, 488; and Willie Horton case, 14

Prison gangs, 314, 468–469; Aryan Brotherhood, 468; Black Guerrilla Family, 468; Crips and Bloods, 469; La Nuestra Familia, 468; Mexican Mafia, 468; Texas Syndicate, 468; white outlaw/neo-Nazi, 468

Prison guards. *See* Correctional officers

Prison, women in, 458, 461, 469–472; in coed institutions, 469; compared to men, 461, 469–471; convict culture of, 469–470; Girl Scouts Beyond Bars and, 471; history of abuse of, 470; mothers and pregnancy among, 471–472; prenatal and healthcare of, 472–473; sanctioning and sexual harassment of, 470–471

Prisoner reentry, problem of, 487–488. *See also* Parole; Rehabilitation; Texas's Reintegration of Offenders (RIO) project

Probable cause, 431

Probation, 450, 483–486; conditions of, 483; as a cost-effective alternative to prison, 483–484; electronic monitoring and, 484–485; history of, 483; home confinement and, 484–485; intensive probation supervision and, 484; and involvement of neighbors in offender surveillance, 485; number of people on, 450; officer caseloads, 483; research on rehabilitative impact of, 483–484; shock, 486. *See also* Shock incarceration

Professional criminals, 69

Profit Without Honor: White-Collar Crime and the Looting of America, 201

Prohibition of alcohol, 152; impact on organized crime of, 128

Prohibition of drugs, in historical and comparative perspective, 168–169, 294–297, 481–482

Prosecutors: decisions to seek the death penalty by, 434; disreputable behavior by, 438; as gatekeepers of the criminal justice system, 431; impact of race and gender on decisions by, 431, 433–434; impression management by, 436–437; initial screening

by, 431; plea bargaining and, 435–436. *See also* Trial; Trial by jury
Prostitution, 319–320, 326, 343; call girls and, 345; decriminalization and legalization of, 350–351; drug addiction and, 131, 342–345, 349; homelessness and, 286; international context of, 352; mail-order-bride businesses and, 352; males as customers, 326, 341–342; males as prostitutes, 326; in Nevada, 350; a "pimp" versus a "man" in, 348; pimps and, 326, 348–350; protective strategies for coping with, 346–347; reasons for involvement in, 319–320, 343–345, 349, 352, 394; running away leading to involvement in, 103, 148, 159, 326; sex tourism and, 352; shift from intercourse to fellatio in, 342; strategies for leaving, 351; victimization of women engaged in, 348–349; as a victimless crime, 347. *See also* Sex work/workers; Sexual abuse of children
Protest, 153; and the civil rights movement, 153; and mob action in preindustrial Europe, 232; and Native Americans, 155; in prison, 459. *See also* Political crime and rebellion
Pryor, Douglas, 394
Psychoanalytic theory. *See* Freud, Sigmund; Freudian psychology
Psychological theories of criminal behavior, 99, 101–105; applications of, 105–107; rehabilitation and, 105–106, 459. *See also* Behaviorism; Errors in thinking approach; Freudian psychology; Insanity defense; Personality theory and crime; Therapeutic communities; Therapeutic continuum
Psychopath/sociopath, 103
Public opinion about crime and punishment, 2–3, 449, 475; O.J. Simpson case and, 6; racial differences in, 2, 6, 449; and white-collar crime, 499. *See also* Fear of crime
Punishment: in Afghanistan, 449; attitudes toward, 2, 449; brank and, 457; caning and, 449; certainty, celerity, and severity of, 83–83; chain gangs and, 475; in colonial America, 456–457; convict labor and, 458, 473, 475; cruel and unusual, 88, 445, 451; flogging and, 457; pillory and, 457; retribution/just deserts as a rationale for, 443, 482; scarlet letter and, 457; and social solidarity, 450; versus unemployment as a predictor of recidivism, 283; of white-collar offenders, 203, 485, 489–490. *See also* Death penalty; Jails; Parole; Prison; Probation; Sentencing; Shock incarceration
Pure Food and Drug Act, 196–197

Quetelet, Adolphe, 88, 115, 117
Quicker, John, 333–334
Quinney, Richard, 15, 161

Race, 29–32; biological typologies of, 29–30; discrimination based on, 29; institutional racism and, 31–32. *See also* African Americans; Asians/Asia Americans; Minorities/minority/minority group; Native Americans; Racial/ethnic groups; Sentencing
Race Matters, 29
Racial/ethnic groups, 29–30; criminal justice data on, 30, 287; intraracial and interracial inequality and, 298–299; one-drop rule and, 30; as a percentage of the population, 30; as a social construction, 30, 287. *See also* Bail; Drug scares; Drug surveys; Hate crimes; Judges; Minorities/minority/minority group; *National Crime Victimization Survey;* Police; Prosecutors; Self-report surveys; Trial by jury; *Uniform Crime Reports,* arrests
Racial profiling by police, 417–419; hit rate and, 419; legal challenges to, 418; on New Jersey Turnpike, 418–419; studies of, 418–419
Racism, institutional, 31
Radelet, Michael, 433, 453
Rafter, Nicole, 90
Rahman, Omar Adbul, 234–235
Rainville, Gerald, 431, 434
Randall, Melanie, 363–364, 385
Randall-Haskell study, of sexual violations, 363–364, 385
Rape: acquaintance, 376; of adult men,

390; and compulsive rape syndrome, 97; consent and, 379–380; cross-cultural studies of, 376; definitions of, by race/ethnicity, 379; feminist conceptualization of, 362, 376; gangs/fraternities and, 124, 137; "hooking up" and, 377; intraracial, 5, 379–380; legacy of racism and, 380; marital, 381–382; in the military, 386; myths about, 140–141, 377–378; by nonstrangers, 37, 376–382; personal resistance strategies to, 383–384; by police, 427; pornography and, 361; in prison, 464, 469, 471; services for survivors of, 41–42, 497; sexual scripts and, 376–378; slavery and, 71–72; survey of college students and, 379; symbolic interaction interpretation of, 377; techniques of neutralization about, 140–141; traditional gender socialization and, 34, 376–377; traditional Hmong culture and, 153; underreporting of, 37, 42–43; victim-precipitated, 32. *See* Pornography; Randall-Haskell study; Sexual abuse of children; Sexual murder; Sexual violence
Rape law: cautionary jury instructions, 381; corroboration rules, 381; marital exemption, 381; rape shield laws, 42, 381; reform of, 380–383; studies of impact of reform of, 381–383
Rational-choice theory, 83–87, 281. *See also* Classical criminology; Deterrence; Neoclassical criminology
Rawls, John, 502
Reagan, Ronald: crime control policies of, 14–16; economic policies of, 280; and Iran-Contra scandal, 259–260, 262–264; John Hinckley's attempted assassination of, 108; regulatory policies of 198–199, 214. *See also* Iran-Contra scandal; Regulatory law
Real Rape, 37
Reaves, Brian, 431, 434
Rebellion. *See* Anomie-strain theory; Political crime and rebellion
Recidivism, 14. *See also* Parole; Prison; Prisoner reentry; Probation; Therapeutic continuum; Unemployment
Redlining, 222, 279
Reference group theory, 299; and intraracial and interracial inequality, 298–299
Regulatory law, 23–24, 57–58, 196–200; Bureau of Mines and, 199; Bush (George W.) administration and, 199–200, 202; capture theory and enforcement of, 200; Clinton administration and, 199, 209; Consumer Product Safety Commission and, 210–211; criminogenic regulatory structure and, 227; Department of Agriculture and, 208; Department of Interior and, 199–200; and the deregulation movement, 197–200, 202, 210–211; dominion theology and, 199; Environmental Protection Agency and, 24, 196, 198–199, 204; Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation and, 196; Food and Drug Administration and, 196–197; National Highway Traffic Safety Administration and, 185–187; National Labor Relations Board and, 196, 204, 206; Occupational Safety and Health Administration and, 24, 196, 198, 203; Reagan administration and, 198–199; Roosevelt administration and, 196; Securities and Exchange Commission and, 24, 196, 216, 327; Sewergate scandal and, 199, 213; three waves of reform of, 196–197. *See also* Corporate crime
Rehabilitation, 443, 498; employment and, 488; indeterminate sentencing and, 443; and prison, 459, 470, 482; and probation, 483–484; and the problem of prisoner reentry, 487–488; psychological theories and, 105–106, 459; social learning theory and, 139, 488–489; therapeutic communities and, 139; therapeutic continuum and, 488. *See also* Drug courts; Restorative justice; Reintegration of Offenders (RIO) project
Reid, Sue Titus, 108
Reiman, Jeffrey, 3, 201
Reinarman, Craig, 11–12
Reintegration of Offenders (RIO) project (Texas), 488

Reintegrative shaming, 143; and restitution, 490. *See* also Disintegrative shaming
Reiss, Albert, 428
Relative deprivation, 126, 133
Religion: and attitudes toward punishment, 449; and crime/delinquency, 147–148; and Judeo-Christian peacemaking teachings, 161; and Karla Faye Tucker death penalty case, 455; and sexual abuse by Catholic clergy, 385–386; and suicide, 115. *See* also Anti-Semitism; Branch Davidian religious sect; Dominion theology; Social control theory; Supernatural explanations of criminal behavior; Terrorism; Terrorism, right-wing domestic
Rendon, John/Rendon Group, 20
Renegade Kids, Suburban Outlaws: From Youth Culture to Delinquency, 308
Reno, Janet, 16
Republican Party/politicians. *See* Crime policy
Resnick, Phillip, 356
Resnick, Susan, 1
Resource Conservation and Recovery Act, 220
Ressler, Robert, 10
Restitution, 489–490; best practices for, 490; and reintegrative shaming, 490. *See also* Community conference strategy; Restorative justice; Victim-offender mediation
Restorative justice, 489–493, 498; adversarial justice versus, 489; concerns about, 492; and victim rights movement, 489; and white-collar offenders, 492. *See also* Community conference strategy; Drug courts; Restitution; Victim-offender mediation
Retribution/just deserts: and determinate sentencing, 443; as a rationale for punishment, 443, 482
Reuter, Peter, 169
Reynolds, Julia, 173
Riady, Mochtar and James, 268
The Rich Get Richer and the Poor Get Prison, 3
Richards, Stephen, 472
Riots. *See* Attica prison uprising; Urban race riots
The Rise and Fall of a Violent Crime Wave, 12
Robber barons, 129
Robbery: by female gang members, 340; female involvement in, 338–340; male involvement in, 337–339; in US history, 231; versus savings and loan scandal, 201. *See also* Viccing
Roberts, Nickie, 350
Robertson, Pat, 455
Robin Hood legend, 231
Robinson, Cyril, 314
Robinson, Dinah, 456
Robinson, Lillian, 347
Rockefeller, Nelson, 459
Rodriguez, Nancy, 492
Roe v. Wade, 50, 355
Romero, Anthony, 19
Romero, Jesus, 445
Rosen, Jeffrey, 441
Rosenbaum, Jill, 106
Rosenfeld, Richard, 50, 134
Rosoff, Stephen, 201, 203
Ross, Edward, 498
Ross, "Freeway Rick," 262
Ross, Jeffrey, 472
Rostenkowski, Dan, 251
Routine activities theory, 123–124; and crime-prone "hot spots," 123; and gang/fraternity rape, 124; and violence against women, 124. *See also* Situational crime prevention
Rove, Karl, 275
Rozee, Patricia, 384
Rubin, Avi, 180
Ruby Ridge, Idaho, shoot-out, 238. *See also* Terrorism, right-wing domestic; Weaver, Randy
Rucker, Lisa, 486
Ruesink, Mitch, 434
Rumsfeld, Donald, 275
Russell, Diana, 61, 394
Ryan, George, 453

Sadat, Anwar, 234
Safire, William, 265
"The Saints and the Roughnecks," 25, 307
Saldana, Theresa, 365
Samaha, Joel, 441

Samenow, Stanton, 105
Sampson, Robert, 122, 148–149, 291, 300, 496
Sanders, William, 311, 314–315, 383
Sandinistas, 260–261. *See also* Iran-Contra scandal
Santobello v. New York, 436
Santorum, Rick, 161
Sapp, Allen, 426
Satz, Debra, 345
Savings and loan scandal, 210, 214–216; collective embezzlement and, 215; criminal convictions in, 216; illegal cover-ups and, 216; impact of deregulation on, 214–215; James and Susan McDougal and, 266; organized crime and, 227; unlawful risk-taking and, 215. *See also* Banks
Saw, 6
Sayles, Susan, 383
Scarlet letter. *See* Punishment
Schlosser, Eric, 462
Schneider, René, 257
School shootings: at Columbine High School, 174–175, 323; gender implications of, 323–324; racial implications of, 304, 323; suburban and rural, 323; at Virginia Tech, 304
Schools. *See* Adolescent subcultures; Anomie-strain theory
Schor, Judith, 280
Schrock, Douglas, 403
Schutt, Russell, 292
Schwartz, Gary, 307
Schwartz, Martin, 159
Schwendinger, Herman and Julia, 124, 282, 306–307, 311
Scream, 6
Sea Shepard Conservation Society, 241
Second Amendment. *See* Gun control
Secord, Richard, 263
Secret government. *See* Governmental crime
Securities Exchange Act, 216
Securities and Exchange Commission. *See* Regulatory law
Seiter, Richard, 488
Self-control, low, 104. *See also* Social control theory
Self-defense: as a justification for retaliatory violence, 301; training in, 125, 383
Self-efficacy, 23, 150. *See also* Personal agency
Self-report surveys, 53–57; class and, 54–55, 332; discrepancy between *Uniform Crime Reports* and, 54–55; of gang members, 333; gender and, 135, 326, 328, 331–332; labeling theory and, 54; Monitoring the Future project, 56–57, 294; *National Youth Survey,* 55, 293; race/ethnicity and, 54–55, 135, 293–294, 331–332. *See also* Drug surveys
Sellers, Christine, 157
Sentences, types of: determinate, 443–444; indeterminate, 444; mandatory, 444, 498; presumptive, 444; "three strikes and you're out," 444, 498
Sentencing, 442–448; age and, 447; conservatives and, 443; discrimination in, 445–448; disparity versus discrimination in, 446; downward departure cases and, 448; impact of gender on, 447; impact of race of victim on, 446; impact of race/ethnicity of offender on, 446–448; the in/out decision and, 446; liberals and, 443; mitigating and aggravating conditions and, 444; presentence investigation and, 442; rehabilitation and, 443; retribution/just deserts and, 443; substantial assistance and, 448; truth in, 487; victim impact statements and, 443. *See also* Juvenile justice system; Parole; Probation; Three-strikes laws
Sentencing Reform Act of 1984, 444
September 11, 2001, attacks, 6, 18, 235, 501
Serial murder/murderers: Angelo Buono, 368–369; crime waves and, 10–11; Henry Lee Lucas, 45–46; Hillside Strangler, 368–369; Jack the Ripper, 358–359, 367; Jeffrey Dahmer, 110–111, 358; Kenneth Bianchi, 368–369; Marybeth Thinning, 359–360; nicknames and trivialization of, 359, 367–369; Peter Sutcliffe (Yorkshire Ripper), 367;

stalkers versus trappers, 359; Ted Bundy, 358, 367– 368. *See also* Gorenography; Sexual murder; "Slasher" films
Serotonin and crime, 96
Serpico, Frank, 423
Seung-Hui, Cho, 304
Sewergate, 199, 213
Sex, interracial, 5. *See also* Miscegenation
Sex tourism, 352; and the Sly Traveler, 352
Sex work/workers, 320, 343–347, 350–351; novice, 342; stripping/nude dancing as, 320, 345–347. *See also* Prostitution
Sexism, institutional, 32
Sexual abuse of children, 102, 148, 319, 326, 334, 384–391; adult survivors of, 392–395; blaming mothers for, 391–392; boys as victims of, 385, 388–389; Catholic clergy and, 385–386; consequences of, 103, 387–388, 392–395; father-daughter incest and, 387–388; frequency and duration of, 363, 385; gender differences in experience and victims' definition of, 385, 388–389; and later-life involvement in prostitution, 394; pedophiles and, 395; pornography and, 370; underreporting of, 385; by women, 390–391. *See also* Eroticization of violence; Freudian psychology
Sexual assault. *See* Rape; Sexual Violence
Sexual harassment: Bill Clinton and, 268; in the military, 386; in policing, 422; in prison, 470–471, 479
Sexual murder, 364, 366–369; gendered politics of, 364, 366; Hillside Strangler and, 368–369; *Hustler* magazine and, 368–369; Jack the Ripper and, 358–359; and the lust to kill, 366; Peter Sutcliffe (Yorkshire Ripper) and, 367; pornography and, 368–369; Ted Bundy and, 358, 367–368; trivialization of, 367–369. *See also* Dahmer, Jeffrey; Eroticization of violence; Gorenography; Serial murder/murderers; "Slasher" films
Sexual orientation, 34. *See also* Gays/lesbians; Transgendered/transsexuals
Sexual scripts, 34; rape myths and, 376
Sexual violence, 2, 21; by nonstrangers, 21; prevalence of, 363–364. *See also* Battering; Eroticization of violence; Pornography; Randall-Haskell study; Rape; Sexual abuse of children; Sexual murder; "Slasher" films; Stalking
Sexual violence continuum, 362–364; flashing and, 362–363; and functional similarity of nonviolent and violent violations, 362–363; obscene phone calls and, 362–363
Shaffer, Rebecca, 365
Shakur, Sanyika, 22, 87, 131–132, 303
Shame and embarrassment as deterrents to crime, 85
Shaming, 86; disintegrative, 143; in Japan, 143; reintegrative, 143. *See also* Labeling theory/labeling
Shaw, Clifford, 118–119, 122, 298
Shelden, Randall, 330
Sheldon, William, 90
Shelton, Ronnie, 97
Sheppard, Matthew, 243–244
Sherman Antitrust Act, 189–190; lax enforcement of, 189–190; US Supreme Court decisions regarding, 189–190. *See also* Corporate crime
Sherman, Lawrence, 62–64, 174
Shock incarceration, 486–487; effect on women of, 486–487
Shock probation. *See* Probation
Shrock, Douglas, 403
Sick, Gary, 259
Sikes, Gini, 335–336, 340
Silberman, Charles, 303
Silkwood, 204
Silkwood, Karen, 204–205
Simpson, Christopher, 77
Simpson, Nicole Brown, 4–5, 417; as a battered woman, 399–400
Simpson, O.J., trial of, 4–5, 175, 417; as public spectacle, 4–6; racial implications of, 5–6, 440; as related to battering of Nicole Brown Simpson, 399–400. *See also* Fuhrman, Mark; Goldman, Ronald
Simpson, Sally, 86, 332

Sinclair, Harry, 250–251
Sinclair, Upton, 196, 208
Single White Female, 7
Singleton, Jean, 395
Sinthasomphone, Keison and Konerac, 110–111
Sipe, A. W. Richard, 386
Sipowitz, Andy, 6
Sisters in Crime: The Rise of the New Female Offender, 328
Situational crime prevention, 124–125; crime displacement and, 125; types of, 125. *See also* Routine activities theory
Sixth Amendment, 407, 438
Skilling, Jeffrey, 217
Skinheads/skinhead movement, 68, 248–249, 310–311; number of active groups, 248; reasons for joining, 248; subculture of, 249; and white-power music, 249. *See also* Nazism/Nazis/neo-Nazis; Organized hate groups
Skinner, B. F., 105
Skolnick, Jerome, 312, 315–316, 415, 426
Skrapec, Candice, 359
"Slasher" films, 6, 60. *See also* Eroticization of violence; Gorenography
Slave patrols, 409, 419
Slavery, 71–72; abolitionists and, 233; convict labor as legalized, 473; rape/sexual assault and, 71–72; and slave rebellion, 231–232. *See* Fugitive Slave Law; Grimke, Sarah and Angelina; Lynching; Political crime and rebellion; Underground railroad
Smith, Dwight, 226
Smith, William French, 262
Snowball sampling, 69
Social action, 22, 150
Social bonds. *See* Social control theory
Social control theory, 143–148, 308; community resources and, 146; elements of social bond and, 144; gender and, 146, 148; gender generalizability and, 146; labeling theory versus, 145; life-course research and, 148; as a micro-level alternative to social learning and symbolic interaction theory, 143; parental/family factors and, 144–145; religion and, 147–148; self-control and,145; social disorganization theory and, 143–144. *See also* Self-control
Social Darwinism, 89–90
Social differences, 182, 501
Social disorganization theory, 117–119, 311; Chicago Area Project and, 119–121; decline and revival of, 121–122; extended domestic networks and, 122; immigration and, 118; social control theory and, 143–144
Social ecology, 113, 117–118, 123, 298. *See also* Routine activities theory; Social disorganization theory
Social inequality, xiii, 26, 277; intraracial and interracial, 298–299. *See also* Anomie-strain theory; Class/class structure; Gender; Minorities/minority/minority group; Racial/ethnic groups; Street crime; Urban underclass
Social justice, 182
Social learning theory, 105, 138–139, 144, 308; applications of, 106, 488–489; definitions and, 138–139; delinquency and, 138–139; differential association and, 138; differential reinforcement and, 138; family and, 138; gender generalizability and, 139; imitation and, 138. *See also* Behaviorism; Differential association theory
Social psychological theories, 114, 117. *See also* Differential association theory; Social learning theory; Symbolic interactionism
Social research, 38
Social structure, 22, 114, 150
Socialism, and capitalist reforms, 117
Socialist Workers Party, 257
Society of Captives, 464
Sociological criminology; 20, 114. *See also* Macrosociological theories; Microsociological theories
Sociological explanations of criminal behavior, 113–150; in contrast to individualistic explanations, 114, 118; early European contributions to, 114–117. *See also* Anomie-strain theory; Conflict theory; Critical criminology; Differential association theory; Labeling theory; Routine

activities theory; Social control theory; Social disorganization theory; Techniques of neutralization
Sociological imagination, xiii, 20–21, 24, 37, 81, 114, 142, 187, 230, 320, 362, 408, 450, 482
Sociological positivism. *See* Positivism
Sociopath. *See* Psychopath/sociopath
Sodomy/sodomy laws. *See* Gays/lesbians
Solitary confinement. *See* Prison
Somozo, Anastasio, 260
The Sopranos, 7
Sorensen, Jonathan, 21
Southern Christian Leadership Conference, 257
Southern Poverty Law Center, 475
Soviet Union/Soviet-style communism, 116, 256–257, 261
Soviet-bloc nations, crime in, 157
Speck, Richard, 95
Spencer, Herbert, 89
Spohn, Cassia, 433, 448
Sporadic batterers, 403
Spur Posse, 309
Stalking, 365–366; celebrity, 365; conceptualized as a social problem, 365; laws regarding, 365–366
Stark, Rodney, 147
State-corporate crime, 230, 251. *See also* Governmental crime
State crime, 230, 251, 276. *See also* Governmental crime
State-sponsored terrorism/state terrorism, 234, 257. *See also* Governmental crime; Terrorism
Status offenders/offenses, 329–330
Steffensmeier, Darrell, 49, 331, 447–448
Steinberg, David, 374
Steinem, Gloria, 243, 369
Stephens, Otis, 456
Stepp, Laura Sessions, 377
Sterling, Eric, 481
Stewart, James, 266–267
Stewart, Martha, 217
Stigmatization. *See* Labeling theory/labeling; Shaming
Stolzenberg, Lisa, 291
Stone, Christopher, 194
Stoneall, Linda, 316
Stonewall Rebellion, 159
Strain theory. *See* Anomie-strain theory
Strategic disinformation, 20, 176, 274. *See also* Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration
Street crime, 77, 278; and inequality, 27; and quality of work, 284. *See also* Surplus population; Unemployment
Street families, 303–304; among homeless youths, 286. *See also* Decent families
Street Soldiers. See Omega Boys Club
Stripping/nude dancing. *See* Sex work/workers
Stucky, Thomas, 460
Studies in Hysteria, 102
Subculture of exasperation, 302
Subculture of violence theory, 300–301; regional variations found in research on, 301; research on whites versus nonwhites, 300–301. *See also* Code of the street; Subculture of exasperation
Suburban outlaws, 307, 310–311
Suburbanization, 279, 308; crime and, 280; malls and, 308–309. *See also* Adolescent subcultures; School shootings
Subway crime, 10, 49
Sudden infant death syndrome, 360. *See also* Munchausen syndrome by proxy
*Suicide,*115. *See also* Durkheim, Émile
Sullivan, Mercer, 312–313
Summary trial, 434
Sundahl, Debi, 347
Superfund environmental cleanup program, 199, 213
Supermax prisons, 466–467
Supernatural explanations of criminal behavior, 81–82; persecution of witches and, 81–82; torture and, 82; trial by ordeal and, 81
Surette, Ray, 60–61
Surplus population, 156, 282–283. *See also* Capitalism; Unemployment
Surveillance society. *See also* Postmodernity
Suskind, Ron, 176
Sutcliffe, Peter, 367
Sutherland, Edwin: corporate socialism and, 190; differential association theory and, 136–137; white-collar crime and, 23–24, 57–58, 191
SWAT (Special Weapons and Tactics)

teams, 412. *See also* Paramilitary police units
Sweezy, Paul, 281
Sykes, Gresham, 139–140, 464
Symbolic assailants, 416–417
Symbolic interactionism, 136, 143; and differential association theory, 136–137; and interpretation of rape, 377
Symbolic territoriality, 310. *See also* Jena Six
Szasz, Andrew, 220–221, 227

Tafero, Jesse, 452
Tailhook Association convention, 386
Taliban. *See* Afghanistan
Tan, Willie, 252
Tappan, Paul, 23–24
Tarde, Gabriel, 117, 136, 201, 498
Target hardening. *See* Situational crime prevention
Taxi Driver, 108
Taylor, Desiree, 501
Taylor, Robert, 414
Teamsters Union, 220, 258
Techniques of neutralization, 139–141; delinquency and, 140; as preceding versus following acts, 140; rape and, 140–141; white-collar crime and, 141
Teena, Brandon, 244
Tennessee v. Garner, 429
Terrorism, 234–242; definition of, 234; Islamic, 235–236; jihadists and, 236; Kenya and Tanzania US embassy bombings and, 235; objective of, 234; September 11, 2001, attacks and, 6, 18, 235; state-sponsored, 243; USS *Cole* bombing and, 235; war on terror and, 19; World Trade Center bombing of 1993 and, 234–235. *See also* Al-Qaida; bin Laden, Osama; Patriarchal terrorism
Terrorism, left-wing domestic, 240–242; animal rights movement and, 241; environmental movement and, 240–242; Weather Underground Organization and, 240, 257
Terrorism, right-wing domestic, 236–240; antiabortion movement and, 239–240; Christian identity and, 238; militia movement and, 236–238; Oklahoma City bombing and, 236, 238–239; patriot movement and, 236. *See also* Ku Klux Klan; Nazism/Nazis/neo-Nazis; Organized hate groups; Skinheads/skinhead movement; White Aryan Resistance
Testilying. *See* Police corruption
Testosterone and crime, 97
Texas Chainsaw Massacre, 6, 60
Than-Dam, Truong, 347
Theory, 80; relationship to research, 80–81. *See also* Conflict theory; Critical criminology; Individualistic explanations of criminal behavior; Sociological explanations of criminal behavior
A Theory of Justice, 501
Therapeutic communities, 139
Therapeutic continuum, 488; research on effectiveness of, 488
Therapeutic interventions, 105–106, 488–489
Thinning, Marybeth, 359–360
Thirteenth Amendment, 72
Thompson, Fred, 304
Thompson, Les, 221
Thoreau, Henry David, 233
Thornberry, Terence, 145, 283
Thrasher, Frederic, 311–312, 314
Three-strikes laws, 17, 498; as applied to minor offenses, 444–445; complaints from judges about, 445; court decisions regarding, 445; as less effective than crime prevention, 495. *See also* Sentencing
Tigges, Leann, 122
Tilly, Charles, 231
Tinning, Marybeth, 359–360
Toobin, Jeffrey, 6
Tobacco industry, attorneys general lawsuit, 210. *See also* Corporate crime
Tobacco smuggling, 221–222; British American Tobacco and, 221; Phillip Morris and, 221; R.J. Reynolds and, 221–222
Tonry, Michael, 31
Toolbox Murders, 60
Torture: in Middle Ages, 82. *See also* Abu Ghraib; Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration; Supernatural explanations of criminal behavior
Toxic shock syndrome, 208
Transgendered/transsexuals, 162–163,

244. *See also Boys Don't Cry;* Feinberg, Lesli; Teena, Brandon
Travis, Jeremy, 488
Traynor, Chuck, 370
Trial, 436–437; as an impression management process, 436–437. *See also* Defense attorneys; Judges; Prosecutors; Summary trial
Trial by jury, 438–441; challenges for cause and, 439; exclusion on the basis of race, gender, and attitudes toward death penalty, 439; hung juries and, 440; impact of gender and race on decisions by, 439–441; jury nullification and, 440–441; juveniles' right to, 432; preemptory challenges and, 439; selection of, 438–439; size and unanimity of verdict in, 438; trial by judge versus, 438; underrepresentation of lower class and minorities on, 438–439; US Supreme Court decisions regarding, 438; *voir dire* and, 439
Trial by ordeal, 81. *See also* Supernatural explanations of criminal behavior
Truth-in-sentencing laws, 487
Tucker, Karla Faye, 455
The Turner Diaries, 238, 242. *See also* "The Order"; Pierce, William; Zionist Occupied Government
Turner, Earl, 238. *See also The Turner Diaries*
Turner, J. Blake, 56
Turner, Nate, 231–232
Turner, Stansfield, 258
Turner, Susan, 446
Tweed, William Marcy (Boss), 250–251
Twinkie defense, 96
Twins and crime, 92
Tyler, Gus, 129

Uggen, Christopher, 149
Unabomber, 240
Underclass. *See* Urban underclass
Underground railroad, 233
Unemployment: as a cause of street crime, 156, 281–284; class structure and, 28; crime as a cause of, 284; and imprisonment, 283; structural, 282–283; surplus population and, 156, 282–283; versus punishment as a predictor of recidivism, 283. *See also* Crime, prevention of; Homeless/homelessness
UNICOR. *See* Federal Prison Industries
Uniform Crime Reports (*UCR*): classification of crimes in, 38–39; clearance rates and, 45–46; crimes against persons in, 39; crimes against property in, 39; Index crimes (Part I offenses) in, 39, 287; International Association of Chiefs of Police and development of, 38–39; non-Index crimes (Part II offenses) in, 39, 46, 287
Uniform Crime Reports (*UCR*), arrests, 45–48; by age, 47; arrest portfolio of whites and blacks in, 290; differential involvement versus differential selection interpretations of, 47, 278, 288, 290; drugs and, 46; by gender, 47, 325–329, 331; by race, 47, 287–290; versus self-report surveys, 54–55
Uniform Crime Reports (*UCR*), reported crime rates, 39–40; age and, 49–50; reasons for declining rate of 1990s, 48–51; reasons for reporting and underreporting of, 41–45, 245; reasons for trends in, 40–41; versus *National Crime Victimization Survey,* 51–52
Unsafe at Any Speed, 185
Unsolved Mysteries, 4
Upward Bound program, 132
Urban race riots: by African Americans, 154, 233, 411; by whites, 232. *See also* Political crime and rebellion
Urban underclass, 121; African Americans and, 133, 298–300; "blaming the poor" rhetoric about, 299; concentration effects and, 299–300; deindustrialization and, 121; depleted social resources of, 299; residential segregation of, 300; and rising incarceration rates, 460; social dislocations of, 299. *See also* Surplus population
USA Patriot Act, 18; criticisms of, 18–19
US Agency for International Development, 207
US Arms Export Control Act, 259, 265
US Corrections Corporation, 463
USS *Cole* bombing. *See* bin Laden, Osama

Vail, Teri, 173
Valachi, Joseph, 224–225
Vays, Aaron, 243
Venkatesh, Sudhir, 317
Viccing, 340
Vice Squad, 60
Victim impact statements, 443
Victim-offender mediation, 490–492. *See also* Community conference strategy; Restitution; Restorative justice
Victim prevention. *See* Situational crime prevention
Victim rights movement, 489. *See also* Restorative justice
Victimization: intraracial, 5, 293, 302–303; nonrandom patterning of, 21; rates of, 2, 51–53. *See also National Crime Victimization Survey*
Victimization surveys of sexual violations, 363–364; National Violence Against Women survey, 366; Randall-Haskell study, 363–364, 385; stalking, 366
Vietnam War, 240, 253, 258, 260–261, 268. *See also* Central Intelligence Agency, complicity in drug trafficking; Ellsberg, Daniel
Violence against women: as related to violence against men, 159, 497; underreporting of, 37, 41–43, 52–53. *See also* Battering; Pornography; Rape; Sexual murder; Sexual violence continuum; Stalking
Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act (Federal Crime Bill of 1994), 17, 244; Democrats versus Republicans and, 17
Violent Criminal Apprehension Program, 10
Vollmer, August, 410
Voting: disenfranchisement of felons and, 271–272; women's rights and, 233. *See also* Presidential election of 2000; Presidential election of 2004
Voting Rights Act of 1964, 310

Waco, Texas. *See* Branch Davidian religious sect
Walker, Samuel, 409
Wall Street, 7
Wallace, Don, 280
Wallimann, Isidor, 181
Walters, Glen, 93
Walters, Vernon, 254
Wambaugh, Joseph, 426
War on crime/war-making approach to crime, 15, 450; and paramilitary policing, 413; versus peacemaking, 161; and victor's justice, 500
War crimes, 77. *See also* Genocide
War on drugs, 12, 165; deescalating the, 165–170, 498; impact of on African Americans, 30–31, 297, 460–461; relationship to war on terror, 19; zero tolerance policy of, 12
War profiteering, 275–276
War on terror, 19; relationship to war on drugs, 19
Warner, Barbara, 43
Warren, Bruce, 147
Warren Commission, 258
Warren, Earl, 258
Watergate scandal (Richard Nixon administration), 14, 251, 253–255, 258; burglary of Democratic National Committee headquarters, 251, 253; Committee for the Reelection of the President and, 253; convictions in, 255, 264; cover-up of, 253–254; former CIA operatives involved in, 255; incriminating tapes and, 185, 253–254; other activities associated with, 254–255; Woodward and Bernstein investigation of, 253. *See also* Ellsberg, Daniel; Nixon, Richard
Waters, Maxine, 262
Watt, James, 199–200
Weapons of mass destruction, 20, 273–274. *See* Iraqgate, George W. Bush administration
Weather Underground Organization. *See* Terrorism, left-wing domestic
Weaver, Randy, 238. *See also* Ruby Ridge, Idaho, shoot-out; Terrorism, right-wing domestic
Webb, Gary, 262
Webb, Jim, 298
Webcams. *See* Postermodernity
Weber, Marvin, 191, 227
Weeks v. United States, 425
Weisheit, Ralph, 109
Welch, Susan, 448
Wells, Alice Stebbin, 421
West, Cornel, 29

West, Valerie, 460
Whistle-blowing, 499
White Aryan Resistance (WAR), 68, 239–240, 242, 249, 311. *See also* Nazism/Nazis/neo-Nazis; Organized hate groups; Terrorism, right-wing domestic
White Collar Crime, 137
White-collar crime: biological explanations of, 98; costs of, 3, 201; films and, 7; government policy toward, 14; personality studies of, 104; rationalizations for, 141; types and studies of, 57–58. *See also* Anomie-strain theory; Computer crime; Corporate crime; Differential association theory; Governmental crime; Regulatory law; Sutherland, Edwin
White-Collar Crime and the Looting of America, 201
White-collar crime, prevention and control of: business ethics education and, 498; deterrence and, 86, 203; organizational codes and, 498–499; prosecution and, 203, 499; punishment and, 203, 485, 489–490. *See also* Regulatory law
White-collar criminals: gender of, 327; organizational resources of, 27; restorative justice and, 492
White, Dan, 96
White supremacist masculinity, 72, 242–243. *See* Byrd, James; Ku Klux Klan; Lynching; Nazism; Organized hate groups; Skinheads/skinhead movement; White Aryan Resistance
Whitewater scandal. *See* Clinton, Bill
Wickersham Commission. *See* Police corruption
Wilczynski, Ania, 357
Wilkins, Robert, 418
Williams, Jerry Dewayne, 444
Williams, Linda, 379
Williams, Monica, 379
Williams, Patricia, 111, 323
Williams, Stanley Tooky, 454
Williams, Terry, 145–146, 502
Williams, Willie, 411, 414, 417
Wilson, Henry, 250
Wilson, James Q., 49, 411
Wilson, Joseph, 274
Wilson, William Julius, 121, 298–300
Wise Use, 199
Witches. *See Malleus Maleficarum* (*Hammer of Witches*); Supernatural explanations of criminal behavior
Wolfgang, Marvin, 300
Women and crime. *See* Battering; Female murderers; Female offenders; Gender; Prostitution; Rape; Sexual violence
Women correctional officers. *See* Correctional officers
Women police officers. *See* Police
Women's liberation/rights movement: abolitionists and, 333; female offenders' attitude toward, 330–331; and increases in female criminality, 328; voting and, 233. *See also* Feminism/feminist movement; Masculinity-liberation theory
Wonders, Nancy, 500
Wooden, Wayne, 106, 308–310, 323
Woodham, Luke, 323
Woodward, Bob, 253
World Trade Center bombings: in 1993, 234–235; on September 11, 2001, 18. *See also* bin Laden, Osama; Rahman, Omar Abdul; Terrorism
Wright, Bradley, 55
Wright, James, 173
Wrongful convictions, 441–442; and Central Park "wilding' incident, 441; gender disparities in, 442; racial disparities in, 442; reasons for, 441–442, 453. *See also* Death penalty
Wyre, Ray, 373–375

Xenophobia, 295
XYY chromosome syndrome and crime, 95

Yeager, Peter, 57–58, 191–192, 200
Yllo, Kersti, 382
Yochelson, Samuel, 105
Yorkshire Ripper, 367

Zaccaro, John, Jr., 485
Zatz, Marjorie, 8–9, 25
Zehr, Howard, 489
Zero tolerance, 14, 49
Zimring, Frank, 50–51, 165–166, 170, 460–461, 496
Zionist Occupied Government (ZOG), 238. *See also The Turner Diaries*

About the Book

NOW IN ITS THIRD EDITION, THIS INNOVATIVE CORE text provides a comprehensive and critical introduction to key theories and topics in criminology. Highlighting issues of class, race/ethnicity, and gender, the authors navigate the study of crime and criminals in an accessible and compelling manner. Notably, the text:

- Investigates a breadth of topics—ranging from street crime to corporate fraud.
- Explores pivotal theories for understanding crime and victimization.
- Promotes critical thinking by analyzing media constructions of crime.
- Includes the voices of offenders, victims, and criminal justice personnel.
- Engages students through discussion of issues drawn from the headlines.

Ronald J. Berger is professor of sociology at the University of Wisconsin–Whitewater. His previous publications include *Wheelchair Warrior* (with Melvin Juette); *Juvenile Delinquency and Justice* (with Paul Gregory); and *Storytelling Sociology* (with Richard Quinney). **Marvin D. Free, Jr.**, is professor of sociology at the University of Wisconsin–Whitewater. He is author of *Racial Issues in Criminal Justice* and *African Americans and the Criminal Justice System.* **Patricia Searles** is professor emeritus of sociology and women's studies at the University of Wisconsin–Whitewater. Her publications include *Rape and Society* and *Feminism and Pornography* (both with Ronald J. Berger).